

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



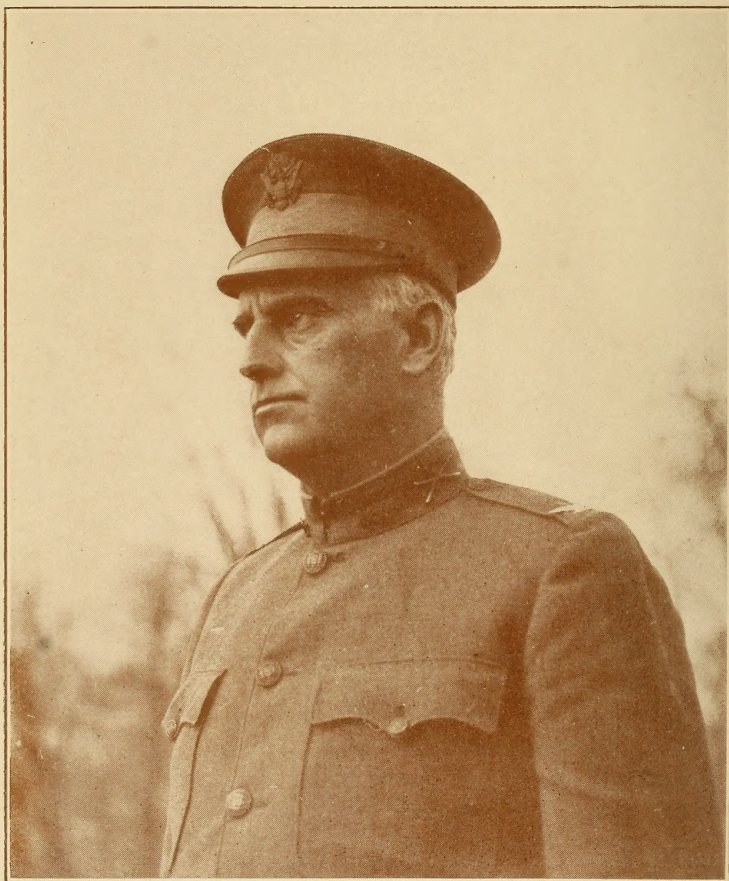
00005640386







H-A-L-TT!—WHA-ZAA?



THE COMMANDING OFFICER

Col. John B. Rose, the dynamic force that made the First Provisional Regiment what it was.

H-A-L-TT!—WHA-ZAA?

Being a History
of
THE FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT
and
THE ANSWER OF A STATE MILITANT
to
THE THREAT OF BERLIN

Edited and Compiled by
CAPT. T. R. HUTTON

Published Under the Auspices of
The Publication Committee of
THE AQUEDUCT GUARD CITIZENS' COMMITTEE
HON. ALTON B. PARKER JAMES SPEYER DAVID T. DAVIS
CAPT. CHARLES W. BALDWIN, *Chaplain*

1570

.85

.N5 N65

Copyright, 1919, by
The Aqueduct Guard Citizens Committee



©CLA536254

OCT 21 1919

ACKNOWLEDGMENT

To the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment, and to the members of staff and line who have assisted in the furnishing of material for the compilation of this volume, the Editor expresses his thanks. To Captain Henry D. Brandyce of the Eighth Coast Artillery Corps, New York Guard, who gave much of his time to the preparation of the sectional maps of the First Provisional Line; to Frank J. Burke of the United States Secret Service; to the Aqueduct Citizens' Committee which made its publication possible; and to the employees of the Adjutant's office for their hearty co-operation, there is expressed the sincere appreciation of one who has been permitted to chronicle the history of the Regiment.

A handwritten signature in dark ink, appearing to read "W. H. Allen". The signature is fluid and cursive, with a long horizontal stroke at the end.

Capt. 1st Infantry, Adjutant.

HEADQUARTERS
CAMP WESTCOTT,
OSSINING, N. Y.
February 12, 1919

CONTENTS

| | PAGE |
|------------------------------|------|
| INTRODUCTION | xiii |
| PREFACE | xv |
| —"AND ALL IS WELL" | xvii |

PART I

| | |
|----------------------------------|-----|
| THE HEART OF THE WORLD | I |
| MOBILIZATION | 15 |
| I.—PREPARATION | 15 |
| II.—CONCENTRATION | 26 |
| III.—DISTRIBUTION | 38 |
| IV.—CONSUMMATION | 42 |
| V.—ORGANIZATION | 59 |
| SEPTEMBER | 68 |
| OCTOBER | 75 |
| NOVEMBER | 81 |
| DECEMBER | 86 |
| JANUARY, 1918 | 94 |
| FEBRUARY, " | 97 |
| MARCH, " | 100 |
| APRIL, " | 104 |
| MAY, " | 106 |
| JUNE, " | 112 |
| JULY, " | 114 |
| AUGUST, " | 119 |
| SEPTEMBER, " | 127 |
| OCTOBER, " | 133 |
| NOVEMBER, " | 136 |
| MIDWOOD | 142 |

PART II

| | |
|------------------------------------|-----|
| THE LINE IMPREGNABLE | 145 |
| EQUIPMENT | 209 |
| THE TRAIL OF THE OCTOPUS | 216 |
| HOUSING | 224 |

CONTENTS

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| PAPER-WORK OF THE REGIMENT | 234 |
| DOGS OF THE REGIMENT | 263 |
| PAY PROBLEMS | 272 |
| THE LEGAL PHASE | 278 |
| MORALE | 290 |
| I.—RELIGIOUS ACTIVITIES | 290 |
| II.—RECREATIONAL | 297 |
| III.—ATHLETICS | 323 |
| TRANSPORTATION AND SUPPLIES | 332 |
| I.—THE THREE KINDS | 332 |
| II.—TRANSPORTATION LINES | 341 |
| III.—SECOND BATTALION SUPPLY PROBLEMS | 344 |
| LITERATURE OF THE REGIMENT | 348 |
| HEALTH | 373 |
| DEMOBILIZATION | 400 |
| IN MEMORIAM | 416 |
| APPENDIX I | 441 |
| APPENDIX II | 457 |
| APPENDIX III | 479 |

ILLUSTRATIONS

| | |
|---|---------------------|
| "THE COMMANDING OFFICER," COL. JOHN B. ROSE . . . | <i>Frontispiece</i> |
|---|---------------------|

HEART OF THE WORLD

| | | |
|---------------------------------------|------------------|----|
| THANKS OF THE STATE | <i>Facing p.</i> | 10 |
| TRIBUTE FROM THE NATION | " | 10 |
| FROM THE ADJUTANT-GENERAL | " | 10 |
| TYPES OF AQUEDUCT STRUCTURE | " | 11 |

MOBILIZATION

| | | |
|--|------------------|----|
| REGIMENTAL HEADQUARTERS, CROTON LAKE | <i>Facing p.</i> | 26 |
| COMPANY C OF THE "SEVENTH" | " | 27 |
| "SEVEN OF THE SEVENTH" AT "FOUR" | " | 42 |
| EARLY HEADQUARTERS SCENES | " | 43 |
| SECOND BATTALION STAFF | " | 58 |
| GLIMPSES OF THE LINE | " | 59 |

CHRONOLOGICAL

| | | |
|--|------------------|-----|
| OFFICERS—AND OTHERS | <i>Facing p.</i> | 90 |
| DUNWOODIE GATE HOUSE | " | 91 |
| GATHERING OF LINE AND STAFF (1918) | " | 106 |
| SHOTS AT "THE COLONEL" | " | 107 |
| "BUZZ," "BUZZ TWO," "THE JUDGE," AND "SCRIBNERS" | " | 138 |
| A PORTION OF "MY COMPANY" | " | 138 |

THE LINE IMPREGNABLE

| | | |
|------------------------------|------------------|-----|
| POSTING THE RELIEF | <i>Facing p.</i> | 154 |
| COMPANIES D AND E | " | 155 |

ILLUSTRATIONS

| | |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| ORGANIZATION OF THE LINE (TABLES) | <i>Facing pp.</i> 170, 171, 186, 187 |
| THE MEN WHO MADE THE LINE | <i>Facing p.</i> 202 |
| IN THE THIRD BATTALION | " 203 |

THE TRAIL OF THE OCTOPUS

| | |
|--|----------------------|
| HOME-MADE BOMB-FENDERS AND VULNERABLE POINTS | <i>Facing p.</i> 218 |
| FRIENDS OF THE REGIMENT | " 219 |

DOGS OF THE REGIMENT

| | |
|---------------------------------------|----------------------|
| THE PATROL DOG AND HIS WORK | <i>Facing p.</i> 266 |
| TABLES ON STRENGTH | " 267 |

PAY PROBLEMS

| | |
|---|----------------------|
| REGIMENTAL HEADQUARTERS, OSSINING | <i>Facing p.</i> 282 |
| OTHER "FRIENDS OF THE REGIMENT" | " 283 |

MORALE

| | |
|--|----------------------|
| THE PARSON IN ACTION | <i>Facing p.</i> 298 |
| MRS. JAMES SPYER, "MOTHER OF THE REGIMENT" | " 299 |
| RECREATIONAL MEASURES | " 314 |
| MRS. PETER DURYEA (VIOLA ALLEN) | " 315 |
| MEN WITH MEAN JOBS | " 330 |
| WOMEN WHO HELPED SUSTAIN MORALE | " 331 |

TRANSPORTATION

| | |
|--|----------------------|
| SOME OF THE "THREE KINDS" | <i>Facing p.</i> 346 |
| POUGHKEEPSIE MOTOR CORPS DRIVERS | " 347 |

LITERATURE OF THE REGIMENT

| | |
|---|----------------------------|
| "THE WATCHDOG" | <i>Facing p.</i> 347 |
| CONTEST BOARD AND MILLING DEPT. | " 347 |
| SERGT. JOSEPH CHASE—SKETCHES | " 362 |
| THE REGIMENTAL SONG | <i>Facing pp.</i> 362, 363 |
| INSPIRATIONAL ADVERSITIES | <i>Facing p.</i> 363 |

ILLUSTRATIONS

HEALTH OF THE REGIMENT

| | | |
|---|-------------------|----------|
| MAJOR CHARLES E. TOWNSEND | <i>Facing p.</i> | 378 |
| INFLUENZA AND HEALTH CHARTS | <i>Facing pp.</i> | 378, 379 |
| THE PART THAT HOUSING PLAYED | <i>Facing p.</i> | 379 |
| MORE HOUSING CONDITIONS | " | 394 |
| PROBLEMS THAT MADE FOR HEALTH QUESTIONS | " | 394 |
| VICTIMS OF THE EPIDEMIC—LEVITT, POOLE, MISS CRAIG, HALLETT, MILLER, BALEY, GARLAND, CONWAY, NORTH- RIP, BAKER | " | 395 |

DEMOBILIZATION

| | | |
|--|------------------|-----|
| PROGRESS OF THE MEMORIAL BOULDER | <i>Facing p.</i> | 395 |
| DEDICATION OF MEMORIAL BOULDER | " | 410 |
| GRIDIRON DINNER AT OFFICERS' REUNION | " | 410 |
| "THE LAST LINE" | " | 411 |
| THE OFFICERS' REUNION | " | 411 |

IN MEMORIAM

| | | |
|---|-------------------|----------|
| THOSE WHO WENT WEST: LANDPHIER, PERNICE, BURKE, REYNOLDS, HOWELL, NEVILLE, NOUSE, PEEBLES, FAJARDO, HARRINGTON, GREEN, BARTON, ADANY, BENNETT, TATE, ROURKE, STEPHENS, GEE, STOKES, HIGGINS, ROBERTS, WALDRON, RYAN, FULLER, KELLY, HALLENACK, WIER, DeCOSTA | <i>Facing pp.</i> | 426, 427 |
| De COSTA'S FUNERAL | <i>Facing p.</i> | 444 |

TAIL-PIECE

| | | |
|---|-------------------|-----|
| "TAPS" | <i>Facing p.</i> | 506 |
| SECTIONAL MAPS OF FIRST PROVISIONAL'S LINE (WITH CHARTS) | <i>In Pockets</i> | |

INTRODUCTION

THE services of the men who have fought and died on the battle-fields of Europe or who have undergone the arduous work of the training-camps at home have been recognized by the nation in many ways. Their spirit of service and sacrifice has been appreciated.

There has been a generous measure of recognition extended to all those who served behind the battle-line, in the departments of supply, in the industries back of the line; but, as yet, there has been little or no recognition of those home-guard and allied organizations that served faithfully and stood ready to protect public interests in case of emergency, except from those who were personally familiar with their work.

Among these organizations none is entitled to more credit than the First Provisional Regiment, organized to protect the water-supply of the great city of New York, a difficult task in view of the possibilities of attack upon the system.

The services of this organization in protecting the Aqueduct and water-supply of New York have been loyally and efficiently rendered.

This vital source of supply to the millions of a great city has been carefully protected. The work has been creditably done and has been, in effect, a part of the great military effort of our people which aided, in such a determining way, in bringing the war against the Central Powers to a successful conclusion. It has been a part of that great national organization for the war, without which there could have been no satisfactory measure of success.

Let us give a full measure of credit to the officers and men of the First Provisional Regiment.

Alfred S. Wainwright
Major General U.S.A.

PREFACE

NOT all the heroes of the Great War fought and died on the battle-fields of Europe. In the "second-line trenches," in war industry, war management, and war-time co-ordination of national energy the price of ultimate sacrifice and final self-abnegation was paid again and again. In thousands of homes in this fair land even women and children paid the price, that justice might not perish from the earth.

There were tasks that were essential, indispensable and vital to the success of the allied arms; tasks that demanded strong men, patient men, big men; tasks inherently without glory, honor, prestige or plaudits; that held to the deadening routine of the inevitable those whose hearts were on the battle-lines of France.

It is of such a labor that this volume tells—the old, old story of incessant toil, incessant struggle, the conquering of the unprecedented, and the endless battle against ignorance, cupidity and misunderstanding. It is the story of eight thousand men drawn from all portions of the State of New York who at one time and another comprised the forces charged with the safety of the *World's Heart*.

A simple tale—almost primitive in its simplicity, for it goes to the fundamentals of life—it tells of the joys and sorrows of their far-flung line. It is the story of the Great Answer; the answer of a State Militant to the Threat of Berlin. Read here the tale of the men of the First Provisional, who held the Line Impregnable in that military operation within the borders of New York State from August, 1917, until the close of the Great War. Read of their incessant work and their occasional play; of their problems and how they were met; how they fought the secret agents of the Great German Empire; how, inspired by the leadership of their Commanding Officer, who sacrificed all for the regiment, they worked and struggled and died for the pride of the Task that was theirs.

“—AND ALL IS WELL”

NOTE.—This originally appeared in shorter form in *The Watchdog*, under the caption, “The Three Posts.” The Fourth Post has been added since the successful termination of the First Provisional Regiment’s work.

*Remember the nights—those August nights—
When the stars came out to play
For a little while in the dark-blue dome
By the light of the Milky Way;
And the bullfrogs croaked on the streamlet edge,
And the warm world drowsed and fell
Asleep till the pinking dawn streaked up.—
“Post One! And all is well!”*

*There’s a beaten path from ’Shokan
To the lights of New York Town
That the men of the Guard have pounded hard
On the Job of No Renown.
There’s a stretch of cut and cover
Where a blade of grass can’t grow;
There’s a line of steps to the culvert edge
And the flickering lantern’s glow.*

*Remember the nights—those autumn nights—
When the frost-bite chilled the air,
And the night wind whispered among the leaves
Till the thickets were clean and bare;
When the mountains turned at a Midas touch,
And the Indian summer spell
Was wrought in the haze of the golden days—
“Post Two! And all is well!”*

*There’s a beaten path from ’Shokan
To the lights of New York Town
That the men of the Guard have pounded hard
On the Job of No Renown.
There’s a record wrought in iron
Where the guard’s broad heels have trod
As he walked up there on the mountain-side
Alone with the stars—and God.*

“—AND ALL IS WELL”

*Remember the nights—the winter nights—
When the world was white and dead,
Or the storm roared down from the Catskill peaks
With the boom of a giant's tread.
No, you'll not forget in the years to come,
When the tales of war men tell
(Oh, the crunch of snow on the post below!)—
“Post Three! And all is well!”*

*There's a beaten path from 'Shokan
To the lights of New York Town
That the men of the Guard have pounded hard
On the Job of No Renown;
Where the long white drifts are broken
And the record's written clear,
Let the snow-path speak with its frosty creak,
“They were here—were here—right here!”*

* * * * *

*Remember those nights—the nights of frost
And the nights of heat and rain—
When ye went your ways in the mighty days
That never can come again;
When ye guarded the throb of the World's Great Heart
From the schemes of the spawn of hell,
Till the war was won and the job was done—
“Post Four! And all is well!”*

*There's a beaten path from 'Shokan
To the lights of New York Town
That the men of the Guard have pounded hard
On the Job of No Renown.
Now the feet of the guard tread peace trails,
And the grass is dimpling green
On the long, long line that shall tell the years
Of the Men Who Stood Between.*

PART I

H-A-L-TT! —WHA-ZAA?

THE HEART OF THE WORLD

IN the short, gray, fog-swathed days of creation there arose from the edge of the Atlantic under some great pressure of the earth's crust, or by some giant upheaval of the earth's vitals, a small, rock-ribbed island, dripping with the slime-mud of the ocean's bed, steaming, gaunt and desolate, in the half-light of the world's morning.

The tides ebbed and flowed through the centuries, and in history's dawn, when Egypt was a child among nations, when the Briton cave man still carved his history on the walrus tusk, and when the forebears of the Goth and the Hun lived in their earthy lairs, it stood, majestic and forest clad, at the mouth of a great glacial-made river, its low shores pounded by the crashing breakers of the Atlantic, its forests the shifting homes of wandering aborigine fishing tribes.

The centuries passed and the cave man went to live in houses of wood and stone. In the north of Europe there arose a hardy race of fair-haired, blue-eyed adventurers and rovers of the sea—faring far, living and dying with a laugh in their teeth, exploring, conquering and perishing. And that it was a Dragon prow that first raised the shore-line of Manhattan there is little doubt. But that prow drove by on the horizon to the churn of white water beneath its foot, and the boil of the slave-engined oars. The peace of the primitive was untouched for a few hundred years.

Paganism waned and the cross of Christianity flamed in many lands. Polled monks wrote on illumined pages the history of their time, and a race of hardy islanders in whose veins flowed some of the blood of the Vikings, shook off the yoke of a weakened Rome and stood forth as a people of the future. Across the channel on the mainland of Europe, a lowland people built their dikes, fought back the sea, and then sent abroad their white-winged ships to conquer the sea in its own element.

The year of Grace One Thousand Six Hundred and Nine—the Dutch ship, *Half Moon*, lay in the harbor of the Island of Manhattan, and Hendrick Hudson had formed the beginnings of the city which was to play such an important and vital part in the history of man.

* * * * *

The Twentieth Century; and the world's great heart throbbed in the Island of Manhattan. By leaps and bounds the Island had taken unto itself the power of a world center and through it ebbed and flowed the tides of gold, the tides of trade, and the tides of life. Great block hives of concrete and steel shot upward into the heavens as the pressure of the æonic beats increased. Its life became more and more maelstromic, more and more catholic; ever accelerated. Its people were different from all other peoples of the earth; its position unlike that of any other city of man's history. Imperial Rome approached it but never equaled it in relative importance, for Rome was never free from active sedition within and wars without.

In its coffers there rested the bulk of the wealth of the richest nation in the history of mankind. In one of its smallest streets the industries and utilities of a civilized world were the playthings of Midas. It became intensive, vigorous and dominating, the epitome of American spirit. New York was vital, essential, indispensable. It was a monument to the era of peace in which it had sprung to its position of prime importance. What New York said in the morning the world repeated in the afternoon, and the noonday songs of the Battery were echoed at night in San Francisco.

From the west and south the golden tides of wealth and commerce surged through its portals, and from the thrones and council chambers of its political kings went forth edicts that swayed the destinies of nations.

It was the greatest city of the greatest state and the greatest nation (how great that nation was, even the people themselves did not know until the awakening came).

* * * * *

Two thousand miles away—across the Atlantic Ocean—a great Beast was making ready to spring at the world's throat. While the rest of civilization prepared for the upbuilding and the uplifting of the race, the lightening of the tasks of the hands of man and the ultimate conquest of mind over matter, the Beast, disguised in the cloak of social imperialism, made ready for the

spring. Every weapon that devilish ingenuity and criminal cunning could devise was to be used in the onslaught. While the peoples of the world bent their learning to the arts of peace, the Brute of Germanism turned science and art to its program of blast.

The years passed. The Beast, strong, cunning and schooled, was ready. In every civilized country of the world its agents awaited the word. Its armies crouched, tense. Its navies of sea and air, trained to the full devilishness of desire, strained at leash.

* * * * *

The flash of an assassin's pistol in Sarajevo on June 28, 1914, flamed to a world conflagration in the early days of August. It was Der Tag—the Day for which the Beast had been waiting and preparing—the great, great day of blood and slaughter and lust and power. With one tremendous spring of fire and steel the Beast was at the throat of the world.

Ensued chaotic vortex of death and dominance; black days in which the Pan-Germanic doctrine of the right of might sought to establish a blasting truth. Rough-shod the Beast strode across butchered Belgium and into France—on and on to the Marne; fighting, biting, rending and tearing as it moved; violating all the laws of man and God; offering on its own bloody altar sacrifices of crucified men, outraged women and bloody-stumped children to the old Gods which it worshiped in secret; the gods of wood and stone and thunder and lightning—Thor, Wotan and Siegfried.

Against the Beast of Berlin, the Jackal of Vienna and the Buzard of Constantinople there stood England, France, the remnants of Belgium, Serbia and Macedonia, and spy-mined Russia. Italy joined the allied forces, and on land and sea and in the air battle was joined, fields and streams ran red with blood and ever the Beast drove and slew.

It was a new kind of warfare, this battling of the Brute. Invisible, he reached with talons of steel and raked the lines of his enemies a score of miles away. Brave men who went forth to fight him died by the thousands without having seen one of his offspring. Against those who stood between him and world dominance he launched all the war-science of his years of preparation, and on the high seas his sub-surface pirates slew wantonly and indiscriminately.

The nations that had taken the sword against him were not prepared for such warfare as this. They must learn, prepare and re-prepare to meet it; their methods must be changed and for this there must be time. And steadily the Beast broke through

wall after wall of living flesh offered up by civilization as its price for existence. The twilight of the world's Great Night closed in. The night came on apace, and through its darkened hours there sounded the mighty groan of a hopeless humanity. From afar the Twin Mongols watched with unblinking eyes, taking little or no part in the fray, though allied in name with the forces of right.

Only one light beamed steadily in the darkness. Only one factor had been untried. The great heart of the world throbbed on; a great transatlantic people waited, stunned by the fact of the Thing That Could Not Happen. The United States of America stood as the Neutral, in part uncomprehending the meaning of the cataclysm.

Blockaded by the fleets of Britain and France, the Central Powers were unable to send their navies of war or commerce abroad. And to the allied powers there early came the conviction that in industrial America lay the answer to their great and crying need. America, and America alone, with its wonderful machinery and its skilled mechanics could furnish the stream of steel which must beat back the hordes of Berlin. America, with its vast natural resources, must be drawn upon for the food, the clothing and the supplies without which man power alone was impotent. And so it was that America became essential to the allied powers.

The part of the State of New York and the part of the City of New York in the life of the allied forces prior to the entrance of America into the war need no elaboration here. New York was the central and controlling point of those vast war-product organizations that sprung to life overnight, and New York State and the states that shouldered it were the homes of the great munitions plants that thundered with their million wheels day and night while the guns thundered overseas and the allied armies fought for time and stores.

Then the shell streams and the gun streams began to flow across the Atlantic from the great port that was playing such an important part in the life of man. Months passed and the nation writhed in bonds of political neutrality that could not still the clamor of the heart's alliance. And the nation prepared for the inevitable. Then came the overt act, the declaration of war, and the United States of America took up the sword.

Not in terms of black-mouthed guns and steel-jawed fighting men may there be measured the weight of America's might, thrown into the world turmoil when the balance scales of the future tipped threateningly. It was the impetus of the Youngest and the Greatest Nation, flinging into its preparation and its charge

all of the frenzied passion with which Youth champions ideals. With one stroke it paid its debt of birth to England; its bond of liberty to France; its obligation of existence to Almighty God.

The City of New York had occupied an important position before the entry of the United States into the world's conflict. It assumed a position, the importance of which is impossible to overestimate, following the entry of the United States. Through its port went the great shipments that made the preparation for the American armies possible; from it transport after transport steamed out to sea with khaki-covered decks. It was the center around which the great preparations of the nation orbited. It was the great embarkation port of the nation because it was strategically best adapted to the purpose.

Figures from the War Department show that 90 per cent. of the American forces sent abroad embarked from the Port of the City of New York.

It was the funnel for munitions and supplies as it was for fighting power. Greater and greater became the stream that flowed through its gates. From the West and from the South, from Dix, Devens, Upton and Merritt, division after division went out to sea through its portals, and with them supplies on which their power depended.

On April 29, 1918, the War Department, in its weekly review, made this official announcement:

"The outcome of the present operation in the West depends on man power."
and in the same statement:

"Ours is the imperative duty of providing replacement units for the armies in France."

And 90 per cent. of this work was being done through the Port of the City of New York. On the heart of the world depended the life of civilization.

As a financial center its importance has already been established; as a center of allied propaganda its place is well known, but there are comparatively few who know even at this day that it was the center of Pan-German propaganda and Pan-German machinations for the entire American continent.

At the very heart of the world lurked the disease spread by the Beast throughout the civilized nations—ready to strike at the heart when the moment came.

THE THREAT

From early in the Great War, practically from August, 1914, until the end of the conflict, New York was the center of the great

German-made web of propagandism and espionage in this country. Not even Washington ranked it in the Pan-German machinations, although Washington was inseparably linked to it by the cogs of the mighty German machine. How heavily the Imperial German Government drew from its forces in New York is shown in the Senatorial investigation into Bolshevism that revealed the leaders of the German counter revolution in Russia as imports from the East Side.

It was the clearing-house for Pan-German activity, bearing the same relation to the German embassy at Washington that a great machine shop bears to the residence of the owner. Centered for the most part in the lower portions of the city and more particularly in lower Broadway in the midst of the great German commercial interests, Pan-Germanism spread its tentacles throughout the entire social and business fabric of the world's great heart. It was in the institutions of learning, in all forms and phases of mercantile life, in the world of print, the world of art and the world of drama. In the very folds of the flag it lay coiled, now and then uprearing its vicious head in the columns of subsidized public print.

And until the actual breaking of relations with Germany, it left no stone unturned, no test untried, no lie untold to prevent this nation from flinging its fighting forces into the battle of righteousness.

But when the break had come, when the nation had finally cast off its hateful yoke and stood girding its loins for battle, it was then and not till then that German espionage and German Propagandism assumed its most malignant form.

From the Imperial chambers at Berlin had come the command, "Delay America." To hamper, to hinder, to restrain, to hamstring and to annoy—such was the task of the German high agents. And to destroy the essential, to breed into the mind of the public the seditious hope of peace before actual participation by America; to stir in the anarchistic elements revolt against draft; to focus the activities of the conscientious objector; to sow local industrial dissension and strife, were but parts of the preliminary campaign.

Beyond this lay the larger program. Fragments of it came to light from time to time in the events following the seizure of the Dr. Albert papers. A portion of William J. Flynn's great screen drama tells of another phase, the attempted blotting out of two-thirds of the ranking officers of the United States Navy in a New York hotel. Had the heads of German propagandism been satisfied to listen to the explosion of that bomb from afar they might have—but enough of that. There are some things that cannot be told without permission.

It was not without cause that United States Secret Service agents committed nightly burglary in a Broadway office, next door to an office which they had rented as a base from which to watch the New York treasurer-fence of Germany in this country. Night after night these shadows of Justice burglarized, searched and decoded, reading in the German memorandums descriptions of themselves and their histories back to the days when William J. Flynn, the Great Eagle of the brood, played ball in the lots of Harlem. So it was that the Secret Service learned of the great organization of reservists that was being formed in the city of New York, of the stored machine-guns, the stacks of arms and ammunition that were to stand ready for Der Tag on American soil.

Germany was to strike and to strike hard. Could her U-boat, coast-harrying program which began in the summer of 1918 have been carried to a conclusion, the great cities of the Eastern seaboard would have been scourged. Chaos was planned for New York. The mailed hand of the Beast ever clutched for the very heart of the world. Riots, explosion and destruction were to usher in the disaster which should halt the flow of troops and munitions overseas from the great port and at one stroke paralyze the Atlantic seaboard. Ever the testing, the trying and the preparation went on. In the winter of 1917-18 over one hundred fires in the city of New York in one day showed a majority of suspected incendiary origin. The figures of the Fire Department give an increase of two millions of dollars damage by fire over peace years, and Fire Commissioner Thomas J. Drennan's figures show that the big increase was on ships and docks.

To the rattle of machine-guns in the hands of well-organized and well-armed reservist rioters; to the roar of explosions in streets darkened by the crippling of the power lines there was to be added the might of man's greatest friend but most powerful enemy—FIRE!

By order of William Rex the torch was to be placed at the heart of New York with cataclysmic result. Fire in the crowded districts, sweeping the tenements of the East Side in huge broad sheets of flame. Fire, bellowing death and disaster in the explosions of the munitions districts, bursting shells and exploding magazines roaring in earth-shaking succession. Fire in the storage plants, the warehouses and the shipping districts; explosive fire in the business sections where oils and wastes were to render the streets uninhabitable. A mighty conflagration, seething unchecked because the water supplies of the great city were to be destroyed on the stroke that gave the signal for the loosing of hell on the

heart of the world. New York was to be rendered helpless as a base port of supply to the armies abroad.

THE SAFEGUARD

Between the City of New York and such chaos stood but one *real* insurance, the aqueducts of the north—Catskill and Croton, with a flow of over 500,000,000 gallons daily, and the hydrant pressures that meant salvation.

And because this great water system was vulnerable throughout its line, the shadow of participation in the European conflict had barely made itself certain when, as Bernstorff was given his passports in February of 1917, the National Guard of the State of New York was called out into the storms of winter to cover the vital artery. Of the disposition at that time and later of the 3,200 men who guarded it until federalization, the reader may learn in detail from the orders that appear in the appendices of this work.

The safety of the Catskill Aqueduct was so important to the nation and the state, that from the first certainty of war until three months after the armistice was signed, it was guarded along its entire length; it was so important that it was the last great public utility in the country to be covered by armed troops as the great war came to an end. Its safety meant the safety of the City of New York from the torch that was to be laid at its breast. The safety of the Port of New York meant the uninterrupted flow of that mighty stream whose crest reached Château Thierry just in time in the summer of 1918. The safety of the Catskill Aqueduct meant safety to the thing vital to the success of the Allied armies.

There is no need for proof on the subject. The reply of Colonel John B. Rose, the commanding officer of the First Provisional Regiment, to a suggestion in February of 1918 that the force on the Aqueduct be reduced has never been questioned, and that reply was in substance:

“In this world-wide struggle, New York City must maintain an impregnable position.”

“The American forces and those of the Allies are supplied from the Port of the City of New York. Any attempt to weaken its usefulness will cause disastrous results.”

How supremely important the State of New York considered the safety of the Aqueduct may be gathered from an extract taken from a letter of Governor Whitman to the commanding

officer of the First Provisional Regiment on the matter at the close of the Governor's term of office, Dec. 30, 1918, in which he said.

"No task of greater importance to the State or Nation was assigned to any regiment during the war, and the fact that the water supply has been safeguarded and the great City of New York has been permitted to perform its function as the most important factor in the conduct of the war, is a sufficient indication that the work has been well done."

And the safety of the Aqueduct was considered of such value by the Department of the East that at the close of the war the work was reviewed by the Adjutant-General of the Department in a letter, reproduced elsewhere, that congratulates the commanding officer of the First Provisional upon the work.

And thus it is that two great facts are established:

1. The success of the American and Allied armies depended hugely upon the inviolability of the City of New York.
2. The safety of the City of New York from the destruction that had been planned for it balanced upon the safety of the water arteries from the north.

Therefore, it is at once apparent that the safeguarding of New York's water supply system was the most important military operation on this side of the Atlantic Ocean and necessary to the success of transatlantic campaigns.

Even with the full importance of the Aqueduct realized, such a statement is too sweeping in its nature to be passed without necessary additional comment. There is no claim that the task of safeguarding the Aqueduct was more important than the management of the railroads, which were governmentally operated, but that was not a military operation. The training camps that dotted all America were of the most vital importance, but they were preparatory and could not be classed as a military operation. The forts maintained along the entire seaboard during the war were vital, but they were peace-time forts also. The guarding of the vital artery so necessary to the City of New York was a military operation, made necessary by war—and the most important on this side of the Atlantic Ocean.

And the State of New York was charged with this most important and vital operation.

It was a tremendous responsibility. How far-reaching the results of its success or failure would be was seen only by the few. Its immensity was appreciated by a comparatively small number.

It is doubtful if its full importance was ever appreciated by any one connected with the State forces until it was brought forcibly to attention by a staff officer from the Department of the East in September, 1917.

The State of New York, in addition to furnishing its 27th Division and the other famous divisions for the army that was to go overseas, was thus called upon for a military operation within its own borders that affected the very outcome of the struggle between civilization and the Beast of Berlin. It is the period of that operation with which this narrative deals.

And now what of this structure that meant so much in the determination of the world's future history—this structure on which so much stress was placed; around which there centered the history of one of the most remarkable organizations of military annals, that structure of which this work deals? What of the great life-giving artery of the World's Heart?

Despite the fact that it is the second greatest engineering feat of the world, completed, in so far as the system which was guarded is concerned, at a cost of 139 millions of dollars, the mind of the general public has always seemed so hazy as to the exact nature of the Aqueduct, that at the risk of delaying the action of the story, consider for a moment its history, physical features and route from a military viewpoint.

In a few words, the mind must follow the water problems of the City of New York from the days of the original Aqueduct when bored pine logs from the first Pearl Street-Broadway reservoir of 1776 delivered water to a population of 25,000; through similar service by the Manhattan Company in 1800 and in 1830 by the town which had reached then 200,000; on up to the construction of the old Croton system in 1837, the new Croton in 1890, and the rapid outgrowth of system after system, including the Ridgewood of Long Island, until 1917, when the New Catskill Aqueduct began its delivery of water to the City of New York.

By the draining of 257 square miles of the Esopus watershed of the Catskills into the Ashokan Reservoir, and the creation of a great covered conduit leading from the Ashokan Dam to the uttermost limits of the great city and to carry not only the Esopus water, but in the future the drainage of the great Schoharie basin of 314 square miles, the City of New York secured itself against the water problems of all time. In 1917, with the Ashokan-Hill-view portion of the water system completed and furnishing over 300,000,000 gallons daily, New York was fortified against water famine—and more than that—against conflagration.

Not all of the other systems, not all of the marine pumps, the



STATE OF NEW YORK
EXECUTIVE CHAMBER
ALBANY

December 30, 1918.

Colonel John B. Rose,
Headquarters, 1st Provisional Regiment,
Ossining, New York.

My dear Colonel Rose:

At my request in July 1917, you made a survey of the Catskill-Croton Aqueduct System and devised a plan for its protection during the period of hostilities between this country and the Central Powers, and at the urgent request of Brigadier General Louis W. Stotesbury, The Adjutant General, and with my approval, you organized and promptly mobilized the First Provisional Regiment, stationing the various units along the different sectors of the Aqueduct.

No task of greater importance to the State or Nation was assigned to any regiment during the war, and the fact that the water supply has been safeguarded and the great City of New York has been permitted to perform its function as the most important factor in the conduct of the war, is a sufficient indication that the work has been well done.

I desire to take this opportunity of thanking you personally and officially for the excellent work you have performed for the State and the Nation, and to congratulate you upon your success in organizing a regiment which has established an enviable reputation for thoroughness and efficiency.

Sincerely yours,

FROM THE GOVERNOR

IN REPLY
REFER TO

HEADQUARTERS EASTERN DEPARTMENT
GOVERNOR'S ISLAND, NEW YORK CITY

January 14, 1919. JGL-sm

Col. John B. Rose,
Commanding 1st Provisional Regiment
New York State Guard.

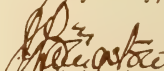
My dear Colonel Rose:

Permit me to congratulate you upon the efficient manner in which the guarding of the long line of the New York aqueduct has been performed by the 1st Provisional Regiment, New York State Guard, under your command.

The guarding of this long and vulnerable line would have been difficult under any circumstances, but was particularly so with the limited number of men at your command. Running as it does, largely through a wild and mountainous country, the aqueduct is easily accessible to enemies with evil intent, it required exceptional organization and the greatest vigilance on the part of all concerned to properly protect it. That you had made a careful study of the entire line and had fully grasped the problem confronting you was evident from the disposition you made of your men. That the instruction of both officers and men had been careful and thorough and that they were fully alive to their responsibilities was clearly demonstrated to me on my recent inspection of a part of the line by the alertness and zeal with which their duties were performed.

That no damage of any kind was done to the aqueduct during the nineteen odd months that we were at war reflects great credit upon all concerned, and you are to be congratulated, and the officers and men of your command highly commended for this most satisfactory result.

Yours very truly,


J. G. Livingston
Adjutant General
Adjutant

FROM THE DEPARTMENT OF THE EAST



THE ADJUTANT GENERAL

December 27, 1918.

Colonel John B. Rose,
1st Provisional Regiment, N.Y.G.,
Ossining, N.Y.

My dear Colonel:

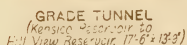
The First Provisional Regiment has accomplished its mission and is about to be relieved from active duty. Its members will return to their civil occupations happy in the knowledge of work well done and with the assurance that they have won for themselves the respect and admiration of the people of the State.

Their task was in general uninteresting and was often performed under the most trying and discouraging circumstances. They suffered all of the hardships of war with no hope that its honors would be theirs. Their loyalty, patriotism and high devotion to duty are worthy of the highest commendation.

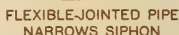
I cannot close without a word of appreciation of the Commanding Officer of the regiment. The organization, recruited from all parts of the State, which you formed almost overnight became under your able leadership thoroughly drilled, disciplined and efficient - fitted in every way to cope with difficult duties which it was called upon to perform. Its history will ever be a testimonial to your untiring energy, splendid leadership and great executive ability.

Your sincere friend,

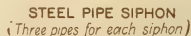
FROM THE ADJUTANT-GENERAL



| PRESSURE TUNNEL | |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Ronaout, Waukell | 14'-6" |
| Moodna | 14'-2" |
| Hudson, Breakneck Croton Lake | 14'-0" |
| Yonkers | 16'-7" |
| City | 15'-0" 14'-0" 13'-0" 12'-0" 11'-0" |



For City conduits of Catskill aqueduct standard bell-and-spigot cast-iron pipes and lock-bar and riveted steel pipes were used.



Standard types of conduit used in the Catskill aqueduct. (In addition to the above, riveted and lock-bar joint steel pipes and bell-and-spigot cast-iron pipes of ordinary types were used.)

pumping stations, the fire tugs and the other fire-fighting auxiliaries held the insurance of this great volume of water swinging down under the pressure of the grades from the Catskills to the hydrant heads of the greater city. The lake from which it takes its original plunge is alone sufficient to cover Manhattan Island with 30 feet of water. Here was real protection.

But the Catskill Aqueduct had been built in the soft years of peace. The standard of those times was, in brief, "There can be no war that will affect this country."

Men said this not without cause. First, desire; second, sincere belief, made for such a standard. The rules for the governing of the quarrels of nations had been laid down in solemn covenants. Arbitration had become the accepted standard of civilized peoples. Although the Brute of Berlin had published in the works of his statecraft and in the printed writings of his masters of fire and steel fair warnings of what he proposed to do, a decent world could not believe in the possibility of the Great Obscenity. And least of all, America—her northern boundaries unmarked for thousands of miles by a fortress or garrison; her southern boundary strong enough in itself to handle the writhings of a half-civilized and vastly inferior neighbor, her coasts protected by thousands of miles of ocean waters.

And men built as they believed. The architecture of 20th century Americanism reflects the spirit of the times, the certainty that a great war in which this country could be involved was impossible. Constantly the call of the people was for smaller and smaller forces of land and sea. The nation revelled in the days of peace and its architecture proclaimed the national belief.

Nowhere was this better demonstrated than in the construction of the great Catskill Water System. Unlike the great water conduits of ancient Rome, the Appian, the Marcian, the Tepulan, and the Julian, the Aqueduct of Claudius and the Old and New Anio, so built that they might not be tampered with by the enemy, the Catskill Aqueduct at the time of this nation's participation in the great war lay open to the hand of the German agent at nearly 300 vulnerable points.

For its structure of concrete, or steel, as the case might be, varying from 10 to 17 feet in its largest diameter, the reader has only to refer to the appended charts which tell the story better than many words. Where the Aqueduct bored its steel or rock tunnels through the mountains or hills there was no danger. But where, in its long swing from the headworks to its final plunge at Hillview, it was repeatedly transversed by culverts running beneath the flow of water; where it was marked by naked siphon

pipes at the lower levels of the valleys it crossed, and whenever or wherever, because of its structure, it was open to the violence of high explosive, there it must be guarded.

There was little danger to the Aqueduct from the top. Nothing short of modern machinery and constant labor could injure the surface of the cut and cover structure, for the great pipe was never full save at the siphons where the water crossed from one side of a valley to another under terrific pressure. But it were an easy matter for a dozen men in an organized attempt to place in as many unguarded culverts between the storage lake at Kensico and the Hillview reservoir sufficient explosive to rip open the great structure from beneath. Two or three others could, with a few hours of labor, blast out the mighty face of the Kensico dam from the chambers. And before the damage could have been righted, New York would have been put to the torch.

Now consider the course of the Aqueduct itself.

From the Ashokan Reservoir at 610 feet above the sea, down through the gate houses of the headworks, and the siphons of the Tongore and Esopus and the Olive Bridge and Atwood cut and cover, the water roars through the Peak tunnel and along the mountain's rim to the Valley of the Rondout.

Dropping below sea-level itself in the four-mile swing beneath the Rondout Valley, the solid volume surges through the steel siphons upward again to an elevation of 462 before it plunges through the Bonticou tunnel beneath the craggy Shawangunks to the Mohonk levels and so to the Walkill Siphons. There it drops below sea-level again under the Walkill River, rising to the 16 miles of cut and cover, southeasterly to the edge of the Hudson south of Cornwall.

Then it drops—down, down through the Moodna and the Hudson pressure tunnels, through the living granite foundations of Storm King Mountain—down 1,500 feet and five and a half miles across before it rises from the welter, the boil and the darkness of the subterranean passages with the roar of Niagara in the throat of the Breakneck uptake shaft on the eastern shore.

And now through Bull Hill, the alternating cut and cover that lies between the Foundry and the Indian Brook exposed siphons, the Garrison tunnel where it shoots beneath the State highway, Cat Hill, Peekskill Hollow Creek east of the town itself, and to another long line of cut and cover and to the Hunter's Brook siphons.

From the Scribner tunnel and the Turkey Mountain siphons it goes down under Croton Lake and up on the other side, now head-

ing due south through the Croton, Chedeyne and Millwood tunnels, Sarles Hill, the Harlem siphons, and so to Kensico with its Cyclopean dam.

Feeding into Kensico Reservoir through the great influent and leaving it at a level of 1.339, the great conduit enters the country of open cut and cover and the southern siphons. Through the Lakehurst, Dike, Kensico, Eastview and Elmsford tunnels with intermittent cut and cover plentifully strewn with vulnerable culverts, it follows the 10 miles of straight line and sweeping siphon that parallel closely the great Central Avenue, and so on to Hillview Reservoir. There it makes its last appearance above the surface before the long tunnel plunge into Greater New York.

In all it traverses a distance of 95 miles of line, interspersed with the vulnerable culvert, the siphon, and the access chamber, long blow-off channels whence over-supply or for that matter the entire flow of the Aqueduct may flow. Nearly 100 miles through forests, mountains, back ways, and along the edge of teeming towns, or the cities of the lower Hudson, where German propaganda raised its head many times and oft in the months that followed the declaration of war.

Often so close to the highway, as in the Millwood section, that the man in the motor-car might fling into the open culvert the bomb-seed of chaos and destruction, running for miles and miles through country so wild that the men who guarded it in later days shot bear and wildcats from their posts, it was an invitation to organized destructive effort. Only constant vigilance could guarantee its inviolability.

Is there wonder then that when the first note of war's alarm had rung in the council chambers of the nations, Major-General John F. O'Ryan, commanding the New York Division of the National Guard, ordered into the blizzard of February, 1917, the First and the Tenth Infantries to take over and be responsible for the Aqueduct.

And fighting the snowdrifts, as those who followed them in later days were destined to fight again, the men of the First and the Tenth began that long vigil that was never broken until after they themselves had relinquished the thankless task to others, and had smashed their way across the Hindenburg line.

From February, 1917, until the 10th of August in the same year, the forces of the National Guard of the State of New York, well equipped and from 3,200 to 4,000 strong, with 20,000 reserves at home stations, held the great artery against the threat that lurked at the very heart of the world itself. Fired on again

and again, ever conscious of the sinister hand that awaited in the darkness, the men of the National Guard who were to come to grips with the masters of that hand in the far-flung battle-line of Flanders, held the Aqueduct safe until midsummer brought federalization and orders to move.

MOBILIZATION

" . . . *You never ate from a wash-bowl plate
Nor slept on a Junior cot!
You never done with one blanket—one!
We did, my boy, and we called it fun . . .*"
—"The Veteran Speaks."

PART I

PREPARATION

PANCHO VILLA, arch thief and bandit of the Mexican Border, probably never heard of the New York Aqueduct. In all likelihood he never considered he would have any effect on it any more than he figured he would be responsible for bringing to the attention of the American people the man who would eventually command the troops that drove the clinching spikes into the Kaiser's wooden overcoat. But whether Villa knew about it, knows about it, or ever learns of it, the fact remains that he is indirectly very responsible for the organization which was called upon to guard the vital line between the Catskills and New York City during the participation of this country in the world war.

The trouble in Mexico during 1916 took from their armories practically all of the troops of the New York National Guard. The war clouds continued to pile up on the horizon through the summer and many of the units went south to the Border—result, the formation of depot units of the various regiments.

Although the old First Infantry, with its usual luck, was left behind at Camp Whitman, where it chafed throughout the period of Federal service, there was delegated that summer to Major John B. Rose, former State senator, and member of the Military Affairs Committee, and former captain of Company E, First Infantry, Newburgh, the task of raising depot units for the various companies that had been called from their armories. When the old units returned to their armories the depot organizations lapsed, but during the period of the Mexican campaign there had been formed the nucleus for the body which was to later take the place of the National Guard, State of New York. Incidentally there

had also been born the beginnings of the organization to which was to be committed the care of New York City's insurance against destruction.

Major Rose had toured through the entire district covered by the old First Infantry and had organized wherever there were armories, depot companies to take the place of those in the Mexican service. Unfortunately, not all of the officers secured to take up this work received their commissions at that time, but this was finally adjusted so that in 1917 there were no broken promises as a result of depot organization.

In July, 1917, the City of New York was advised that the Federalized State troops would be taken from that duty early in August. At this time it was certain that within a month New York State would be stripped of its armed forces.

At first the city contemplated the use of civilian police, but this was abandoned as impracticable, due to the immensity of the work and the fact that the task was essentially not a police matter, but a military operation. It was then that the City of New York through Commissioner Arthur Woods, as the representative of the Mayor, called upon the State of New York for troops to guard the water supply.

Whereas in the old days the Governor would have dismissed the situation with orders bringing one or two regiments into the field, the State was, under conditions then existing, brought by this request face to face with a military crisis without precedent in its annals. An important military operation was to be carried on within its own borders—how important only a few realized. The question was, "Where is the force that will carry it on?" Governor Whitman remembered the preparation of the summer of 1916 and called Major Rose to Albany on July 29th.

"Make a survey of the Aqueduct and give me a report on how many men will be necessary to guard it and how it can be worked out," the Commander-in-Chief of the State forces told the Major.

Major Rose went to New York and met in conference with Col. J. Weston Myers, Chief Quartermaster of the State, and in charge of the New York Arsenal; Colonel Edward V. Howard, Paymaster General of the State, and Inspector James Cohalane of the New York police force. These three, at the end of the preliminary conference, began an inspection of the Aqueduct, which they covered in its practical entirety in 48 hours. It was on this inspection that the man who was later to become responsible for its safekeeping first realized the vulnerability of the Aqueduct and the magnitude of the task which would confront any organization guarding it in war time. After two sleepless

days of survey from Hillview to the headworks at Ashokan, the party returned to Newburgh, where Major Rose prepared his report to Governor Whitman.

This report, written at the City Club on the night of the party's return, recommended that with the transportation, lighting facilities and safeguards that had been agreed upon by the City's representative, Inspector Cohalane, as essential, the work then being done by approximately 3,200 Federalized guardsmen could be carried on by a minimum of 1,200 men.

This figure, as will be noted, was minimum and was based upon the immediate furnishing of transportation, lights, telephones and culvert screenings by the City of New York.

Governor Whitman's reply to the report was to ask Major Rose to take the task with the commission of colonel. This was followed on Monday, August 6th, at 11 A.M., by a conference in the office of Brigadier-General R. Dyer at 66 Broadway, at which representatives of the State and City met for a final agreement as to the disposition and equipping of the troops which were to take up the work.

This conference was the result of appointment made with Hon. John Purroy Mitchel, Mayor of the City of New York, through General Dyer, who was at that time serving in the Division of Defense and Security, the Adjutant-General's department. The effects of the meeting and the questions which rose as a result of it were of such far-reaching nature and had so much bearing on the history of the First Provisional Regiment that they deserve some careful attention.

From the first it should be remembered that Colonel Rose regarded the work to be performed as a military operation rather than a tour of field duty. The correctness of his position was proven not only by later events in the history of the war, and of the work itself, but by the expressed opinion of every military authority who later came into contact with the work and methods of the First Provisional.

The problem resolved itself into this: Guard the 267 vulnerable points of this artery so vital and necessary to the great Port of the City of New York with 1,200 men, most of whom must be necessarily green troops, and commanded by officers either drawn from reserve lists or new in the command of troops.

At the outset the geographical factor loomed large. As a matter of fact, the geographical equation of the task performed by the First Provisional Regiment has been one of the most important if not the most important things to be considered, and wherever in later days there was misunderstanding as to the needs

of the work it was largely due to inability on the part of those who questioned to appreciate this factor. The wanderings of the Aqueduct from the cloud-wreathed peaks of the 'Shokan to the lights of New York City have been described. It was to be a long line and a thin line as a result. More than that, it was to be a thin line full of vulnerable points. These vulnerable points must be protected as much as possible by artificial means that would aid the sentries and make patrol guarding possible at many places. Gratings for the culverts would go far toward solving this problem, and it was agreed by the representatives of the Department of Water Supply, Gas and Electricity, the Comptroller's Office, and General Dyer, that the plan adopted by Colonel Rose and Inspector Cohalane of grating the culverts should be adopted by the city. The culverts and other vulnerable points were also to be lighted, and in this manner as much assistance given to the man on post as possible.

But with all this, only incessant supervision and inspection could make possible such a task with such a number of men, and it was agreed upon that 8 large touring-cars, 18 light trucks and as many light touring-cars, 25 motorcycles and 80 bicycles were to be furnished the regiment immediately for necessary transportation.

It enters this tale for the first time, a four-syllable word at the end of a more or less weighty paragraph, but before the last word of this history is told it will have assumed gigantic proportions—proportions which at times overshadowed all other considerations and all other propositions. It is no idle statement that on transportation depended the very life of the First Provisional Regiment, for this was repeatedly demonstrated. Scatter 1,200 men, or 1,500 men, as the case may be, along 95 miles of territory, including somewhat more than 156 road miles of posts and outposts, and you have only one answer—transportation. From the first it was evident that the transportation channels already provided by public utilities, such as steam and electric roads and water courses, would be of little avail to the men of the First Provisional Regiment . . . the line followed by the New York Aqueduct was sufficient indication of that as the new commander of the Aqueduct forces looked at the maps laid before him by the representatives of the City of New York. The great commerce-bearing course of the Hudson approximately paralleled the Aqueduct from its source to its outlet in the faucets and taps of New York City; the West Shore, the New York Central, the D. & H., the Walkill Valley Railroads, and the Harlem, Putnam and Main-line divisions of the New York Central all ran through the terri-

tory in a general way, but with the exception of two or three isolated instances, none of these conveyors of the goods of man was of any service to the First Provisional in its work. In the broader and more wholesale way that interested the Regimental Supply Officer in the shipment of car-load lots to the two great distributing points of food and supplies—one at New Paltz and the other at Millwood—later at Peekskill, these routes were useful, but not for distribution to sectors.

Transportation for the individual sector must of needs be furnished for the distribution of food to the various posts from the main headquarters. Scores of persons have argued the whys and wherefores of First Provisional transportation. There have been a thousand and one suggestions of those theorists who at one time and another sought to apply the rule of three to a proposition without precedent in the books or in service itself. But never yet has there been found a better plan than that which the Commanding Officer outlined to the regimental and battalion supply officers and to the company commanders themselves in the early days of mobilization—"Feed the men."

The beautiful plans and the wonderful theories of the arm-chair experts failed miserably time after time, but the slogan of "Feed the men" was carried out by the simple matter of food distribution. After all, there is only one way to feed men and that is to give them food. Men who are guarding 95 miles of territory cannot go after their subsistence to the regimental mess kitchen, nor can their company commanders stroll over to the Camp Quartermaster's Depot and make their selections. The food must be taken to them.

All this is a part of the premise that geographical conditions were far and away the biggest factor in the life of the First Provisional Regiment, and especially in regard to the vital question of transportation. The delivery of subsistence was but one phase of this. Food must be taken to the men, but the very nature of the line was such that only constant, careful, and adequate supervision would make possible the covering of these 267 more or less vulnerable points of New York City's water supply with 1,200 men. It was this point that Colonel Rose made clear to the minds of those men who gathered in General Dyer's office on the morning of August 6th. Inspector Cohalane needed no conviction on the matter—his mind was already made up.

The transportation listed above was agreed upon, and the totals should be noted carefully. At the same time it was agreed that pending the delivery of this transportation, the Commanding Officer of the Regiment should have authority to hire such trans-

portation as was necessary for the movement of troops and supplies until the promised vehicles should be delivered.

But this solved only a part of the problem which Colonel Rose, as the Commanding Officer of the new organization, must face if the question were to be met successfully. With the factor of geography again militating against success there was the creation of regimental cohesion, regimental unity and organization consciousness absolutely necessary to the *esprit de corps* so vitally essential in such a work. From all parts of the State there were to be brought together all sorts and conditions of men from practically every organization then extant. These were to be welded into an organization which of necessity was without tradition, without precedent, and without that organization consciousness so helpful to the regiment in the field, whether on the field of battle or the parade ground. It would not be sufficient to assemble these various parts into a great machine. The parts must become the machine, lose their identity in the machine, and think, work, and believe in the machine and for the machine only.

Not that competition was not to be encouraged; not that these units were to be alienated permanently from their home organizations, but that their first loyalty, their first duty and their first thought must be for the body of which they were a working part.

Why? Because there was a mission to perform, and without *esprit de corps*; without united effort; without team play, it could not be performed satisfactorily. There must be concerted action, support and team play. Every man in the new regiment must have but one idea in mind—to guard the Aqueduct of the City of New York efficiently, thoroughly, and every hour of the twenty-four. There must be this one big central thought if this operation were to be successful.

To create this unity would be no easy task as the prospective Commanding Officer of the Regiment well knew as he laid his plans. The period of service was for the time indefinite, with a preponderance of opinion that it would be at the most of a few months' duration. The attitude of the times was significant and was reflected in this belief. America, as yet unwakened by the smell of her own blood on the battle-fields of France, looked on in half indifference while her sons girded for the fight. German propaganda, never more rampant than at this period, sent forth the whisper that it would all be over before American boys could be hurt, and the agents of the Beast of Berlin fanned this whisper to a half-expressed national hope that found voice, though

furtively, as the nation prepared for war. Peace before participation was the attitude and its result was to be found everywhere.

The results of this attitude were perhaps nowhere more apparent than in the armories from New York to Rochester and from Watertown to Binghamton, where the depot units which were to be called on for service on the Aqueduct hastened their recruiting. The call for National Guard enlistment, for army and naval service, and for officers' training-camps had taken a large percentage of the nation's natural fighters and adventurers. The lure of the job and the call of the dollar had not as yet given way to the clamor of war, and it was in this period of partial stagnation after the first leap of recruiting that the depot units sought to build up their forces for the service which was imminent.

The departure of the National Guard from the State bid fair to strip the State of equipment and clothing for its new units, the majority of the troops entering the field for service with the First Provisional Regiment were but half equipped, despite the best efforts that could be made, and this in itself had a deterrent effect on recruiting. At home stations the ranks filled slowly.

So that it was no certainty which faced Colonel Rose when he contemplated the problem that he had accepted as his. The future was anything but bright and under the best conditions the task was tremendous. Consider for a moment, now, the troops ordered into the field for initial mobilization, as described in the following table:

FROM THE 1ST INFANTRY

| <i>Company</i> | <i>Home Station</i> | <i>Enlisted Men</i> | <i>Officers</i> |
|----------------|---------------------|---------------------|--|
| A | Utica | 57 | Capt. Alfred Broadbent 1st Lt. Charles B. Cleary 2nd Lt. George B. Snowden |
| B | Utica | 37 | Capt. Charles J. Lamb 1st Lt. T. R. Hutton 2nd Lt. Stuart Richards |
| C | Watertown | 20 | 1st Lt. William J. Rivers (commissioned later) |
| F | Walton | 40 | Capt. Arthur E. Conner 1st Lt. Rae C. Launt |
| G | Oneonta | 20 | 1st Lt. F. M. H. Jackson |
| H | Binghamton | 70 | 1st Lt. J. Roy Wilbur 2nd Lt. Charles H. Hinman |

H-A-L-TT !—WHA-ZAA ?

FROM THE 10TH INFANTRY

| <i>Company</i> | <i>Home Station</i> | <i>Enlisted Men</i> | <i>Officers</i> |
|----------------|---------------------|---------------------|---|
| F | Hudson | 115 | Capt. Benedict Gifford 1st Lt. Edw. L. Harder 2nd Lt. Tremain McKinstry |

FROM THE 12TH INFANTRY

| <i>Company</i> | <i>Home Station</i> | <i>Enlisted Men</i> | <i>Officers</i> |
|----------------|---------------------|---------------------|--|
| A | New York | 80 | Capt. Howland Pell 1st Lt. Irving Ussicker 2nd Lt. Arthur Wynne |
| B | New York | 82 | Capt. Ernest Van Zandt 1st Lt. Edward Strauss 2nd Lt. Edward J. Murphy |

FROM THE 69TH INFANTRY

| <i>Company</i> | <i>Home Station</i> | <i>Enlisted Men</i> | <i>Officers</i> |
|----------------|---------------------|---------------------|---------------------|
| A | New York | 50 | Capt. John J. Roche |

FROM THE VETERAN CORPS OF ARTILLERY

| <i>Company</i> | <i>Home Station</i> | <i>Enlisted Men</i> | <i>Officers</i> |
|--------------------------|---------------------|---------------------|---|
| Provisional Battery A | } New York | 115 | Capt. S. Edson Gage 1st Lt. Theodore T. Lane 1st Lt. Raymond L. Taft |
| Provisional Battery B | | | Capt. Adam T. Shurick 1st Lt. John M. Perry 2nd Lt. Electus T. Backus |

FROM THE 1ST FIELD ARTILLERY

| <i>Company</i> | <i>Home Station</i> | <i>Enlisted Men</i> | <i>Officers</i> |
|----------------|---------------------|---------------------|---|
| Battery C | Binghamton | 100 | Capt. John W. Johnson 1st Lt. Otis D. Eaton 2nd Lt. Carl Robinson |

FROM THE 9TH C. A. C.

| <i>Company</i> | <i>Home Station</i> | <i>Enlisted Men</i> | <i>Officers</i> |
|----------------|---------------------|---------------------|------------------------|
| 4th Co. | New York | 50 | Capt. John M. Thompson |

FROM THE 7TH INFANTRY

| <i>Company</i> | <i>Home Station</i> | <i>Enlisted Men</i> | <i>Officers</i> |
|----------------|---------------------|---------------------|--|
| C | New York | 40 | Capt. James R. Stewart 1st Lt. Francis D. Clark 2nd Lt. Edwin M. Leask |

FROM THE 1ST CAVALRY

| <i>Company</i> | <i>Home Station</i> | <i>Enlisted Men</i> | <i>Officers</i> |
|----------------|---------------------|---------------------|---|
| Troop B | Albany | 68 | Capt. Maurice Damon 1st Lt. F. M. Van Noughuys 2nd Lt. Edgar B. Clerk |
| Troop H | Rochester | 40 | 1st Lt. Howard Converse 2nd Lt. William C. Barry |

Barely over 1,000 men for initial effort, and for the most part green troops officered by men from all points of the compass, most of them unknown to the Commanding Officer. This was the State's total reserve and was all that could be obtained at that time.

The organization names used in this table are those which were effective at the time of the entry of the First Provisional Regiment into the field and before the reorganization of the State forces which resulted in the New York Guard.

The Veteran Corps of Artillery, which in this emergency furnished a provisional battalion with organization complete, commanded by Major W. L. Hodges, with 1st Lt. Frank L. Davidson as Adjutant and 2nd Lt. H. Pushae Williams as Supply Officer, had never before been called into State service, although this organization, one of the oldest in the State, had for some time been subject to State call. It should be said at this time that the service which the men of the Veteran Corps of Artillery performed was invaluable. Of them and their trials more will be told later.

At the New York State Arsenal, while in conference with Colonel Myers, Colonel Rose had met Major William L. Burnett, formerly of the 10th Infantry, who was then serving as camp quartermaster in the first of the great cadet camps established by the State of New York under the Military Training Commission at Peekskill. In this way the man who as second in command was to play such a prominent part in the life of the organization first came in contact with it and was at that time informed by Colonel Rose that his services would be needed with the Aqueeduct Regiment immediately upon completion of the task at

Peekskill. At the same time Colonel Rose met Capt. L. B. De Garmo of the 14th Infantry, a supply officer with Border experience, and, at the recommendation of Colonel Myers, took Captain De Garmo for his Supply Officer. Captain De Garmo also acted as Adjutant until August 12th. With him came Lt. Elmer H. Miller, an Oklahoman of Border experience who had served with Captain De Garmo in the Mexican trouble.

On August 6th there issued from the office of the Adjutant-General, then Louis W. Stotesbury, Special Orders No. 198, which created the First Provisional Regiment, placed Colonel Rose at the head of it and directed that he confer with the officials of the City of New York and the Chief Quartermaster of the State as to the distribution of the troops and their care. It is printed in full herewith:

STATE OF NEW YORK
THE ADJUTANT-GENERAL'S OFFICE
ALBANY

August 6, 1917.

Special Orders }
No. 198 }

1. It having been made to appear to the Governor that in the state of war now existing, grave danger is apprehended and exists as to the safety of property and public utilities of the City of New York and more particularly the water system of said city and that there is imminent danger of attempts being made to destroy and injure said property and of breaches of the peace, tumult and riot in connection with such attempts and the Mayor of the said City of New York having requested the Governor to order out a sufficient military force of the State in aid of the civil authorities, in accordance with the provisions of law, I do, by virtue of the Constitution and Laws of the State, order out the following military forces of the State for the protection of said property and public utilities.

A provisional regiment of infantry of 12 companies to be formed of detachments of organizations of the Military forces of the State to be selected by the officer hereinafter designated to command same and to consist of not to exceed 53 officers and 1200 enlisted men of appropriate grades, including a sanitary detachment of 4 officers and 10 men.

2. The detachments composing said provisional regiment to be designated as above set forth will be assembled at their respective armories at 7 P.M. on Tuesday, August 7th, 1917, under orders of the Commanding Officer of said regiment and will take over the guarding of said property at 6 P.M., Friday, August 10th, 1917.

3. Colonel John B. Rose, 1st Infantry, New York Guard, is hereby detailed to active duty and will at once assume command of the troops ordered out under this order. He will confer with the Mayor of the City of New York as to the disposition of troops to guard said property, and with the Chief Quartermaster, State Quartermaster Corps, State Arsenal, 463 Seventh Avenue, New York City, as to subsistence and transportation for his command. Five days' rations will be purchased locally and taken in the field with troops placed on duty under this order.

4. Commutation of rations at the rate of 75 cents per day is authorized wherever it is impracticable to furnish rations in kind. Wherever cooking facilities are available rations in kind will be issued at the rate of 52 cents per day.

5. The Chief Quartermaster, State Quartermaster Corps, will issue the necessary transportation.

6. No debts will be contracted or obligations incurred except as expressly authorized by orders from this office. No horses will be hired without like authority. The requirements of the Military Law and Regulations will be strictly followed in all purchases.

By Command of the Governor,
LOUIS W. STOTESBURY,
The Adjutant-General.

Official:

EDWARD J. WESTCOTT

Major, Asst. to the Adjutant-General.

There have been many discussions at one time and another as to the broad powers which this order bestowed upon the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment. It is doubtful whether an order less embracing in its scope would have met the conditions with which the First Provisional Regiment was obliged to cope time and again throughout its existence. S. O. 198 was, as freely translated by the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment, tantamount to a charter. The one feature in it which militated against the full comfort of the men of the regiment—the 52-cent ration allowance—was later rem-

edied and a 65-cent ration was authorized, and still later, a full 75-cent ration.

It should be noted that the choice of the units which were to comprise the First Provisional Regiment was left to the Commanding Officer—something new in the history of mobilization orders, but made necessary by the very military exigencies of the time. The State of New York, face to face with an unprecedented situation, had to meet it in an unprecedented manner. There was but one thing to do—cut red tape and secure the answer, and this was done by Governor Whitman.

PART II

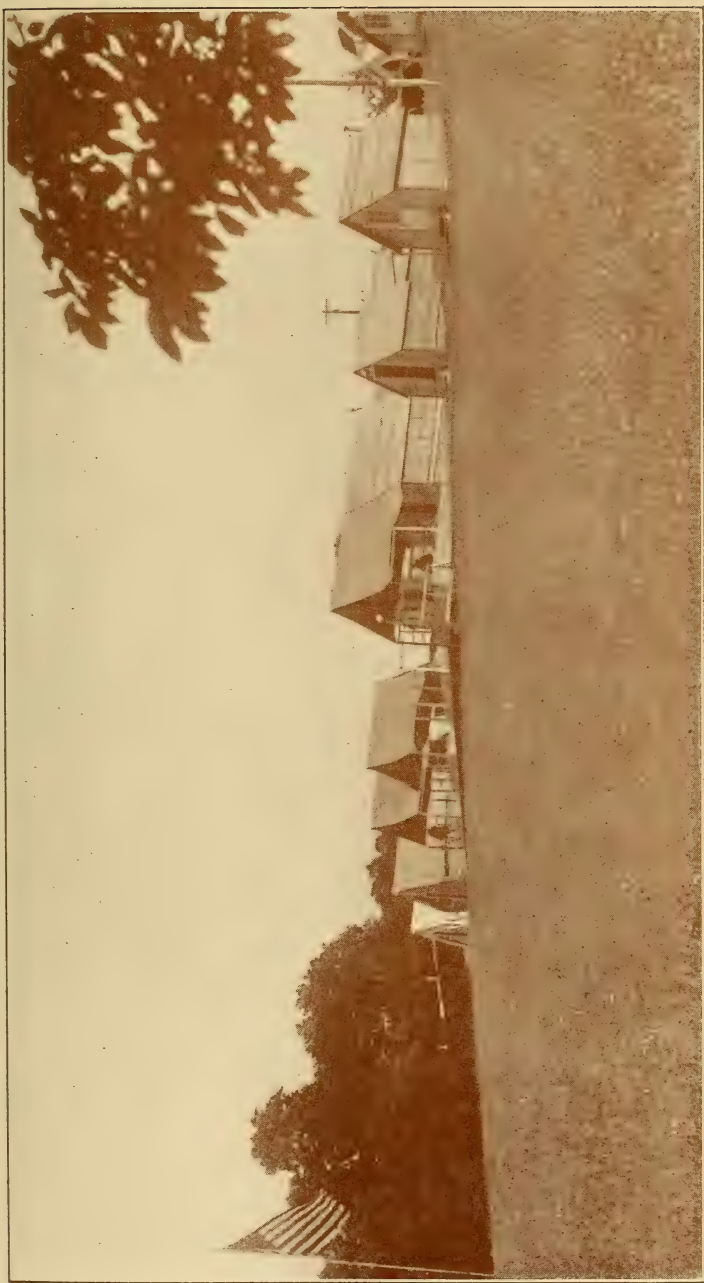
CONCENTRATION

Friday, August 10th, was the time set on which the line of the New York City Water System was to be taken over from the National Guard troops then on duty. In view of the fact that the troops which were to be called into the field were for the most part without field training, Colonel Rose determined to give as much time as possible for field acclimation, and as a result, warning orders went out to all units on the 5th and 6th. On the night of the 7th, orders were sent out to the units which were to move from up-State on the 8th.

Captain De Garmo had been sent north to locate a mobilization point for the units which were to take over the sector of the Aqueduct on the western side of the Hudson, then covered by the 10th and 47th Infantry, and Troop A, 1st Squadron Cavalry. The unoccupied Lambert farm on the bluffs above Highland had been selected as the most desirable place and as a result there detrained at Highland on the afternoon of August 8th Companies A and B of the 1st Infantry from Utica, and Troop B from Albany, first of the units of the First Provisional Regiment to arrive for that service, which covered a period of more than 18 months, in which the fate of the world was settled.

These units, marching up through Highland, with Troop B leading, debouched in a hayfield just opposite the Lambert House and awaited orders and tentage, about 4 o'clock in the afternoon.

From even a casual glance, the expert could have told at once of the situation faced by the State of New York in that, its time of greatest need. The men of Troop B, of Albany, organized for some little time and close to the source of supply, were well-equipped and ready for practically any kind of field duty. The



REGIMENTAL HEADQUARTERS, CROTON LAKE



COMPANY C OF THE SEVENTH AT PLEASANTVILLE, FALL OF 1917

men of Company A came next on the scale, cared for in so far as uniforms went, for the most part, but in sad need of everything else, while the men of Company B were pathetic in their civilian-military attire. Some had hats and hats only, others were blessed with uniform blouses which, in combination with civilian trousers, lent a Mexican Army atmosphere to the picture, while still others were uniformed throughout excepting hats—and wore derbies. Practically every man in the company carried a paper bundle or a bag. They had no blankets, some were without ponchos, and none had cots. They sat down on the slope which ran up from the hayfield to the public highway and waited for something to happen. Their officers gathered in a knot in the center of the field and discussed the probabilities of the baggage arriving.

Lieut. Elmer H. Miller had been assigned to the work of establishing the camp at Lambert Farm, and it was he who met the incoming troops, guided them to their destination and made provisions for getting to the camp such baggage as they had. As a matter of fact, Troop B, under command of Captain Maurice Damon, was the only unit to enter camp that night with any large amount of baggage. It was the Troop B range and five days' travel ration that saved the situation at Lambert Farm. Captain Damon placed his entire equipment at the disposal of the other units, and with details drawn from each company for wood and cooking, supper was started as soon as the field range came up from the railroad.

About 6 o'clock the first of the trucks placed at the disposal of Colonel Rose by Colonel Myers arrived with the first of the tentage and it was while the white balls of canvas were rolling off the truck in the late afternoon light that the yellow Pathfinder of the Commanding Officer, which was to play such a large part in the early days of the regiment, boomed up the private road to the hayfield. The cogs of regimental history engaged as Colonel Rose met the first of his command.

Captain Charles J. Lamb, commanding Company B, 1st Infantry, was placed in command of the camp by the Commanding Officer, who, after indicating what equipment and supplies were on the way, left for the south with the information that he would return the following morning.

Before Colonel Rose went, Company F, 10th Infantry of Hudson, came in, 115 strong, under command of Capt. Benedict Gifford, and was assigned to transversal streets at the lower end of the camp. Troop B was given the Number One street parallel to the private right of way, Company B the second street and Com-

pany A the third. While the cooking-fires crackled about the single field range the white conicals rose in the twilight.

There was but one axe in the camp, with never a maul or a mallet, and had these first men of the First Provisional waited for axes they would have slept under the stars that night. Popular opinion gives to Sergeant Stanley Soltys of Company B the credit for discovering that stone walls could be used in the erection of tents. Within five minutes after the first pegs were hammered in with the weapons of the Stone Age, rocks were the fashion all over the camp and the conicals went up fast. There was but one drawback. Most of the crude hammers were left where they were last used, and there is at least one officer in the First Provisional Regiment who still carries a scar as the result of a night tumble over one of the primitive mauls.

The trucks which carried the cots did not arrive, but there was a quantity of fairly dry hay available and the up-State men carried it into the tents in great armfuls, using the dryest of it to sleep on and the rest for floor covering. About this time the first of the food was ready, and the scanty supper was dealt out from the fires. It was not much of a meal, as meals go, but it stopped the stomach pangs and made sleep easier. By the time it was about over the detachment from Company C, Watertown, marched into camp and had to be fed.

Company F of Hudson did the first actual guard duty of the First Provisional Regiment, for the guard was drawn that night from Company F. The guard-house was originally established by the pump-house just in rear of the officers' quarters, but later by the gate at the entrance to the farm.

Speaking of the pump-house; if there was one thing with which the first Camp Rose, for so it was named by Captain Lamb, was blessed, it was an abundance of water, somewhat mineral in nature, but clean and pure, that poured in a two-inch stream from the artesian well below the concrete pump-house. One of the first details of the new camp was the pump detail.

Like all first-night camps, it was a more or less noisy and unsettled proposition until along toward midnight, although Troop B's trumpet blew an early Tattoo. Most of the officers worked over their records until late, and at varied intervals throughout the night the trucks continued to arrive.

There was little sleep, and the wonder is that there was any at all, for nine out of every ten men were blanketless and the only cots in the camp were the private ones. This is colloquial and not military; the cots belonged to officers.

During the night a slight rain set in, and it was anything

but cheerful in the bare tents. The morning dawned wet and nasty, turned to cold gray and stayed that way until about noon. But despite it all there was not a sniffle in the entire camp, and while everybody was a bit stiff and tired, the only real trouble came from spider bites. Company F picked up a couple of nasty ones and one of them went over to Highland for treatment in Colonel Rose's car later in the morning.

The breakfast was a meager proposition, with wash-basins as the only mess kits and the menu rather slim. Just after it was finished Colonel Rose arrived, bringing with him Inspector Cohalane of the New York Police Department, a quiet, keen-eyed little man in gray woollens and gray cap, who surveyed the officers as he met them, each in a long, sweeping look that missed not a detail.

Officers' Call brought the commissioned personnel of the camp to Capt. Lamb's tent, where a full-length skeleton blueprint of the Aqueduct hung, together with a chart map of the lower end of the line.

And while the officers stood about the door of the tent the Commanding Officer painted the first of what was known in later days as "The Big Picture," the picture of the mission which had been assigned to the First Provisional Regiment.

He told first of the needs of a great city and the millions of gallons of water flowing daily through the shell of the Aqueduct; he explained the culvert and its vulnerability; the necessity for constant inspection of all parts of a vulnerable point; the danger point of the siphon-house and the other Aqueduct structures; and then the method by which he proposed to guard it with the 1,200 men that were to take the place of 3,700 men at 6 o'clock the next evening.

The line of the Aqueduct had been cut into five divisions—A, B, C, D, and E, each division to be in charge of two captains, who would have joint responsibility for their division, in so far as the safety of it was concerned, though property responsibility would be divided and not borne jointly. At no time could both captains be away from their line. Their lieutenants would be in charge of the sub-sectors and would be held accountable for the condition of each sub-sector. The captains' chief duty was to be that of inspection; paper work was to be minimized, and the captains were to sleep at each outpost on their lines.

An Inspecting Major, Colonel Rose explained, would have charge of each side of the river, his headquarters any place where night overtook him, and his office in his automobile. Only incessant inspection would result in the answer he was after, Colonel

Rose told the listening officers. It was to be the hardest kind of work for the officers—harder for them than for the men, and if there were any who were not prepared for the heaviest work of their existence he wanted to know it then and there.

“In most military organizations it is conceded that the private has the hardest job, the corporal the next hardest, and so on, up until when you get into the senior commissioned officers it is thought to be a comparatively easy thing,” he told his hearers; “but in this organization that scheme will be reversed. It is the enlisted man who will have the easier job than the officer, and the higher the officer the harder he must work. The nearer you get to Regimental Headquarters the faster you’ll find the wheels spinning and the harder will be the work. We are not out here for a tour of duty; we are out here to perform a mission, and we expect to do it the best we know how. There will be no big headquarters company, no band, no concerts, no show. Everything throughout this regiment will be on the basis of actual field service and that is all.”

Then he indicated where the troops were to go—Company F of the 10th, under Captain Gifford, and the detachment of Company C of Watertown on the lower end of Division D, from Vails Gate to St. Elmo; Troop H of Rochester, which had been delayed, from St. Elmo to the Walkill Siphon; and Troop B on to Bonticou Tunnel. For the first movement Companies A and B of Utica would take over Division E, although Company H of Binghamton, which was to arrive that afternoon, was to be sent in at the Peak as soon as it had been given a breathing spell in the field.

The officers were directed to go to the various sectors which they were to occupy and make a physical inspection of the various posts, securing all information possible from the commanding officers of the outgoing troops.

There was a certain amount of psychological danger in this, for those officers were to command smaller forces than those who were leaving. For instance, the sector between the Vails Gate and the Walkill Pressure Tunnel was covered by Companies E, F, G and H of the 47th Infantry and Troop A, 1st Squadron, 1st New York Cavalry. The remainder of the Aqueduct on the west side of the Hudson was covered by Company E, 1st Infantry, Companies A, C and D of the 10th Infantry. But the officers were warned that they must not attempt comparisons in numerical strength; their disposition of forces must be based on what they actually had, not what they might think they should have.

When Colonel Rose finished speaking he introduced Inspector

Cohalane, who took up the matter of posts and guard-duty tours. The Police Department of the City of New York had worked out a table of eight-hour duty which resulted, he said, in benefit to the men on the job, and it was at his suggestion that Colonel Rose had agreed to adoption of the eight-on-sixteen-off plan of guard duty as far as applicable to the service on hand. The Inspector told of the need of vigilance, indicated what might be expected in the way of an attempt to destroy the Aqueduct and reiterated the importance of the duty.

Just before mess-time Colonel Rose went to Highland. The transportation promised by the city had not arrived and he was not altogether satisfied with the speed at which supplies and equipment were being received. Following a vigorous half-hour of long-distance telephone conferences with General Dyer, State Camp, Captain De Garmo and the Adjutant-General's Office, the Commanding Officer returned for mess, and immediately after mess the men of the various units were gathered in the shade near the private highway for their first inoculation—the inoculation of that *esprit de corps* which was to take the First Provisional Regiment through the trials of the coming days.

And the inoculation “took” as it had with the officers earlier in the day. It was perhaps the first campaign in history where the rank and file of an organization were at the outset taken into the full confidence of their Commanding Officer as to his aims and plans, but the results among the men at Camp Rose, as well as among those of the other concentration camp at Peekskill, showed the wisdom of it. Although those who looked on and listened did not realize it, they were watching the first steps in the welding of regimental whole, and the inspiration of a regimental consciousness.

The picture of that first big men's conference is one that will always remain with those who saw it—rank after rank of up-turned faces rising along the slight slope that dropped from the road to the field beneath the shade of the big trees, each face earnest and intent before five minutes had elapsed, as the men caught the spirit of the speaker; the gathering enthusiasm which finally began to make itself manifest in cheers and the final big cheer that pledged the men of the Second Battalion to their regimental commander and his associates in the big work.

Immediately after the meeting Colonel Rose left for Peekskill State Camp, which had been selected as the mobilization point for the troops which were to cover the line on the east side of the river.

* * * * *

Major William L. Burnett, 10th Infantry, Camp Quartermaster at Peekskill in the closing days of the Cadet Camp of 1917, had learned in twenty-five years of National Guard service to be surprised at nothing, but all his learning received a severe shock when at about 11 o'clock or a bit after, on the morning of August 9th, the head of a column of infantry with baggage swung from the hilly road into the Peekskill parade ground.

Major Burnett knew in a general way that the Peekskill State Camp was to be used as a mobilization point for a portion of the new regiment that was to take over the Aqueduct, but through one of those mysterious slip-ups that will happen once in a while in military life, he had not been informed as to just when they were due. Hence the surprise.

He had just finished taking down the last of the tents the cadets of the Military Training Commission had been using and was getting down to the endless detail that confronts the camp quartermaster on any and every occasion, when he was informed that a column was marching into the place.

The unit consisted of the provisional battalion furnished by the Veteran Corps Artillery, commanded by Major W. L. Hodges with 1st Lieut. Frank Davidson Adjutant, and 2nd Lieut. H. P. Williams, Supply Officer, together with Companies A and B, 12th Infantry, totaling 159 men, with Captain Howland Pell in command as senior officer, Company A, 69th Infantry, Captain John J. Roche commanding, and Company C, 7th Infantry, Capt. J. R. Stewart commanding. This contingent had left New York about 7.30 A.M., arriving at Roahook about 11 o'clock.

If Lambert Farm furnished material for humor, there was even more of it at Peekskill, largely due to the fact that there were more possibilities for it. In the first place, there was the element of surprise and uncertainty that always makes for excitement, and in the second place, a large number of the men in the Peekskill mobilization were men of wealth and position, serving as privates, corporals, and sergeants in the ranks of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, who had seen no active service before, but who were enthusiastic to the point of breakage.

The mobilization at Peekskill opened like the first scene in a military musical comedy. Major Burnett was seated at his desk when there entered Lieut.-Colonel John Ross Delafield of the Veteran Corps. It was Colonel Delafield's first experience as such with troops in the field. It was Major Burnett's thirty-first—or something like that. Colonel Delafield did not know Major Burnett. Major Burnett had never heard of Colonel Delafield.

"Who's in charge here?" asked the V. C. A. Officer.

"I am," replied the Major, after the formalities had been exchanged.

"I am Colonel Delafield. How about food for my men out here?"

"I don't know, I'm sure. Where are these men from, who are they, and what are they doing here?" queried the Camp Quartermaster.

Colonel Delafield snorted with disgust. "They are a provisional battalion from the Veteran Corps of Artillery here to take over the Aqueduct. What stores have you for them?"

"Ice and toilet-paper," said Major Burnett gravely.

"Ice and toilet-paper! Men can't live on ice and toilet-paper! You will order one thousand dollars' worth of rations at once!"

For the second time that day Major Burnett registered surprise. "But, Colonel Delahoyd," said he, "I can't do that without orders from the Adjutant-General."

"Not Delahoyd—Delafield," snapped the other. "Why can't you? I'll give you all the authority you want."

"I'm sorry, but I can only accept orders for purchase from the Adjutant-General."

"Well, let me talk with the Adjutant-General. These men have got to have food."

The call went in for the Adjutant-General, and while Colonel Delafield explained the situation to General Stotesbury, Major Burnett pondered on the mysteries of the civilian entering military life. Finally Colonel Delafield turned from the 'phone.

"That's all right. You're to go ahead and get three thousand dollars' worth of food."

Major Burnett smiled.

"But, Colonel Delahoyd—"

"Delafield!"

"Oh yes. Well, Colonel Delafield, I'm sorry, but I have to have those orders from the Adjutant-General or his representative before I can purchase anything."

"Well, what's the matter with what I told you?"

The telephone bell rang. Colonel Myers had heard from the A.-G. His salutation to Major Burnett went something like this:

"What in hell is Delafield telling the A.-G.?"

Major Burnett was embarrassed. He attempted to explain the matter. Colonel Delafield sat at his elbow and Colonel Myers was talking in strident tones.

The sparks flew and danced at the other end of the wire, with the name of Delafield dancing among them.

"Yes, yes," stammered Major Burnett. "Colonel Delafield is right here now."

"Well, tell him to ————!"

"Yes, I certainly will," floundered the embarrassed Major. "He is right here now," he added in warning. But Colonel Myers was past warning; he was mad.

"With my compliments," he added, and jangled off.

Major Burnett turned.

"Now, Colonel Delahoyd," said he.

"My name isn't Delahoyd, it's Delafield. Colonel John Ross Delafield, V. C. A., and I wish you'd stop calling me Delahoyd. I don't like it. I've got to leave now for a war council in New York if you've got this thing fixed. Good-by, sir." And he left.

Major Burnett took a deep breath. Said a voice from the door:

"How about tentage for these men?"

It was Major Hodges, and he was advised that if the men would go to the storehouse they could get plenty of tents.

So the V. C. A. furnished a detail of mule-drivers and things progressed. Before dark the conicals were again rising on the Peekskill plain to an accompaniment of all of the first-night comedy which falls to the lot of a military camp, plus the ingenious efforts of brokers, bankers and railroad presidents in the matter of camp-making, cooking and K. P.

Probably there was never a time in the military history of the State when men well along in years did the work which the élite of the V. C. A. did on this and the following days of the V. C. A. service. They had been styled as "Silk-hat-Harrys," but they disproved it in splendid fashion, though at what cost of blistered hands and aching arms and legs they alone knew. Their ranks were full of the possibilities for funny situations, and there is none on record funnier than that of the bank president who had his office-boy as corporal of his squad.

Colonel Rose arrived at Peekskill in the yellow Pathfinder about the middle of the afternoon of August 9th, and after looking over the situation was satisfied that things were going as well as could be expected, all hindrances taken into consideration. It was about this time, as he was standing in front of the Camp Quartermaster's tent, that he was accosted by an elderly gentleman garbed as a V. C. A. private.

"Hello, Ja— I mean good afternoon, Colonel," said the private, his voice traveling in a sliding scale from jovial familiarity to formal respect.

Greetings were exchanged and then the private, who was a business friend of Colonel Rose's, said:

"You know, I've got the funniest situation you ever saw. About three months ago I got my office-boy to join the Battery. Well, he's been attending drills and I haven't. Consequently he's a corporal. I'm a private."

"That's good stuff," said the Colonel.

"But you haven't heard the best of it yet. The funniest part of it is that I'm a private in his squad."

A short time later Colonel Rose sent word for the corporal in question to report at his tent.

"I understand," said he, "that your business associate is a member of your squad."

"Well, sir, you wouldn't exactly call him a business associate. He's my boss."

"You understand that this is a military proposition and that no favoritism can be shown to a private by a non-commissioned officer, no matter what relative positions the two might occupy in civil life."

"Yes, sir."

"Now I want you to be sure that your attitude in this matter is not influenced by the fact that this private is your employer in civil life. He should do just as much hard work as any one else—perhaps a little more, just so it will be certain that no one can accuse you of favoritism." Colonel Rose spoke seriously, but there was a glint in his eye which those who came to know him better in later days learned as a signal of mischief afoot for some one.

"Yes, sir," replied the corporal. "I'll remember, sir."

"Very well; you may go."

The corporal saluted, turned to the door and then returned.

"Yes?" said the Colonel, as the boy saluted.

"Excuse me, sir, but I just happened to think of something. There's a ditch that's got to be dug around that tent of mine. Would it be all right if—"

"It certainly would. I think that would be a very good start."

The corporal went away.

And in the twilight, as Colonel Rose walked through that company street, he came upon one whose corpulency bent and bulged to staccato grunts above a pickax that now and again dented the sun-baked iron of the Peekskill parade ground.

And he who grunted addressed his pickax in this fashion as the Colonel passed.

"Just wait till I get out of here."

And grinned.

* * * * *

That afternoon the Commanding Officer painted for the officers of the Peekskill camp the same picture that he had given to those who were at Lambert Farm. And the officers caught with the same enthusiasm as their fellows on the other side of the river the big idea of the job.

The entire Aqueduct on the eastern side of the river was covered by units of the 23rd Regiment. It was to be taken over under the orders of the Adjutant-General at 6 o'clock on the following day, and the distribution of troops was explained to the officers.

To the Veteran Corps of Artillery was assigned the entire section of the line from Kensico influent southward to Hillview, while the 7th Infantry Company was given from Sarles Hill to and including the Kensico influent. The 12th Infantry companies and the 9th C. A. C., which had arrived during the day, were given the next section north to the Peekskill siphon; the 69th and the unit of what was then the 1st Field Artillery, from Binghamton, which had also arrived later than the first contingent, were to take the remainder of the Aqueduct as far as the Hudson River.

Although this plan was slightly changed during the organization period, due to the necessity for stretching or contracting of companies to meet the man-power situation, it represents the general territorial responsibility that maintained for some weeks, and the more detailed responsibility will be indicated in the order of distribution which appears later.

It was on the night of the 9th of August that the First Provisional Regiment entered its first engagement and met its first real enemy, face to face at close quarters, for it was on that night that the Junior Cot entered regimental life.

In the days of knight-errantry they who would achieve the accolade passed through some mighty test and slept on their arms before going forth to do conquest. The First Provisional Regiment had its first night of errantry, too—very errant—and slept on its arms—and other places.

The cots looked innocent enough when they were unpacked from the trucks at Highland and Peekskill. They were white, they were new, the canvas looked soft, and, taken by and large, though they were anything but large, they seemed mightily inviting to tired men. They looked well when they were set up, too.

But—they were a scant five feet in length and they were purchased for boys of 80 and 100 pounds—not men, young and old, of from 130 to 190 pounds.

And when the men of the First Provisional laid their forms on those racks of torment on that first memorable night there were

sundry creakings, settlings and bendings as the cots gradually gave way beneath the strain for which they were never intended, and sagged toward mother earth. At first there was no discomfort, but the initial roll or toss started it—the nasty, mean, uncomfortable feeling of a steel brace projecting through canvas and into one's back. This phase was followed by the breaking period, wherein sticks snapped promiscuously or where canvas tore. The steel braces and the wire stays had a disagreeable way of poking through and clinging to one's clothes when one attempted to roll or rise.

The most devilish thing about them was the shortness of them. Invariably the lower legs and feet hung uncomfortably over the end at first, and then as the cot descended earthward beneath the weight, lay on the damp ground. One might coil up, and on such an occasion the southwest corner of the cot coiled up too, tilting the sleeper unceremoniously out. They gave and they broke; they twined themselves lovingly around the forms of those who would sleep, and ever the crosspieces gridded those who lay upon them with full weight.

Ramah was a quiet country village after bedtime compared with Peekskill and Lambert Farm on that first night of the reign of the Junior Cot. That dynasty, it may be added, continued for more than a month before the necessary motions could be made to secure man-sized sleeping equipment. More than any one other thing, the Junior Cot gave color to form and expression in those early days of the regiment's history.

There is still one perfectly preserved copy in existence, saved from the discard at the time when the Gold Medals came in. Future generations may pause and admire in the State museum that descendant of the Inquisition Rack which during the great war bobbed up with serene atavism in the ranks of the First Provisional Regiment.

It is an even chance that one cannot even at this day exhibit a Junior Cot in any large assemblage in New York City without having at least one person in the audience who could explain in minutest detail the hideous torture of the species.

Now, while the men at Peekskill twist and writhe in the tortures of the early morning of August 10th, the reader must skip back to Lambert Farm in the Hudson bluffs above Highland, where, since the departure of Colonel Rose, Troop H of Rochester has arrived under the command of Lieut. Converse. It has been a night of restless slumber, for many of the late arrivals are still without cots or blankets, among these one who is to later play a very important part in the first days of the First Provisional's history. Later, his round, beaming face, gold-bowed glasses and

gray hair are to become familiar to every company post on the line; but to-night, still undiscovered by the powers, he lies cold and comfortless in one of the conicals at the lower end of the camp and close—very close—to the latrines, from which a soft wind is blowing.

Even now he is beginning to exhibit those characteristics which in later days brought upon him the title of Rustler Supremus Magnus, the only title of its kind ever conferred by the regiment. In the guard-house are cots and blankets. In liberty there is only discomfort, and so Private H. W. Speares of Troop H rises and wanders about the camp in suspicious fashion until picked up by the guard. Fifteen minutes later and he is chuckling drowsily beneath three blankets in the guard-house while his tent-mates shiver at the lower end of the camp.

PART III

DISTRIBUTION

Four o'clock comes and with it the lark notes of First Call at Lambert Farm and the incessant pound of Reveille. Before 5 o'clock the canvas peaks have melted to round balls, the baggage is piled and the last detachment to move is racing from the mess-lines to company streets where Assembly is blowing. Companies A and B of Utica and Troop B move off on the double toward the station at Highland and with them goes Company F of the 10th, the last named to move by truck.

Only the baggage details remain behind to load the trucks that are to distribute the equipment of these men along the entire line of the Second Battalion. This is the 10th. At 6 o'clock to-night the line of the Aqueduct is to be taken over, although word comes from the 47th that no orders have been received by it to move out.

At Peekskill the yellow Pathfinder is busy in the early morning hours bringing up ham and eggs for the first real meal of the men mobilized on the east side of the river. At the entrance to the camp Colonel Rose meets Sergeant Martin.

"How many eggs have you on there?"

"Thirty dozen and eight hams."

"Dump those off here and go back and get the same amount more," and back goes the Pathfinder after more food.

And so they of the stiff backs and uncomfortable legs get a real breakfast in the big mess-hall. Filled to overflowing, they lean

back and, like the men of Lambert Farm, hear the story of the Big Job from the lips of the Commanding Officer. And like the men of Lambert Farm they cheer and cheer again, till the old mess-hall shakes with the spirit that is to grip the vital artery of the world's great heart and hold it safe from its enemies.

The final orders are given for the departure of troops and the company streets begin to dissolve. No reserve is to be held here, for the line is to be taken over at 6 o'clock and there is barely a sufficient force to do it. These commanding officers have had little or no opportunity to survey the lines that they are to cover. They accept their assignments with nods, as though they knew full well the difficulties of Breakneck and Cat Hill, and the wide sweep of the Croton, the Kensico, and the Hillview reservoirs, when as a matter of fact these are for the most part merely names, that mean nothing to them except their mission.

By trains and trucks they move out to their appointed places while the yellow Pathfinder turns its nose northward to Lambert Farm.

There the Commanding Officer meets the officers who have arrived since his departure, and just after noon hoists into his car a young First Lieutenant who has but the night before been made Battalion Adjutant, to accompany him as aide on his journey. The dust rises behind the wheels of the Pathfinder on the Lambert Farm road and the Colonel is away to watch the culmination of the hours of mobilization.

At the headquarters of the 10th Infantry at New Paltz, where the pup tents of the headquarters and supply companies bespeak an early departure and where the standards before the Commanding Officer's tent slap idly in the breeze from the mountains, the yellow car pauses while the Colonel and his aide learn of the progress that is being made along the line.

It is 4.30 o'clock in the afternoon, and from the various stations come the reports of the arrival of new troops. At some points on the western side of the river they have been on since 9 o'clock. At places on the eastern side of the river they have been on since noon.

Then it is that General Dyer and General Stotesbury at Albany get the report for which they have been clamoring for the last twenty-four hours in a vain endeavor to locate Colonel Rose.

"Our men are all on the line and will take over at 6 o'clock" is the word to General Dyer. It appears that on Wednesday 300 men of the 14th relieved the 47th men at Cornwall and they have received no orders to move. The City of New York has not delivered the bicycles, motorcycles and cars promised and General Dyer is informed:

"The City of New York must live up to its agreement or you will have to send 2,000 more men. These men are ready to do triple duty for 48 hours if necessary, but it is up to the City of New York to make good."

The necessary instructions are sent out for the distribution of ammunition and mess kits; and then the Pathfinder goes on northward through Kingston and so down the northern boulevard of the Ashokan headworks and past Browns Station, where the men of the 10th have struck their tents and are merely waiting for the hour of 6.

In the distribution of the new regiment's forces the Commanding Officer had been given to understand that the Aqueduct police would patrol the Ashokan headworks, but upon halting at the police barracks at Browns Station, Colonel Rose learns that no orders to this effect have been given. Arrangements are made for this by telephone with Secretary Einbigger of the B. W. S. for this work to be done by the B. W. S. Police.

It is just 5.45 when the Pathfinder rumbles across Olive Bridge, hums up the steep hill and drops down to the yellow B. W. S. building which has been used as the barracks for the troops in charge of this sector, now packed and awaiting for the last guard detail to come in from the line where it has been relieved by the men of Company A, 1st Infantry.

The sun is setting, all blood and fire, behind the mountains as the Pathfinder halts before the barracks and Colonel Rose is greeted by Lieut. Snowden.

"We haven't any guns; we haven't any ammunition or anything else, but they're out there with clubs guarding it," is Snowden's report—words that typify the spirit of the regiment from that day to the day of its final release.

There is a brief inspection of the barracks—unsanitary, surroundings uncouth and uninviting enough at the best. Then the last detachment of the 10th marches out, singing. The line has changed hands just 57 hours from the time the first orders to the new troops went out. The new, half-clad boys gather before the barracks in the sunlight, watching the departure of the well-equipped veterans who are to go overseas and play such a large part in the final round of the battle for the freedom of man.

A strange quiet settles over the new-comers. From beyond the crest of the hill over which the 10th men have disappeared comes back the refrain:

*Hail! Hail! The Gang's all here,
So what the hell do we care now!*

Overhead at the peak of the flag-pole the Stars and Stripes rattle the halyard block in a flutter of sunset breeze; the twin siphons of the Tongore and the expanse of the dam apron shine white in the last rays of the sun.

And one after the other, to the roar of exhaust and the rumble of laden wheels, Lieut. Miller's motor-trucks roll down the hill to the barracks.

* * * * *

What Colonel Rose watched at the top of the line was true wherever the National Guard troops were ready to be relieved. At Atwood the 10th left on the hour; at the Peak and Bonticou there was no delay, but on the lower end of the line a different situation obtained, due to the fact that the men of the 14th had not received orders to get out. The same condition prevailed on the eastern side of the river from one end of the sector to the other. The 23rd stood fast, waiting for orders, while the new troops knocked up camps and waited for the change. But from 'Shokan to Hillview the First Provisional was on the line of the Aqueduct at the time designated in S. O. 198, A. G. O., 1917.

Down the line, with Atwood as the first stop, went the Commanding Officer, arriving after dark at the Peak, where the men of Company B, 1st Infantry, in charge of 1st Sergeant Thomas P. McGuinness had been thrown along the line, the remainder, without equipment of any sort, crawling into pup tents of the old regiment unit. The trucks had not yet arrived with the baggage.

The sergeant's report was terse and characteristic of the condition under which the regiment had taken over.

"We didn't have anything to eat," he said, "but I begged seven cans of corned beef from the mess sergeant here. We had four cans with water for supper and we're going to have the rest in the morning for breakfast."

As the car headed southward to New Paltz the headlights shone white on two youngsters in uniform by the roadside and Colonel Rose paused to question them.

They were only children, with never a beard nor the sign of a beard on their boy cheeks, one lanky with a blouse that stopped short in the matter of sleeves half-way between elbows and wrists, and the other a little fellow, half hidden in a bulging pair of breeches that would have fitted his father.

They were going out onto the Aqueduct to relieve a couple of posts. "No, we ain't got guns," said one of them; "but we got good sticks and this is a good dog." He looked around in the dark-

ness. "Where's that dog gone to? Commere, Spot; commere, Spot! Gosh! Dya 'spose he's run away? We need him."

A meek little brown-and-white mongrel appeared in the flare of the headlights.

"There he is. We got him to-day. Some dog, huh?" They were trying to keep a stiff upper lip, but they glanced at the side of the dark mountain and their voices shook as they suggested:

"S'pose there's wolves on that mountain. They told us they was—wolves and bears."

It was choky work. With a cheering word or two the Colonel passed on, leaving the two by the roadside, hand in hand, like the Babes in the Wood, facing the unknown. Again the spirit of the First Provisional had flamed in the darkness of the first night.

PART IV

CONSUMMATION

It was after midnight when Colonel Rose reached New Paltz and at 4 o'clock the same morning the yellow car was purring in readiness for a start that brought the Commanding Officer into the Troop B camp on the side of gable-ended Sky Top.

The men of Troop B were not yet astir, and with a few words of commendation and admonition to Captain Damon in the pink dawn of the mountain morning, Colonel Rose whirled away to the south, dropping the aide at New Paltz to report to the Adjutant-General, General Dyer, locate Captain De Garmo, establish connections with the city officials, and learn of the rest of the line's progress. Orders had gone out for 30 men of Co. H to reinforce the Olive Bridge sector and these men were on the line. Subsequently they were moved to the Peak.

All reports showed that little had been taken over on the eastern side of the river, due to the fact that the 23rd had not yet received orders to move out, and the Commanding Officer, upon receiving the report, made earnest representations to the powers at Albany on the subject before continuing down from New Paltz to Newburgh, where he crossed the ferry at 9.50 A.M., learning at the Breakneck outpost, near the New York Central's Storm King station, that Captain Johnson's men had arrived on the line at 5 o'clock the previous night and that the Machine Gun Company had received orders to move at noon.



SERGEANT QUECKBERNER (EXTREME RIGHT) AND MEN OF THE SEVENTH INFANTRY AT OUTPOST No. 4
(KENSICO INFLUENT)



Upper—A glimpse at the adjutant's office in the early days; left to right: Blizard, Speares, Therkildsen, Jackson. *Center*—Capt. Adelaide Bayliss, Colonel Powell, and Mrs. Powell. *Lower*—Pines Bridge Inn, with Croton Lake in the background.

This information was received from Lieut. Behrens of the Machine Gun Company, whom Colonel Rose had met on a previous inspection trip, and who, having some time to himself, agreed to accompany Colonel Rose along the line then occupied by the Machine Gun Company.

Hiland Rose, nephew of the Commanding Officer and later Lieutenant in a French School of Artillery in Flanders, had joined the party with his car at Newburgh, and he furnished the extra transportation necessary.

Leaving Lieut. Eaton, Captain Johnson's lieutenant, in charge of the Breakneck Outpost, the party went on to Captain Johnson's headquarters on Gallows Field near Nelsonville. Captain Johnson had taken over from Captain Bryant of the 23rd and was doing nicely both at Nelsonville and Garrison. Impressing him with the importance of the Breakneck outpost and the exposed pipe at Indian Brook, the Colonel went on southward, the party taking its first long breath at the Hill Country House, where noonday mess was eaten.

By this time Colonel Rose had reached the conclusion that Lieutenant Behrens was too valuable an asset to be lost. The Lieutenant's experience on the line, together with his enthusiasm and his sympathy for the men of the new regiment taking over the work, made him a real ally, and the suggestions that he made were of the greatest value possible to the Commanding Officer at that time. It was Behrens who first brought the attention of the First Provisional Regiment to the various hotbeds of pro-German sedition along the Hudson, he having come into contact with them through intelligence work for his own organization, and it was he, too, who gave many little hints as to the administration at Nelsonville, Breakneck and Garrison sectors, which later proved to be of the greatest use. His information as to the flash-light signal methods used between the sentries at the top and the foot of Breakneck Mountain was, for instance, later put to such practical application by the men of the First Provisional that a regular systematized code was worked out and used constantly at this point. It was Lieut. Behrens, also, who suggested the use of a flood-light at the entrance to the Breakneck blow-off and invited attention to the danger of approach to this vulnerable point by rowboat. How correct he was in his information and prophecy will be seen in later chapters of this history. While the new regiment met for the most part with the heartiest of co-operation from the officers of the troops it was relieving, they were all very busy men and there was no one of the officers of the old units that did so much to put the feet of the First Provisional into smooth

paths as did this young 2nd Lieutenant of the Machine Gun Company, 23rd Infantry, N. G. N. Y.

At Van Courtlandtville Captain John J. Roche with 51 men and one Lieutenant had relieved 70 men of the 23rd under Lieut. Brennan, covering from the North Peekskill siphon to the south end of Sprout Brook siphon. He reported one man in the hospital as the result of an automobile scratch. The chauffeur, added the captain in characteristic fashion, had been placed in the guard-house.

Captain Roche was directed to confer with Captain Johnson to learn if he needed help, and then the party swung down through Peekskill to the old police barracks on the Crompond Road.

In a lot across the way, Captain Thompson's men had pitched their tents, awaiting the withdrawal of the 105 men and 3 officers of Troop D, commanded by Captain C. H. King, which patrolled the sector. Colonel Rose was advised that the troop would leave Monday. The new men had already taken over.

But when the inspection party struck the Hunters Brook section, all was not so well. There is a written memorandum on the subject, torn from a note-book and reading as follows:

"Call Major Burnett's attention to fact that there is no patrol for a distance of at least 2,000 yards at this point. It is a 15-minute drive for him. Then call Sergt. of 9th Coast Artillery and tell him to send out men at 15-minute intervals. This is not according to the plan at all. I want the Commanding Officer of the Ninth Coast to confer with the commanding officer of the 12th and to divide the men proportionately along this sector. Make sure that the men are at the vital points."

Information received during the next half-hour indicated that there had been a stitch dropped somewhere between the end of the 9th Coast territory and the beginning of the 12th.

At the Croton Lake Screen house the party met E. C. Culyer, engineer in charge of the Croton-Catskill Division, and he also informed Colonel Rose that there was a gap in the line at Croton Lake. The Cornell Dam, he reported, had been uncovered since 12.30 o'clock.

The Pathfinder burned the road to Millwood, and it was there that Colonel Rose went into action. After disposing of the case of a 12th man who had been decorated with some woman's underclothing by the overjoyous members of the departing 23rd, the Colonel began the issuance of orders that resulted in closing the

gap between the ends of the 12th and 9th Coast. Lieut. Behrens was sent northward with a squad of men to cover the Scribner's sector and the Croton Lake section, and men were ordered up from the V. C. A. to piece out the line. It was here that the First Provisional Regiment in its first real crisis ran face to face against the question of transportation. There were not sufficient cars to be had to distribute the men over the uncovered section, but there were tourists stopping now and then to watch the troops, or passing slowly, and—the Colonel was persuasive. How many parties of patriotic citizens spoiled their Saturday afternoon's ride for the service of their State would be hard to determine, although at one time there were no less than six groups sitting on the grass by the roadside and awaiting the return of their cars which had gone off to the north and to Pocantico blow-off filled with soldiers and supplies.

Major Blanton of the 23rd advised Colonel Rose that the Scribner's sector was uncovered and he had so informed Mr. Culyer. At 4.40 o'clock Major Burnett was directed at Peekskill by Colonel Rose to make inspection of the points still reported open and to secure 20 men from Major Hodges. The 9th Coast was ordered to prolong its line still farther south and to take in the entire Yorktown sector. This was done and that night Captain Thompson established one of the First Provisional's records when he covered with 16-hour posts a line 9 miles long with 40 men.

At 5.07 Croton Dam was reported covered, and at 5.15 Lieut. Behrens reported the Croton Lake section covered up to the down-take chamber. He was told to find Captain Thompson and secure the line north of that point to where the 9th Coast line ended.

During this time Colonel Rose, with the officers that came and went, remained on the grass-plot in front of the Stone Hotel at Millwood, poring over the long blue map of the Aqueduct which was at that time the sole data that had been placed at the disposal of the new regiment in the way of geographical guide. Captain De Garmo, Major Burnett, Major Hodges and other officers came and went, the telephone-bells jangled constantly. Darkness began to close in, and up and down the Millwood road, led by an old white mule and an improvised drum corps of box-drums and whistles, marched the hilarious members of the 23rd, singing "Lulu" at the top of their collective lung-power. It was a memorable picture.

At 6 o'clock there appeared for the first time in the history of the regiment something which later was to become an institution. Captain Pell brought forth his tin cake-box, filled with a huge

roast of beef, some cake, and some bread. This made supper for those who gathered on the grass-plot.

With darkness, the conference adjourned to the inside of the hotel. Reports then in showed that the line was covered at all points. The most critical period of the taking over had been passed, and successfully. As Colonel Rose remarked at the time, it was inevitable that there would be a break in the chain somewhere, and it happened opportunely, for, as always, he was there before it had become serious, to handle it himself.

In searching for the reason of this one error in the taking over of the line, it is not hard to find the cause. Had the former National Guard troops moved out on the hour specified in S. O. 198, A. G. O., at 6 o'clock the day before, there would have been no confusion. The commanding officers to whom was assigned the duty of taking over the sectors in question would have been able to follow Colonel Rose's explicit directions. The detachments would have gone at once to the points specified in the orders and there would have been no question about it. But as it was, the period during which that portion of the line remained unguarded was spanned by the movements of the Commanding Officer's car along it, and the movements of the troops sent north and south to meet the situation.

It was obvious that a plan predicated upon the absolute carrying out of the every detail of co-operation demanded by the very daring of it, could only succeed with that co-operation, and thus at the very outset it was forcibly brought to the officers who were to guide the affairs of the First Provisional Regiment that continued lack of co-operation and failure to fulfil promises would be more dangerous to the welfare of the organization than would have been the case had the margin of military minimums been greater. But the First Provisional Regiment, then, as always, was working on absolute minimum, and mistakes or misdirected effort, lack of co-operation or cohesive effort, were the costlier for it.

The officers of the two sectors affected by the lapse of the day were directed to meet Colonel Rose, Inspector Cohalane, Major Burnett and Major Hodges at Scribner's Farm the following morning, and Captain De Garmo was ordered to report at the same time.

Sergeant Martin, Colonel Rose's chauffeur, had seen in his travels of the evening the brilliantly lighted front of Pines Bridge Manor on the south shore of Croton Lake at Pines Bridge, and when the question of quarters for the officers for the night arose it was Sergeant Martin who suggested Pines Bridge Manor.

There was no tentage for the officers of the staff. He was sent to the Manor to ascertain what accommodations could be secured, and upon his return and favorable report the party motored to the Manor. Thus it was that on the evening of August 11th the seat of control of the First Provisional Regiment moved to historic Pines Bridge. It was never shifted from that point until after the signing of the armistice in November, 1918, although the administrative offices moved to Ossining the latter part of the previous month.

For the first time in more than 48 hours, the officers were able to take off their clothes and secure a bath and what approximated a night's sleep. Early the next morning the wheels began to turn. Regimental headquarters was established by Special Orders No. 1, which are reproduced, as follows:

Telephone Mt. Kisco, 151.

FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT OF INFANTRY

NEW YORK GUARD

PINES BRIDGE MANOR, CROTON LAKE, N. Y.

August 10th, 1917.

Special Order }
No. 1 }

I. Pursuant to S. O. 198, A. G. O., Aug. 6th, 1917, the organizations having been assembled at their respective rendezvous, the following designations of the officers for regimental staff are hereby promulgated:

Commanding Officer, Colonel John B. Rose, Newburgh, N. Y. Tel. 246.

Lieut.-Col. Major William L. Burnett, 143 Cannon Street, Poughkeepsie, N. Y. Tel. 2066-R.

C. O. 1st Battalion, Major W. L. Hodges, 50 Chambers Street, N. Y. C.

C. O. 2nd Battalion, Capt. Charles J. Lamb, Utica, N. Y.

Reg. Adjt. 1st Lieut. T. R. Hutton, Utica, N. Y. Phone 3764-R.

Supply Officer, Capt. L. B. De Garmo, Brooklyn, N. Y.

Medical Officer, 1st Lieut. Jerome Kingsbury, 32 W. 48th Street, N. Y. C.

2. The staff officers designated as above will report to Regimental Headquarters at once for duty.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL JOHN B. ROSE.

OFFICIAL:

T. R. HUTTON

1st Lieut. Acting Adjutant.

Lieut. Elmer H. Miller was assigned as assistant to Captain L. B. De Garmo and Sergeant Martin was assigned to duty with Colonel Rose in S. O. 1-A. Special Orders No. 2, reproduced herewith for a better understanding of the distribution of troops, was issued the same morning as were Special Orders No. 3, relieving Captain Pell of command of his company and assigning him to duty as Disbursing Officer. Special Orders No. 2 as issued, were as follows:

FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT, INFANTRY

NEW YORK GUARD

PINES BRIDGE MANOR, CROTON LAKE, N. Y.

SPECIAL ORDERS }
No. 2 }

August 12, 1917.

1. The distribution of the troops and the assignment of their portions of the sector which they will cover is as follows:

DIVISION A

From Hillview Reservoir to Headquarters, 1st Battalion, 23rd Regt. Inf., Pleasantville, V. C. A., 200 men; 7th Regt. Inf., 40 men.

DIVISION A, SECTION 1

From Hillview Reservoir to point north of Lander's Road, 59 men.

DIVISION A, SECTION 2

From pole 3363 to and including Columbus Avenue, 67 men.

DIVISION A, SECTION 3

From Columbus Avenue to Headquarters, 1st Battalion, 23rd Regt. Inf., Pleasantville, 62 men.

DIVISION B

From Headquarters, 1st Battalion, 23rd Regt., Pleasantville to point north of Croton North Chamber to south side Turkey Mountain, 12th Regt., 158 men; 9th C. A. C., 50 men.

DIVISION B, SECTION 1

From Headquarters, 1st Battalion, 23rd Inf., Pleasantville to point north of main road, Millwood, 40 men.

DIVISION B, SECTION 2

From Millwood to South Chamber, Hunter's Brook siphon, 86 men.

DIVISION B, SECTION 3

From North Chamber, Hunter's Brook siphon to Peekskill siphon, 66 men.

DIVISION C

From North Chamber, Peekskill siphon, to and including Breakneck, 69th Regt., 50 men; 1st Field Artillery, 100 men.

DIVISION C, SECTION 1

From South Peekskill siphon to tunnel of South Brook siphon, south end of tunnel, 36 men.

DIVISION C, SECTION 2

From tunnel north Sprout Brook, south end of tunnel to north end of Indian Brook siphon, 38 men.

DIVISION C, SECTION 3

From north end of Indian Brook siphon to uptake, Hudson River pressure tunnel at Breakneck, 76 men.

DIVISION D

From Shaft No. 1, Vail's Gate, Cornwall, to Bonticou tunnel, Company F, 10th Inf., 115 men; Troop H, 1st Cav., 40 men; Co. C, 1st Inf., 20 men; Troop B, 1st Cav., 68 men.

DIVISION D, SECTION 1

From shaft north Vail's Gate Jc., Cornwall, to St. Elmo siphon, 115 men.

DIVISION D, SECTION 2

From St. Elmo siphon to Bonticou tunnel, 128 men.

DIVISION E

From Bonticou tunnel to Ashokan Reservoir, Co. H, 1st Inf., 68 men; Co. B, 1st Inf., 38 men; Co. A, 1st Inf., 48 men.

DIVISION E, SECTION I

From Bonticou tunnel to Peak tunnel, 68 men.

DIVISION E, SECTION 2

From Peak tunnel to Esopus siphon south Ashokan Reservoir, 86 men.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL JOHN B. ROSE.

OFFICIAL:

T. R. HUTTON

1st Lieut., Acting Adjutant.

Just before his departure for Scribner's Farm, Colonel Rose ascended the steep hill immediately behind Pines Bridge Manor and overlooking the sweep of the Croton lakes. He stood for a moment at the top of the rise in the first field immediately behind the hotel, and there he was joined by Major Hodges.

"This will be headquarters of the regiment," he said. "Make necessary arrangements."

Just a word concerning the historic spot that Colonel Rose had chosen as a headquarters. At Old Pines Bridge that spanned the Croton River in the days before the Croton Lake, Major André, Arnold's confederate, had crossed southward on that fateful last ride of his that ended near Tarrytown on the old Post Road. It was at a little house some three miles to the northward that André had spent his last night of freedom. On the shoulders of Crow Hill, or "Headquarters Hill," as it is now known, may still be seen the outlines of the redoubts that Washington's retreating army threw up as an outguard resistance point after the battle of White Plains, and close to the State highway at the northern end of the present Pines Bridge is the final resting-place of a dozen Maryland troopers who lost their lives in a battle at the Croton River ford just before Yorktown Heights.

Since the question has now and again been raised as to the reason for the establishment of the headquarters camp on Crow Hill, it may be well here to enumerate Colonel Rose's reasons for

it. First, the camp offered isolation from the distractions which proximity to a town would have meant for officers and men. Secondly, it was strategically situated, being at the intersection of a network of roads leading to all points on the lower line by the shortest possible routes. Again, its very location was anything but an invitation to visitors. In those days—and later—there was no time for visitors.

From the conference at Scribner's it became apparent that more troops were needed immediately to fill the gap that would exist on the Scribner's Farm sector unless men were to continue working at breaking point, as was then the case. Accordingly, Captain Connors of Company F, 1st Infantry, Walton, was directed to entrain 40 men, and Lieut. F. M. H. Jackson of Company G, Oneonta, with 40 men as soon as possible, reporting to Peekskill.

Sergeant-Major Lloyd H. Stark was brought to headquarters for battalion work. 1st Lieut. Frank Davidson, V. C. A., came as Battalion Adjutant, but it was at once apparent that another stenographer must be secured for regimental work. This resulted in the order that brought into headquarters Herbert W. Spears of Troop H, who as Regimental Sergeant-Major meant so much to the success of the Adjutant's office in the early days of the regiment's history.

After receiving reports that showed the line was solid south of Millwood, Colonel Rose proceeded northward again with the Adjutant. It was a distinct tribute to the men of the V. C. A. and the 7th Infantry that the Commanding Officer was so certain of their work that he believed an inspection of the lower end of the line unnecessary at that time, although it was the most vital portion of the entire Aqueduct.

On the northern trip Colonel Rose found things moving smoothly, with all points taken over on the west side of the river and battalion headquarters established at the Tamney Hotel, New Paltz, the most central point on the 2nd Battalion's line. An exact report was to be made to the Division of Defense and Security concerning the number of posts and by whom they were covered, and at the same time Colonel Rose wished to see for himself how well the work was being done. This led to a night visit on the Atwood sector and an incident which indicated how keenly on edge were the men of the First Provisional.

They had been furnished with ammunition and they were not yet over their initial nervousness as the events of the night proved. It was— But let Sergeant Martin tell it as he has told it so many times, in his own characteristic and inimitable style.

"We're going up onto the duc with the car, see, with me kicking all the way, because, I says, 'It's dangerous.'

"'Dangerous nothin',' the Colonel says, and just then somebody hollers, 'HALT!' I'm just waiting for that; I stop quick and puts out the lights right away. The fellow finds out who we are and tells us there has been queer doings at the upper end.

"'That means,' says I to myself, 'that everybody is nervous, and you want to look out for yourself, Chuck, or you ain't going to be any use to your government or yourself forever.' Just then somebody up the line hollers: 'Halt! Halt! There he goes!' BANG! BANG! And I see two streaks of fire up along the duc in the dark.

"'He was crawling on his belly!' somebody yells. 'Look out! he's coming down your way.' BANG! and somebody else does the Manilla Bay act.

"The boss wants to go along and see what it's all about, but I put up an awful argument. 'You got to look out for yourself,' says I. 'What good would you be doing to the regiment if you was to get shot?'

"'I won't get shot,' he says. 'What's the matter with you? Are you scared?'

"I tells him I ain't scared of nothin', but I'd rather be in France than out with these fellows with the nerves they've got, but he says, 'Go on,' so we goes on. Now I'm just crawling along, you know, and all of a sudden somebody says:

"'Halt! Who goes—' BANG! and I hear her squeal as she sails over the top of the car."

Just what the real cause of the disturbance on the sector was that night will probably never be known, although Lieut. Snowden found a place on the loose sand of a road-crossing where a man had crawled under the bushes at the edge of the Aqueduct. In any event, that first shot fired on the line of the First Provisional furnished plenty of excitement for one night.

Colonel Rose stopped at Highland for the night, and went on, leaving the Adjutant at New Paltz to communicate with the Adjutant-General, General Dyer, and others. The promised transportation was not coming through as fast as had been promised; there was still mess kits and other equipment to come.

Major Blair, at the Division of Defense and Security, referred the matter to Colonel J. Weston Myers, the Chief Quartermaster of the State, and Colonel Myers' answer was the foundation on which the First Provisional Regiment builded in the weeks that followed when it was without adequate transportation, food or supplies.

"Tell Colonel Rose to go ahead with what he needs. I am going to Albany this afternoon and will rush that authority. The authority will come. Don't worry about that."

Major George J. Winslow, at Utica, was advised that 20 more men were wanted to strengthen the Utica companies as speedily as possible. Major Wilbur's men had been moved to the Peak sector.

It was as a result of his inspection on the line the night before, together with advice from Inspector Cohalane on the subject of patrol dogs, that Colonel Rose at this time directed the Adjutant to take action which resulted in the establishment of the First Provisional Regiment's Airedale Patrol, discussed at length in the chapter entitled "Dogs of the Regiment."

On this date Captain Damon was made Battalion Inspector and Lieut. Van Nouhuys assumed command of the troop in his absence.

The tour of the line on this day showed that the men of the First Provisional Regiment had caught the big picture that Colonel Rose had painted for them at Highland. Already many of the manholes on the cut and cover had been covered over with sod, and grass and bushes were being cut around the culvert entrances. The camps were beginning to assume shape, and although many of the sectors were still without bicycles and none had motor transportation other than what was hired, subsistence was being sent to the outposts regularly and the Aqueduct was being guarded.

At St. Elmo Troop H was comfortably established near the site of the old cavalry camp, with flies as the main source of trouble, and the usual shortage of equipment.

Company F of the 10th, under Captain Gifford, had established itself with headquarters at Vail's Gate and was doing well, thanks to the large amount of privately owned transportation available for the distribution of troops and supplies. With arrangements perfected for the continuation of guard on the Ashokan headworks by the B. W. S. mounted police and the line of the 2nd Battalion well set from Ashokan to Vail's Gate, Colonel Rose turned back to Regimental Headquarters, where things had been moving smoothly since his departure.

The detachment from Walton had arrived and was transferred from Peekskill State Camp to the Scribner's Farm sector, which Captain Connors took over forthwith, including the Hunter's Brook siphon. The Oneonta detachment, in command of Captain Jackson, had been brought into headquarters and assigned to duty there as headquarters company temporarily. It should be added at this time that because of the peculiar adaptability and

handiness of this company this arrangement was never changed until the Oneonta men had practically dwindled away through loss by release.

The establishment of the first headquarters camp was in the field immediately behind the hotel at Pines Bridge and overlooking the lake, but within a day or two it was decided that a much better location could be secured farther up the hill, and as a result the entire establishment was moved. There were no floorings and the slope of the hill was such that sleeping with one's cot parallel to the base of the hill meant being out of bed during the night unless the cot were blocked.

At this time a description of that first headquarters camp may not be amiss before turning to the trials of the men of the V. C. A., and the chronological order of events.

On the extreme right of the first line of tents a little white officers' wall housed the one telephone in the camp, although others were installed later. Next came the Adjutant's tent, a big brown storage of more or less draughty nature.

The next tent was that of the Commanding Officer, then came the tents of the Lieutenant-Colonel and Major Hodges, Lieut. Davidson, Captain Pell, and Lieut. Williams. The latrines were on the left flank of the camp.

In the second row were other officers' tents, including that of Dr. Kingsbury and Lieut. Jackson. Then came the non-commissioned officers, and finally the white conicals of the Headquarters Company, together with the storage tent. The mess halls were as yet a thing of the future. There was only one approach to the camp at first and that was up the steep hill from Pines Bridge Manor. An opening was cut through the fence from the lower field for the road, and this road remained in use to a greater or less extent even after one was cut through from the Crow Hill road on the east of the camp.

Water was one of the big necessities, and for a time it seemed that the only way in which this could be secured would be by pumping it from the lake below. Water was carried from the hotel for some time, and later a spring farther up on the hill was piped into the camp, but the flow was too small to meet the requirements. Eventually water was brought from a spring on the Ford property on the eastern side of the Crow Hill road about 600 feet from the camp, where a pump was installed and operated by gasoline.

Something has been said of the work of the men of the Veteran Corps of Artillery who for the first time in the last half-century of the history of this oldest military organization in the State, offered itself for militia duty in the emergency with which the

State found itself face to face. There is perhaps no better place than this to speak in detail of the men of the V. C. A. and the peculiar part which they played in the early days of the First Provisional Regiment. Much of this work one has told in verse, some of which is reproduced in the chapter on the Regiment's Literature.

To adequately appreciate the service of the Veteran Corps of Artillery one must grasp the fact of its personnel, the like of which was probably never before seen in an organization on active military service since the days of the fighting citizens of Lexington and Concord. The ranking social military organization of the State of New York, made up for the most part of men whose names stood high on the social register, came to the conclusion in the early part of America's participation in the war that to be of maximum use it must be of maximum strength, and as a result of this recruiting its body became an odd composite of social strata, with the six- and eight-figure variety predominating. At the time when it was called into service under S. O., 198-A, A. G. O., 1917, it was largely made up of business men, railroad heads, bankers, lawyers, statesmen and manufacturers; brokers, consulting engineers, polo-players and yachtsmen.

The participation in this service meant particular sacrifice to these men, and it also meant something else—something not contemplated by the military regulations of the forces of New York State or any other State forces in existence—something not at all military, but very necessary when the fate of a railroad, an entire tier of the steel business or a few millions of dollars' worth of real estate needed by the government depended upon the presence of President Brown, General Manager Smith, or Treasurer Jones. It meant a steady and continual flow of substitutions on all sectors occupied by the V. C. A. While the Special Orders of the Adjutant-General's Office, which brought this organization onto the line called for 200 men, it is not an exaggeration to say that at one time and another approximately 500 men of the organization helped to guard the Aqueduct.

For instance: Mr. Jones, as the head of a great insurance firm, came out with his battery as a part of the provisional battalion provided by the V. C. A. At the expiration of three days business affairs became so pressing at the office that thereafter for three days Mr. Jones was obliged to spend at least an hour on the telephone every morning with his office manager, and on the seventh day was obliged to return to New York, as things were getting into a bad mess during his absence. He found that to continue his work on the Aqueduct he must at least spend an hour a day

at the office, and accordingly arrangements must be made in his sector to meet this situation.

This case is mild as compared with Case No. 2, that of Mr. Brown, whose Wall Street activities were such that he could do guard duty only from 6 P.M. to 6 A.M., being rushed between Street and sector in his long, low machine and going sleepless and clad in his uniform onto the field of battle in the financial storm center daily, while 7 P.M. found him peeling potatoes at the camp for breakfast next morning.

There were many Browns and Joneses, but such gave their sector commanders nowhere near the trouble of Mr. Smith, and many like him, who could give but four hours a day from business and family life for the protection of the Aqueduct. Something untoward would arise and Smith would call a brother member of the V. C. A. by telephone and ask him to substitute that day. Or it might be that he would meet on the street a friend not at all connected with the V. C. A. to whom he would tell his troubles in the securing of a substitute for the night's duty. And his friend, anxious to take advantage of the experience, would at once volunteer. It would never occur to either of them that the friend, because he was not enlisted in the State service, would have no protection whatsoever if by any chance he were to shoot some one while in the performance of duty. The friend would report to an astonished officer on the sector, and then might spend considerable time on an incinerator or police detail before going on guard, where he would ponder as to why he was given no ammunition.

The following extracts taken from the pages of a private memorandum-book kept by one of the officers of the V. C. A. illustrate the condition far better than could any amount of explanation. The names given are fictitious, but the notes are genuine and those to whom they applied will recognize them:

Dobson, W. F. 1 Battery. Leaves Aug. 20, 8 A.M.
A Company, 1st Platoon.

Aug. 11th, 4 P.M.—Reported to Lieut. Lane for duty.
(Taking Elder's place.)

Assigned to Post No. 4 and sent to
post.

13th, 8 A.M.—Leave granted until Sat., Aug. 18,
10 A.M.

18th, 10 A.M.—Reported back. Assigned 1-10.

20th, 8 A.M.—Leave granted until Sat., Aug. 25.

Four days. Will probably be up Saturday.

Aug. 18th, 2.30 P.M.—Reported. Assigned to Hdqtrs.
18th, 6.00 P.M.—Assigned to Post No. 4.
20th, Leave granted until Tues., Aug. 21,
8 P.M.
21st, Reported back—until Aug. 22, 8
A.M.—Post No. 4.
22nd, 9.00 A.M.—Leave granted until 7 P.M.
22nd, 7.00 P.M.—Reported back. Furloughed until—
Any night wanted.
96 Jamieson Avenue. Phone probably under Newton.

If the reader has not grasped the answer by this time, let a single statement suffice. There were no available troops in the State. Moreover, whatever irregularities may have occurred were made up for in the enthusiasm of the men of the V. C. A. And these irregularities never interfered with the guarding of the Aqueduct. Despite the comings and goings; despite the frequent changes in personnel, the line covered by the men of the V. C. A. was impregnable. If, because of the flutterings of Wall Street that kept Schuyler Jones from his tour of duty, Vandevere Smith was obliged to work eighteen hours continuously, it was with the joy of the thoroughbred at having to grasp the unusual and conquer it, that Vandevere Smith accepted the penalty and made the most of it. As a matter of fact, these men suffered some unnecessary hardships rather than to appear to be soft. If there was one thing which each wished to avoid, it was taking advantage of social or business position to be in any way more comfortable than the others, and there is a legend of one man who used to steal from the camp after dark to meet his valet and clean underwear at the foot of the hill, rather than to have the valet bring it into the camp. The saying that blood will tell never received a better vindication than in these men who left all of the world's comforts behind them to take their part in the first days of the State's biggest military operation.

And the men of the V. C. A. added many permanent improvements to their line which meant much to the companies that came in later days, but who would have been without the means to make these improvements. The enthusiasm of these men of the V. C. A. knew no bounds. The terror of the Junior cot, the heat

of the sun and the cold of the wind-swept night on Kensico Dam, the blister of sickle-sore hands, the unaccustomed lowliness of kitchen police and the butt-hunting ignominy of camp police were eagerly welcomed by them as a portion of their "bit."

"They are actually crazy to work," was the report of Captain Hayden J. Bates, later in the Adjutant-General's office. "I never saw anything like it in my life." He rattled off a bunch of family names that have appeared at every period in the history of New York since the time of Peter Stuyvesant. "All those fellows there and all working like the merry devil. The only thing they couldn't understand was the lack of plumbing in the camps, and I advised them to have it installed immediately. What's more, they are going to. You should see their guard duty. They wouldn't let the Colonel himself through without passports and fingerprints."

And that gives the picture of the men of the V. C. A. on the job. It tells nothing of their ingenuity in the matter of camp-making and their liberal interpretation of the regulations and field-service manuals in the matter of purchases and subsistence allowances, nor does it indicate the multiplicity of duty which fell to each one of them.

Emmons'

And I am a cook and a sentry, too,
And my hours are long and hard;
I'm orderly, mess-boy and police
And Corporal of the guard.

tells the story of the V. C. A. better than anything else possibly could.

Their ingenuity was perhaps the most salient of their characteristics, aside from their enthusiasm. In the matter of tentage they, like all of the rest of the First Provisional, suffered from the inadequacies and the frailties of the conicals of '98 vintage. Many of those old white tents were without hoods, and the V. C. A. drew their share. But at Tuckahoe, for instance, where Lieut. Lane, who later became Judge Advocate of the regiment, was in charge, this shortage was remedied by an umbrella, which was fastened to the tent-pole over the hood opening. Others used soap-boxes for the same purpose. Using their well-filled purses freely, they built screened mess kitchens from screen doors when they were unable to find screen cloth, and in a dozen other ways demonstrated their adaptability to make the best of conditions.

The V. C. A. suffered quite as much as any other unit from the



THE SECOND BATTALION STAFF

Lower, left to right—Captain Miller, Major Lamb, Captain Snowden.
Upper—Captain Benson, Lieut. Richards, Lieut. Bechtol.



Upper—Ashokan headworks and aerating-plant. *Center*—Shaft 8, Company H sector. *Lower*—Cut and cover and barracks, Company F, looking from Bonticou.

Junior cot and one of the funniest of the Junior-cot stories comes from that sector via Sergeant Joseph C. Chase, the portrait painter, who was art editor of the regimental paper, *The Watchdog*, during the period of its existence.

It was a wet night, and getting wetter all the time, as any one who happened to be sleeping under a pinhole in the tent could testify. The canvas was soaked, the ground was soaked, and there arose throughout the tent the aroma of wet clothing.

Those who have experienced it will remember the Junior-Cot nightmare. It began with the idea that one was being pushed frantically by some one behind, resolved into the sensation of roasting on a barrel grid in one of the depths of the Inquisitorial Fastness, and finally evolved into actual torment of the rack.

One of the members of the squad was passing through this nightmare, or something like it, as he tossed and rolled restlessly on his cot. Apparently the scene changed to that of a baseball-field for he began to cheer the hits and the runs. Suddenly he leaped from his cot with a yell and grabbed the center pole violently.

"Three strikes! You're out!" he shrieked, and wrenched the base of the pole loose."

And they were, for down came the heavy wet canvas in a smothering mass over those who slept and those who remained awake listening to the nightmare. Everybody was out until the tent was up again. They all blessed the pitcher, too.

PART V

ORGANIZATION

While the officers of the line were trying to work out guard details so that a man could have some time to himself at stated intervals, while the problems of grass- and brush-cutting to uncover the culverts were being met along the line, and while the new troops were gradually becoming accustomed to their new job, the big questions of transportation and equipment were looming larger and larger before the Commanding Officer.

The City of New York had partly fulfilled its promises, but it was only a very small part thus far. Three old police patrols and twenty-five old motor-cycles that had been scrapped by the police department and which never helped the First Provisional Regiment an inch, had been delivered, together with a shipment

of new bicycles which were of real help, but thus far nothing had apparently been done in the way of the transportation other than the bicycles promised at the preliminary conference in General Dyer's office.

This resulted in strong verbal representations to the office of the Adjutant-General and the Division of Defense and Security. Neither the transportation nor authority for the hire of transportation had been received from the City of New York, nor had authority been given in writing for necessary purchases.

All this was communicated to General George R. Dyer on the 14th, and on the 15th, when the authority had not been received, Colonel Rose again communicated with General Dyer. The General then sent the following telegram to Mayor Mitchel:

August 16th, 1917.

HON. JOHN PURROY MITCHEL,
Mayor of the City of New York,
City Hall, New York City.

Complying with request of Governor of July twenty-seventh by Acting Mayor for protection of New York City Water Supply with State Military Forces pursuant section one hundred fifteen military law and with verbal authority from Commissioner Woods authorizing troops to be called out at expense of City for organization and mobilization purposes in advance of actually assuming guard duty, troops were ordered into service August seventh and assumed guard duty six P.M. August tenth which was time specified for removal of Federal Troops. Total strength today ten hundred thirty-four men forty-four officers. It is of utmost importance that city provide immediately steel screens for culverts also furnish forty-five additional motorcycles in good condition ten light motor trucks eighteen touring cars for officers two which should be heavy type complete telephone connection with all posts all as previously promised and planned by city officials. Otherwise it will be necessary to increase forces immediately by several hundred men at greatly increased expense to City. Approximately thirty-seven hundred troops were employed by Federal Government to cover this sector and reduced number was computed in reliance on city's plan for furnishing these additional facilities. In our judgment present troops alone are entirely inadequate. Please wire whether facilities will be furnished or whether you wish

increased forces ordered on duty. Situation demands immediate action.

GEORGE R. DYER, Brigadier-General,
Division of Defense and Security.

OB
CHG
AGO

And the Mayor replied as follows:

NEW YORK, August 16th, 1917.

BRIGADIER-GENERAL GEORGE R. DYER,
Division of Defense and Security, Albany, N. Y.

Colonel Rose conferred with me and Comptroller today. The Comptroller is sending representative over line tomorrow to confer with Colonel Rose and to arrive at definite understanding. There is no further question about additional telephone service. Board of Water Supply was asked yesterday to install this. We will accept judgment of Board of Water Supply on question of screening culverts. This has been submitted to them and whole matter will be definitely settled tomorrow.

JOHN PURROY MITCHEL.

The conference referred to in the above telegram took place on the 17th, when for the first time the military viewpoint clashed with the lay viewpoint as to the guarding of the Aqueduct, but when it was all over the city representatives, which included Adamson and Flynn, were satisfied. Inspector Cohalane appeared with Messrs. Flynn and Adamson, but his viewpoint was that of the military authorities.

On the same day the following telegrams flashed between Albany and New York:

ALBANY, N. Y., August 17, 1917.

HONORABLE JOHN PURROY MITCHEL,
City Hall, New York City.

It is assumed you approve hiring by State at city's expense vehicles necessary for transportation of troops and supplies in connection with water system until such time as city may furnish them. Please confirm by wire.

GEORGE R. DYER, Brigadier-General,
Division of Defense and Security.

NEW YORK, August 17, 1917.

BRIGADIER-GENERAL GEORGE R. DYER,
Albany, N. Y.

Telegram received. The Mayor approves hiring at city's expense vehicles necessary for transportation of troops and supplies until city can furnish them.

SAML. L. MARTIN,
Executive Secretary.

This was the regiment's authority for its emergency expenses not specifically authorized.

On the same day that this conference was held, Colonel Rose called on Mayor Mitchel in New York, and after the situation was outlined Mayor Mitchel requested Colonel Rose to present the case to the Comptroller. In this conference Colonel Rose called the attention of the Comptroller to the fact that the cost of hiring motor transportation necessary to the conduct of the regiment was assuming such proportions that machines might be purchased for the same amount that it would cost to hire the number of automobiles approved by Inspector Cohalane.

Lieut. H. Pushae Williams, V. C. A., had been placed in charge of transportation at Regimental Headquarters under Special Orders No. 6, on August 15th. There was no officer in the regiment who had more trials than Lieut. Williams with his police trucks, motor-cycles and the old green Lozier provided by the City of New York as its first consignment of transportation. By using parts from the other machines, three of the motor-cycles were finally induced to work for a short period, and constant attention kept the old police trucks running, although the grades of the Headquarters Hill took the starch out of them severely. The Lozier lay down time and again and finally threw itself over a bank, thus ending its usefulness. All of this equipment was later returned to the city.

It was soon after the conference described above that Lieut. Williams was sent to the City of New York to stay with the matter of transportation until some action could be secured. Although progress was necessarily slow, he kept at it.

Parallel to the motor transportation situation the upbuilding of the line by new troops continued. On August 16th fifty men and one officer of Company C, 1st Infantry, Watertown, recruited since mobilization, were ordered on duty, reporting in command of 2nd Lieut. Byron L. Green to Major Lamb at New Paltz, where they were assigned to the Gardner sector. Fifty men of the 9th C. A. C. were ordered out to strengthen the V. C. A. line

at Valhalla. Thirty men were ordered out from Company K of the 10th Infantry and placed on the sector later known as N-4. This sector was later (on Aug. 24th) placed in command of Capt. F. M. H. Jackson, who had entered the field as a 1st Lieutenant in charge of the Headquarters Company.

On August 21st, under Special Orders No. 12, a detail of three men in charge of Corp. Frederick G. Clapp was assigned to make maps of the various sectors of the regiment from Ashokan to Hillview. The work in question, which was one of the most valuable undertakings of the regiment from a military standpoint, is considered elsewhere.

On August 23rd, a flag-pole of steel pipe having been raised in front of the Commanding Officer's tent on Crow Hill, a flag was raised over Camp Rose for the first time, and the camp was given its name formally by Lieut.-Colonel Burnett. At the ceremony there were present the acting Lieutenant-Colonel, Major Hodges, Captain Pell, Lieut. Davidson, Captain Jackson, and the non-commissioned staff and Headquarters Company.

About this time, on August 25th, there came into the active life of the First Provisional Regiment a man who was later destined to mean much to the regiment in its hours of play and who added to the sum of helpfulness in no small measure as Medical Officer. 1st Lieut. Charles A. Clinton, V. C. A., who had been serving at Kensico, was discovered by Colonel Rose and assigned as Medical Officer of the Second Battalion at New Paltz. As the writer of the First Provisional Regiment's march, "The Good Old N. Y. G.," as a spontaneous humorist and as a conscientious medical officer, Lieut. Clinton made a particular place for himself with the battalion and regiment, serving in virgin territory and instituting at the beginning of his career as medical officer with the Second Battalion, the post-packet system which is discussed in a later chapter.

On August 28th, Capt. Maurice Damon of Troop B was designated as Summary Court Officer of the Second Battalion, then comprised of the following units:

- Company A, 1st Infantry
- Company B, 1st Infantry
- Company C, 1st Infantry
- Company H, 1st Infantry
- Troop H, 1st Cavalry
- Troop B, 1st Cavalry
- Company F, 10th Infantry
- Company K, 10th Infantry

At the same time special orders were issued making Lieut. H. P. Williams Summary Court Officer for the First Battalion, then comprised of:

Batteries A and B, V. C. A.
Company C, 7th Regiment Inf.
Company A, 69th Regiment Inf.
Company A, 12th Infantry
Company B, 12th Infantry
4th Company, 9th C. A. C.
Battery C, 1st Field Artillery
Company F, 1st Infantry
Company G, 1st Infantry

How these organizations were distributed along the line may be noted from Appendix I-A, showing the distribution of troops at this time.

It was on the 28th that Lieut. Williams 'phoned from New York that all arrangements had been made for the motor transportation to be furnished by the city and that money had been appropriated for the purchase and delivery of the following:

Three Cadillac Touring Cars
Four Buicks or two Buicks and two Hupmobiles
Fifteen Ford Trucks
Eight Ford Touring Cars

At 8 P.M., while the officers and men of headquarters stood on the hill in front of the tents and cheered, Lieut. Williams arrived with three Cadillacs, two Buicks and two Hupmobiles.

On the following day the 9th Coast Artillerymen, who had been sent to Elmsford and Kensico, were transferred to Captain Thompson's command and on that date Captain Thompson took over the Scribner's Farm sector (Sector S-4). Captain Conner's command on the same date took over the Elmsford sector (Sector S-8), which from that time on was maintained as a distinct and separate sector in the organization.

The 30th of August was made notable by the arrival of two personages, the first, chronologically, being Mr. John Towner, of Towners, N. Y., as the log-book says. When he strolled into the camp on Headquarters Hill with his black derby perched on the back of his surprisingly bald head, no one present suspected that as Lieut. John Towner, 1st F. A., M. G., 1st Inf., Co. C, 1st Inf., etc., etc., he would in later days play a big part in the

regiment's history and become one of the best-loved officers of the regiment.

Colonel Rose arrived at 6 P.M. and the first guard was turned out in his honor. The log shows that at 7.30 P.M. "Mr. John Towner left Camp."

More Ford cars arrived on the following day, which was otherwise uneventful save for the first intimation from a home unit that there were no more volunteer troops. This came from the 14th Infantry.

On the 31st of August and the 1st of September, the report on telephone data asked for by the City of New York that a telephone system of an instrument to every fixed post might be installed, was secured on both sides of the Hudson, and the Adjutant, together with Sergeant-Major Speares, carried the compiled data into New York City, delivering it to the office of the Chief of Police after a practically continuous run of forty-eight hours. This was a fair example of the way in which every one traveled in those early days of the regiment's history, when there were a thousand things to be done at once.

It was on this trip that Sergeant-Major Speares again added to his fame as a tireless worker and a humorist. With the data delivered, the car made the run to the end of the island of Manhattan and then started northward.

It was five o'clock Sunday morning when, as the Buick reached the point where St. Nicholas Ave. falls away to the flat near Fort George, the Sergeant-Major lunged forward over his wheel, and then righted himself as the car swerved.

"Captain, I can't make it," he said. "I'll ditch the whole business going down this hill. I'm dead tired."

So the car pulled up alongside one of the beehive concrete apartments of the heights and the travelers prepared for an hour of sleep. Climbing back into the tonneau, they were just beginning to doze when the heavy foot of a policeman crunched the gravel beside the car and a helmet poked into the tonneau.

"What's this?" asked the officer.

He was told, in short, concise language, for the Adjutant was sleepy and cross.

"Oh, all right," he remarked as he turned away. "That's all right."

The Sergeant-Major half roused.

"Oh, officer!" he called, sleepily.

"Yes," said the policeman, turning back.

"Turn out the light on the dash like a good chap, will you?"

The policeman stared for a moment, hesitated, and then complied.

"Thanks," grunted the Sergeant-Major, and then rolling over, quoted Colonel Rose. "That's the idea; give them something to do and keep them interested."

It was on that same morning that the first church service was held at headquarters. Simultaneously other services were being conducted along the entire line of the regiment. Of the religious life of the organization, which at all times was a dominating factor in its progress, there is more detailed discussion in a chapter devoted to the subject hereafter.

Monday was Labor Day, the first holiday spent by the First Provisional Regiment in the field. The day was marked by a large number of visitors at all camps along the line, and at the Tuckahoe-road post on the sector covered by Captain Praeger, ceremonious retreat was held, followed by a concert by the German Orphan Asylum band. This affair was attended by a number of the officers at headquarters.

Lieut. Davidson had, because of business reasons, been obliged to give up the work of Adjutant of the 1st Battalion, and this work had been taken over by Lieut. Theodore T. Lane, V. C. A., formerly stationed at Tuckahoe road. Lieut. Lane continued at the headquarters of the regiment from that time until the demobilization of the organization in February, 1919, serving as Summary Court Officer, Battalion Inspector, Judge Advocate, and as assistant to the Commanding Officer at various times, and adding much to the achievement of the regiment.

For several nights the men of the headquarters office had been roused from their beds in the early morning hours by reports from the 2nd Battalion of aeroplanes hovering over the line, or working in the immediate vicinity of it. There were corroborated reports of a group of one large and three small planes of a make not recognized by the sentries operating the 'Shokan region and in the Walkill Valley, and civilians reported the same thing.

All of the known aviation schools on the eastern coast and those inland were asked if planes from their stations were on night duty on the nights indicated, but both army and naval aviation stations reported in the negative. The matter was then taken up with the Department of the East Headquarters at Governors Island, and at the request of Major Marsten, a detailed report of the matter was made and forwarded to the Department of the East by mail. The aeroplane alarms continued for some days, planes in some instances dropping as low as 500 feet above the sentries' heads. This was just prior to the executive order from

the President directing fire at planes not carrying the insignia of the United States or Allied forces, and the Commanding Officers of the sectors affected by the night flyings hesitated to give orders to sentries to open fire.

The planes displayed red and green signal lights at high altitudes and one report shows that there was distinct communication between two planes on the very line of the Aqueduct itself.

What these planes were or where they came from has never been learned, although one sentry opined from the red and green lights that they were flying drug-stores. An investigation was conducted to ascertain their source, but without results, and this will probably always remain as one of the many unsolved mysteries of the regiment. Whether or not the planes which during the latter part of August and the first of September, 1917, were a portion of the vast German program of destruction is not known, and probably never will be known, but in any event these birds of the night kept the line of the 2nd Battalion in an uproar during the period in which they operated. Many of the officers were frankly skeptical because of the fact that observation, the only possible advantage to be derived, would be minimized by the night itself.

Regardless of what the purpose of the planes was, and regardless of whether or not they were friendly, they gave the men of the First Provisional a touch of battle-front life that added stimulus and zeal to the guard duty among the mountains. The report on the entire subject was made on Sept. 3rd to the Department of the East at Governors Island.

SEPTEMBER *

ON Sept. 4th, Col. J. Weston Myers shipped by motor-truck to the headquarters of the regiment a Colt's machine-gun and carriage, to be mounted at the Breakneck access chamber, on the eastern bank of the Hudson River, one of the most vital points on the line. With the machine-gun came Sergt. James Murray, Q. M. C., later assistant editor of *The Watchdog*, Sergt. Edmond Dixon, who later became invaluable to Major Hodges as Battalion Sergeant-Major of the 1st Battalion, and Private Thomas O'Connor, who was attached to the Adjutant's office.

Sept. 8th, Lieut. Clarence Bechtol, who had received his promotion as of Aug. 7th was assigned to the headquarters of the 2nd Battalion, where he took the place of Lieut. Stewart Richards, who had served as Battalion Adjutant since Aug. 12th. Lieut. Richards went to Sector North 1, Olive Bridge.

Lieut. John Towner made his first appearance as such at Regimental Headquarters on the following day.

Monday, Sept. 10th was marked by two events, one of which nearly cost the First Provisional Regiment the services of the man who as second in command meant so much to it throughout its entire career. Returning from Peekskill about four o'clock in the afternoon, the car containing Lieut.-Colonel Burnett and Sergt. Leroy Briggs, his chauffeur, crashed into a tree at the foot of a snaky drop in the road a mile north of Yorktown Heights. It was the result of a skid on the soft earth at the edge of the road, and the results were disastrous. Residents of the farm-house near the scene of the accident were terrified a few moments later when their front door opened and two men in uniform, drenched with gore, and their faces badly ripped and torn, staggered into the living-room. Colonel Burnett's jaw had been broken when his face crashed down onto the steering wheel, and as late as a year afterward fragments of the horn button were taken from the alveolar process. Flying glass had severed an artery in the

* At this point the story of the regiment's affairs takes on the form of a chronological narrative, touching briefly on events and policies that are more minutely and more intimately considered in the special chapters which form the second part of this work.

sergeant's throat and he was rapidly bleeding to death when the flow was staunched.

A car was pressed into service and the men taken to the Peekskill Hospital, while headquarters was notified. The flying red Stutz, which became so well identified with Captain De Garmo and the Supply Company never made better time than it did in that fast, furious run from headquarters to the scene of the accident with the Supply Officer and the Adjutant. The car then proceeded to the hospital, where it was learned that, although both men were badly injured, they would live. Colonel Burnett suffered more from shock than did Sergeant Briggs and was incapacitated for some time.

The other event was the relief of Battery A, V. C. A., commanded by Captain Brodie, on the south end of the line, covering sectors S 9-A and 9-B. Under charge of Lieut. H. P. Williams, a detachment of the 1st Field Artillery, commanded by 1st Lieut. Charles Cartwright, and 2nd Lieut. E. P. Smaney, moved onto this sector, Lieut. Cartwright taking over S. 9-A, with headquarters at Fort Hill road, and Lieut. Smaney on S 9-B, with headquarters at Tuckahoe.

The business relations of the men of the V. C. A. had made necessary the relief of the organization, and the same was equally true of Troop H of Rochester on the line of the 2nd Battalion, Sector N-5, where many of the members were men connected with industries necessary to the government.

To relieve Troop H, Troop G of Utica, commanded by Capt. Addison Westcott, 64 strong, with 1st Lieut. Albert Gilbert and 2nd Lieut. Clifford Servatius, left Utica on Sept. 11th, and reported to Major Lamb at Walden. This organization, of which more will be told later, was remarkable in the preponderance of Syrians who had been enlisted through the efforts of 1st Sergt. James J. Jabbour. These men, having been advised that because of the laws of war, they, as subjects of Turkey, would receive summary treatment at the hands of the Central Empires, could not enter the regular army, enlisted *en masse* for the service on the Aqueduct, and their work, despite the handicap of little knowledge of the English language, was very satisfactory. They were faithful guards, cautious in the extreme concerning the passing of outsiders, and quick—perhaps a little too quick—on the trigger. What they lacked in military knowledge they made up in enthusiasm. Some of them were former members of the Arabian Cavalry and practically every one was a specimen of physical perfection.

"The Assyrians Came Down," established Camp Alaska at the

intersection of the Aqueduct and the Orange County Traction Company's line, and proceeded to make the place livable. In this they succeeded admirably, and their guard duty was all that could be desired. Troop H, upon being relieved, returned to Rochester, and with the return of the troop went Regimental Sergt.-Major Herbert W. Speares, who under Special Orders No. 25 was relieved from further duty with the First Provisional Regiment with the express thanks of the Commanding Officer for his service. Of Sergeant-Major Speares and the work which he did with the administrative department of the regiment more will be found in the chapter on the regiment's paper-work. His place as regimental sergeant-major was taken by Thomas W. Therkildsen, Company F, 10th Infantry, who had been assigned to the Adjutant's office some time earlier.

It was also on Sept. 11th that Battery A, 1st Field Artillery, of Syracuse, entered the field 60 strong, under command of Capt. Leo C. Harte, with Grover C. Weed as 1st Lieutenant and F. C. Stone as 2nd Lieutenant, to relieve the remaining unit of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, located at Kensico. Officers and men of the Veteran Corps detailed to special duty, such as the map detail, Major Hodges, Captain Lane, Lieut. Williams, Lieut. Clinton and Captain Kingsbury, remained on duty, as did Sergt. J. Hart Welch, assigned to Regimental Headquarters as mechanic, but this date marked the passing of the V. C. A. as a unit part of the First Provisional Regiment. The service of the organization had been of inestimable value, and had spanned a period in which there was a crying need for men. It gradually became apparent that Colonel Rose's plan was to standardize his regiment and perfect its organization as speedily as possible. It was, therefore, necessary to bring into the field only units prepared to serve for an indefinite period, and such units were Troop G and Battery A. It was only gradual disintegration due to federal service and release for cause that finally resulted in the loss of these two units as such.

On the 13th, Major James A. Blair of the Adjutant-General's Office, Capt. Hayden J. Bates, Q. M. C., arrived at headquarters to discuss the question of barracks with Major Hodges, who had been designated by Colonel Rose as officer in charge of construction. The matter of barracks had been taken up ten days previous with the office of the Adjutant-General by Colonel Rose. The entire story of the building of the barracks of the First Provisional Regiment and the housing of the regiment generally is elsewhere discussed in detail.

On Sept. 14th the following report was submitted to the Division

of Defense and Security, office of the Adjutant-General, showing sectorization of the regiment and the troops covering the various sectors. This sectorization maintained for the greater part until the end of the service and should be noted carefully with reference to the sectional maps of the line which bear the sector boundaries and numbers: *

North 1, Captain A. Broadbent, Co.'s A and B, 1st Inf.

Esopus siphon to Peak tunnel

" 2, Captain Wilbur, Co. H, 1st Inf.

to Bonticou tunnel

" 3, Lieut. Van Nouhuys, Troop B, 1st Cavalry

to downtake chamber Walkill pressure tunnel

" 4, Captain Jackson, Detachments of Co.'s C and K, 1st and 10th Inf.

to St. Elmo siphon south

" 5, Captain Westcott, Troop G, 1st Cavalry

to Culvert 91

" 6, Captain Gifford, Co. F, 10th Inf.

from Culvert 92 to Cornwall

South 1, Captain Johnson, Hudson River to Garrison tunnel

Battery C, 1st Field Artillery

" 2, Captain Roche, 69th Depot Unit

to Peekskill siphon

" 3 & 4, Captain Thompson, 4th Co., 9th Coast Artillery

to Croton Lake

" 5, Captain Van Zandt, Co. B, 12th Inf.

to Sarles Hill

" 6, Captain Miles, Co. D, 7th Inf.

to Kensico Dam

" 7, Captain Harte, Battery A, 1st Field Artillery

to Kensico tunnel

" 8, Lieut. Launt, Co. F, 1st Inf.

to Elmsford tunnel

" 9, Lieut. Smaney, Batteries B and D, 1st Field Artillery

to New York City Line

Shaft No. 2, New Croton Aqueduct, was discontinued as a guarded point on the 16th. This was on Sector S-5, covered by Captain Van Zandt, and had been secured by the Department of Water Supply, Gas & Electricity of the City of New York against possible attack by a huge concrete slab, although it was directed inspected daily.

* These maps will be found in the cover-pockets at either end of the book.

The strength of the regiment and the respective strengths of the 1st and 2nd Battalions were fixed by General Orders No. 12, on Sept. 17th, at the time of the next general troop movement. The strength of the 1st Battalion, including that of the Headquarters Company, which was administered by headquarters, was placed at not to exceed 695 men at any one time, while the strength of the 2nd Battalion was placed at a maximum of 503, thus allowing a margin of two for the map detail which had been asked for from the former V. C. A., now the 9th C. A. C. General Orders directed the effecting of the permanency of commands as speedily as possible.

For some time there had been a deal of agitation regarding members of Company F, 10th Infantry, who were needed at home for various reasons. On the 17th, to clear up the situation, as well as to relieve a number of men physically unfit in other units, 35 men from Company F, 16 men from Company C, 1st Infantry, and 21 from Company K, 10th Infantry, were relieved from duty. Capt. E. Madden Decker, Company 1, 1st Infantry, brought into the field from Middletown, 61 men who were distributed so as to fill the gaps made by the departure of those relieved. Later this distribution was found to be unsatisfactory and Captain Decker's men were consolidated on Sector N-4.

1st Lieut. William J. Rivers, who had been promoted from the first-sergeantry with which he entered the field, was relieved from duty on Sept. 18th, but later returned, as will appear in the succeeding pages. Capt. Arthur Conner in command of Sector S-8 had been strengthened by the bringing of 2nd Lieut. R. C. Launt into the field, and about this time Captain Conner's business affairs became such that it was necessary for him to secure an extended leave of absence.

On the 21st, Captain Jackson, who had been in command of the sector from Shaft No. 6 at Ireland Corners to the St. Elmo siphon, reported his 51 enlisted men to Captain Gifford in charge of the Vail's Gate Sector, and was relieved of command as an officer of the 2nd Battalion. This resulted in the consolidation of Captain Decker's command under their own officer at Gardiner. Captain Jackson was for a time attached to Regimental Headquarters and later relieved from duty.

Captain Conners was, under Special Orders No. 34, on Sept. 25th, relieved from duty and Lieutenant Launt placed in charge of the sector permanently. It should be noted at this point that Lieut. Launt maintained one of the best sectors in the regiment during his period of occupancy on Sector S-8.

On Saturday, Sept. 22nd there appeared the first number of

the "?????", the unnamed regimental newspaper, for which the regiment later selected the name of *The Watchdog*. Published at Yonkers by the Gazette Press Company, with Capt. T. R. Hutton, Regimental Adjutant, as editor, Sergt. James Murray as assistant editor, Captain Howland Pell as business manager, and Sergt. Joseph Chase, V. C. A., as art editor, it was delivered (some 1,200 copies in all) along the line of the First Provisional Regiment by automobile. Of *The Watchdog*, its origin, history, publication and deacease, a detailed account will be found in the chapter entitled, "Literature of the Regiment."

Up through the wind and rain of a wild stormy night, on the evening of Sept. 24th, came the first pay checks of the First Provisional since the entry of the regiment into the field. Major F. M. Crossett and Captain Pell carried the checks from one end of the line to the other and were greeted everywhere with cheers and even wilder manifestations of joy.

Capt. R. L. Winne, 9th C. A. C., relieved Capt. John M. Thompson in command of Sector S-3-4, with company post at Crom-pound road, in the latter part of September, and served during his period until Oct. 1st. About this time (Sept. 27th) Louis M. Baker, who had entered the field as supply sergeant of the Headquarters Company and who had been promoted to 2nd lieutenancy, was returned to home station as the result of the promotion. At one time and another the First Provisional Regiment suffered the loss of a number of good officers as the result of promotion, which left no place for them in the field, perhaps the best examples of this being the necessary release of Majors Wilbur and Damon a short time later in the fall of 1917.

Second Lieut. B. L. Green was relieved from duty with the regiment on the 28th, and 1st Lieut. W. J. Rivers returned to duty.

On the following day, Lieut. Charles A. Clinton, who had served from the beginning as the Medical Officer of the 2nd Battalion, was relieved from duty because of private-practice reasons and resumed private life until the following summer, when he again joined the regiment, remaining with it to the end. Capt. F. M. H. Jackson was relieved from duty on the 29th.

It was on the same date that the First Provisional Regiment added unto itself one of the greatest single assets that it ever possessed, in the person of Dr. Charles Emerson Townsend, of Newburgh, chief surgeon of St. Luke's Hospital of that city, and a warm personal friend of the Commanding Officer of the regiment. As one of the best-known surgeons and physicians in the Hudson Valley, Major Townsend, as Chief Medical Officer of the First Provisional Regiment, was absolutely invaluable. Of his work

more will be said in detail in the chapter which has to do with the health and sickness of the regiment.

Major Townsend made his headquarters at Newburgh, with the general health of the regiment in his charge, Capt. Jerome Kingsbury taking responsibility for the 1st Battalion, and 1st Lieut. Milton Aaronowitz, of Albany, being assigned to the 2nd Battalion, filling Lieut. Clinton's place, with headquarters at New Paltz.

The bulk of the transportation promised by the City of New York having been delivered to the regiment by Sept. 29th, there was issued on the 30th, General Orders No. 14, forbidding the further hire of motor transportation by any officer or enlisted man connected with the First Provisional Regiment.

September, the second month of the regiment in the field, ended in a blaze of golden, sunshiny days and crispy nights. It was also marked by the publication of the battalion ratings of the 2nd Battalion for the month of September. This system of ratings evolved by Major Lamb as an incentive to the various companies of his command, was later adopted throughout the regiment and the results were all that could be desired.

Major Lamb's explanation of the system printed in *The Watch-dog* in connection with the battalion ratings were as follows:

"For the purpose of increasing the efficiency of this battalion it is proposed, starting Oct. 1st, to give each of its units a monthly rating based on its work in the field during the previous month. The maximum rating to be obtained by a unit is 100 points.

"Of these 100 points, 40 are for efficiency shown by the men in guard duty; 30 for sanitation as prescribed by F. S. R. 331, and 30 for soldierly appearance both on and off guard duty.

The ratings of the 2nd Battalion for September were as follows:

| Organization | Guard- ing | Sani- tation | Appear- ance | P.C. |
|--------------------------------|---------------|-----------------|-----------------|------|
| Troop H, 1st Cavalry (11 days) | 33 | 26 | 26 | 85 |
| Company A, 1st Infantry... | 33 | 26 | 24 | 83 |
| Troop B, 1st Cavalry..... | 33 | 22 | 26 | 81 |
| Company F, 10th Infantry... | 33 | 23 | 24 | 80 |
| Company H, 1st Infantry... | 33 | 20 | 22 | 75 |
| Company B, 1st Infantry... | 28 | 24 | 23 | 75 |
| Troop G, 1st Cavalry (20 days) | 23 | 24 | 19 | 66 |
| Company C, 1st Infantry... | 10 | 15 | 15 | 40 |

OCTOBER

THE 1st of October, which was to be one of the most critical months in the history of the regiment, brought 2nd Lieut. Avery E. Lord, of Utica, to duty at Regimental Headquarters, where he was attached to the Adjutant's office. As a former newspaper man it was natural that he should become identified with *The Watchdog*, and, Sergeant Murray having been returned to home station because of illness, Lieut. Lord stepped into the position of assistant editor, which he held until the end of the paper's existence. On the same day the regiment had its first General Court Martial in session at Regimental Headquarters, with Lieut.-Colonel Burnett as President and Lieut. Lane as Judge-Advocate. One case was of a man charged with wilfully maiming himself by shooting himself in the foot and the other with attempting to stir up mutiny. These cases, as well as all of the court matters of the regiment, are so well handled in Captain Lane's chapter on the legal end of it that they are only mentioned here because they were the first.

On the 3rd orders were issued relieving Lieut. H. P. Williams from duty as Summary Court Officer of the 1st Battalion, effective the 5th, and delegating the duty to Lieut. Henry B. Welsh of the 9th C. A. C., attached to Captain Thompson's sector. This is the initial entry of Lieut. Welsh into this narrative and it would be impossible to allow the occasion to go by without one of the best Junior cot stories on the line. Lieut. Welsh was considerably over six feet in height, with frame accordingly, and the J. C. did not meet his needs at all. One of the first glimpses had of him by officers from headquarters was when he was asleep, and the picture was one that will remain a long while. His head rested on a blanket-covered soap-box, the central portions of him on the sagging Junior cot and his lower legs and feet on a soap-box. Unfortunately it was one of those pictures for which there was no camera.

At headquarters the men's and officers' mess halls had been finished and the work of flooring and framing the tents used to house the offices, officers and non-commissioned officers had been going forward rapidly. This date found practically all framed,

with the exception of the tent-shack which was to house the office of *The Watchdog*, and the telephone equipment at the extreme right of the office or front row, between the Adjutant's office and the mess hall. On the night of the 4th this was dedicated with powdered rosin, orange juice, water and gore as the first of the First Provisional's stated boxing bouts was staged. The match was witnessed by Colonel Rose and the main event of the evening was between John Hoffman of Battery A and Robert Dorn of the Supply Company.

Incidentally, the officer's mess hall was opened on that evening, with a number of guests present. Headquarters was beginning to assume the appearances of such, and the officers, although working an average of sixteen hours a day, had opened a pistol range in a rear lot near the stables that had been built to house the mules assigned to headquarters by the Chief Quartermaster.

There were two dark figures on the horizon of headquarters at this time, one named Binks Blair and the other Charles Skinner, the former a diminutive black boy from Utica and the other a far from diminutive black man from White Plains. Neither was successful, but both were amusing. Skinner, with all the superstition of his race, was never at ease from the time he entered the camp until he finally left, thanks to the pranks of the Headquarters Company. One night he found a snake coiled in his bed and spent the remainder of the night sleeping on his hands and knees. Eventually both were returned to home station.

On the 4th, orders went out which lopped 57 men from the total strength of the sector covered by the men of the 12th Infantry.

The 5th marked the end of the service given by the 7th Regiment, beginning with the date on which the First Provisional took the field. The 7th had furnished three detachments: the first, Company C, under Capt. J. R. Stewart; the second, Company D, under Capt. W. B. Miles; and the final one, Company B, commanded by S. M. Richardson. The 7th men had sustained the traditions of their regiment on the Pleasantville sector, and had made many friends for the First Provisional in that section. Their guard duty was of the best and their humor matched it. This humor nearly led to disastrous results for the Regimental Adjutant in the early stages of the game and furnished one more incident to the First Provisional's line lore.

The post encampment was located near the Pleasantville Cemetery, where one of the wags of the company had placed on a lot bearing the names of heroes of other wars, a war poster, reading:

"WAKE UP AND DO YOUR BIT"

The sentry on Post 1 was pacing up and down one night when in the moonlight he discovered what he thought to be a movement among the white stones of the graveyard.

He rubbed his eyes and looked closely. Yes, that was certainly a movement. Two shadowy forms detached themselves from the clustering shadows of the tombstones and rolled silently through the lots, floated over the stone wall, and then reappeared, now whiter in the moonlight, at the near edge of the cemetery. Back in the camp a dog set up a weird howl.

The sentry opened his mouth to call, but the words stuck in his throat. He remembered the challenging poster placed in the graveyard in a moment of thoughtlessness. Supposing some of those old ducks in there had taken it into their heads to rebuke this carelessness and lack of reverence in a later generation, and had taken up the challenge of the poster. The man on post swallowed hard, but finally he got it out of him.

"Halt!" he challenged; and then, without waiting to see what happened, warned, "If you don't stop right where you are I'm going to shoot."

"It's the Adjutant and the Regimental Sergeant-Major," came the reply.

"You stay where you are until I call out the corporal of the guard," was the answer. He was not taking any chances with possible spooks.

The visitors thought that the treatment they received was a little queer, but it was not until a week later that they learned who they were supposed to represent when they appeared in the graveyard.

The 7th was relieved by 1st Lieut. Nicholas Muller and 50 men of the 69th Infantry. By birth a native of Lorraine, Lieut. Muller carried the accent of his native land with him to the line, and in the course of his service was several times accused of being of German extraction by disgruntled enlisted men or civilians, but his work with the First Provisional Regiment, as Company Commander, Battalion Inspector and Regimental Supply Officer, was his best answer. He was one of the most valuable officers in the entire history of the regiment and his work was such as to bring to him the warmest of commendation from those who really knew.

Twenty-five men of the 69th went to Sector S-9-B to strengthen the line at that point. On the same date there was a release and replacement of approximately 40 men of the 9th C. A. C.

In the program of making the personnel of the regiment permanent, Colonel Rose brought into the field on the 7th, Lieut.

Harvey Miller of Company C, 3rd Infantry, from Syracuse, with 35 men. The detachment of Company C of Watertown, at that time serving under Capt. Decker, was relieved, together with 1st Lieut. Rivers, Lieut. Smith and his men taking the place of those relieved. On the same date Lieut. Edward Strauss, 12th Infantry, and Lieut. Edward Murphy, 12th Infantry, were relieved from duty with the regiment, to meet the reduction of officers made necessary by the changes.

The first and only death of a civilian at the hands of members of the regiment marked the 8th of October, when shortly after noon Thomas Bennett, a fourteen-year-old boy living near the Aqueduct, was shot and killed by Private Peter Gallagher, Battery B, 1st F. A. The report of the coroner in the case, Lieut. H. B. Welsh, showed that Bennett had been killed by Gallagher, and Gallagher was later tried by court martial and convicted. Of Gallagher and his rehabilitation more appears later.

Twenty-four enlisted men of Company M, 1st Inf., under command of 2nd Lieut. Harry J. Kerr, arrived on the line of the 2nd Battalion Oct. 15th, and were assigned to the Olive Bridge Sector.

It was also on Oct. 15th that the Guard Card System of the First Provisional Regiment, explained in the chapter on The Impregnable Line, was put into effect, affording a check on every tour of the guard duty and every inspection throughout the regiment.

On the 18th the regiment went through its first check roll-call experience. The idea of a check roll-call on a company was not new, but one which would show exactly where every man in the regiment was and what he was doing at a given time was new enough to surprise even the First Provisional, which by this time had arrived at the point where it was surprised at nothing.

The first call was at 3.15 P.M. and was no more than finished, when at 8.15, before the regiment had fairly recovered from the shock, a call was sent out for another one. And so it was that twice within eight hours the headquarters of the regiment accounted by telephone for every last man, from the Colonel to the latest recruit from Ashokan to Hillview.

Not all of the commands caught the idea of just what was meant by what a man was doing, and such reports as, "Washing his face," "Playing cards," "Watching a card game," etc., etc., appeared opposite the names of many men not on actual guard duty. From the 12th Infantry came the banner report:

"John Jones—In bed, thinking."

Another unit showed one man washing his feet at 8.15 that had not appeared on the 3.15 call. "He enlisted since the last check,"

was the explanation given when the headquarters stenographer, who had handled the same company on the previous call, asked about the difference.

The total strength of each company checked against the morning report of the day, or explanation had to be given as to the difference. A sample sheet of the first check roll-call is included in the chapter on Paper-work.

The First Provisional's Regimental March, "The Good Old N. Y. G.," by Lieut. Clinton, made its official début at headquarters on the night of the 22nd, when Colonel Rose, Lieut.-Colonel Edward E. Powell of Binghamton, Captain Edwin H. Moody of Binghamton, and the officers of the headquarters gathered around a melodeon presented by friends in Ossining to try it out. The song is printed in the chapter on Regimental Literature.

It was during this period that Lieut. Adelaide B. Bayliss of Bedford and New York, attached to the National League for Women's Service, played an important part in the history of the regiment laying foundations for an auxiliary motor service which continued through one agency or another from that time until the First Provisional finished its work. The transportation facilities at headquarters were always at minimum, as they were on every portion of the line, but as a result of Lieut. Bayliss' work there was built up a small but efficient auxiliary corps which saved headquarters in many a transportation pinch. The work of Lieut. Bayliss, Lieut. Turner, Captain Rupprecht and others is given detailed consideration in the chapter on Transportation.

The first recognized contact with the Federal Government in the matter of aeroplanes has already been cited. Another came on October 23rd, when, under orders from the Adjutant-General, the ship-yards of the International Shipbuilding Company at Nyack were inspected by Major Hodges and the Regimental Adjutant, with a view of reporting on the necessary number of men required for the guarding of this plant. For a time it was the intent that the First Provisional should take over this work also, but nothing came of it.

On Oct. 26th, Capt. Benedict Gifford was relieved from further duty with the First Provisional Regiment, Captain Gifford having been in command of Sector-N-6 since the entrance of the regiment into the field.

Forty-two men of Company E, 14th Infantry, under Capt. John H. Blume, were placed under orders at their armory on Oct. 27th and entered the field shortly after that date. This was the first unit to go through a training period at Regimental Head-

quarters and the work which Captain Blume's men did on Sector S-9 in later days proved the value of the training idea. This, due to the ever-present shortage of men, was not always possible of execution.

October closed with the release of Lieut. H. P. Williams from active duty and the assignment of Capt. John Moore Perry, formerly of the V. C. A., to the position of inspecting officer of the 1st Battalion. A great portion of the Veteran Corps of Artillery had, under General Orders No. 45, A. G. O., been made the 9th Coast Artillery Corps, and the officers serving with the First Provisional, who had formerly been V. C. A. men, had been automatically transferred at home station, though still continuing in the field.

BATTALION RATINGS FOR THE MONTH

FIRST BATTALION

| | | |
|--------------------------------------|--|------|
| Battery A, 1st F. A. | Captain Harte | .89 |
| 69th Infantry | Captain Roche | .835 |
| 69th Infantry | Captain Muller | .73 |
| Battery C, 1st F. A. | Captain Johnson | .662 |
| 12th Infantry | Captain Van Zandt | .605 |
| 8th Coast Artillery | Captain Thompson | .591 |
| Company F, 10th Infantry | Lieut. Launt | .575 |
| Batteries B and D, 1st F. A. | Lieuts. Cartwright and Smaney | .562 |

SECOND BATTALION

| <i>Organization</i> | <i>Guard Duty</i> | <i>Sani- tation</i> | <i>Soldierly Appearance</i> | <i>Aggre- gate</i> |
|-----------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------|---------------------------------|------------------------|
| Co. H, 1st Infantry.. | 38 | 26 | 26 | 90 |
| Co. A, 1st Infantry.. | 36 | 27 | 24 | 87 |
| Troop B, Cavalry... | 35 | 21 | 26 | 83 |
| Co. B, 1st Infantry.. | 32 | 25 | 24 | 81 |
| Co. C, 3rd Infantry.. | 30 | 23 | 24 | 77 |
| Co. F, 10th Infantry. | 28 | 19 | 24 | 71 |
| Troop G, Cavalry.. | 26 | 21 | 24 | 71 |
| Co. I, 1st Infantry.. | 30 | 16 | 24 | 70 |

NOVEMBER

NOVEMBER opened with the naming of the regimental paper, *The Watchdog*, and a speech to the men of the 9th C. A. C. by Colonel Rose at a review tendered him at the 9th Coast Armory. The first snow covered the Catskills, and barracks-building speeded to the utmost. On the 5th, 1st Lieut. Earle Charles Waterbury, M. C., of Pine Bush, was brought into the field, remaining with the regiment until demobilization. Lieut. Waterbury was assigned to Regimental Headquarters and given charge of the line on the eastern side of the Hudson.

On Nov. 6th, the regiment cast its first vote in the field, with regularly established polling booths at each post. At Regimental Headquarters Lieut.-Colonel Burnett cast the first ballot. A few days before the election Regimental Headquarters entertained a flying squadron of suffragist workers who spoke to the men along the line for the cause, under direction of Mrs. William Neely, of Tarrytown.

The election board at headquarters consisted of Lieut. Towner, Sergt.-Major Therkildsen, Battalion Sergt.-Major Edmund J. Dixon, and 1st Sergt. John J. Crotty.

On Nov. 10th Lieut. Russell Wiggins, Co. I, Middletown, was brought into the field and assigned to duty at Captain Decker's headquarters.

The first formal guard mount in the regiment was held at Regimental Headquarters on Nov. 7th, with the training detachment of the 14th Infantry mounting the guard, Captain Blume as New Officer of the Day, Lieut.-Colonel Burnett as Old Officer of the Day and Captain Hutton as Adjutant.

The training detachment of the 14th moved onto the line on the 12th, taking over S-9. This brought Lieuts. Cartwright and Smaney under Captain Blume, who made his headquarters at Fort Hill road at first.

As a result of an officers' meeting called on the 16th for the various unit commanders of the 1st Battalion, Capt. Leo C. Harte was assigned as assistant to Major Hodges for emergency work. There were various indications at this time which made Colonel Rose believe that the work of the line was slumping in spots, and

the appointment of Captain Harte as General Inspector was one of the moves which answered this. How the remainder of it was answered and how the line was brought from a slump to a jump, is told in the portion of this work which deals with "The Impregnable Line."

Captain Jerome Kingsbury was relieved from duty with the regiment on the 17th. On the following day Lieut. H. B. Welsh was relieved from duty.

It was at this time that the authorized strength of the regiment was increased from 1,200 to 1,500 by orders of the Adjutant-General, and on Nov. 21st 80 men were accepted from the 100 inspected by Regimental and Battalion Staff Officers at the 71st Regiment Armory. These men, under Capt. Frederick C. Kuehnle and 2nd Lieut. J. Noble Braden, were addressed by Colonel Rose at the armory at the time of their acceptance, and the difficulties and hardships of Aqueduct work explained to them. It was a severe picture that Colonel Rose painted, but when the opportunity was given to any who did not wish to serve to fall out, there was no response. The unit reported to Regimental Headquarters for a period of intensive training, after which it took over Sector S-3 and 4. Captain Kuehnle, one of the most efficient line officers ever brought into the field with the First Provisional, continued to serve until the demobilization period of the regiment, being the last commanding officer of the 3rd Battalion, which was formed later.

It was in the latter part of November that General Orders No. 58, A. G. O., reorganized the New York Guard along geographical lines. The effects of this order upon the First Provisional Regiment were of a far-reaching nature, inasmuch as by it companies from which Colonel Rose had hoped to draw were transferred to other regiments. Company A of Utica became Company K of the 10th, and Company B became Company L of the 10th. Company M of the old 1st Infantry was transferred to the 10th, H of the 1st became H of the 4th, Captain Johnson's command was made the Machine Gun Company of the 4th Infantry, and Company F at Elmsford became I of the 10th. Company G of Oneonta became G of the 10th, and so it was that the designation of the various companies on the line were changed. This should be borne in mind, as from this time on they are characterized under their new designations.

Under the new order Captain Damon became a major, and Major Lamb was made aide on the staff of the Adjutant-General.

For some time the Adjutant-General's Office had been taking the position that troops needed for replacement or additions on the

line of the First Provisional Regiment should be drawn as largely as possible from the City of New York, and this, in combination with the new situation, brought about by the reorganizing of the State forces, brought the regiment face to face with a serious problem—that of replacement.

Thanksgiving Day was marked by turkey dinners and cranberries, mince and pumpkin pies and all of the other good things of the day, at all points on the line, as a result of preparations made by the supply officers and Colonel Rose's orders. Headquarters having moved to the Pines Bridge Manor establishment at the foot of Crow Hill, the headquarters Thanksgiving dinner was eaten there.

The taking over of Pines Bridge Inn and the property for winter headquarters had been made necessary by the fact that the camp on Crow Hill had never been designed for winter housing of men. Although crowded, the winter headquarters were fairly comfortable, the forward portion of the hotel building being occupied by the officers, who paid practically half the rental of the entire establishment, while the enlisted men occupied the rear portion.

The old sitting-room on the ground floor of the hotel was turned into an officers' dormitory, while the dining-room was used as officers' mess and the kitchen as such for both officers and men. The hotel office was made the office of Colonel Burnett as Post Commander and was later also used by Major Hodges. The room immediately in the rear of this was used as an office by the battalion employees and the Post Commander's personal force. The large ball-room was floored over and became the men's mess and recreation room and drill-hall. The bar was closed and the room was used as a canteen.

On the second floor in the forward part of the building were Colonel Rose's quarters, Colonel Burnett's room, and Major Hodges' rooms. In the rear of the second floor were the rooms occupied by Captain Lane and Lieut. Towner, Lieut. Waterbury, and Mr. and Mrs. Kelly, part owners of the hotel, who were retained by the officers for administrative purposes.

The third-floor rooms were occupied by Captain Pell and Captain Hutton, and later by Captain Scherman, Lieut. Therkildsen, and Lieut. Friend. During the winter the wives and families of some of the officers lived in the portion of the hotel rented by the officers.

The regimental office, together with the office of *The Watchdog*, was established in the little white tenant building about one hundred yards east of the hotel, the most easterly room on the ground floor being used for the Adjutant's private office, while

the large room on the west side was used for the general office. Upstairs was the office of *The Watchdog*, and the guard card-sorting room, as well as sleeping-quarters for Lieut. Lord and Sergt.-Major Therkildsen, who was shortly afterward promoted to 1st lieutenant in the 1st Infantry, having transferred from the 10th.

The movement of the headquarters necessitated considerable repair and improvement work, this being especially true in the office building and in the garage and stables. Four mounts, two mules, two horses, owned by the hotel estate, three cows, chickens, and some pigs made a full-sized job for Sergt. Hewitt Hendricks, who was stable sergeant of the Headquarters Company. The garage and machine-shop were in charge of Chief Mechanic J. Hart Welch, who had been with the regiment from its beginnings.

The men's barracks was on the second floor of the rear building, and the office of the 1st Sergeant was on the same floor. Taken altogether, the establishment made a very satisfactory winter headquarters, although it was isolated from the world and at times a very lonely place.

The 71st Infantry detachment, arriving on Nov. 27th, took over the old camp on the hill, and on the morning of the 28th awoke to find snow covering the ground. On the 27th, Capt. Eugene Scherman was made Regimental Inspecting Officer, and shortly thereafter began an inspection of the entire line from the north, checking subsistence and quartermaster property and inventorying against accounts. As the Commanding Officer was at the time considerably interested in learning just what food the men were getting, Captain Scherman was instructed to eat at every camp on the line, and so it was that there occurred what was commonly known at headquarters as "Scherman's march to see."

"I am eating my way out," were the words placed in his mouth by the headquarters jesters, "and I'll eat it out along this line if it takes all winter."

The word soon reached headquarters that Captain Scherman was getting beans at every place he stopped to eat. When he reported the Lieut.-Colonel remarked, gravely, "Well, I suppose you've been having a fine time, Captain," and the regimental mess shouted. At the time there was written a little parody on "Marching Through Georgia," the last lines of which went something like this:

*"And he's been eating beans and pork, from Atwood to the sea:
Scherman is marching from 'Shokan'!"*

The Scribner's Farm Sector was taken over by a squad from Captain Kuehnle's command on the 29th, and shortly afterward Captain Kuehnle took over the entire sector formerly commanded by Captain Thompson.

November ended with a promise of snow in the air, and the following battalion ratings:

| <i>Organization</i> | <i>Guard- ing</i> | <i>Sani- tation</i> | <i>Appear- ance</i> | <i>P. C.</i> |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|--------------|
| Co. H, 4th Infantry | 38 | 23 | 26 | 87 |
| Co. A, 10th Infantry | 35 | 25 | 25 | 85 |
| Troop B, Squadron D | 36 | 21 | 27 | 84 |
| Co. B, 10th Infantry | 35 | 23 | 25 | 83 |
| Co. I, 1st Infantry | 30 | 24 | 25 | 79 |
| Co. C, 3rd Infantry | 32 | 20 | 24 | 76 |
| Troop G, Squadron D | 30 | 21 | 25 | 76 |
| Co. F, 10th Infantry | 31 | 20 | 24 | 75 |

DECEMBER

WITH December came big changes. On the 3rd orders were issued for the formation of a third battalion, embracing that portion of the First Battalion south of Sarles Hill at the southern end of the line covered by the 12th Infantry, to take effect Dec. 5th. The three battalions as then constituted covered the following territory:

- First Battalion: From the east side of the Hudson River to the southern limit of Sector S-5 and embracing Sectors S-1 to S-5, inclusive, Major W. L. Hodges commanding.
- Second Battalion: From the South Tongore siphon to the Hudson River, including all territory originally assigned to the regiment on the western side of the Hudson by S. O. 198, A. G. O. Major Charles J. Lamb commanding.
- Third Battalion: From the southern limit of Sector S-5 to the southern limit of the territory assigned to the First Provisional Regiment under S. O. 198, A. G. O. Capt. Leo C. Harte commanding.

Captain Harte established headquarters near Kensico Dam at Valhalla and Captain Perry was assigned to him as Inspecting Officer. Lieut. Stone acted as Battalion Adjutant in the absence of Lieut. Therkiltsen, who, though named as Adjutant, remained at Regimental Headquarters as assistant in the Regimental Adjutant's office.

Captain Lane was at the same time assigned Inspector of the 1st Battalion, and Lieut. John Towner Adjutant of the 1st Battalion. First Lieut. Edgar V. Friend, D. C., was for the purposes of administration assigned as Medical Officer, 3rd Battalion.

Capt. Otto Thiede and 30 men of the 8th Coast Artillery Corps

were inspected and selected on December 3rd, and four days later were moved into the field on Sector N-6, where Captain Thiede took command.

On the night of the 6th of December word reached the headquarters of the First Provisional Regiment, as the officers sat at mess, that the regiment had on that day been brigaded with the Second Provisional under Brigadier-General F. DeForest Kemp, by the Adjutant-General of the State. The regiment was no longer an individual unit, but a part of another organization, and its Commanding Officer responsible to an intermediate commander instead of the Adjutant-General of the State direct.

While there was a general tightening of authority in the matter of purchases, something which had hitherto been left to the discretion of the Commanding Officer of the regiment as the man on the ground who knew the business, the regiment at that time went through but little change as a result of the brigading. The plans which Colonel Rose had worked out for the standardization of the organization, which had been intrusted to him, went forward to consummation, and purchase authority was the only point at which there was any change then.

Capt. John M. Thompson's command was brought in from the line to headquarters for training-work when Sectors S-3 and -4 were taken over by Captain Kuehnle's men, and ceremonies continued at headquarters well into December.

Heavy snow had fallen on the 8th, a night which was largely spent on the line by Colonel Rose and the Staff Officers, inasmuch as the Commanding Officer believed that the time of the first storm, if at any time, the men and officers of the line would need to feel that headquarters was in close touch with everything.

The storm of the 8th was but a foretaste of the terrific blizzard which began on the night of Thursday, the 13th, and which through the long, dark hours hammered savagely at the line from the Ashokan valleys to the southern end of the First Provisional's skeleton guard. Throughout Thursday night and for the greater part of Friday the blizzard whooped and tore through the mountains and valleys and piled the white drifts high in the siphons and made the cut and cover well-nigh impassable for the reliefs that staggered to and from their posts through the driving white.

On the Bonticou sector men muffled to the eyes waited in the barracks for a moment's lull in the storm, and then broke out into the drifts, only to be hurled back against the side of the building by the terrific sweep of the gale and the beat of the wind-driven snow that whirled over them in clouds, converting

them to white wind-smitten wraiths in a moment. Men coming in from the last posts on the sector struggled through the white banks for three painful hours in an effort to regain the warmth and safety of the barracks, and finally fell exhausted at the doors, too weak to help themselves as their comrades pulled them in from certain death on the very door-step of the barracks.

Although minimum shifts were ordered all along the line, the physical struggle getting to and from post was such that it was impossible in most cases to give the men the benefit of the order. The very lives of the men on guard depended upon the system of patrolling non-commissioned officers in those hours of storm when men, arriving sweat-drenched and exhausted at their posts, were ready to drop quietly asleep in the heaping white mounds of snow that their weary feet could not keep from rising about them.

If the spirit of the First Provisional had ever broken it would have broken on that wild night or during the snow-clouded hours of the morning that followed it. It was one of the worst storms known to the lower portion of the State in years, and on the exposed line of the Aqueduct it was evident in its most malignant form. Coated with storm-driven particles of snow from head to foot, their eyelashes clicking with ice-particles, and their faces drawn with the cold and exposure, men crawled into barracks for a few hours of storm-drugged sleep before going back to the tumult of the outside world again. Their clothes were wet and cold and in the barracks dried slowly, seldom in time for the next tour of guard duty. When waking-time came their muscles cried out against taking up the struggle with the drifts, and when these men of the Aqueduct toiled back to their posts it was with the slow mechanical movements of automatons.

The spirit of the line was best typified at Breakneck, where, high on the shoulder of the mountain, William Spangenburg, of Endicott, stuck to his post for twenty-four hours, cut off from the rest of the world by drifts that made relief for him impossible.

He and one other went onto the mountain Thursday night just as the storm was beginning. His comrade descended the mountain Friday morning, but when the relief tried to make its way to Spangenburg it found that the hard-pounded drifts in the narrow trail to the post made the mountain-top inaccessible. After hours of labor the relief turned back and reported failure.

William Spangenburg could have left that post and descended the mountain, but when he saw that the relief had been unable to come up to him, he knew that descent meant desertion of the post. And more than this, Spangenburg knew, like every other man of the command, that there was a back trail over the moun-

tain across which an enemy on show-shoes might come to wreak the havoc against which he and his comrades had guarded from their first days on the line.

And so, with only a seven-by-nine canvas tent for shelter, and a Sibley stove for warmth as long as the little supply of wood should last, Spangenburg stuck it out through Friday. High on the mountain, where every wind that swept the Hudson Valley struck with full blast, the boy stood his guard through the day, not daring to sleep even for a moment, and with only the remnants of the lunch that he had taken up with him Thursday night.

Colonel Rose was advised as to the situation late Friday afternoon and ordered that the boy be withdrawn from the mountain. By flash-signals from the base Spangenburg was told to come down, but it was only when he was made to understand that the order was direct from Regimental Headquarters that he gave up his post and floundered down through the drifts, utterly exhausted. He had remained on guard from eight o'clock Thursday night until eight o'clock Friday night.

The storm broke all lines of transportation, and, especially in the little-traveled mountain districts of the line, isolated the camp for days. Motor traffic was out of the question, and it was only by a prodigious amount of sleigh and team hire that the First Provisional was able to feed its posts and outposts during the days that followed.

And from the top of the line there came at its close, with the characteristically resurgent humor of the regiment that rose over all occasions, the laconic comment:

“Lieutenant Snowden.”

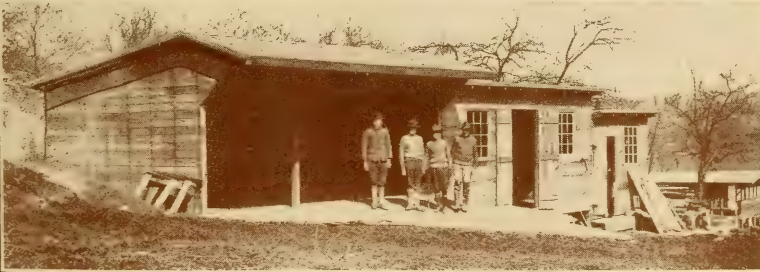
New boundaries were established for Sector S-4, and Captain Thompson was placed in charge on Dec. 11th. Sector 3's southern boundary was fixed at Culvert 155, while S-4 included from 155 south, with the north and south Hunter Brook siphons, the Scribner's Farm section, and the Croton Lake outpost, including the screen-house. This relieved S-5 from responsibility for the screen-house.

On the 14th Lieut. Russell Wiggins was relieved from duty with Captain Decker at Gardiner, having served the regiment well during his short stay. Capt. Maurice Damon, having been promoted to Major, was relieved from duty with the regiment on the 15th, after having served with the regiment for five months. Shortly after his release he was assigned to duty with the Second Provisional as Inspecting Officer.

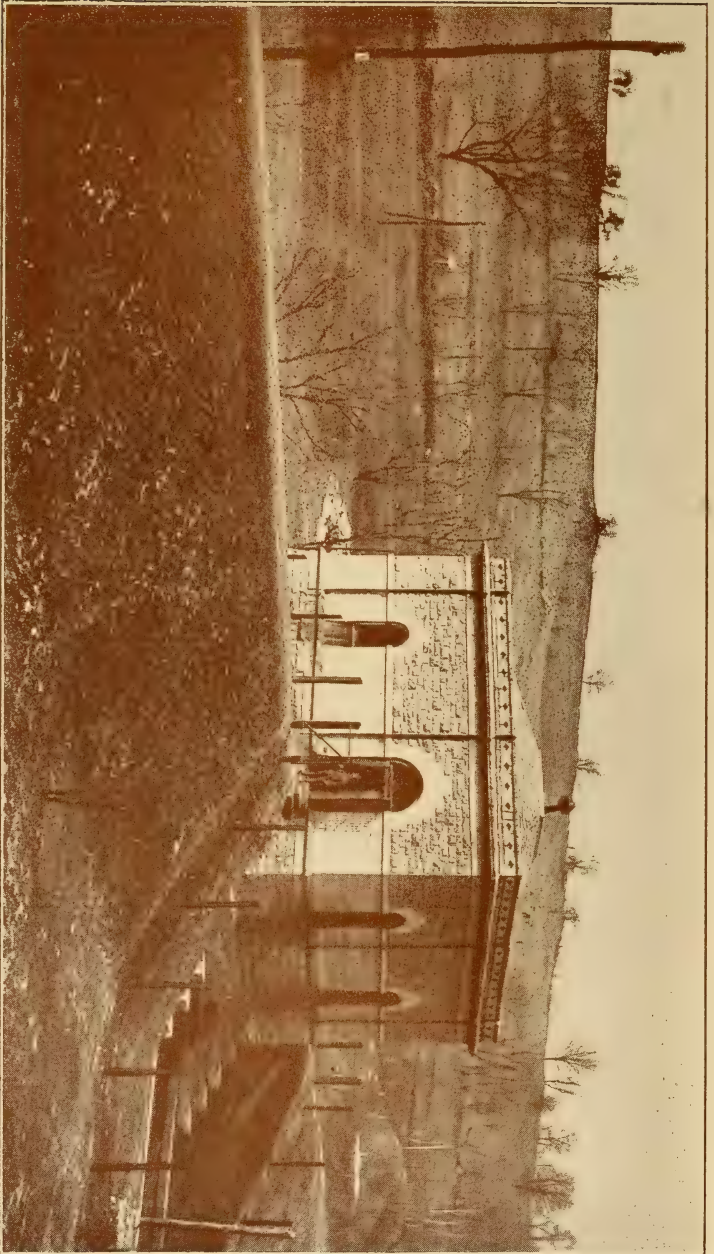
It was about this time that Lieut. H. P. Williams, who had served with the regiment in its earliest days afield, stimulated the monthly battalion efficiency rating contests with the presentation of efficiency flags for each battalion, to be flown by the company obtaining the highest rating for the month. The flags were of blue border and white center, with a large red "E" for efficiency in the white field. With three-foot hoist and five-foot fly they gave pleasant tangibility to the efficiency marks, and the struggle for them was one which kept the companies of the regiment on their toes until the end of the long, hard game.

On Dec. 16th, in accordance with G. O. 2, Provisional Brigade, the long-awaited-for subsistence of 75 cents per man per day was authorized through the regiment by General Orders No. 41. This was a step which meant much to a regiment that was obliged to feed its men four and sometimes five times a day during the most severe weather in order to keep the bodies of the guardsmen supplied with the proper amount of fuel to withstand the incessant sapping of the cold. Up to that time the authorized ration had been 65 cents a day. When the regiment entered the field originally the ration was 52 cents per day.

The plan of bringing the organization up to full strength had gone forward to consummation as soon as possible after the issuance of the authorization, and the brigading of the regiment had made little or no difference in such matters at this time. Seventy-one enlisted men of the 47th Infantry, under command of Lieut. Eugene Duffield, 1st Lieut. Dennis Caulfield, and 2nd Lieut. John Travis had been inspected and selected, and under S. O. 99 this detachment was placed under orders on Dec. 18th, together with a detachment of 81 men of the 14th Infantry, under 1st Lieut. Frederick A. Baldwin and 1st Lieut. Edward J. Martin. The detachment of the 14th was moved onto the line on the 21st, being scattered along the sectors on the east side of the Hudson to temporarily plug gaps that could not be filled from home station at that time. The largest detachment went to Captain Blume on Sector S-9, where the 14th already had a unit. Fifteen men went to Nelsonville, 12 to Kensico, and 11 to Elmsford, while 43, under Lieut. Martin, went to S-9. This reinforcement of Capt. Blume made it possible to consolidate most of the 8th C. A. C. men who had been sent him as temporary line stoppers, in Capt. Van Zandt's company. Capt. Thompson's detachment, which had been pretty well broken up, began to have the appearances of getting together again, but as a matter of fact gradually disintegrated, some of the men remaining at Regimental Headquarters, where they were absorbed by the Headquarters Com-



Upper left—Chief Trumpeter Corrie, Sergt.-Drummer Thompson. Right—The C. O. and "Brownie." Center left—The O. D. (Captain Pell) and the O. G. (Lieut. Towner) enjoy a little joke. Right—Lieut.-Col. Burnett. Lower—Headquarters stables, Croton Lake.



THE GATE-HOUSE AT DUNWOODIE—A TYPICAL VULNERABLE POINT, CLOSE TO THE HIGHWAY AND NEAR THE METROPOLIS. CALL-BOX AT LEFT

pany, and others falling away for the various causes of release, while the group at Scribner's Farm hung on last of all.

The men of the 47th were thrown onto the line the day after Christmas, Lieut. Duffield and 23 men going to Sector N-1, 10 to N-2, and 31 with Lieuts. Caulfield and Travis to New Paltz, where they took over the southern end of the N-3 sector that had been covered by Troop B from the beginning.

It will be noted that the losses of the regiment must have been heavy to necessitate this strengthening at all points in the line. For some of the original commands of the First Provisional, such as Troop B, it marked the beginning of the end. Troop B, for instance, had held its sector with a great deal of just pride, though constant losses by federal enlistment or draft had made its line a thin one and a weak one in the later days. When the 47th took over the sub-sector and named the camp in which they were quartered Camp Riegelmann, the result was to stir up a healthy spirit of rivalry between the two organizations. But ever this failed to erase the fact that the old order of things had changed. The sector that was once the pride of the Troop B men had been lost, in part, to another organization, and the Troop B men felt it. This instance is cited at this point only to show the beginnings of the condition that arose later almost throughout the entire length of the line, due to the policy of bringing in New York City troops to the exclusion of replacements for up-State units from up-State.

The new Commanding General of the newly created brigade paid his first visit to the headquarters of the First Provisional on the 15th, when the roads from Mt. Kisco to Croton Lake were still piled high with snow. With transportation at its usual low ebb around Regimental Headquarters, and this intensified by the snow that kept the automobiles in their garage, it became necessary to send a straw-filled box-sleigh and team after the General, with red chairs from the hotel dining-room standing nearly seat-deep in the straw and adding a touch of burlesque to the entire affair. Despite the snowdrifts, practically every officer on the east side of the Hudson River had managed to reach headquarters for the event, and General Kemp was greeted by a long line standing at salute on the porch of the hotel as he drove up. With him was Major E. J. Wilson, formerly of the Adjutant-General's office and acting Adjutant-General of the brigade. The dinner was of the simplest—corned beef and cabbage, with apricots for desert. At its conclusion General Kemp spoke at Colonel Rose's invitation, indicating that economy, efficiency and results would be the watchwords of the Provisional Brigade. He discussed

the methods used in the Second Provisional Regiment along the line of the Barge and Champlain Canals, and said that he believed subsistence and housing to be the two things of greatest importance for the officers of the regiment to consider.

On Monday General Kemp again returned to headquarters and conferences lasting throughout Monday and Tuesday resulted. The following day he met the officers of the Second Battalion at New Paltz.

With snow heaped high around every barracks building on the line, Christmas was Christmas indeed for the men of the First Provisional. A day or so before the 25th there arrived at each barracks on the line a box filled with children's toys, and with them the men had a hilarious time. It was the idea of Colonel Rose and the toys made plenty of fun. Colonel Rose in a Christmas letter called the attention of the regiment to the more serious side of Christmas and asked for a coming year more full of self-sacrifice and undivided interest than the past one.

Christmas itself was a great day. Every command on the entire line, as a result of arrangements made by the Commanding Officer with the Red Cross units along the Aqueducts, was given a Christmas dinner, either at its barracks or by detachments in a nearby community, and there was a present for every one. Mess halls and barracks were strung with holly and festooned with evergreens, and a Christmas tree flourished at practically every post.

Perhaps the most remarkable thing about the 1917 Christmas on the First Provisional's line was that not a man nor an officer was absent from his post on the 24th or 25th. Realizing that not all could go home for the great day and that some were sure to be disappointed, Colonel Rose sent out a ruling a week ahead of time which put the bars up on all Christmas leaves. The results were satisfactory and left every one on the same status. With all barracks filled full there was no extra work for the few, and in order that the men might go to their Christmas dinners, officers in some instances took posts during the dinner periods. At headquarters Major W. L. Hodges and Lieut. Avery E. Lord went to the Hunter's Brook siphons for the day, relieving men from post so they could go into Mt. Kisco for Christmas dinner.

The year drew to a close with increasing cold, high drifts and creaking runners everywhere along the line of the First Provisional Regiment. With teams and sleighs the regiment had regained its normal in the matter of transportation and there was no lack of food or fuel along the line. The year in which so much had been accomplished closed quietly.

BATTALION RATINGS

THIRD BATTALION

| | <i>Efficiency</i> | <i>Sani-</i> | <i>Soldierly</i> | <i>Aggre-</i> |
|-------------------------------|-------------------|---------------|------------------|---------------|
| | <i>on Guard</i> | <i>tation</i> | <i>Appear-</i> | <i>gate</i> |
| Co. B, 69th, Capt. Muller. | 36 | 25 | 25 | 86 |
| Bat'y A, 3rd F. A., Lt. Weed | 33 | 24 | 23 | 80 |
| Co. F, 10th Inf., Lt. Launt | 35 | 21 | 24 | 80 |
| Co. E, 14th Inf., Capt. Blume | 33 | 18 | 22 | 73 |
| Bat'y D, 1st F. A., Lt. Cart- | | | | |
| right | 25 | 10 | 22 | 55 |

1918

JANUARY

THE New-Year began with 1,396 men and 60 officers on the morning report, and a tragedy at night, for Private Thomas A. Stokes was fatally wounded at 11.45 P.M. on the night of the 1st by a bullet fired from the rifle of one of the guards at Peekskill prison camp, where Capt. John M. Thompson had been placed in command. Stokes was taken to the Peekskill Hospital shortly after the accident by Dr. Waterbury, who was in Peekskill when Stokes was shot. The boy died at 2 P.M. on the following day after his family had arrived. Lieut. John Turner was designated as summary court to take coroner's proceedings in the case and he found that Stokes had met with death accidentally.

Stokes' death placed a damper on the happiness of the New-Year which had been featured at headquarters with open house for the men and officers. The man in whose hands the rifle had been at the time of its discharge was brought to Regimental Headquarters immediately as prisoner and remained there until the session of the General Court Martial convened in the case. Stokes was buried with full honors on Jan. 6th in New York.

It was on the 5th that the First Provisional lost its second building by fire, the first one having been at old Camp Byrnes on the Crompond road near Peekskill early in the game. On a bitter-cold night the men of Troop B were called out to fight fire in the B. W. S. house at Outpost No. 1 on the northern end of the line. It was impossible to save the building in such condition that it would be of further use, and, although the sleeping quarters were saved, it was necessary to discontinue the use of the post.

It was about this time that the First Provisional lost through promotion one of its best captains, J. Roy Wilbur, who since the first days of the regiment had been one of its strongest men. As a major he was obliged to return to home station, taking with him the thanks of the Commanding Officer and the respect of all who had been privileged to serve with him. Later Major Wilbur was to return to the regiment as a member on the final board of survey and spend the last days of the organization's existence with

his friends at headquarters. At the time of his return to home station he was presented with a loving-cup by his command.

Mumps breaking out on the line of the 2nd Battalion about the middle of the month resulted in the rental of the first field hospital in the regiment's history, on Chestnut Street in New Paltz. The epidemic was successfully checked and wiped out within a short time.

On the 17th 25 men from the 23rd Infantry and 25 men from Squadron C were brought onto the line of the 2nd Battalion, being distributed so as to fill the largest gaps in the various companies that were at this time steadily losing men. Capt. John M. Perry was relieved from duty with the First Provisional Regiment on January 21st.

At this time the regiment also lost another good officer in the release of 2nd Lieut. A. Tremaine McKinstry, who had entered the field with the 10th Infantry in the previous August and who had been one of the best men available in the regiment for barracks construction work. Lieut. McKinstry entered the aeronautic service of the Federal Government on the 22nd. At the same time the regiment gained a real officer in the person of Lieut. Clarence Higgs, who as a line officer and later as a member of the Headquarters Staff made good on everything he put his hand to. Lieut. Higgs' first assignment was on N-6.

On the 22nd the regiment assumed responsibility for Shafts II-a and II-b of the Gould Swamp siphon at the request of the Department of Water Supply, Gas & Electricity of the City of New York. An outpost was established at this point.

Capt. John M. Thompson, another of the veteran officers of the line, was relieved from duty on the 27th of the month, Sergt. Mark Rosenthal of the 10th was commissioned 2nd Lieutenant and relieved from duty, and Lieutenant Harder of the 10th was commissioned Captain, remaining on the line. On the 26th Lieut. Harry R. Lydecker of the 22nd Engineers reported for duty and was subsequently assigned to Scribner's Farm, where he remained until the expiration of his service with the regiment. This was another officer of real First Provisional ideas and ideals and his sector showed results.

At the end of the month Capt. A. H. Westcott was relieved from duty in the 2nd Battalion and sent to Sector S-9-A, where he was placed in charge.

The month of January was one of the most momentous in the history of the regiment, although little appeared on the surface to indicate it. It was during January that the Federal agents discovered a wide-spread plot for the destruction of shipping and

munitions in the City of New York, passed a word of warning which resulted in a bristle of bayonets on the waterfront. For some time the line of the First Provisional was shaken with insistent rumors that the regiment or a portion of it would be called into New York in case of emergency to take the brunt of any street rioting that might happen. This was lent color by an inquiry sent out to the units of the First Infantry as to the number of men available for immediate duty, but the latter call was the direct result of advice given by General Kemp to be ready for draft losses, rather than because of any other immediate service of the First Provisional expected by headquarters. The January ratings were as follows:

| <i>Organization</i> | <i>Efficiency</i> | <i>Sani- tation</i> | <i>Soldierly</i> | <i>Aggre- gate</i> |
|--------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|------------------------|
| | <i>Guard Duty</i> | | <i>Appear- ance</i> | |
| Co. H, 4th Inf. | 36 | 25 | 24 | 85 |
| Troop B, Squadron D . . | 34 | 25 | 25 | 84 |
| Co. C, 3rd Inf. | 34 | 24 | 24 | 82 |
| Co. L, 10th Inf. | 36 | 23 | 21 | 80 |
| Co. I, 1st Inf. | 33 | 23 | 23 | 79 |
| Co. K, 10th Inf. | 30 | 22 | 23 | 75 |
| Troop G, Squadron D . . | 27 | 21 | 22 | 70 |
| Detachment 47th Inf. . . | 26 | 20 | 21 | 67 |
| Co. F, 10th Inf. | 25 | 19 | 21 | 65 |
| Co. F, 10th Inf. | Under quarantine. | | | |

FEBRUARY

THE first year of armed occupation on the New York City water-supply line came to an end on the 3rd of February, but save for an anniversary edition of the regimental paper it passed without celebration of any kind. The 4th marked the first of the big troop transfers of the regiment, when 70 men of the 1st Field Artillery, under command of 1st Lieut. E. L. Martin, were moved from Sector S-9-A to N-5, and 66 men of Troop G and the other units covering Sector N-5 were moved to the sector evacuated by the 1st Field Artillery on the same day. The movement began simultaneously at both ends of the line, with the sectors covered by the extension of other companies' lines during the time the troops were under way.

On the north end of the movement the troops were badly delayed by drifts on the Walden trolley line, and this held up the movement badly, but at 8 P.M. Captain Westcott took over Sector S-9-A from which Captain Blume was relieved of responsibility, and Lieut. Martin took over his sector at 11.15 P.M. on the same day, Captain Cartwright having been relieved from duty on the first of the month.

Twenty-three men of the 23rd Infantry were brought onto the line early in the month, going to Scribner's Farm and to Sector S-8. As may be noted from the frequent references to changes at Scribner's Farm, this little sector was giving considerable difficulty and continued to do so until finally placed under control of Captain Kuehnle with Lieut. Lydecker in command.

Lieut. Albert Gilbert of Troop G, whose injuries in the previous autumn have been mentioned, continued in such physical state at home station that he made application for relief from further duty with the regiment, and this was given early in February.

Twenty-five men of the 13th C. A. C. were brought onto the 2nd Battalion line on the 13th, and 2nd Lieut. Louis H. Guterman, 47th Infantry, was also brought into the field and assigned to duty with the 3rd Battalion on Sector S-8.

Capt. Otto Thiede had been relieved from duty on Sector S-6 and assigned in charge of the Prison Camp at Peekskill shortly

after the release of Captain Thompson. On the 19th he was relieved from duty at the Prison Camp and assigned temporarily in command of Sector S-6 and 7. With the approval of the Armory Commission, Lieut. Weaver, Q. M. C., officer in charge of the Peekskill State Camp, was made officer in charge of the Prison Camp, although he was never carried on the morning reports of the regiment. While Lieut. Weaver was never on the pay-rolls of the First Provisional, he was in this as well as in many other matters, an efficient asset to the regiment and his co-operation while at Peekskill Camp was uniform and thorough.

On the 21st the respective strengths of the three battalions, the Headquarters Company, Supply Company and Prison Detachment were fixed as follows:

| | |
|------------------------|-----|
| First Battalion..... | 450 |
| Second Battalion..... | 532 |
| Third Battalion..... | 390 |
| Headquarters Co..... | 40 |
| Supply Company..... | 15 |
| Prison Detachment..... | 10 |

The Aqueduct Hostess House, near the line of the Aqueduct at Scarsdale, was opened with proper ceremonies on the 22nd for the men of the Aqueduct as the result of work done by a committee of which Thomas Simpson was president. Lieut.-Colonel Burnett represented the regiment at the opening, with detachments from various companies and several staff officers present. Of the Hostess House and its work there is a detailed description in the chapter on recreation.

President Edward Riegelmann of the Borough of Brooklyn, organizer of the 47th Infantry, paid a visit to the 47th men at New Paltz, on the 23rd, together with a party of 47th officers from home station. The trip was made through deep drifts and not without some little difficulty. President Riegelmann carried smokes and candies to the men at New Paltz and made a short address to them. The party was entertained at the City Club, Newburgh, at luncheon by Colonel Rose.

The end of February was marked by two distinct changes in administration, Capt. George B. Snowden being assigned as Battalion Inspector of the 2nd Battalion, and Captain Thiede being assigned as Inspector of the 3rd Battalion, while Capt. F. M. Van Nouhuys, who had been the 2nd Battalion Inspector, was returned to his command at Troop B's post, and Captain

Muller, who had been Battalion Inspector for the 3rd, went back to his company at Pleasantville.

Spring was making its first tentative appearance along the lower line when February came to an end, although the snow still lay deep, and in the mountains of the north winter was undisputed king. The battalion ratings for the month were as follows:

SECOND BATTALION

| <i>Organization</i> | <i>Guarding</i> | <i>Sani- tation</i> | <i>Appear- ance</i> | <i>P. C.</i> |
|--------------------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|--------------|
| Co. H, 4th Infantry | 35 | 24 | 25 | 84 |
| Troop B, Squadron D | 34 | 24 | 25 | 83 |
| Co. C, 3rd Infantry | 35 | 25 | 23 | 83 |
| Co. L, 10th Infantry | 36 | 22 | 20 | 78 |
| Co. I, 1st Infantry | 34 | 21 | 20 | 75 |
| Batt. B and D, 1st F. A. . . | 30 | 22 | 22 | 74 |
| Co. K, 10th Infantry | 25 | 21 | 22 | 68 |
| Co. F, 10th Infantry | 24 | 22 | 20 | 66 |
| Det. Co. H, 8th C. A. C. . . | 25 | 19 | 21 | 65 |
| Det. 47th Infantry | 26 | 19 | 19 | 64 |

THIRD BATTALION

| <i>Organization</i> | <i>Guarding</i> | <i>Sani- tation</i> | <i>Appear- ance</i> | <i>P. C.</i> |
|------------------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|--------------|
| Sec. S-9-B (Capt. Blume) | 36 | 25 | 26 | 87 |
| Sec. S-6 (Capt. Muller) . . | 37 | 24 | 25 | 86 |
| Sec. S-8 (Lieut. Launt) . . | 33 | 22 | 23 | 78 |
| Sec. S-7 (Lieut. Weed) . . . | 32 | 21 | 25 | 78 |
| Sec. S-9-A (Capt. Westcott) | 34 | 21 | 22 | 77 |

MARCH

THE regiment was reorganized in accordance with Colonel Rose's plan on March 1st, as an organization of 12 Provisional Line Companies, a Machine Gun Company, Supply Company, and Headquarters Company.

The territory of the 1st Battalion, commanded by Major Hodges, was at this time fixed from the Hudson River to the southern extremity of Sector S-5, with an authorized strength of 450 men and comprising the following companies:

C.—Sector S-1: Authorized strength 116 enlisted men and Capt. John W. Johnson, M. G. Co, 4th Infantry; 1st. Lieut. O. D. Eaton, M. G. Co., 4th Infantry; 2nd Lieut. Le Roy Lamden, 4th Infantry.

B.—Sector S-2: Authorized strength, 98 enlisted men and Capt. John J. Roche, Co. A, 69th Infantry; 1st Lieut. E. M. Kirkpatrick, Co. A, 69th Infantry; 2nd Lieut. Randall V. O'Grady, Co. A, 69th Infantry.

D.—Sectors S-3 and -4: Authorized strength, 98 enlisted men and Capt. Frederick Kuehnle, 71st Infantry; 2nd Lieut. J. Noble Braden, 71st Infantry; 2nd Lieut. Harry R. Lydecker, 22nd Engineers.

A.—Sector S-5, as formerly known, minus Shafts 11-A and 11-B, Gould's Swamp siphon and the Tarrytown outpost, which were assigned to Sector S-8: Authorized strength, 128 men and Capt. Ernest Van Zandt, 12th Infantry; 1st Lieut. Irving J. Ussiker, 12th Infantry; 2nd Lieut. Arthur Wynne, 12th Infantry.

The 2nd Battalion, with an authorized strength of 532 enlisted men, remained the same as to territory, taking in everything from the South Tongore siphon to the access chamber of the Hudson River Pressure Tunnel on the west side of the river, with Major Charles J. Lamb in command and comprising the following companies:

E.—Sectors N-1-A and 1-B: Authorized strength, 126 enlisted men and Capt. Alfred Broadbent, Co. K, 10th Infantry; 1st Lieut. Cornelius Vandecarr, Co. F, 10th Infantry, a former sergeant on Sector N-6; 2nd Lieut. Harry J. Kerr, Co. M, 10th Infantry.

H.—Sector N-2: Authorized strength of 79 enlisted men and

Capt. Charles H. Hinman, 4th Infantry; 1st Lieut. Edward B. Suttle, 4th Infantry, a former sergeant of the company.

F.—Sector N-3: Authorized strength, 81 men and Capt. George B. Snowden, Co. L, 10th Infantry; 1st Lieut. Edgar B. Clerk, Troop B, Squadron D, Cavalry; 1st Lieut. Dennis Caulfield, 47th Infantry; 2nd Lieut. John Travers, 47th Infantry.

G.—Sectors N-4 and -5: Authorized strength, 169 men and Capt. E. Madden Decker, Co. I, 1st Infantry; 1st Lieut. Harvey Smith, Co. C, 3rd Infantry; 1st Lieut. Stewart Richards, Co. L, 10th Infantry; 1st Lieut. E. J. Martin, 14th Infantry.

Machine Gun Co.—Sector N-6: Authorized strength, 86 enlisted men and Capt. Edward L. Harder, 10th Infantry; 1st Lieut. Charles B. Cleary, 10th Infantry; 1st Lieut. Clarence Higgs, 8th C. A. C.

The territory of the 3rd Battalion remained the same except for the additions to Sector S-8 heretofore noted, with Captain Harte in command and an authorized strength of 390 men, distributed among the following companies:

M.—Sectors S-6 and -7: Authorized strength, 129 enlisted men and Capt. Nicholas Muller, 69th Infantry; 1st Lieut. Grover C. Weed, 3rd F. A., and 2nd Lieut. James F. Keefe, 69th Infantry.

I.—Sector S-8: So altered as to be bounded on the south by Pole No. 3291, at Landers road, and including Shafts 11-A and 11-B, Gould Swamp siphon and the Tarrytown outpost formerly covered by Sector S-5: Authorized strength, 96 enlisted men and 2nd Lieut. Rae C. Launt, 10th Infantry; 2nd Lieut. Louis H. Gutterman, 47th Infantry. Lieut. Launt was left in charge of this sector, though a 2nd Lieutenant, because of his splendid work there.

L.—Sector S-9-A, as modified, to include from Pole No. 3291 at Landers road, to culvert opposite Pole No. 3561: Authorized strength, 97 enlisted men and Capt. Addison H. Westcott, Troop G, Squadron D; 2nd Lieut. Clifford Servatius, Troop G, Squadron D.

K.—Sector S-9-B, as modified, to and including Hillview Reservoir: Authorized strength, 78 enlisted men and Capt. John H. Blume, 14th Infantry; 1st Lieut. Frederick A. Baldwin, 14th Infantry.

This somewhat lengthy description of the reorganization is introduced at this point in rather full detail, that there may be no misapprehension or misunderstanding of the conditions prevailing from this time until the regiment left the line of the Aqueduct. As ever, the geographical factor of the service was dominant, and later, when troops were moved the moving com-

panies changed their company designations to conform to the sector on which they were located. The mission of the First Provisional Regiment dealt not with troops, but with certain physical things that must be guarded, and the reorganization of the regiment into companies was as a matter of fact merely the redesignation of geographical territory by letter. For instance, at a later date, Captain Johnson's command was moved from Cold Springs to Yonkers, but instead of relettering the sectors the company changed its designation, becoming Company K instead of Company C, inasmuch as it was a part of the 3rd Battalion, geographically, and on the sector which for geographical reasons gave to whatever company happened to occupy it the letter K. This practice saved much confusion in the administration of the regiment.

Company commanders at once began bringing their units to authorized strength from available forces at home station and the strength charts for the regiment, which appear elsewhere, show that during the following two weeks there was a considerable gain.

There was little of importance during the first part of March with the exception of replacement movements. On the 9th Private Aloysius Kelly of Company M, stationed at the Harlem Railroad siphon between Chappaqua and Pleasantville, was struck by a train while walking the tracks on his way to his camp and died that afternoon in White Plains Hospital, following an amputation.

Private James Burke, Company G, 14th Infantry, attached to Provisional Company K, died on the 11th as a result of pneumonia, and was buried with military honors. Up to this time the death record of the regiment was low—but three men in the seven months of service in the field.

Due to the appearance of ground glass in packages sent to some of the camps from anonymous sources, as well as the trouble from the same source at that time prevailing in the national army cantonments, there issued from headquarters, on March 19th, General Orders No. 28, prohibiting the receipt of food packages of any kind. While this in the beginning worked a seeming hardship on the men, it resulted in good only, putting all on the same basis of diet and insuring the regiment against attempts on its health by alien enemies.

It was at this time that 2nd Lieut. Stuyvesant Fish entered the field and was assigned to duty with Company A. This officer injected new blood and enthusiasm into Company A and was chiefly instrumental in making old Camp Winthrop, later Camp Sniffen, into one of the banner posts of the line.

The telephone system of the regiment, which is explained in the chapter on communication, and which had for some months been in the process of construction under the direction of Major Hodges, was used for the first time on the line by Troop B men on March 15th. The time was not now far distant when every post on the line would be connected to its company post or outpost by a telephone instrument. One of the big dreams of the regiment was about to be consummated.

On the 22nd, members of the staff and Headquarters Company paraded in Mt. Kisco for the benefit of the Red Cross. This was but one of the many parades in which the men of the First Provisional Regiment participated at one time or another to help Liberty Bond sales or Red Cross drives in the towns near which the various detachments were stationed.

Spring was coming on apace with baseball talk in the air and the formation of three battalion leagues promised. One of the sings of spring was the comparative ease in getting replacements that had not cared to face the cold weather, although the regiment was, as always, face to face with the problem of indifference to the Aqueduct work by the men at home station.

Capt. Otto Thiede was relieved during the latter part of the month from further duty with the regiment and his place as Inspecting Officer and Summary Court Officer of the 3rd Battalion was taken by Capt. Eugene Scherman.

SECOND BATTALION RATINGS FOR MARCH

| <i>Organization</i> | <i>Guarding</i> | <i>Sani- tation</i> | <i>Appear- ance</i> | <i>P. C.</i> |
|-----------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|--------------|
| Company H..... | 36 | 26 | 25 | 87 |
| Company F..... | 33 | 24 | 22 | 79 |
| Company G..... | 32 | 22 | 22 | 78 |
| Machine Gun Company.. | 26 | 22 | 22 | 68 |
| Company E..... | 28 | 20 | 19 | 67 |

APRIL

ON the 1st of April Regimental Headquarters moved back to the top of Crow Hill and organized the tent camp for the summer. The regimental telephone switchboard was installed, and from Ashokan to Hillview the line was in touch with headquarters. There was much to do at the camp, for winter had left the hill in sorry shape, but with a large gang of prisoners, made possible by the shifting of the Prison Camp, this work was carried on under the direction of Major Hodges.

On April 6th the first of the battalion league games was played and Company D defeated Company A. Under orders from the Commanding General battalion baseball was later discontinued.

The return of the regiment to canvas for the summer was celebrated by one of the headquarters' rhymesters with a few verses of parody on Mr. Kipling's "Back to the Army Again," that went like this:

We're here in a combination
Of cotton and O. D., mate;
Back under the same old canvas,
The canvas of Ninety-eight.
Yep, up on the side of a mountain,
Or maybe you'd call it a hill;
But it's steeper than some church steeples
And so slippery you can't stand still.

CHO.:

Back under canvas again, sergeant,
Back under canvas again;
Duckin' the drops from the holes in the tops
Of the conicals. Splashed by the rain,
Mud to our boot-tops, by golly!
Wouldn't it give you a pain?
List to the rap of the fly and the flap,
We're back under canvas again.

Regimental Headquarters was put on a heavy calisthenics schedule with the return of the Staff and Headquarters Company to open-air life. This schedule continued throughout the remainder of the service, although Colonel Rose, during the last part of August, introduced an entirely new set of movements adapted from the French and British schools, which are elsewhere discussed under "Athletics" in the chapter on recreation.

On the 2nd the line was visited by Major Howard C. Smith, Inspector-General of the State, Major Trimble, Chief Ordnance Officer, and Lieut. Ficken of the Inspector-General's staff. Second Lieut. LeRoy Lamden of Company C was relieved from duty with the regiment on the same date.

The Third Liberty Loan received a great deal of attention from the First Provisional Regiment, and on New York Guard day, April 20th, approximately 400 men of the units of the 1st and 3rd Battalions paraded in Ossining under command of Lieut.-Colonel Burnett, while units of the 2nd Battalion paraded in Newburgh. The Ossining parade was the first occasion when members of the regiment had paraded in regimental formation, and the form and marching order of the men were a distinct surprise to even the officers themselves. An amulance unit commanded by Capt. E. C. Waterbury, formed a part of the First Provisional's column. Lieut.-Colonel Burnett was supported by a staff consisting of the Adjutant, Captain Howland Pell, Capt. Eugene Scherman and Lieut. Avery E. Lord, as well as the non-commissioned staff and Headquarters Company. The 1st Battalion was commanded by Major Hodges, with Lieut. John Towner as Adjutant, and the 3rd Battalion by Captain Harte, with Lieut. Weed as Adjutant. Company D was color company and also carried machine-guns. Colonel McAlpin, Grand Marshal of the parade, reviewed the troops and paid high tribute to the First Provisional at the conclusion of the long march.

On April 23rd, Capt. Alfred Broadbent, Co. K, 10th Infantry, who since the entry of the regiment into the field had been in command of Sector N-1, was relieved from further duty with the regiment, under orders from the office of the Adjutant-General.

With lights on most of the vulnerable points on the east side of the Hudson, warm weather coming on, ice-orders out, and three replacement detachments mobilizing in New York for entry into the field, the Regiment closed its ninth month of service.

MAY

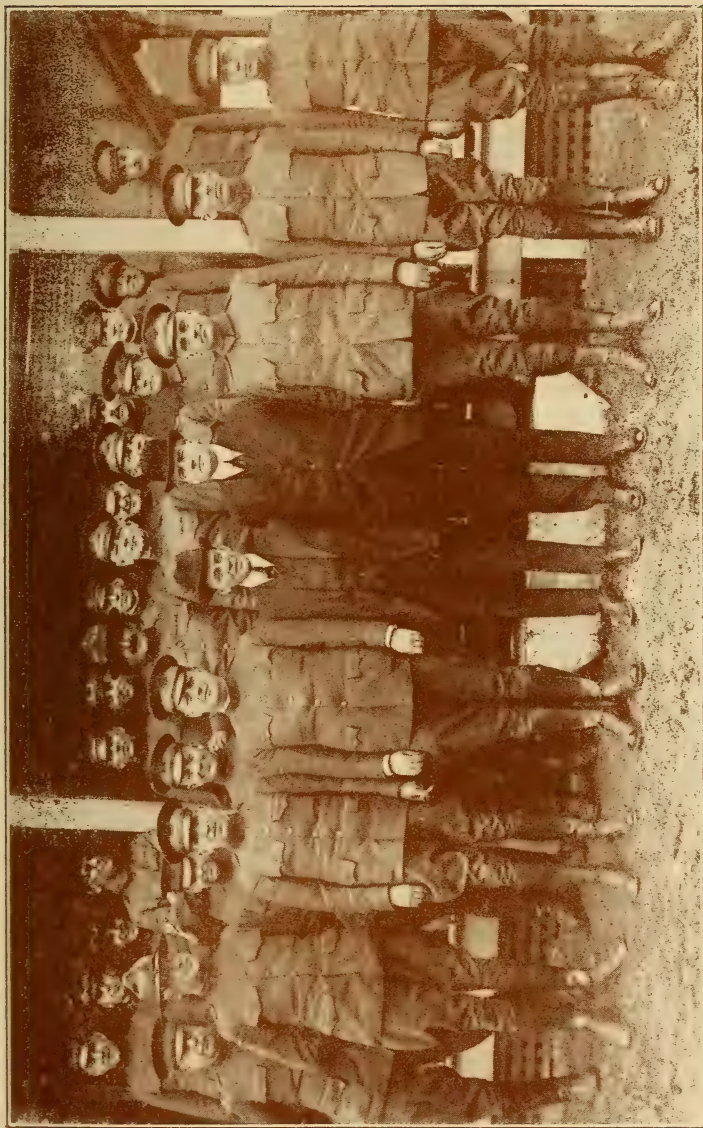
IT was during this month that the regiment was to enter the most critical stage of its history, but the sunshine, flowers and blue sky that greeted the opening days of May gave little promise of the storm that was to come. The early days of the month were featured by the release of Capt. Milton Aaronowitz, M. C., who had been attached to the 2nd Battalion as medical officer from the date of Lieut. Clinton's relief from duty. Sergt. Louis A. Welch, a Lambert Farm veteran of old Company B, 1st Infantry, received his promotion to 2nd Lieutenant about the 1st of the month and was as a result relieved from duty. Sergt. Patrick J. Bradley of Company M was at this time commissioned 2nd Lieutenant and was, through a vacancy existing in his unit, able to remain in the field.

Volunteer line-stopping detachments that had been sent to the line of the 2nd Battalion by the units of the 1st and 3rd nearly a month previous, were released on Wednesday, May 8th, by the advent of two replacement units on the line of the 2nd Battalion. These were 49 men of the 8th C. A. C., commanded by Capt. Edward C. Gibbs, with Lieut. Claude L. Girdner, and 60 enlisted men of the 47th Infantry commanded by Capt. Simon J. McCarty, with 1st Lieut. James S. Reynolds. Captain Gibbs' command was stationed at Olive Bridge, covering Sector N-1-A, and Captain McCarty's command took 1-B with company post at Atwood.

On the same date 60 men of the 13th C. A. C., under command of Capt. Daniel F. Young, with 1st Lieut. William A. Lynch and 2nd Lieut. William D. Buckley, took over Company M's sector.

These three replacement movements necessitated considerable shifting in which the men moved were, as far as possible, placed under officers of their own command. The line was left stronger than it had been in some time, and continued the vigorous program of instruction and drill that Colonel Rose had outlined to battalion commanders early in the spring, but which had been interrupted by man shortage.

On the 11th, units of the 3rd Battalion under the command of Capt. Leo C. Harte, participated in the dedication of the Liberty Pole and Flag and the unveiling of the memorial tablet at Wash-



A GATHERING OF LINE AND STAFF AT PINES BRIDGE, SPRING OF 1918

Lower, left to right—Pell, Lamb, Harte, Major Wilson, Blume, General Kemp, city officials, Rose, Burnett, Hodges. *Upper*—Van Zandt, Harder, Guttermann, Launt Thiede, Ussicker, Kuehnle, Broadbent, Roche, Snowden, Johnson, Stone, De Garmo, Muller, Wynne, Hinman.



Upper—A morning on Turkey Mountain. Colonel Rose, Captain Pell, Captain Hutton. *Center*—Election at Ossining headquarters (1918); Colonel Rose voting. *Lower*—Conference at headquarters, Croton Lake, in the early days.

ington's headquarters, White Plains, when Mrs. Charles S. Whitman, wife of the Governor, broke out the colors as Sergt. John Corrie, the regiment's chief trumpeter, sounded "To the Colors." Col. William Lanier Washington, great-great-grand-nephew of the Father of American Liberty was the guest of honor at the event.

On the 15th, Comptroller L. Craig, of the City of New York, paid his first visit to the line in company with Colonel Rose and Deputy Comptroller Fenton, covering the line of the 3rd and 1st Battalions.

It was about this time that Capt. Charles W. Baldwin, Chaplain of the 1st Infantry, and for many months volunteer Chaplain of the First Provisional, began his work on the line, which is discussed in the chapters on Morale and Religious Life of the regiment.

And it was here, at this time, that the hope of federalization with service abroad or Mexican border service which had bloomed with the spring and which had flourished in the hearts of the men of the First Provisional Regiment, was broken by the announcement from the office of the Adjutant-General that federalization for the New York Guard was out of the question.

The Adjutant-General's "absolute nonsense" characterization of the federalization idea did much to undermine the morale of the First Provisional Regiment, inasmuch as it had been the hope of imminent federalization which had helped to bolster up the regimental spirit to the monotonous routine of guard duty throughout the winter and the early spring. It was not until months later that the officers of the First Provisional learned how near the Guard was to National Guard status in early May, when there was sent to the Adjutant-Generals of all States and Territories an invitation to put then existing State troops on a National Guard basis, an invitation which the then Adjutant-General of the State declined.

Knowledge on the line of the First Provisional that the Adjutant-General of the State had gone on record against federalization was marked by a big increase of federal enlistments from the ranks. While this was of great benefit to the Federal officers, it raised havoc with the line and the strength of the regiment fell away day by day. In one order selected at random from the S. O.'s issued at that time, there are four releases for Federal service out of six men leaving the line.

Lieut. Fredrick L. Stone, for some time Adjutant of the 3rd Battalion, was relieved from duty with the regiment on May 23rd for Federal service, and his work, as well as that of Battalion

Inspector, was taken up by Lieut. Avery E. Lord soon after this date.

Colonel Rose had been obliged to secure leave for seven days about the 17th of the month, and it was in the period between the 17th and the end of the month that his business affairs, which had for some time been on the verge of collapse, due to the fact that the regiment was demanding all his time, crashed into chaos. At the same time his iron constitution that had been carrying the weight of the regiment gave way beneath the strain. For several days there was a great question in the minds of those who knew as to whether he would ever recover, and it soon became apparent that only complete rest and forgetfulness of all cares and worries could pull him through. As a result his leave was extended and the affairs of the regiment were left to Lieut.-Colonel William L. Burnett.

Hitherto the administration of the regiment had been little affected by the fact that the organization was a part of the Provisional Brigade, of which General Kemp was Commanding Officer, but about this time, by direction of the Commanding General, Lieut.-Colonel Burnett directed extensive changes to bring about what was known as the Brigade Battalion idea; that is to say, the placing of all of the troops of one brigade so far as possible in one battalion. As a part of this move the officers of the regiment were in many instances reassigned, so that under General Orders No. 41, issued May 26, the organization of the regiment stood as follows:

Company A

| | |
|--------------------------------------|---------------|
| Capt. E. T. Van Zandt | 12th Infantry |
| 1st Lieut. I. J. Ussiker | 12th Infantry |
| 1st Lieut. Arthur Wynne | 12th Infantry |
| 2nd Lieut. Stuyvesant Fish | 12th Infantry |

Company B

| | |
|--|---------------|
| Capt. J. J. Roche | 69th Infantry |
| 1st Lieut. E. M. Kirkpatrick | 69th Infantry |
| 2nd Lieut. R. V. O'Grady | 69th Infantry |

Company C

| | |
|----------------------------------|--------------|
| Capt. J. W. Johnson | 4th Infantry |
| 1st Lieut. O. D. Eaton | 4th Infantry |

Company D

Capt. F. C. Keuhnle 71st Infantry
 1st Lieut. J. N. Braden 71st Infantry
 2nd Lieut. H. R. Lydecker 8th C. A. C.

Company E

Capt. S. J. McCarty 47th Infantry
 1st Lieut. J. S. Reynolds 47th Infantry
 1st Lieut. D. Caulfield 47th Infantry
 2nd Lieut. J. Travers 47th Infantry

Company F

Capt. E. M. Decker 1st Infantry
 1st Lieut. S. W. Richards 10th Infantry

Company G

Capt. Edw. C. Gibbs 8th C. A. C.
 1st Lieut. C. Higgs 8th C. A. C.
 1st Lieut. E. L. Martin 14th Infantry
 2nd Lieut. C. L. Girdner 8th C. A. C.

Company H

Capt. C. A. Hinman 4th Infantry
 1st Lieut. A. B. Suttle 4th Infantry

Company I

Capt. D. F. Young 13th C. A. C.
 1st Lieut. W. A. Lynch 13th C. A. C.
 2nd Lieut. W. D. Buckley 13th C. A. C.

Company K

Capt. J. H. Blume 14th Infantry
 1st Lieut. F. A. Baldwin 14th Infantry
 2nd Lieut. L. H. Gutterman 47th Infantry

Company L

Capt. A. H. Westcott Troop G, Sq. D, 1st Cav.
 1st Lieut. G. C. Weed 3rd Field Artillery
 2nd Lieut. C. M. Servatius Troop G, Sq. D, 1st Cav.

Company M

Capt. N. W. Muller 69th Infantry
 1st Lieut. J. F. Keefe 69th Infantry
 2nd Lieut. P. J. Bradley 69th Infantry

Machine Gun Co.

Capt. E. L. Harder 10th Infantry
 1st Lieut. H. N. Smith 3rd Infantry
 2nd Lieut. R. C. Launt 1st Infantry

This entailed the transfer of 338 men among the various companies of the regiment and the release from duty under General Kemp's orders, effective June 1st, of Capt. F. M. Van Nouhuys; 1st Lieut. Charles B. Cleary, 10th Infantry; 1st Lieut. Edgar B. Clerk, Troop B, Squadron D; 1st Lieut. Cornelius Vandecarr, Co. F, 10th Infantry; 2nd Lieut. Harry J. Kerr Co. M, 10th Infantry. Captain Snowden was assigned as Inspecting Officer and Summary Court Officer of the 2nd Battalion. By General Kemp's order Capt. Eugene Scherman was made supply officer of the 2nd Battalion, and Lieut. Miller, who had been the 2nd Battalion supply officer since the entry of the regiment into the field, was sent to Millwood to assist Captain De Garmo. Under brigade orders, Major E. J. Wilson established quarters at the supply depot at Millwood, to be there at least four days a week, and from that time until the return of Colonel Rose the Supply Company was to all intents and purposes under direct brigade control.

May 30th being Memorial Day, ceremonies were held on the parade ground at Regimental Headquarters at 8.45 A.M., with Captain Baldwin offering prayer. The names of the following men who had up to that time died in the service of the regiment were read in orders by the Regimental Adjutant:

"Private Thomas A. Stokes, Co. A, 69th Infantry, attached to Provisional Co. B, who died January 2nd, 1918, as a result of an accidental shooting at the Prison Camp, Peekskill, N. Y., on the evening of January 1st."

"Private Aloysius Kelly, Co. B, 69th Infantry, attached to Provisional Co. M, who died on March 9th, 1918, as a result of an accident on the New York Central tracks near Chappaqua."

"Cook Martin Ryan, Co. E, 14th Infantry, attached to Provisional Co. K, who died May 16th, 1918, as a result of Bright's disease contracted in line of duty with this regiment."

In the afternoon the Headquarters Company, and detachments from Companies A, I, M, and D, forming a provisional battalion commanded by Major Hodges, participated in a parade for the dedication of the Mt. Kisco service flag of 135 stars. Lieut.-Colonel Burnett spoke at the dedication. Immediately after the parade staff officers left for the Sleepy Hollow Club, where they participated with detachments from Companies M and K in the *Fête de Mai* given by the Sleepy Hollow Country Club for the benefit of the Red Cross. It was a full day for the First Provisional and concluded one of the most momentous months in the regiment's history. With the Commanding Officer of the regiment prostrated by illness, and the policies of the regiment in a state of transformation, the outlook was not particularly bright, and men were falling away from the ranks in huge blocks for Federal service.

JUNE

THE WATCHDOG, which, as the regimental newspaper, had been published for the men of the regiment since the previous September, was, by direction of the Commanding General, suspended on June 7th, having appeared for 37 issues. On the same day, Capt. E. L. Harder, commanding Sector N-6, was relieved from further duty with the First Provisional Regiment.

Replacement detachments continued to enter the field, but it was an almost impossible matter to keep the regiment to strength, as the tables for the summer months show. Capt. Chauncey A. Pierce and Lieut. William H. Smith of the 23rd Infantry, with 60 enlisted men, took over the Machine Gun Company sector and the men on it were transferred so as to be with their commanding officers from their home organizations as far as possible. Replacement troops did not come up to the figures prescribed by the Adjutant-General's office in its orders and there was a continual thinness of the line. On June 13th the regiment lost another good officer in the release of Lieut. Harvey N. Smith of the 3rd Infantry, who entered Federal service. Lieut. John H. Travers, 47th Infantry, was relieved from duty with the regiment on the 15th.

About the middle of June headquarters established definite relations with the Sheriff's Emergency Force of Westchester County through co-operation in the matter of enemy alien signal lights, a subject which is discussed in the chapter on "The Trail of the Octopus." Capt. Jessup of the Emergency Force became a frequent visitor at headquarters and various moves described hereafter were made to co-operate with the sheriff's force in locating enemy aliens.

The prisoners who had been at headquarters were moved to the Supply Department and were during the early summer engaged in clean-up work and the erection of a garage at Millwood. During the latter part of June the regiment furnished prisoners and guards for the hay harvest at Camp Whitman, an operation that took over 30 days, but which resulted in a big harvest of hay for the State at small expense.

Lieut. Therkildsen, who had been attached to headquarters

for some time, was, on the 26th, detached therefrom and directed to report to Company G at Gardiner, serving first with Captain Gibbs, later with Captain Johnson, and finally with Captain Johnson at Cold Springs until the end of the unit's service in the field.

On the 28th the Commanding Officer of the 2nd Battalion was directed, upon the recommendation of the Department of Water Supply, Gas & Electricity, to withdraw guards from the Walkill Blow-off, with the exception of the blow-off gate-house.

The Supply Department was occasioning the regiment a great deal of anxiety at this time, and as June drew to a close, conditions became more acute at Millwood, where Captain De Garmo manifestly was being overworked. Grave doubts were entertained by most of the officers on the line at this time as to whether Colonel Rose would ever return to take command of the regiment. The entire organization was in a state of uneasiness, with all of the minor troubles magnified by the constant shortage of man-power, for which the Commanding General seemed to find no solution.

SECOND BATTALION'S RATINGS

| <i>Organization</i> | <i>Guarding</i> | <i>Sani- tation</i> | <i>Appear- ance</i> | <i>P. C.</i> |
|-----------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|--------------|
| Company F | 37 | 25 | 25 | 87 |
| Company H | 35 | 26 | 25 | 86 |
| Company G | 34 | 25 | 23 | 82 |
| Company E | 30 | 23 | 20 | 72 |
| Machine Gun Company.. | 29 | 20 | 23 | 72 |

JULY

THE Commanding General had indicated a desire that the regiment make as little use as possible of the auxiliary motor corps, but with July 3, 5, and 6 designated as rifle practice dates for the First Provisional, it became apparent that the transportation of the men from the various posts on the line to the range could only be accomplished by auxiliary service, and Lieut. Turner of Chappaqua, with Captain Rogers of Bronxville and Captain Rupprecht of Greenwich, were asked to take charge of transporting the men who were to shoot on these days. It was a big undertaking, but was well done by the women who were responsible for the procuration of the necessary transportation.

Considering their lack of opportunity for practice in sighting and firing, the men of the regiment did very well indeed at the range and the entire schedule was run off without incident or accident. Lieut. Horgan was assigned as medical officer on the range for July 3rd, and Capt. E. C. Waterbury for the 5th and 6th. Lieutenant Weed was range officer.

On the 4th, the Headquarters Staff, non-commissioned staff, Headquarters Company, and a provisional battalion comprised of detachments from Companies A, I, M and D, marched in Mt. Kisco as a part of a big civilian parade which was typical of the war days of the summer of 1918. Lieut.-Colonel Burnett was Grand Marshal of the parade, with the Regimental Adjutant acting as Adjutant-General. Major W. L. Hodges commanded the provisional battalion, with Lieut. John Towner as Adjutant. The parade contained five divisions in which practically every home unit of the country's great war program was represented, including a detachment of farmerettes from Bedford, the W. S. S. forces of the Boy Scouts and Campfire Girls, the Home Defense companies of near-by villages, and the dehydrating organization composed of women, as well as the usual civic organizations. Following the parade a program of speaking was featured by an address from Lieut.-Colonel Burnett on the history and work of the First Provisional Regiment.

Captain Waterbury had, since the release of Captain Aaronowitz, been covering a portion of the 2nd Battalion in addition

to the 1st, but with the arrival of Capt. John Kenny, M. C., attached to the 12th Infantry, on July 8th, returned to headquarters. On the same date the regiment lost Capt. John H. Blume, who, as commanding officer of Provisional Company K, had been one of the efficiency men of the organization. Lieut. Stuyvesant Fish of Company A was also relieved from duty on the 8th, with the thanks of the Commanding Officer for a full and complete service. Lieut. W. F. Smith of the Provisional Machine Gun Company was relieved from duty July 11th. Capt. William E. White, 14th Infantry, took command of Company K.

Pyramidal tentage was being issued throughout the regiment during this period in limited quantities to replace the battered old white conicals that the men of the line had slept under since the first days in the field. The new pyramidals, slightly undersize, but well made, and wind-proof as well as rain-proof, were given a hearty greeting all along the line.

It was on the 11th when the officers of the 1st and 3rd Battalions assembled at headquarters to meet the Commanding General and Major Wilson, the Brigade Quartermaster, on the subject of vouchers. Viewed from the perspective that time gives, there is no doubt that this 11th day of July, 1918, marked the lowest ebb of the regiment. The line, thin from the lack of replacements, was sagging, and officers and men felt it. Within the week there had gone from Ashokan to Hillview the whisper that Colonel Rose would not return and that he was to be succeeded in command by an officer not of the regiment. And in the faces of the officers who listened to the Commanding General and the Brigade Quartermaster speak on the subject of vouchers that afternoon there was little response, no enthusiasm, no snap or vigor so characteristic of officers' meetings in the First Provisional. The contrast to those other meetings a year gone, when Colonel Rose had fired the officers and men of the line with the spirit of the big work, was pathetic.

The meeting dragged through to a close. And then, at the end of it, the Lieut.-Colonel spoke. "I know you will be happy to learn," he said, "that our Commanding Officer telephoned me to-day that he would be back with us Sunday, to stay."

What that message meant to those weary officers of staff and line was told by the rattle of hand-clapping that lasted for some time. The meeting adjourned.

Late that afternoon a terrific thunderstorm whipped Westchester County, clearing the air in the same manner that the announcement of the earlier afternoon had cleared the regimental atmosphere. And then the sun went down to the mountains in

the west under a gorgeous rainbow that gave good omen for the days that were to come. Before midnight the entire regiment knew that its Colonel was coming back.

There followed busy days at headquarters when a detail of men and officers worked night and day to prepare the Commanding Officer's quarters for his arrival. The interior of his sleeping-shack was finished in white, his office in cream with slate-blue trim, and the panels of the walls filled with the sector maps of the line. The regiment's first flag, a piece of the original Aqueduct of the City of New York, and framed originals of *Watchdog* cartoons, completed the decoration of the walls, while oiled floors, linoleum and screens finished the comfort and hominess of the place.

And at 4.30 o'clock, on Sunday afternoon, July 14th, after more than a month of absence and sickness, the Commanding Officer stepped from his automobile on Headquarters Hill, to be welcomed by his officers in a way that told better than anything else possibly could how glad they were to have him back.

The Headquarters Company turned out for the occasion and was greeted by Colonel Rose, who immediately afterward called the officers into conference in the mess hall, which lasted until 6.45 o'clock. Each officer gave the news of the line from his own sector or department, together with suggestions for remedying undesirable conditions, and when the first call for Retreat sounded, Colonel Rose had in his mind the picture of the line and the regiment as it stood after his month's separation from it.

On the following day, Captain McCarty, Lieut. Caulfield and Lieut. Reynolds, with the detachment of the 47th Infantry, were moved to Sectors S-6 and -7, becoming Company M, and Capt. Nicholas Muller, with Lieut. Keefe and Lieut. Bradley and the men of the 69th, went to N-1, becoming Company E. Captain Muller established his headquarters at Olive Bridge. This movement had been previously directed by General Kemp.

Some idea of the fitness of the men of Captain Muller's command, both in appearance and marching form, may be gained from the fact that as the company moved along 42nd Street on the way across New York City to the ferries, they were given an enthusiastic reception by persons in the streets, who believed them to be troops en route to embarkation point for service overseas. Cheers and shouts of, "Eat 'em alive," "Go to it," "Give 'em hell," and so on, followed the men all along the line of their march.

On the 18th, Capt. John W. Johnson, with Lieut. Eaton and the 85 men of Provisional Company C moved to Company K's sector, and Captain White, with Lieut. Baldwin and 76 men of

Company H, went to the C sector. This was made necessary as a result of the previous shift of troops which had left the lower and most strategically important portion of the line in weakened condition. Lieut. Gutterman, who was in charge of the Camp Whitman hay detail, remained at the State camp, although transferred to the books of Provisional Company C. During the movement the lines were covered adequately.

The Aqueduct Guard Citizens' Committee, with Hon. Alton B. Parker as chairman, was formed at a meeting of leading citizens of Westchester, Putnam, Orange, Dutchess, and Ulster Counties at the home of Stuyvesant Fish, at Garrison, on the 20th. The history of this committee and its work on the Aqueduct is described in the chapter on the recreation of the regiment.

First Lieut. E. L. Martin was relieved from further duty with the regiment on the 20th and at that time the authority for the Camp Whitman hay detail was extended to include the 31st.

The Adjutant-General of the State of New York paid his first and only visit to the line of the First Provisional Regiment on July 24th, in company with Brigadier-General F. DeForest Kemp and Major Wilson. The party was escorted from Cold Springs to Regimental Headquarters, where a conference of the officers of the 1st Infantry was in progress. The Adjutant-General made an address to the officers of the 1st Infantry on the work of the New York Guard.

The 1st Infantry conference kept headquarters busy for two days, with an instruction trip on the line featuring the first day's events.

On the 24th, officers of the 1st and 3rd battalions were called into conference at Regimental Headquarters as a part of Colonel Rose's program for the tightening of the line. The task of practically rehabilitating the regiment lay before him on his return to duty, and the conference of the 24th marked the first visible move in that direction, although several preliminary moves had been made quietly.

It was on the 25th that the regiment lost its dental surgeon with the induction of 1st Lieut. Edgar V. Friend into the Federal service. Lieut. Friend had served since the previous winter and his services had done much toward keeping the health and digestion of the men of the regiment up to normal. During his service, which is discussed in more detail in the chapter on the health of the regiment, he moved along the line from post to post, setting up his portable office and bringing relief to sufferers from Ashokan to Hillview.

First Lieut. Arthur Wynne, 12th Infantry, who entered the field

with the regiment in the previous year and who, as a sub-sector commander, a contributor to *The Watchdog*, and a barracks-builder, had become well known and well liked, was relieved from duty on the 27th, returning to his journalistic work in New York.

On the 29th, as a part of the general plan of tightening of discipline and work for the entire regiment, general orders issued from headquarters for the reading of at least one article of the Articles of War, as designated in A. W. 110, at Retreat at all posts and outposts. Where no Retreat was held, these articles were read at the time of mounting guard, and company commanders were instructed to explain them fully.

AUGUST

THE anniversary month of the regiment's year in service was ushered in by a wave of hot weather, general tightening along the entire line, and the issuance of G. O. 52, which prescribed the posting of General and Special Orders of sentinels in all sentry telephone-boxes.

On the 2nd, Major Charles A. Clinton, 9th C. A. C., who had served as a lieutenant on the line of the First Provisional during the previous summer, was assigned to duty as acting Chief Medical Officer during the absence of Major Townsend. Capt. Simon J. McCarty was relieved from duty with the regiment on the 3rd, and the Sector S-6 and -7 was taken over by Lieut. Reynolds.

The Commanding Officer, after investigating various property accounts in the regiment, called a meeting of the officers of the 1st and 3rd Battalions at headquarters on the 5th, at which the matter of property and supplies was thoroughly discussed. As a result of it, Captain Roche was sent with a detail of non-commissioned clerks to Millwood to check the property accounts of the various sector commanders.

On the 7th, Capt. Reginald Vandewater, 47th Infantry, with 38 enlisted men, was brought onto the line, and Captain Vandewater was placed in command of Company M, covering Sectors S-6 and -7.

For some weeks Captain De Garmo had been working under an ever-increasing strain to keep the affairs of the Supply Company above water, and on the 9th of August a combined sunstroke and nervous breakdown dropped him suddenly from the work of the regiment. Capt. Leo C. Harte was immediately relieved from duty as commanding officer of the 3rd Battalion and placed on duty at Millwood, acting as Supply Officer in the absence of Captain De Garmo. Captain Kuehnle was placed in command of the 3rd Battalion.

On the 10th, Major W. L. Hodges, commanding the 1st Battalion, was relieved from further duty with the regiment, with the thanks of the Commanding Officer, having at that time finished one year of service with the regiment. The departure of Major Hodges was an occasion of sincere regret at headquarters. His

part in the life and upbuilding of the regiment had been a large one and his work in construction of barracks, the erection of the telephone and lighting systems, as well as his service as a battalion commander, had been of extreme value to the regiment. Capt. John J. Roche, commanding Company B, was placed in command of the battalion.

The anniversary of the regiment's entry into the field was marked by the pardoning of Private Peter Gallagher, Battery B, 1st Field Artillery, who had, on Oct. 13th of the previous year, shot and killed a 14-year-old boy, Thomas Bennett, of Yonkers, while on duty at Dunwoodie. Gallagher had been sentenced to fourteen months at hard labor, with Regimental Headquarters named as the place of his confinement. During the months that elapsed between the commission of the act and the anniversary of the regiment's entry into the field, the boy passed through a metamorphosis that made him one of the best and best-liked of the men at headquarters. As a result of his good conduct, Colonel Rose directed that inquiry be made from the members of the General Court that had passed on the case as to their disposition in the matter of pardon, and there was unanimous consent. The following correspondence tells the story of the remainder of the case:

HEADQUARTERS
FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT
NEW YORK GUARD

CROTON LAKE, N. Y., August 2, 1918.

File No. 18-22.

From: Commanding Officer 1st Provisional Regiment.

To: His Excellency, Charles S. Whitman, Commander-in-Chief of the Forces of the State, Albany, N. Y. (Through Military Channels.)

Subject: Pardon of Private Peter Gallagher.

1. On August 10th, 1918, the First Provisional Regiment will have completed a year of service in the field, and, so far as it is known by this headquarters has completed the longest period of State Field Service of any regiment in the history of New York State.

2. It is the belief of the Commanding Officer that this event should be marked in some fitting manner, and the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment requests that, in recognition of the services performed by this regiment during the year that has passed, and upon the basis of representations made in the communication herewith

attached, a pardon be granted by the Commander-in-Chief of the State Forces to Private Peter Gallagher, Battery B, 1st F. A., New York Guard, now serving sentence at the post of the First Provisional Regiment under G. O. 59, A. G. O., 1917.

3. Private Gallagher was the first general prisoner of this regiment, having been found guilty by a general court-martial convened under S. O. 259, A. G. O., 1917. His offense was the accidental shooting of Thomas Bennett, who was loitering near his sentry post at the north door of the overflow chamber at Dunwoodie, on Monday, October 8th, 1917.

4. To the personal knowledge of the Commanding Officer of this regiment, prisoner Gallagher is now an entirely different person from the sullen, ungovernable boy who came to this headquarters on the night of the shooting as a prisoner.

5. It is the belief of the Commanding Officer of this regiment that the associations and environment in which prisoner Gallagher has lived for nearly a year, have brought out much of the best that is in him, and that, with the pardon of the Commander-in-Chief, there can be returned to the ranks of the New York Guard in service with the First Provisional Regiment in the field, a loyal soldier who will one day be a worthy citizen of this State.

JOHN B. ROSE,
Colonel, 1st Infantry, N. Y. G.
Commanding.

1ST IND.

State of New York, A. G. O., Albany, N. Y., August 9th, 1918—To Commanding Officer, 1st Infantry, N. Y. G. Thru the channels. Pardon requested forwarded.

C. H. SHERRILL,
The Adjutant-General.

2312

2ND IND.

Hdqrs. Prov. Brigade, August 10th, 1918: To the Commanding Officer, 1st Prov. Regt. Forwarding pardon.

F. DE F. KEMP,
Brigadier-General.

DANIEL F. NIAL,
Major, Adjutant-General.

August 2nd, 1918.

From: President of the General Court-martial convened under S. O. No. 259, A. G. O.

To: The Adjutant-General, State of New York, Albany, N. Y.

1. By unanimous consent of the court convened under S. O. 259, A. G. O., 1917, pardon is asked for Private Peter Gallagher, Battery B, 1st Field Artillery, whose sentence was promulgated in G. O. 59, A. G. O., 1917.

WILLIAM L. BURNETT,

Major 1st Infantry, N. Y. G.

Acting Lieut.-Col., First Provisional Regt.
President of the Court.

The pardon came on the 10th, reading as follows:

STATE OF NEW YORK

EXECUTIVE CHAMBER

ALBANY

August 10, 1918.

For good cause shown and upon the recommendation of the Commanding Officer, First Provisional Regiment, N. Y. G., approved by the Commanding General, Provisional Brigade, N. Y. G., and the Commanding General, Division, N. Y. G., Private Peter Gallagher, Battery B, 1st Field Artillery, N. Y. G., is hereby granted this pardon for offenses committed as set forth in General Orders No. 59, A. G. O., 1917. The unexecuted portion of the sentence of the General Court-martial in this case as promulgated and approved in said General Order, is hereby remitted and the said Peter Gallagher is hereby fully restored to his former position as a member of the New York Guard.

CHARLES S. WHITMAN,
Governor.

At Retreat on the evening of the 10th, while the staff and Headquarters Company stood at attention, Colonel Rose caused Gallagher to be brought from the guard-house to the parade ground and spoke briefly to him of the pardon that had come from the Governor. The correspondence, together with the pardon, were read to the command, a rifle placed in Gallagher's

hands, and he was given a place in the ranks of the Headquarters Company. The occasion was an impressive one and a characteristic observation of the First Provisional's anniversary.

Looking back over the year of occupation by the First Provisional Regiment, even the most casual person would have been struck on this, its anniversary, by the terrific struggle for existence that had accompanied every day and almost every hour of the regiment's history. It had broken time records for a State regiment in State service, and all terrain records in the amount of territory continuously occupied. Fired in its first days by the spirit of its Commanding Officer, the organization had faced and overcome all obstacles, even though obliged to combat for the things to which, as an organization in the field, it was entitled, and had come through to the end of its first year, now with renewed hope and promise of even better work for the future. The star of federalization burned low and on the horizon another star—a scarlet one—appeared, that brought despair to the hearts of the men of the regiment, who prayed with each new tour of guard duty on the serpentine line of the cut and cover for duty overseas. The Federal Government had offered National Guard status to all State troops and New York State had refused. From the Federal Government had issued an order requiring all New York State troops to wear distinctive insignia, and G. O. 38 had prescribed a scarlet star two inches in diameter to be worn on the sleeve of all coats, blouses and shirts of enlisted men, and together with dark-blue braid, which was to replace the brown braid on officers' sleeves.

Although the scarlet stars were never actually issued, they were purchased in great quantities, and the moral effect of the impending execution of the order was disastrous on the Aqueduct. Applications for immediate Federal service were made right and left by officers and men in the first flush of resentment against a condition that seemed to penalize the sacrifices and privations that the First Provisional had made. A crude doggerel that ran the length of the line during the scarlet-star scare perhaps expressed the feeling of the enlisted men better than anything else:

“I'd rather be a dog in the old back yard
Than to wear that damn star in the New York Guard,”

was the way it ran. It was characteristic of the First Provisional that its humor, as usual, saved the situation. In devising smart lines concerning the wearing of the scarlet star, the men spent

half their steam. Some of those lines were very good—but not for publication.

Remington rifles of the Russian model were delivered along the line throughout the month of August, and the ancient Springfield and the Kraggs that had formed the bulk of armament for the First Provisional from its entrance into the field were picked up and turned in to the State Arsenal.

The month closed with the relief from duty of 1st Lieut. James Keefe, of the 69th Infantry, who had been with Company M and Company E since the entry of Captain Muller's unit into the field. Captain Harte was relieved from duty as acting Supply Officer of the regiment and detailed to special duty with the 2nd Battalion.

The closing days of August also witnessed the reunion of the ranking veterans of the First Provisional Regiment, with the transfer of Chief-Trumpeter John Corrie to Regimental Headquarters, where Sergt. Angus J. Thompson, veteran drummer, had been stationed since the previous spring, when the two had been separated. Both had entered the field with Captain Thompson's 8th Coast command, and had played together until the dissolution of their unit. But Corrie's golden-throated bugle and Thompson's rattling drum lifted their voices together again at Regimental Headquarters on the last of August and were not separated again until the regiment was finally disbanded.

The "Boy Musicians" of the First Provisional probably formed the best field music combination in the State. Entering the field on Oct. 5th with Captain Thompson's command, Sergeants Corrie and Thompson first drew the attention of staff officers when a portion of Captain Thompson's men were brought into Regimental Headquarters for training purposes in December, 1917. It was there that the notes of Corrie's bugle and the spirited staccato of Thompson's drum made an impression, and as soon as opportunity offered Thompson was brought in to headquarters from Scribner's Farm and made Headquarters Mess Sergeant. In the meantime, Corrie had been attached to the 3rd Battalion headquarters at Valhalla, but as soon as Captain Harte left Corrie was also brought to headquarters and the famous pair was reunited, not to be parted again.

Sergt. John Corrie, who in private life resides at 304 89th Street, Brooklyn, N. Y., enlisted Sept. 4th, 1879, as musician of Company H, 17th Infantry, and while serving with that command participated in Indian fighting, was a member of the detachment that captured Sitting Bull and 325 other chiefs and warriors, and conveyed them from Standing Rock to Fort Randall. Corrie

was one of the two men who jumped on Sitting Bull and prevented his escape one night when the murderer of Custer knocked a guard's gun down and made a dash from the camp. Discharged in Sept., 1884, he re-enlisted on the 24th in Battery I, 5th U. S. Artillery, and as a member of Battery M served with the guard of honor at Grant's tomb in the winter of 1885-6, sounding service calls there.

In 1886 he won the Atlantic Division shooting medal at Fort Niagara, and after serving with the Platte and Division of Missouri rifle teams, became distinguished marksman, U. S. A., in 1889, making the highest known distance score of the U. S. Army. In 1906, while a member of Co. D, 2nd Infantry, Connecticut National Guard, his rifle team won a match open to teams from all States, "The Company Team Match."

Enlisting in Co. B, 12th Infantry, in 1890, he was 1st sergeant, musician and ordnance sergeant with the company for fourteen years, serving at the Buffalo strike of '91 and the Brooklyn strike in '93. He won the Governor's cup as an individual award four times as the best shot in the State. In '91 he was a member of the State rifle team.

Sergt. Angus Thompson, who lives at 69 West 105th Street, New York, enlisted in Company A, 12th Infantry, February 11, 1884, and served in the Buffalo and Brooklyn strikes. He enlisted for the Spanish War in May, 1898, served with the 12th New York Volunteers, and was discharged in Georgia, Nov. 29, 1898. He holds 10, 15, 20 and 25-year service medals.

As musicians at headquarters, these two attracted a great deal of attention from visitors. Corrie's First Call, the combined Reveille March, and Taps were among the most distinctive of the calls that they played together or singly, and the long last notes of the Taps that Corrie played were wonderful indeed. As instructors both men had served so long that they knew all of the technique of field music, and they raised the general standard of field music throughout the regiment by their schools and their individual instructions, both at practice for service calls and ceremonies. Either would become wildly impatient with a beginner who spoiled a ceremony by some untoward movement or note, and this resulted in some side-splitting incidents at guard mount and evening parade.

It was inevitable that they should have differences of their own. Sergeant Thompson's fatherly care of his snare-drum brought one of these about on a thick, foggy morning so characteristic of the Croton Lake headquarters camp.

Colonel Rose missed the noisy flutterings of Sergeant Thomp-

son's drum at First Call, and had gone to the window of his sleeping quarters to find out about it, when he heard the voices of the chief trumpeter and the drummer raised in disagreement back in the non-commissioned officers' row.

Sergeant Corrie wanted Sergeant Thompson to bring out his drum for the morning calls, and Sergeant Thompson held forth that it was too moist a morning to risk the precious skin drum-head. One thing led to another, and finally it got down to a question of technique touching on and appertaining to the ceremonies of the previous evening. Corrie became impatient, and, as he turned away to play Reveille March, he of the 39 years' service remarked to the drummer of 34 years':

"By the time you've been in the service as long as I have you'll know something about the military game."

AUGUST RATINGS, 2ND BATTALION

| <i>Organization</i> | <i>Guarding</i> | <i>Sani- tation</i> | <i>Appear- ance</i> | <i>P. C.</i> |
|---------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|--------------|
| Company H..... | 35 | 25 | 22 | 82 |
| Company F..... | 36 | 23 | 20 | 79 |
| Company E..... | 30 | 24 | 20 | 74 |
| Company G..... | 29 | 22 | 19 | 70 |
| Machine Gun Co..... | 30 | 20 | 20 | 70 |

SEPTEMBER

WITH a redistribution of troops totaling 640 men a huge total of troop movement mileage in 12 hours, the First Provisional Regiment cut a new notch in its record-stick on the 1st of September, when Captain Gibbs' men moved to Company C's sector, Captain Johnson's men moved to Company G's sector, Captain White's organization dropped from C to K, Pierce's company from N-6 to L, and the Machine Gun Company of the 1st Infantry marched from Newburgh to N-6, taking over, with 52 enlisted men under Capt. Oswald J. Cathcart, 1st Lieut. Graham Witts-chief, and 2nd Lieut. Bryant B. Odell, son of the former Governor. Lieut. Launt was transferred to Provisional Company F.

Despite the fact that there were but five trucks available in the entire regiment for the transportation of the vast amount of baggage involved in this troop movement, and that no authority could be obtained to secure more, the entire affair, with the co-operation of the New York Central officials, went off like clock-work and on time to the minute. As in the case of other troop movements, much of the success was due to the close and hearty co-operation of Mr. Wallie Wright of the New York Central's Passenger Traffic Department. Mr. Wright, it should be noted at this point, proved to be one of the best transportation friends the regiment ever had, and his services were invaluable in this and other troop movements.

This shift, which had long been contemplated by General Kemp, and which was made at his order, was a part and portion of the proposed "Brigade Battalion" plan which constantly made itself apparent in the life and workings of the regiment at this time. In the United States Guard, a plan of separate battalions reporting direct to brigade or division headquarters had been tried, with the elimination of regimental headquarters, and it was the desire of the Adjutant-General to try this plan with the First Provisional Regiment for a time at least. At one time orders were ready to issue from the Adjutant-General's Office effecting this change, but were halted when Governor Whitman disapproved of them.

Briefly, the plan was to place all units of the First Brigade, as far as possible, in the 1st Battalion; all units of the 2nd Brigade

in the 3rd Battalion, and all up-State units in the 2nd Battalion, thus segregating interests and organization. Colonel Rose opposed the plan from the beginning, with full knowledge of what the adoption of it would mean to the regiment as an efficient guard force imbued with a single idea and working under a single head to a definite aim. The plan of brigade battalions was not, however, definitely dropped until after the resignation of the Adjutant-General, and the occupancy of the office by Lieut.-Colonel Edward J. Westcott, shortly after the middle of the month. It may be noted in this connection that the U. S. Guard did not find the battalion administrative idea fully successful.

The movement described above brought into the field for the first time detachments from Companies A, D, E, F, G, H and K of the 1st Infantry, in addition to those from the Machine Gun Company. The First Provisional, long denied the assistance of the organization commanded at home station by Colonel Rose, was in this way able to bring its line to near strength at this time. All of the 1st men went to the line of the 2nd Battalion, 9 from A, 6 from D, 10 from E, 18 from F, 19 from G, 10 from H and 27 from K, together with some replacements from I of the 1st for Captain Decker's command at New Paltz.

In the meantime, arrangements had been made with Col. Edward E. Powell of the 4th Infantry, the warmest friend of the regiment at home station, to bring into the field 128 men, Captain Cathcart's command was relieved in entirety on the 4th of the month, the sector was taken over by Lieut. Stewart Richards, with 52 of Captain Johnson's men from Company G, and men from the 4th Infantry filled up the gaps in Captain Johnson's line, as well as reinforcing Captain Hinman at the Peak.

On the 4th there also took place the reorganization of the Supply Company, Colonel Rose having finally brought about a condition toward which he had been moving ever since his return to duty with the regiment, when the Supply Company was found to be at its lowest ebb. S. O. 182, issued on Sept. 4th, tells the story:

HEADQUARTERS
FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT
NEW YORK GUARD

SPECIAL ORDER
No. 182

CROTON LAKE, N. Y.
September 4th, 1918.

The following reorganization of the Supply Company is ordered by this Headquarters effective this date:

Reorganization

- Capt. L. B. De Garmo (Supervision only).
- Capt. A. Westcott (Administration).
- Lt. G. C. Weed (Construction, Repairs, Distribution).
- Lt. E. Miller (Motor-trucks and Delivery).
- Lt. C. C. Servatius (Prison Detachment, Prison Guard and Prisoners).
- 1 1st Class Quartermaster-Sergeant, George Pauli (1st Sergeant Supply Company).
- 6 1st Class Quartermaster-Sergeants (truck drivers, 4 on east side of river and 2 on west side).
- 2 1st Class Quartermaster-Sergeants, G. Scheide and H. Kingsland (chauffeurs).
- 1 1st Class Quartermaster-Sergeant, Chas. Fricke (Chief Clerk).
- 1 1st Class Quartermaster-Sergeant, Harry Gardiner (In charge of store tent).
- 1 1st Class Quartermaster-Sergeant, Louis E. Rothstein (In charge of subsistence stores).
- 2 1st Class Quartermaster-Sergeants (Stenographers).
- 4 Quartermaster-Sergeants (Clerks).
- 2 Corporals (Guards).
- 15 Privates (Camp Work and Prison Guard).
- 1 Cook.
- 3 Quartermaster-Sergeants (Mechanics and Stablemen).
- 2 Sergeants (Guard).
- 1 Mess Sergeant.

Incoming Department

In order to separate the work of the departments there will be established at once what is known as the Incoming Department (Requisitions, Ration Returns, Subsistence Records).

Issue Department

Property of all classes issued.
 Office hours of all departments from 8 A.M. to 4 P.M.,
 posting, 4 P.M. to 5 P.M. Office closed, 5 P.M.
 Subsistence segregated as to kinds.
 Quartermaster and Ordnance.

Stock-book, credit and debit (daily inventory).
Requisitions open file (closed when completed).

The administration of the affairs of the Supply Company will be carried on the same as for the Companies on the line. The following records will be kept for the Supply Company.

Morning Reports plus and minus, Morning Sick Report, Duty Roster, Guard Report (Prison Guard and Prison Detachment), Morning Report Prison Detachment, City Log Book, Subsistence Record, Ration Return Form 223, Pay Roll, Daily Inventory, Card Index Accounts, Ledger Account, Abstract of Purchase, Abstract of Issue, Post Property Account, Q. M., Ordnance, Medical, Telephone & Tel. Record.

The Supply Officer will adopt such regulations as are applicable to the handling of the men of the Supply Company as to leaves of absence, passes, furloughs, and men will be granted such hours off duty in turn as is consistent with their work.

The Supply Officer will make the assignments for the non-commissioned staff, and the sergeants will be detailed for duty in the departments where they can be of the maximum service.

Capt. Eugene Scherman, Supply Officer 2nd Battalion, will continue in charge of 2nd Battalion supplies.

In order that the exact condition and amount of property on hand in the entire regiment can be determined, a careful and complete inventory will be made at once, under the supervision of the officers, as follows:

Major E. J. Wilson, Brigade Quartermaster, has agreed to supervise the inventory and physical count of all property on hand at Supply Headquarters, Peekskill, N. Y.

Capt. G. B. Snowden, and Sergt. G. F. Williams, Supply Company, 2nd Battalion, will be placed in charge of the inventory of all property on the west side of the river.

Lieut. Avery E. Lord, and one sergeant, will be detailed to make an inventory on east side of the river from Breakneck to and including Hillview Reservoir.

This inventory will be made by actual count, and the property on hand will be listed as serviceable or unserviceable.

The results of this inventory will be submitted promptly

to the Commanding Officer in order that the exact amount of property on hand in the regiment can be determined.

BY ORDER OF COLONEL JOHN B. ROSE,

T. R. HUTTON,
Captain, 1st Infantry, N. Y. G.
Adjutant.

OFFICIAL:

T. R. HUTTON,
Captain, 1st Infantry, N. Y. G.
Adjutant.

Paragraph I, S. O. 40, Provisional Brigade, relieved Captain De Garmo from duty as Supply Officer of the First Provisional Regiment on the 7th until the 14th, and his place was taken by Captain Roche, who, during his tenure as acting Supply Officer was also battalion commander of the 1st Battalion and commanding officer of Company B, the three biggest jobs held by any one man in the history of the First Provisional Regiment at one and the same time.

Sergeant Benvidido Fajardo, formerly of the Machine Gun Company, died on Sept. 9th from a self-inflicted wound. The story of Fajardo is told in the memorial chapter at the end of this history, one of the most pathetic and romantic incidents in the life of the First Provisional.

On the 10th, Lieut. Harry R. Lydecker left the regiment for officers' training school in the south and Scribner's Farm sector lost a good commanding officer. On the same date Sergt. Chauncey Cass of Company A, who had entered the regiment in August, 1917, as a private, having received his commission as second lieutenant, was assigned to duty with Company A. Second Lieut. William Wisner of the 14th Infantry was assigned to duty with Company M on the same date.

Captain Lane was assigned Commanding Officer of Company D on the 14th, and Lieut. Towner was made Inspecting Officer of the 1st Battalion. Lieut. Avery E. Lord was brought to Regimental Headquarters to learn the work of the Adjutant, whose application for overseas service with the aerial photography section of the Signal Corps was being considered at Washington.

Lieut. Clarence Higgs was transferred from Company C to Company D on the 18th, Lieut. W. A. Lynch of Company I became Summary Court Officer for the 3rd Battalion in place of Lieut. Lord, and Capt. Eugene Scherman was relieved from duty with the regiment to enter Federal service, his place being taken

temporarily by Captain Snowden, but finally by Lieut. Miller. Captain Harte's release as of Sept. 15th was announced on the same date, and with him went 1st Lieut. J. Noble Braden of Company D. The regiment was losing good officers at a fast clip. On the following day Lieut. Gutterman was relieved from duty. On the 24th Capt. Ashley N. Keener, 71st Infantry, one of the regiment's best, took command of Company D.

Leave of absence was granted Captain Roche on the 27th, and during his absence Captain Van Zandt of Company A commanded the 1st Battalion.

It was the last days of September that the dreaded Spanish influenza, which had been making terrific inroads in the national army cantonments, struck the line of the First Provisional Regiment, and on the 30th, Colonel Rose, with the authority of Colonel Westcott, the acting Adjutant-General, directed the establishment of the First Field Hospital at Newburgh. Major Townsend was sent to Albany to confer with the State health authorities and a quarantine was declared to exist in the regiment. The history of the influenza epidemic, which forms one of the most dramatic chapters of the regiment's work, appears in the section on the "Health of the Regiment."

Captain Waterbury was assigned to the 2nd Battalion, Lieut. Horgan was directed to make headquarters at Croton Lake, Captain Lane resumed his duties as Battalion Inspector. So the month closed with influenza raging in the camps of Captain Johnson and Captain Decker, and spreading gradually along the line.

OCTOBER

WITH almost the entire energy of the regiment turned toward the checking of the influenza epidemic, the Commanding Officer and Adjutant went northward on the 3rd, to be met at Olive Bridge with the report that Private Arthur F. Rourke had been shot and killed by a comrade at the Valhalla 4-A outpost that afternoon. The shooting was accidental. In the pressure of the influenza crisis it passed without the excitement that would have been caused by it in normal times.

The acquisition of Field Hospital No. 2 at Ossining, formerly known as the Holbrook Military Academy, and given for the regiment's use in the crisis by V. Everit Macy, is fully described in the chapter on health. This was opened on the 8th with Major Clinton in charge. On the same day 1st Lieut. George Whritenour of Company C, 1st Infantry, with 16 men from that company, entered the field at St. Andrew's on the line of the 2nd Battalion, and Capt. A. S. Murray, 1st Lieut. Robert F. Polhemus, and 30 men of Company F took over the Machine Gun Company's line. Lieut. Elmer Miller was assigned finally as Supply Officer of the 2nd Battalion, Captain Lane was relieved of responsibility for the command of the 1st Battalion and returned to his duties as Summary Court Officer and Inspector, while Captain Roche was again given battalion command, a position which he continued to hold until the release of his company from duty in the field in December.

On the 9th, Lieut. Higgs reported to Field Hospital No. 2 for duty. It was about this time that Lieut. Miller received his commission as captain. Sergt. George A. Scheide, Q. M. C., attached to the Supply Company, became a second lieutenant, and orders of this time announced the commissioning of Gomer J. Pritchard of Captain Johnson's company as second lieutenant. On the 15th, Lieut. Albert A. Lankau of Company A, 1st Infantry, entered the field and was assigned to St. Andrews.

Capt. Edward G. Bensen, M. C., attached to the 10th Infantry, entered the field on the 17th and was assigned to the line of the 2nd Battalion, thus leaving Captain Waterbury free to put his entire time at Field Hospital No. 1, where the total cases and deaths were mounting fast.

Capt. B. F. J. Kiernan, with Lieut. Hans F. Hofer and 83 enlisted men of the 71st Infantry, were placed under orders in New York on the 17th, and on the 21st were moved into the field, taking over the Company K sector. Captain White was relieved of command and assigned as Summary Court Officer and Inspecting Officer of the 3rd Battalion. 1st Lieut. Frederic Baldwin and 67 men of Company K went to Company M, and 1st Lieut. Reynolds, with all enlisted men of the 47th Infantry, was attached to Company L. This was the last big troop movement before the beginning of demobilization.

About this time Lieut. Mauri Maffucci, Q. M. C., and Lieut. Charles L. Mulford, Q. M. C., were attached to Field Hospital No. 2, remaining with the regiment until the expiration of its service and performing excellent work.

The acting Adjutant-General, Lieut.-Colonel Edward J. Westcott, had paid several visits to the line of the First Provisional since his appointment to office, and the conditions that he had observed led to a general loosening of strings in the matter of authority. As Chief Quartermaster of the State, Colonel J. Weston Myers had assumed responsibility for the expenditures necessary at the field hospitals, and there was no time at which either of these units lacked anything after the matter had been brought to Colonel Myers' attention. Despite the influenza epidemic, the condition of the regiment was improving every day, and its position, once so treacherously uncertain, was becoming more and more secure. It became increasingly evident that the knowledge that higher headquarters had lacked regarding the conditions under which the regiment had been obliged to operate had been secured by Colonel Westcott with immediate results.

To consolidate the regimental gains, Colonel Rose had secured from V. Everit Macy a free lease of the premises of the old Holbrook Military Academy for any regimental purpose whatsoever, until three months after the signing of the declaration of peace, and on Friday night, Oct. 25th, the Adjutant's office moved from Headquarters Hill at Croton Lake to the west wing of the big structure that was to be the home of the First Provisional Regiment headquarters until the end of the service. The old mess hall on the ground floor of the west wing was partitioned off to form a spacious office.

Shortly afterward the entire staff, with the exception of the Commanding Officer, who continued to sleep at Camp Rose, moved to the new headquarters, officers' quarters being assigned on the second floor of the west wing, with the Headquarters Company and office force on the third floor. Orders were issued to the

Supply Company to begin preparation for movement from Peekskill to the new headquarters.

And so the end of October found the regiment in comfortable quarters, more secure than ever before, its lines weakened by the ravages of influenza and its hospitals crowded to capacity, but fighting unhampered and with hope. On the big football field on the flat to the east of the headquarters buildings the pigskin thumped merrily after work hours, and in the early mornings the Headquarters Company and patients found plenty of room for their callisthenics. Baths, lights, steam-heat, and such comforts as the men who had served with the regiment from its first days had never dreamed of, made life worth while. And the month closed in sunshine and wonderful foliage colorings that belied the reality of the Grim Reaper, gathering in handfuls and double handfuls from the ranks of the First Provisional.

NOVEMBER

THE month brought the regiment its second election in the field, with all units voting either prior to or on Election Day. At Regimental Headquarters the first ballot was cast by Colonel Rose, with the election board consisting of Lieut. Towner, Sergt.-Major William J. Carroll, Mess Sergeant William Yates, and 1st Lieut. Clarence Higgs. Mrs. T. R. Hutton, as a civilian employee in the office of the Adjutant, cast the first vote among the women at the post, and the first vote ever cast by a woman with troops in the field in New York State. The second woman to vote was Lieut. Spaulding, commanding officer of the Dutchess County Ambulance Corps, Home Defense Reserve, that had been detailed by Governor Whitman to furnish transportation at the headquarters of the regiment during the influenza epidemic. Red Cross nurses and attendants also voted, the polling place being the non-commissioned officers' recreation-room.

Lieut. Robert Polhemus was placed in charge of construction in the regiment with the departure of Lieut. Grover C. Weed for Federal service. Sergt. Stuart L. Newing of Company H, receiving his commission as first lieutenant, was continued on duty.

During the epidemic and the first quarantine of the regiment, loss of men by draft had been halted under orders of the selective service division of the Adjutant-General's office, but with the removal of the quarantine from the 2nd Battalion on the 2nd, the 1st and 3rd Battalions on the 13th, and Regimental Headquarters on the 14th, draft losses began again. This resulted in telegrams of protest from Colonel Rose to the Adjutant-General, which were forwarded to the Provost-Marshal-General, and which are found in the chapter on "The Impregnable Line."

First Lieut. William A. Lynch and 2nd Lieut. William D. Buckley were relieved from duty with the regiment on the 17th, at their own request, with the thanks of the Commanding Officer.

The signing of the armistice had little effect on the First Provisional Regiment, save for a general warning sent out to all company commanders not to slacken their guard lines in the slightest fashion. There was little celebration on the line itself, and hardly a ripple of the enthusiasm that twisted the nation in knots reached

the posts and outposts of the men of the Aqueduct. Speculation as to date of relief of course became rife, but there was little else.

The first memorial service for men of the regiment who had died on the Aqueduct was held at the Reformed Church in Walkill, not far from Captain Johnson's line, the afternoon of Nov. 17th, when Provisional Company G paid tribute to its early dead. This was when the first wave of the Spanish influenza epidemic had passed and when every one believed that the worst was over. Some of these men who participated in the service for their dead comrades later succumbed to the disease in its recurrent wave, and of these was Lieut. Gomer Pritchard.

It was a mournful occasion, with all of nature outside lending color to the gloominess and the depression that marked the greater part of the event. The men of the command marched to the church in column, where the forward portion of the auditorium had been reserved for them. Colonel Rose, with Captain Pell, Captain Baldwin and Captain Hutton, sat on the platform with Captain Johnson, who conducted the service.

Comrades of those men of Company G who had been taken paid tribute to their memory with prepared obituaries, which were read during the course of the service, and addresses were made by Colonel Rose, Captain Pell, Captain Baldwin, and Captain Johnson. It was at this service that Colonel Rose sounded the note of sacrifice in the service of humanity as man's highest privilege to die for others. "Think of the millions of men who have marched down the halls of time, and of the proportionate few who have been privileged to die for another or for their country. . . . We are carried along the sea of life by an unswerving tide that sweeps us surely to that farther shore. Death cannot be avoided. It cannot be overcome.

"Think, then, of what it means to be permitted to die for some one else—to die for one's country—when we all must die. Think of the Great God who looks down upon this world and points out here and there to this individual and says, 'John, or Charlie, I am going to pin upon your breast the most distinguished service medal that is within the Gift of Almighty God. I am going to permit you to give up your life as I gave the life of My only Son, Who died that the world might live.'"

On Nov. 18th, after nearly a year of brigade control, Special Orders No. 277, A. G. O., detached the First Provisional Regiment from the Provisional Brigade and returned it to its former status as an independent unit, reporting directly to the Adjutant-General's office, as at the time of its entry into the field. The administration of regimental affairs was now totally in the hands

of Colonel Rose, and the regiment, better and stronger than ever before in its history, made preparations for a whirlwind finish.

On the 20th, Capt. L. B. De Garmo, Supply Officer of the First Provisional Regiment since its beginnings, was relieved from duty as such and assigned to duty with the Board of Survey appointed by the Adjutant-General to make a survey of property of the First Provisional Regiment. This board consisted of Lieut.-Colonel Edwin H. Moody and Major J. Roy Wilbur of the 4th Infantry, with Capt. George S. Norman of the 14th Infantry, who was later replaced by Major Willard Donner of the 10th Infantry.

Captain Nicholas Muller succeeded Capt. De Garmo as Supply Officer, with 1st Lieut. Patrick J. Bradley and 2nd Lieut. Henry C. Inzelman, who had been commissioned a few days before. The other Supply Officers remained attached to Captain Muller's force for the time being.

Capt. Sidney Winters of the 4th Infantry, with 1st Lieut. J. C. Moshier, 1st Lieut. Joseph R. Page, and 1st Lieut. Veeder Bergen and 176 men of the 4th Infantry, took over the total line of Company E, including Brown's Station, and 100 men of the 4th Infantry were brought into Ossining, 60 forming a new Headquarters Company and 40 a Supply Company.

On this date Capt. Charles W. Baldwin, who had served as Chaplain of the Regiment without pay for some time, was assigned to duty in the field with the regiment, under pay. Capt. T. R. Hutton was relieved from duty as Adjutant of the regiment and assigned to special duty with the Commanding Officer, and Lieut. Avery E. Lord, who was made captain on the 1st of the following month, became Regimental Adjutant.

Headquarters boomed with the advent of the new troops, and formal guard mounts and evening parades in battalion formation made the days brilliant with martial music and marching troops until the taking over of Camp Dyer and Camp Fisher on Sector S-5 cut the available force at headquarters to bare necessities. Both of the old Company A outposts were put under the charge of the commanding officer of Headquarters Company, with the original plan of relieving the details at each camp with fresh men from headquarters every seven days.

With the advent of the Supply Company the supply office was established in the room just off the old school gymnasium, the floor of the gymnasium being converted to storage purposes. Members of the Supply Company were quartered in the connecting wing of the buildings, commonly known as "the bridge," and the overflow occupied the second floor of the brick hospital



Upper left—Major (then Capt.) Frederick C. Kuehnle of the 3rd Battalion. *Second-Lieut. J. Noble Braden* of Company D. *Lower left*—Capt. Theodore T. Lane, regimental judge-advocate and summary court officer of the 1st Battalion. *Right*—Lieut. Harry R. Lydecker of Scribner's Farm.



MEN OF COMPANY E, DRAWN FROM THE 69TH AT THE OLIVE BRIDGE BARRACKS. SERGEANT (LATER LIEUTENANT)
INZELMAN IS RIGHT GUIDE

wing, which was at that time emptying fast as the influenza epidemic waned.

On the 21st, Lieut. Wilbur J. Bowman of Company G, 1st Infantry, entered the field and was assigned to the Provisional Machine Gun Company on the 23rd.

A portion of Captain Muller's company accompanied him to Regimental Headquarters, a portion went to strengthen the line of Company F, and some went to Company B, but eventually most of the men of the old unit became a part of the Supply Company.

The regiment lost an enthusiastic officer on the 22nd, when Capt. Ernest Van Zandt, who had since the beginning of the work commanded Company A, was relieved from duty, with the thanks of the Commanding Officer, to enter Federal service. As company and battalion commander, and especially as an instructor and indefatigable worker, Captain Van Zandt had established a company with a reputation and a record that was subsequently lived up to by his successor, Lieut. Irving Ussiker, who became captain just after the 1st of December, while Lieut. Cass became first lieutenant and Sergt. Frederick Simons second lieutenant.

The holiday happiness of Thanksgiving Day along the line of the First Provisional was dampened by the fresh outbreak of influenza among the troops that had most recently entered the field. First appearing in Provisional Company E and then in Provisional Company B, the epidemic took heavy toll. The cases were of particularly virulent nature and snuffed men out like candle flames.

Unfortunately, the Red Cross, which had co-operated with supplies and personnel at both the field hospitals, had withdrawn from the work with the lapse of the first epidemic, and the regiment, thrown entirely on its own resources, was obliged to meet a stiff proposition. How well this was done is told in the chapter on the health of the organization.

At the conclusion of the month the Board of Survey was operating along the line, the new supply organization was co-ordinating in surprisingly smooth fashion, the guard lines were tight, and the regiment well in hand with all lines of control running into Regimental Headquarters, where the Commanding Officer was making preparations for the demobilization which he believed imminent. The Second Provisional was to disband on Dec. 1st, and orders had been issued to that effect, but there was nothing to indicate when the Aqueduct could be left unguarded. At the end of November the final distribution of officers and men along the line was as follows:

COMPANY A: Capt. I. J. Ussiker, 1st Lt. C. A. Cass, 2nd Lt. Frederick Simons and 99 enlisted men.

COMPANY B: Capt. J. J. Roche, 1st Lt. E. M. Kirkpatrick, 2nd Lt. R. V. O'Grady and 94 enlisted men.

COMPANY C: Capt. E. C. Gibbs, 1st Lt. C. W. Higgs, 2nd Lt. C. Girdner and 96 enlisted men.

COMPANY D: Capt. A. N. Keener, 2nd Lt. J. La Doux and 89 enlisted men.

COMPANY E: Capt. S. Winters, Lt. Mosier, Lt. Bergen, Lt. Klinger, Lt. Page and 170 enlisted men.

COMPANY F: Capt. E. M. Decker, Lt. R. C. Launt, Lt. Richards and 72 enlisted men.

COMPANY G: Capt. J. W. Johnson, 1st Lt. Therkildsen, Lt. Eaton, Lt. Pritchard, Lt. Whritenour and 163 enlisted men.

COMPANY H: Capt. C. A. Hinman, 1st Lt. A. B. Suttle, Lt. Newing and 70 enlisted men.

COMPANY I: Capt. D. F. Young and 77 enlisted men.

COMPANY K: Capt. Kiernan, Lt. Rehm, Lt. Hofer and 79 enlisted men.

COMPANY L: Capt. Pierce, Lt. Reynolds, Lt. Smith and 79 enlisted men.

COMPANY M: Capt. R. L. Vandewater, Lt. Wisner, Lt. Baldwin and 94 enlisted men.

MACHINE GUN CO: Captain Murray, Lt. Polhemus, Lt. Lankau, Lt. Bowman and 88 enlisted men.

SUPPLY CO: Capt. N. W. Muller, Capt. L. B. De Garmo, Capt. A. H. Westcott, Lt. P. J. Bradley, Lt. C. L. Servatius, Lt. George Scheid, Lt. Harry Inzelman, Lt. Grover C. Weed and 60 enlisted men.

HEADQUARTERS CO.: 92 enlisted men.

REGIMENTAL STAFF: Col. John B. Rose, Lieut.-Col. Wm. L. Burnett, Capt. C. W. Baldwin (Chaplain), Capt. Howland Pell, Capt. Thomas R. Hutton, Capt. T. T. Lane, Lt. John Towner, Lt. A. E. Lord, Lt. Mauri Maffucci, Lt. Chas. Mulford.

REGIMENTAL NON-COMMISSIONED STAFF: Sergt.-Major Charles J. Blizard, Sergt., 1st Class, Francis X. Coughlan,

Sergt., 1st Class, Herbert F. Thornblade, Regimental Mess-Sergt. W. H. Yates, Sergt., 1st Class, Joseph Lee, Battalion Sergt.-Major Wm. Carroll.

MEDICAL OFFICERS: Major Charles E. Townsend, Maj. Charles A. Clinton, Capt. Earl C. Waterbury, Capt. John J. Horgan.

SECOND BATTALION HDQRTS: Major Chas. J. Lamb, Capt. George L. Snowden, 1st Lt. C. L. Bechtol, 1st Lt. Stuart Richards.

THIRD BATTALION HDQRTS: Major Frederick Kuehnle, 1st Lieut. Leslie May.

MIDWORD

AND here the chronological history of the regiment ends. Practically all of the remaining period of the regiment's work was so thoroughly occupied with demobilization that almost the entire story of December and January is told in the "Demobilization" chapter. Such portions of the history of the last month or so as do not appear in this chapter will be found in the other chapters bearing especially on the various phases of the regiment's history, which are treated separately and in detail.

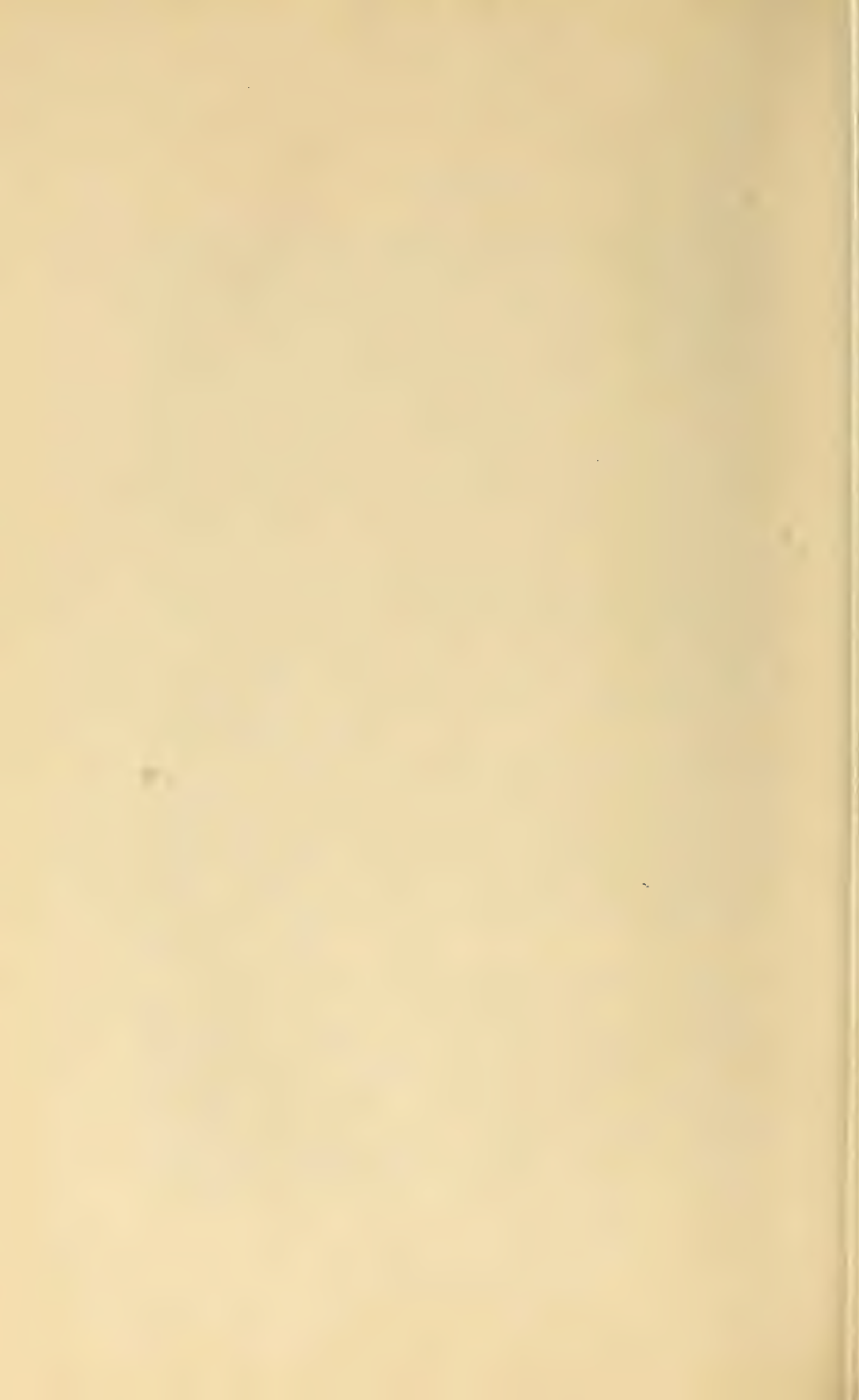
Leave the regiment at the height of its organization, strength, power and efficiency as it stood before the closing scenes and turn now to a more intimate consideration of some of the subjects that have formed the warp and woof of the chronological story.

In the preparation of these chapters it has been the endeavor to make them of real value to those who in later years, meeting the same problems that the regiment met, may have somewhat of a guide, and profit by the experiences of this unique organization. In so far as possible, the officers most familiar with the various phases of regimental life, such as transportation and supplies, housing, health, etc., have been consulted in the preparation of these chapters, or have written them in portion, and in some cases, as noted, entirely.

There is no claim that the way in which the First Provisional Regiment met its problems was in all cases the best way. But no methods were ever used for any extensive period of time that failed to give the best results. By process of elimination and constructive improvement such methods became of standardized work. Radical departure from precedent and in some cases regulations, were necessary, but were eventually and invariably approved by higher authority when the worth of such measures became apparent.

Without pretense or undue pride, but in justice to those who were responsible for the administration of the affairs of the organization, it should be stated at this point that NO POLICY OF THE COMMANDING OFFICER OF THE FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT WHICH HAD BEEN FINALLY DECIDED ON BY HIM AS THE BEST FOR THE NEEDS OF THE REGIMENT, WAS EVER ULTIMATELY DISAPPROVED OR REVERSED BY HIGHER AUTHORITY, ALTHOUGH THERE WERE SOME INSTANCES WHEN TEMPORARY REVERSALS WERE TRIED, WITH DISASTROUS RESULTS.

PART II



THE LINE IMPREGNABLE

A TRAVELER on the valley road between Pleasantville and Chappaqua might have seen, early one frosty evening, of late fall, 1917, a tiny searching ray of white light flash and die, high on the shoulder of Sarles Hill, above the twin siphons that mark the dip of the Catskill Aqueduct beneath the Harlem Railroad tracks.

It was this same tiny, inadvertent flash that caused sudden halt in a stealthy advance that had begun at the base of the hill an hour before—an advance marked now and then by a whispered word, the rustle of leaves underneath, or the snap of a crushed twig. Along the shoulder of the hill stole a file of men, visible only as dark shadows that now and then detached themselves from the darker tree-shapes of the forest background.

The flash of light was accompanied by a sliding, scraping sound, the scurry of leaves, a thump, and a curse, low, but emphatic. At once the stealthy file on the hillside merged into the tree background. For a full minute there was utter silence. The man who had fallen lay where he was, looking up at the frosty stars overhead, ears strained for the slightest sound from the valley below.

"We aren't where they can see us yet. Go ahead, and be careful. Hurt yourself?" came in a whisper from a heavy shadow against one of the tree trunks.

"No, I'm all right. Where's the lead?"

"Up here to your right," came a smothered voice from the bank above. Come up around to your right. Ready, back there?"

And the file moved slowly through the treacherous brush, arms raised before faces to protect the eyes from the tall brier bushes that grew in patches on the hillside.

Approaching the sky-line, the leader turned abruptly to the left and followed parallel to the backbone of the ridge for some little distance. At the edge of an opening in the trees the party paused until the last man had come up. On the far side of the clearing against the sky a huge skeleton shape towered into the air—the high tension-line tower marking the course of the Sarles Hill tunnel.

Beneath and through the sheer rock ran the artery on which depended the safety of New York City from the danger of the torch. Emerging at the siphon-house, it dropped across the valley and beneath the railroad, shooting up with tremendous pressure to the other side through the steel pipe.

Between the Aqueduct and the well-calculated charge of TNT, so placed as to destroy the upper end of the siphon, stood one man in O. D.—and a rifle—perhaps a dog. And the word had come that of late little attention was being paid the siphon and more to the game of flushes and straights that has made so many beginners poor. Three nights before, a stealthy form had wiggled down the path leading from the high-tension pole at the top of the hill to the siphon-house below. Report had gone back of a break in this line of rifles that since the beginning of the war had bristled like the quills of a surly porcupine from the head-works at Ashokan to the final tunnel plunge of the waterway at Hillview. If this were true; if the line were weak, then this was the place for attack.

At a motion from the tallest of the party, who seemed to be in command, one of the dark figures on the hill above the siphon crossed to the foot of the high-tension pole and looked over the edge of the steep hill into the valley below, where a dull light glowed. Then he began picking his way carefully down the path, crouched low to the earth that he might not show against the sky-line, the rest of the party following at fifteen-foot intervals.

At first the progress was fairly easy, but presently, with a signal for caution, the leader dropped to his hands and feet, descending feet foremost with his weight resting largely on his hands. A short distance farther and one of his feet had descended on thin air. The calf of his leg rested on the edge of what seemed to be an abrupt ending of the path. Shifting cautiously to his knees, he felt outward and down, down— He drew back and waited for the second in line.

“Tell them to watch out. It drops away sheer here. Keep to your left.”

Again the silent descent. Then a pebble rattled away down the path from beneath hand or foot and in an instant the line froze against the hillside. From somewhere below rose a softly whistled, “Over There.” The red and green lights of the semaphore arms on the right-of-way down the valley winked peacefully.

And the dark line crept downward, almost noiseless, a few inches at a time, but steadily, steadily, downward, toward—

“H-a-a-l-tt!”

It came from the darkness below, an intense, threatening chal-

lenge. Silence on the hillside, where the black figures merged into the darkness of the path. Then:

"Who's there?"

A long, long wait, so long that it seemed like hours before a heavy voice below growled, "Damned cow!" and the whistling went on.

The party on the hillside had barely started its descent again when a heel grated on a piece of rough rock with an unmistakably metallic sound.

"H-a-a-l-lt!" This time it was certain, and ready; and again came the hoarse query:

"Who's there?"

Far away there sounded the rumble of an approaching train. A wagon rattled on a road somewhere in the night.

"Who's there? Who's up there on the hill?"

Still no voice or motion from the dark shadow clumps on the winding path.

"Who's there? Answer, or I fire!" The clicking of a Springfield bolt supported the statement.

"Lie close!" came the whispered warning along the path from the leader. The men on the side-hill flattened themselves silently, until they seemed a part of the very path in the shadows of the high weeds.

"Corporal of the Guard! Post No. 1!" rang the call below, then repeated.

Came the flash of an electric torch by the railroad, a sound of running feet, and finally a breathless exchange of inquiry and information.

"Some one up on the hill! I heard them!"

The voices dropped to a muffled murmur, and then the white finger of the electric torch swung here and there along the side of the hill, questioningly. Below, in the brush, came the noise of a detail from the outpost, searching.

And then quiet, save for the nearer rumble of the train from the south.

"Nobody up there," said the sergeant's voice below. Whistling, he and the men with him went down the path to the tents of the outpost. The light of the torch died away, and the train came on with a rush and a roar that filled the valley with sound.

"Now! Fast, while the train is going by," urged the leader of the party on the hillside.

Heedless of noise, the entire line moved down the hill with a rapid rush, thirty—forty—fifty—feet. The train passed beneath a red-bellied cloud of smoke as the fireman flung open his fire-

door. A long silence. The forms on the path were still. No, they were just moving, a fraction of an inch at a time, without sound. In the darkness of the path a short, blued barrel glinted slightly as the hand holding it moved forward and downward just a little.

And then, with a roar, a train swept down the valley from the north, filling the air with its passing racket. Waiting until the engine was almost abreast of the echoing hill, the approachers rose and to the rattle of the train pushed down—down—down into a sudden flare of white light, the threatening shiny muzzles of three rifle barrels, and a shout that was almost a scream: "H-A-A-L-LTT!"

Two of the leading figures were caught upright, breast high above the weeds. At the right a third flattened into the half-darkness with just the faintest stir of brown tops to betray it. The rest of the party on the path melted into the hillside.

It was startling, dramatic. It had come as a complete surprise to the descending party, who now appreciated that their opponents had made use of the same agency as themselves to hide the noise of their advance. Only the soldiers had known of the others' whereabouts.

With something of a shock, the guardians of the siphon saw that these prowlers of the night, caught within a few feet of the siphon house, were dressed in the uniform of officers. And one, he who was apparently the leader, a big man with gray hair, spoke up sharply.

"All right! What do you say next?"

From the darkness, behind the white dazzling light and the rifle muzzles, came the reply:

"I'll tell you what I say next. Cover him. You, behind, move out into the light. Watch that stuff over there. Somebody's trying to get away. Stand up, YOU! If he doesn't stand up, shoot!"

The leader of the attacking party turned toward the side-hill, where the slight sway of bushes showed that the third member was wiggling his way to the shadows despite the threat. "Stand up, Captain," he said.

"You be quiet," came the voice behind the lights again. "Put up your hands. Keep them up. You, too. I'll tend to this. Now you come down here," as the third member of the attacking party rose from the brush. "Cover him. Keep them covered. Now one at a time. Come on! Watch them. Shoot if they try to run."

"Don't you recognize me?" asked the leader of the party.

"No! Never saw you before! Come on!"

"I'm the Commanding Officer of this regiment."

"Maybe you are. You'll have to talk to the Captain. Come on. They tell us anybody can buy a uniform. I guess that's right. I don't know any of you. We're new on this job, but if you're who you say you are, it will be all right. Only if you're the Commanding Officer of this regiment, I don't see why you come in this way. Come along!"

And down the side-hill went the party in double file, the men with the rifles at "ready" covering the others closely.

At the siphon-house the sergeant paused and turned over the prisoners to the corporal of the guard. "Take them over there and make them keep their hands up. We'll take them to camp."

"Aren't you going back for the rest of them up there?" asked the leading prisoner.

"Never mind! We'll take care of any more there are."

* * * * *

And they did. They sent in a dog after the Lieut.-Colonel, and they hauled him and the Regimental Inspector down the hill to the other siphon, where the captured first three stood with their hands in the air trying to argue with the sentry who covered them that they should be allowed to use their handkerchiefs.

"I can't help it if your noses run off your faces," he was saying as the new-comers arrived. "Orders is orders." In a pile on the ground before the siphon lay the prisoners' side-arms.

"How many men have you here?" asked one of the prisoners.

No reply. The question was repeated.

"We've got enough," answered the man behind the gun.

* * * * *

The Colonel sent that outpost a chicken dinner.

* * * * *

And now a clipping from a New York paper in the fall of 1918:

"How the present Adjutant-General of the State of New York and Col. Edward E. Powell of the 4th Infantry spend an interesting half hour as prisoners in a 'cooler' on the Aqueduct is the story that is gleefully going the rounds of the posts from the Ashokan Reservoir to Yonkers, where the men of the First Provisional Regiment are guarding New York City's water supply.

"It happened on the sector near Peekskill that is guarded by a company of the 69th—Provisional Company B, with Capt. John J. Roche commanding, and one of the 69th men tells the story.

““They come up the ’duct while I was on post—two of ’em—and I stopped ’em quick!”

“““Halt!” says I. “Who’s there?”

“““The Adjutant-General of the State of New York and party,” says somebody in the dark.

“““Advance, Adjutant-General. Party stand fast,” says I, And one of them comes up to me and halts suddint when I tell him to. He didn’t have any light to throw on his face, so he scratches a match.

“““I don’t recognize you. You’ll have to put up your hands,” I tells him. So up go his meat hooks and I advance the other party. I don’t know him, either, so he puts up his hands. Then they start an argument with me about being officers and going on; but it don’t go.

“““Uniforms don’t mean nothin’ to me,” I tells ’em. “Any sucker with the price can go buy a uniform, but nobody goes through here ’less I know him or somebody vouches for him that I know.”

“““But I’m the Adjutant-General,” says one of them.

“““If you came along here and said you was Gawd Almighty or General Pershing you couldn’t go through ’less you proved it,” says I, and the other one giggles.

“““Don’t you know you hadn’t ought to talk to officers like that?” he says.

“““Mister, I don’t even know you’re officers,” says I. “And if you was, I’d be doing just what you’d want me to right now,” I tells him.

““Well, they give me an awful argument, with this and that and the other thing, and I listens as polite as I can and don’t let ’em through. I knew the Skipper had gone down the line previous and I was waitin’ for him to come back, but when I’d waited a while I tells one of them to use the telephone on the post and call for the corporal of the guard. He does and down comes the corporal. He don’t know ’em, either, and off they go with their hands up, me bein’ relieved at the time and goin’ with them and the corporal.

“““You don’t know Fatty Bland? Well, Fatty’d broke quarantine for about five minutes and was in the jug at camp. You know we’re under quarantine for influenza. Fatty was in the cooler, and they went in with Fatty, but he never knew it. He always sleeps like he was dead and pulls the blanket up over his nut in the bargain.

“““It was kinda dark in there and they rattled around a lot. ’Bout the time they’d been there a half-hour in comes the

Skipper with Colonel Rose and they go to take a look at the prisoners.

“““Why that’s Colonel Westcott and Colonel Powell,” says the C. O., when they are brung out for him to look at. He was grinnin’, too, because the A.-G. had stepped into Fatty’s wash-pail in the dark and he was kinda wet down below.

“‘It seems they was all inspecting and the A.-G. and Colonel Powell got ahead of the rest of them quite a long ways. They all had a good laugh about it at the guard-house and then they went on. I heard the A.-G. was out on the line all night.’”

* * * * *

The scene shifts again. This time to a darkened culvert on a northern sector.

It is night, and a black-faced man in rough civilian clothes is creeping stealthily through the sparse growth outside the fence that marks the dead-line of the First Provisional at that point. As the prowler approaches the vicinity of the culvert he halts suddenly as a boy’s voice comes to him through the night. The words are indistinguishable; apparently the sentry is talking with somebody. Quietly the man with the blackened face approaches.

Above, on the cut and cover, silhouetted against the sky, is the figure of the guard, leaning on his rifle and speaking to—some one. There is no one else on the sky-line and the man in the bushes below is puzzled for a moment. And then the truth dawns on him.

For the lonely boy on the culvert is talking to the One in whom he has come to put his whole trust in the lonely watches of the night. He is asking his mother’s God for strength and help and courage.

“ . . . and You know I ain’t a quitter. They laugh back there about me being afraid. Well, maybe I am, but I’m staying, ain’t I? You know it ain’t no cinch for me. But if You’ll keep on helping me, God, . . . It’s dark here. I don’t know but maybe they’ll be trying it to-night. Just help me to stop them. Help me! Help me to stop them. Don’t let anything happen. . . .”

The boy’s voice dies away to a whisper. In the bushes below the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment bares his head reverently and then slips quietly back into the blackness of the night. This is the regiment’s real strength—the man who, like his commanding officer, trusts in the God of his fathers.

* * * * *

And now on Sector S-1.

It is the same old story of line-testing by the sinister forces.

The story a hundred times repeated in the history of the regiment and a dozen times on this sector alone. Only—

“Halt!”

There is a rush of feet on the grass at the side of the cut and cover and three dark figures run across from the stone wall toward the man on post.

No time here for preliminaries. With a coolness that would have credited a listening-post man of the front line in Flanders, the sentry drops to his stomach on the far side of the embankment and opens fire point blank. There is a subdued cry from the darkness, another rush and the sound of some one scrambling over the stone wall. A shot or two follows the sound for good luck. Then the corporal of the guard comes and it is the same old story of the fruitless search in the brush.

The corporal is frankly skeptical.

“Say, you make me tired. That’s three times this week you’ve shot, and nobody yet. I don’t believe you saw anybody.”

But the next morning the sector buzzes.

For back from the wall the daylight searchers have found a matted place in the weeds where the grasses are still soaked with red, wet stuff that leaves no doubt as to the doings of the night before.

The hospitals and doctors of the vicinity are advised to watch for some one with a bullet wound and to advise headquarters immediately. But the “innocent victim” of the previous night goes to no hospital and consults no doctor he does not know to be “in sympathy.” Johnson’s line draws first blood.

* * * * *

But “They” had “Their” turn once in a while, too. In the darkness of Shaft Five on N-2, the roar of the falling water deep in the shaft-house filling his ears, Sentry Poole hears the approach of a party, challenges, gives the alarm, and pursues, takes the lead of his support, and before he can be helped is laid out with a nasty wound over his head and a bicycle pump on the ground to tell how it was done. Poole goes to the hospital.

And later, on Post 5, near the Peak, Sergeant Lown finds Private Potter unconscious on his post with a heavy lump rising on his head. No, it was not always one-sided.

* * * * *

Read now of a night on the D line near Scribner’s Farm, just as the story went through the channel to the United States Intelligence service at West Point, terse and without embellishment:

October 5th, 1918.

From Commanding Officer Co. D, 1st Prov. Regt.,
 N. Y. G.

To: Commanding Officer 1st Prov. Regt., N. Y. G.

Subject: Activity of unknown persons on Aqueduct
 from Peekskill South Siphon to Croton
 Lake, Scribner's Farms.

At 2.25 A.M. firing being reported at post six, Culvert 148, I took a patrol and followed the road to a point opposite the Culvert.

There I picked up a Corporal and a patrol of two men, previously taken out by Sergeant Mashin.

This patrol reported that they had followed a man from the pipe line to the state road, drove him out into it and the non-commissioned officer, Corporal Smith, on the man's refusal to halt opened fire.

As far as known the man was not hit.

The fugitive turned into the driveway of Baron Blank's Agricultural School and disappeared.

I led the patrol through the grounds, stationed five men in the driveway, and sent three men to surround the other side of the house.

Sergeant Mashin and myself then investigated.

On the side porch we found a pair of rubber overshoes (one-clasp) wet and covered with mud that had been washed off in places showing their wearer had been in the wet grass.

We then went to the front door and rang the bell.

Repeated ringing brought no response, so we retired to the driveway and kept quiet.

In about five minutes the windows in an upper room lit up.

We then returned to the house and after a little delay the door was opened and I went in alone.

I do not know the name of the man who admitted me.

Being questioned, he at first claimed to have heard nothing but suddenly remembered he had heard some trouble on the Aqueduct.

He did not appear to have been asleep, although dressed in pajamas and bath robe.

Got no satisfaction here so we left patrol in drive and searched outbuildings but found nothing.

Marched patrol back to road and got in machine.

Machine stalled at foot of first hill.

Simultaneously two shots were fired on Aqueduct and lights flashed from house.

After waiting a few minutes and after patrol on Aqueduct finding nothing ordered them and my patrol back to the barracks.

On getting in got report from patrol on Aqueduct that they heard some one in old quarry and that signal had been flashed from cliff above; could not locate senders.

These men could not see the house, but I could, and the lights from there, the cliff, and shots fired all came together.

The ground where all this took place was carefully gone over by Lieutenant Higgs and myself the following morning. We followed an old wagon road back to the woods along the Aqueduct and there found several well-defined trails leading to Culverts 148 and 149.

These had been used during the night, indications even being shown of places where men had lain down and watched the sentries.

I crossed the pipe at this point and found indications of the same kind on the other side of the duct, if anything more marked.

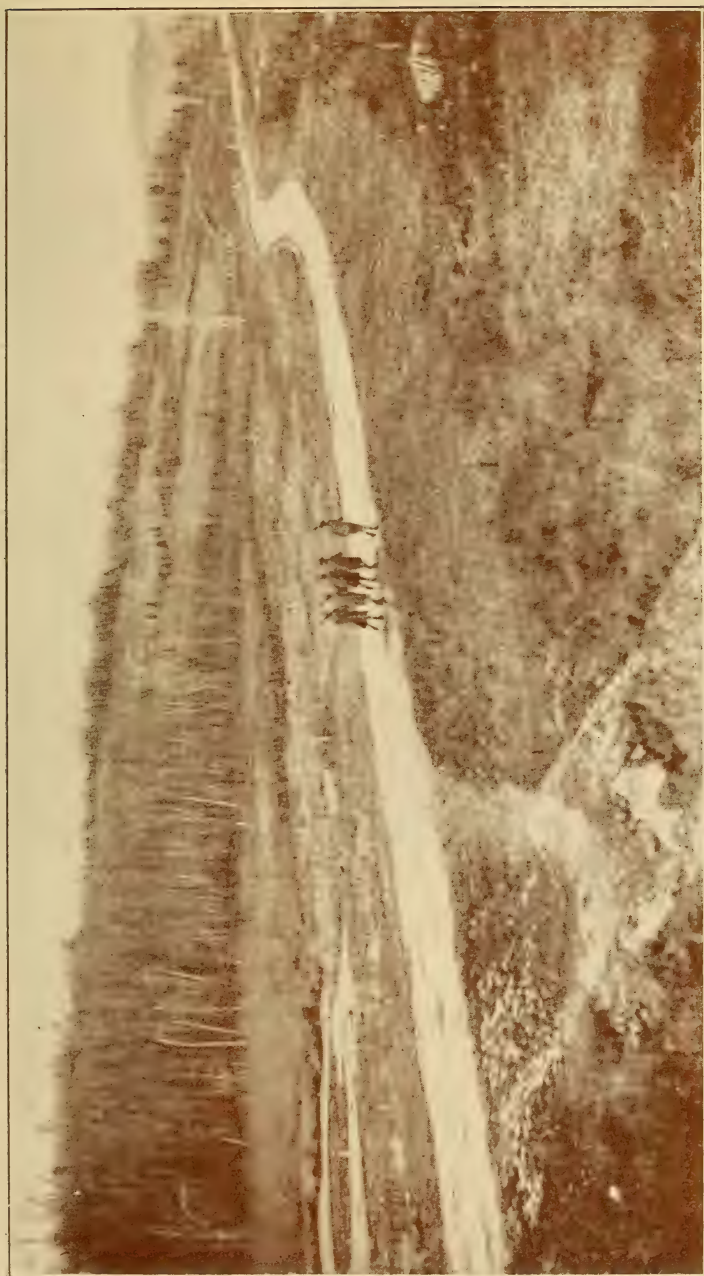
No patrol had been sent into the woods on this side and sentry did not fire, although he heard noise there, because previously ordered not to by his Corporal.

In addition to the Blank place, there is a family by the name of Doe, who live immediately back of Culvert Number 000 and who are from all reports intensely pro-German. On making reconnaissance on the evening of October 4th, I discovered a path leading from this house through a tanglement of bushes and over a stone wall, leading directly to Culvert 000.

It has further been reported that the following remarks were made by one of the Doe boys to Billy Sabatto, owner of store near Culvert 000, "that President Wilson ought to have his heart cut out, and that they (meaning the Doe family) were down on the American Flag."

There is another family by the name of A——, living about —— yards northwest of this post between the road and the Aqueduct, who are also pro-German, so much so that Private Geller's family have broken off social relationship.

Bugler Martin reports having seen signal lights on the night of October 6th, coming from this house. Sat on his horse in the road, and watched them for about 5 minutes,



POSTING THE RELIEF

A typical stretch of The Line Impregnable on the Company A sector.



Upper—Lieut. Bradley and Company E detachment at Brown Station Barracks. *Center*—Some of the Company D men (71st Infantry). *Lower*—Camp Wells, Crompound Road, Company D.

and as he described them: a woman stood in the window, raised and lowered the curtain about three times, after which she brought a lamp back and forth across the window twice.

Mr. A—— is reported to have made this statement, “that the Germans would win this war and that he could cross the Aqueduct any time he saw fit, and the soldiers would not touch him.”

Corporal Smith reports to have seen a German flag in the A——s’ residence.

Signals have been reported by sentries on post No. 3 as of frequent occurrence from this point.

(Signed) ASHLEY N. KEENER

Captain 71st Infantry, N. Y. G.

26-27

1ST IND.

Hdqrs. 1st Prov. Regt. N. Y. G., Croton Lake, N. Y.,
Oct. 16, 1919.

To: Major James B. Ord, U. S. Military Academy, West
Point, N. Y.

Reported for his information.

By direction.

* * * * *

To the step on the cut and cover; to the slow stealthy rustling in the bushes or grasses at the dead-line’s edge; to the sneaking dark form in the roadway a stone’s throw away; to all that threatened or seemed to threaten—

“H-a-a-a-l-tt!”

It was the voice of the Line—the Line Impregnable. The Line that Was Not Broken!

* * * * *

What of this line that ran from the Catskills to the great city itself? What of its workings, and the things that made it possible? How was it wrought?

It is of these things, of the regiment’s most vital and dramatic phase, that this chapter tells.

* * * * *

The reader who has grasped the fundamentals of the mobilization period cannot fail to appreciate the tremendous task that faced the regiment in the mere matter of beginnings. Without

reliable maps, with little time to secure the necessary information, and green men to operate with, the line was taken over in 57 hours. Added to this was the fact that the First Provisional approached the problem of the Aqueduct from an entirely different angle than had the National Guard troops which preceded the new organization. Guard duty, as viewed from the standpoint of vital necessity for protection, with a working force of 1,200 men is something different from guard duty when considered as merely a part of a tour of field duty where 3,200 men are available, and 90 per cent. of them seasoned veterans.

How the single idea of guarding the water supply of the City of New York was inculcated into these green troops has been hitherto indicated. When the commanding officers of the various units left the mobilization camps at Lambert Farm and Peekskill they carried in addition to this idea some very definite instructions as to the methods of operation, preparation and continuation tending to emphasize the importance of the work.

Brush at and near the culvert mouths and other vulnerable points was to be cut, and grass and weeds slashed away wherever they grew of sufficient height to afford cover to an enemy. Along the entire line of the Aqueduct culvert entrances may be found far beyond the actual line of the cut and cover and in some cases outside of the city property line. These were overgrown and in many cases had accumulated a large amount of rubbish. So the men of the regiment were made familiar in the earliest days with the local topography of each culvert, as they labored to cut away the grass, the brush and the weeds from the entrances and from the vicinity of the siphon-houses.

How enthusiastic some of them were in the matter is best illustrated by a story that Capt. Hayden J. Bates, Q. M. C., told in the Adjutant-General's office at Albany upon his return from an inspection of the newly taken-over line for the Division of Defense and Security.

"Down on the Veteran Corps sector," said Captain Bates, with his slight, inimitable drawl, "I found a squad of brokers and bankers pretty nearly breaking in two up on the Aqueduct, cutting the grass for yards and yards along the top. I asked them what they were doing that for.

"Colonel Rose said to cut the grass,' one of them told me, and they all nodded. It was really pathetic but I thought I'd scream.

"But,' I said, 'my dear chaps, he didn't want you to turn gardeners, you know. This is all very fine but it wouldn't make good hay.'

"But you couldn't dissuade them. They just went on cutting grass. I suppose they mowed the entire top of the Aqueduct before they were through."

If there was one thing the First Provisional was remarkable for it was its literal interpretation of everything.

The cutting of the grass and weeds finished on the entire line, the men were next turned to cutting steps into the side of the cut and cover embankment to make possible the 15-minute inspections ordered for culvert mouths. These steps were barely footholds, but saved a great deal of time on the slippery grass of the banks and resulted in the ordered inspections. Some sectors went so far as to borrow cement and construct their steps of concrete on a few culverts, while on other sectors the footholds were stepped with flat stones. In winter the men cut steps into the snow, as the earth footholds soon became slippery with much travel.

When the steel culvert gratings that had been promised did not come through, barrier and entanglement construction began sporadically along the line, and finally assumed formidable and organized proportions. This was largely an act of self-preservation on the part of the men at a time when fixed night post for each vulnerable point had to be converted to patrol post work due to the shortage of man power. The sentry covering two culverts and a manhole felt better about his position when the manhole was covered with turf and the culverts had some sort of barrier over the entrances. Care had to be exercised in the construction of the various culvert screens that they did not interfere with the flow of surface water they were intended to drain. The men did their work in what would have been off time and under the general supervision of their sector commanders, although they were allowed to exercise as much individual ingenuity as was consistent and met the needs of the particular problem.

In some places a *chevaux de frise* was erected at the entrance to the culvert, with old barbed wire interlaced among the sharpened branch points that bristled toward the intruder. In one or two instances pitfalls with sharpened stakes and barbed wire entanglements were constructed. Wooden gratings made of all kinds of material from two-inch saplings to old railroad ties, predominated as culvert protections, however. Chicken-wire netting interlaced with barbed wire was sometimes used where culverts were near highways from which a bomb might be tossed into the culvert's mouth. Some of the obstructions were variously camouflaged to prevent recognition in daytime by prowlers who might

be looking the ground over preparatory to night attack. Evergreens predominated in this, and there were two or three of the larger culverts on the N-3 Sector so ingeniously concealed that they lost their identity at a distance of 200 feet.

Boat holes, the long, narrow metal-covered apertures used to lower boats into the Aqueduct for inspection work, were in many cases covered with piles of rocks picked up from the near-by terrain, and on a number of the Company A's posts there were rock-pile-covered boat holes that would have meant three hours of steady labor for two men to uncover.

All kinds of alarm devices were used by the sentries to warn them of the approach of persons along the Aqueduct from the bushes on either side or in the vicinity of structures. The post of Sergt. C. A. J. Queckberner at the Kensico Influent, the man who won the world's hammer-throw title before the King of England, was perhaps the leader in this respect, and the story of an attempt made by staff officers to effect an entrance to the vulnerable point under cover of darkness, is indicative of what the average intruder would have had to face.

The Kensico Influent Chamber is on the shore of the lake just below the brow of a steep hill which may be reached without difficulty and out of sight of the sentry from the State highway. Approaching from the highway at the level of the lake is a short construction road. This the officers knew to be strung with wires connected to bells and tin cans filled with stones, so no attempt was made to enter at the lake level. The party descended from the hill through a footpath, in pitch dark, unable to use a flashlight because of the danger of attracting attention from the sentry below.

Before the group was within 300 feet of a position overlooking the outpost barracks and vulnerable point, one of the officers in the lead scraped a fine wire strung on staples among the trees and camouflaged by underbrush, and the jangling of a bell near the sentry's post advised him that something or some one was approaching along the top of the hill.

After that the officers moved more slowly, close to the ground and watching for wires, but in doing this one of the members tripped on another bell wire strung close to the ground on the same path.

The path was abandoned and the raiding party lay close in the brush, while a patrol sent out in response to the bell signals beat the hilltop without avail. After the beaters had left the vicinity another start was made, and by a judicious dodging of wires and cords no further alarm was sent in until a windrow of

crackly dry brush extending entirely across the brow of the hill gave further notice of the approach. Below this brush a veritable maze of wires and ground lines ran, one connected with a big bucket filled with cans and stones that toppled from its position on a stump at a tug of a wire and coasted along a heavy wire through the brush, down the hill, landing with a heavy crash against a pile of bottles and cans erected in its path. Even the roar of the influent could not drown such a noise as that! The system on the hillside, augmented by lanterns and reflectors mounted on posts, was nearly perfect.

A path reaching along the lake was protected by a heavy *chevaux de frise*, with barbed wire and dry brush as auxiliaries, and during the winter the bank of the lake was kept glary with ice to prevent access over the frozen lake.

This system of alarms spread throughout the length of the line. At some of the posts near the Kensico aerating plant, where there was little or no outside noise, ingeniously coiled wires on manhole covers sprang up with a grating sound on the hollow cover, giving warning of the approach of any one. Ordinary trip lines spread on pegs close to the ground and hidden by leaves were sufficient to set the entire string of cans arattle.

The biggest handicap suffered by the men on post was the lack of lights. These had been promised by the City of New York, and after much delay, action was finally secured that brought about the erection of electric culvert lights and furnishing of current on most of the sectors east of the Hudson. The brackets were mounted on the telephone post at the culvert, and the shades were so constructed as to throw a flare on the culvert mouth and the territory adjoining, while the cut-and-cover and the sentry on post were in darkness. This gave the man on the post a distinct strategic advantage, and had there been lights on all sectors, there would have been no men laid out on the northern end of the line. As it was, the construction of the light system was progressing rapidly and all barracks on both sides of the river had been wired, when the work of light installation was halted during Colonel Rose's illness in the early summer of 1918. In the fall of 1918, by orders of Acting-Adjutant-General, Col. Edward J. Westcott, the work was to have been resumed when the armistice stopped everything. A deal of difficulty was experienced in keeping the bulbs in the culvert lights replaced, as for some time there was no authority available for the purchase of the bulbs on sectors where the current was turned on.

While the men waited through the fall and winter of 1917-1918

for the long-delayed lights, lanterns with reflectors were used by all commanding officers who could obtain them. The lantern was at best a makeshift, as without adequate reflector it did not give the sentry the proper amount of protection.

And this leads to a consideration of the odds which were against the sentry under the best circumstances. They may be divided roughly into the psychological odds and the physical odds, and their consideration involves much of the regiment's greatest problem in maintaining its impregnable line.

Under the heading of the psychological odds will be observed all forces militating against proper mental attitude. Of these nervous tension was without doubt the most influential on the beginner. In the case of the country-bred boy this was not likely to be as weighty as with the city man. The country boy, accustomed to night silence and night noises, minded not a bit the hoot of the owl, the gleam of huge fireflies in the thickets and the rustle of the tiny woods animal in the grass at the city property line. He knew that a cow in the moonlight was not a ghost, and the fact that there were no cows pastured in the adjacent field during the daytime did not make him suspicious or doubtful of cow noises there at night, because he knew the difference between, and the use of, night and day pastures.

He knew that under given conditions a piece of rock will flash in the moonlight as clouds race over the face of the moon, and that moonlight in a cow's eyes does not mean some huge monster of the darkness waiting for a spring. His hunting experiences had taught him that a stump, when watched long enough, will do a veritable hula, and he did not blaze at many of the moving stumps that caught it so hard in the early days on the sectors covered by city troops. His trained ear told him the difference between the sound of water racing over rocks and the splashing of some one walking in the stream. In winter he knew that a track covered with ice had not been made within a half hour, and that unbroken snow around a culvert mouth meant that no one had been near the culvert.

But all of these things and many others must be learned by the boy accustomed even in the comparative quiet of night in the city to the roar of the elevated, the rattle of distant wagons and the incessant hum of the great city which never quite dies out even in the early hours of the morning. The tours were long, the isolation of posts a quarter of a mile and a half mile apart was great, and the incessant staring into the blackness, the flutter of the heart at the crash in the brush beyond the wall, and the certainty that some one or something was just behind one's back,

watching, always watching and preparing to leap, made the tension terrific.

And when the man on post sought to relieve this tension by whistling the very sound of his own whistle startled him and cautioned him that he was giving notice of his whereabouts to some one who might mean harm. While this was in a way true, the custom of calling the half-hour and hour from post to post held such a large psychological advantage that a number of the unit commanders appreciating it early in the work, instituted the custom on their sectors. Captain Westcott's Syrians on N-5 chanted their half-hours regularly, and the acoustic properties of the sector were such that in the early morning hours the call of, "One o'clock and all is well!" could be heard coming down the valley for a distance of five or six posts. Captain Muller's men repeated the time-calls regularly from post to post. The result was good. It kept the men in touch with one another and served as contact with post or outpost camp until the telephones were put into service.

There is one memory picture in this connection that stands out vividly. It was after 2 o'clock on a starlit autumn morning in 1917 when a party of officers arriving at Captain Wilbur's post at the Peak, paused for a moment to admire the heavens before going in. The intense silence of the early morning hours hung over the mountains.

And while the officers stood beneath the stars, a strong, clear voice on the mountainside began to sing that song that revived from Spanish War days with the entry of American troops into the field in the Great War, "Break the News to Mother."

He had sung but a few words when the man on the next post took it up; then the next post and the next, until down the full length of the cut-and-cover along the mountainside the eight sentries were singing under the stars.

Isolation also figured as a physical factor. Even with the installation of the telephone system, the man on post knew, his non-commissioned patrol knew, and his officers knew, that in the case of an attack in force it would be one against many. Sentries were usually allowed five rounds of ammunition per tour of duty, to be turned in at the expiration of the tour. Should an attack come in force those five shells would be expended before any help could arrive. This was often used as an argument for increasing the number of rounds per man, and on nights when alarms were insistent and well-founded along some sectors, company commanders did allow a greater number of cartridges. But it was always certain to be one against heavy odds.

The distance of most of the posts from the barracks where the men were quartered, often more than a mile, was another handicap. This was especially true in winter. While, according to schedule, a man might be on actual guard duty four hours, storm conditions often added another hour to reaching the post and still another returning from it. He must be aroused a half hour before going out and he was certain to occupy a half hour checking in and getting to bed after returning. So the four hours were nearly doubled. This is conservative and does not take into consideration the more distant posts of the line.

The man on post must contend not only with the unnatural enemy, but also with the natural ones, the elements. Often poorly clad, as was the case in the beginning, he must withstand frost, rain, wind, intense cold that often dropped to 20 below zero, and on one or two nights to 35 below zero, on the northern sectors; he must fight against the drowsiness that meant death on nights of cold and storm; he must stand exposed on the top of the cut-and-cover with never a screen nor sentry box to shield him during the terrific blizzards or sleet storms, and at the end of his tour plod through the snow back to cold barracks and a steamy atmosphere of wet clothes. On his next tour of duty (but three or four hours away if man power were short) he must rise, beat warmth and life into his numbed limbs, pull and tug at wet, stiffened shoes with unfeeling fingers, don damp clothes, and go again into the darkness, following a cup of broth or a more substantial meal. Toiling through the snows to his post on the bare mountainside, he would become heated with the exercise, and finally on post might develop a chill as a result. Summer and winter his problem was to keep awake and warm.

Back at the barracks on the following day was the police duty, the fatigue work, and perhaps barracks building to finish. Night brought only weariness too great to admit of a walk to town, and then at 12 o'clock the same old battle with sleep, the rising in the cold barracks, and the trudging out to post. Day after day, and night after night, he repeated and re-repeated this routine. With little or no excitement on the line, visited by his non-commissioned officers and his officers at prescribed intervals, his eyes squinted with the constant peering into the darkness, his whole being melted into the work that brought to him no glory or honor. Such a man must necessarily be imbued with something more than mere discipline. Not all the heroes died on the battle-fields of France. There were some who faced absolute torture of mind and body in the guarding of the World's Heart,

because deep in them had been fired the sense of their duty to their country regardless of plaudit.

This picture is not overdrawn. It is typical, and to prove it an incident referred to in the chronological chapter:

One night when a terrific storm was swirling out of the Catskills the reliefs of Troop B men at the Bonticou barracks were obliged to wait minutes at a time before they could throw open the barracks doors and get into the white smother of the outside night. Once out, they were fairly blown back against the side of the building by the terrific wind. That was the first night in the history of the sector when a post was uncovered; it was impossible to reach the most distant of the culverts. That was the night when men relieved from duty struggled back through the storm, falling time and again, until they floundered against the barracks doors and were dragged in almost unconscious by their comrades. Had they been men of smaller soul stature, these officers and troopers of Albany, they might well have said, "No one would be out for mischief to-night. Let's keep warm." But it was their sense of duty that took them out; the feeling of pride in their work and their appreciation of its importance that had been instilled in them by the Commanding Officer of the regiment.

No pay, no discipline, nothing but spirit could have held men and officers to such a task, without glory, without recognition and without praise. It was a cruel, strength-sapping service that took every ounce of a man's vitality and energy and at the last, if he were a weakling, flung him to one side, his best gone forever. But if he were a strong man, as most were, it gave him something forever—the joy that comes with the knowledge of conquest of the elemental.

Such hardships, such battling with the elemental, such indomitable determination of the men of the First Provisional in the face of such odds, appealed to the men from overseas who now and again visited the long line.

While in this country as a member of the French Commission, Capt. Crancori Monore, of the French Field Artillery, a hero of Verdun and wearer of the Croix de Guerre, the British War Cross, the Decoration of the Legion of Honor, and other medals that told of his four years on the western front, made an inspection of the Line Impregnable in company with Capt. Howland Pell, the Disbursing Officer. And from Captain Monore there came an appreciation typical of those who saw the line through the eyes of experience. Characterizing the men of the First Provisional as the American Chasseurs, Captain Monore's letter is a revelation

of the attitude of one who had been through the Flanders hells toward a work that was by the uninformed often questioned as to importance. The letter follows:

NEW YORK, November 8, 1918.

MY DEAR CAPTAIN PELL:

I want to thank you so much for the interesting trip I made with you visiting the line of your N. Y. G. regiment.

Since one year I am in your country I had many opportunities of admiring the quality of your military spirit: the chance you gave to me the other day was one of the best.

The military spirit, the "esprit de corps" is easy to realize under good chiefs, having their troop "bien en main" gathered in a single place. But to realize the same in a regiment occupying a line of more than 100 miles is certainly a very remarkable performance. Every soldier would speak the same language that I do.

Such thing too can be easily realized during the war on the battlefield—but probably more difficult when your only duty is the passive, tiresome, without great glory guard duty.

I should be very thankful to you and my dear Captain Pell, if with my gratitude for the kindness which was given to me by all the officers of your regiment, you could express to them, and particularly to Colonel Rose my very deep admiration for the work and result with regard to discipline and esprit de corps, I was fortunate enough to see with you the other day.

Believe me, my dear Captain Pell, your very obedient servant.

CRANCORI MONORE.

The Aqueduct squint was a distinctive mark of this service. From long hours of vigil in the darkness men who were on the line for a length of time developed a peculiar expression about the eyes, one which singled them out as veterans in a mixed group of veterans and recruits. To prove an argument on this subject, an officer on one occasion picked almost without error on the floor of a home station armory a dozen men that had seen Aqueduct service, although he did not know the men personally.

From this brief analysis of the physical and psychological problems confronting the individual guardsman on Aqueduct work, something may be appreciated of the collective and de-

tailed problem that confronted the Commanding Officer of the regiment with each fresh increment of new troops or replacements. These began to filter into the field after some of the original regiment were relieved in the fall of 1917. All sorts and conditions of human nature must be contended with in this work, and while a backbone of veterans was always maintained on practically every sector, there were times when the shifting of or release of entire units accentuated this problem sharply. Instruction, teaching and acclimation were constant tasks of the sector, battalion and regimental commanders.

The Guard Card system (officially known in the plural possessive) originated by Colonel Rose, met and covered most of the problems of continuous guard duty on all posts of the line, formed a check on every one, from the sentry to his commanding officer, and gave at the same time insurance to all. It was original with the First Provisional, military history chronicling nothing like it. It has been examined and passed upon by military men of all experiences and from all branches and they have been unanimous in characterizing it as the best answer to the task which fell upon the regiment. From first to last it is the unchangeable record of the work that was done and it stands as the second best possible answer as to whether or not the Aqueduct was guarded. The best is in the fact that at the conclusion of its service the First Provisional turned over an intact waterway to the City of New York, although two other great aqueducts in the country had been damaged by enemy aliens during the great war.

Colonel Rose conceived the Guard Card system from the consideration of a street-car transfer in the autumn of 1917. He explained his idea to Major Hodges, who prepared a card design that was accepted by the Commanding Officer with few alterations. In its ultimate form the Guard Card appeared as shown on following page.

For the purpose of illustration the card is filled out in both instances with the punch marks of the various inspecting officers appearing in the quarter-hours between 10 P.M. and 2 A.M.

The Guard Cards were printed in great quantities, their use and purpose explained in G. O. 18 and in *The Watchdog*, the regimental newspaper, and they were then furnished in suitable quantities to the sectors of the line, together with punches, as follows:

| | |
|------------------------------|---|
| For Corporals | C |
| For Sergeants | S |
| For Lieutenants | L |
| For Sector C. O.'s | X |

Before a relief was sent out the sergeant in charge of the guard prepared a card for each post to be covered. In some camps it was the habit of the relief to draw the cards for posts, thus insuring just distribution of difficult or exposed positions. The man's name was then entered on the card, the card punched by the sergeant or non-commissioned officer posting the relief, and retained by the man until the expiration of his tour of duty. Each inspecting officer or non-commissioned officer punched the card at the time he passed the sentry's post, and in the blank space on the back of the card the sentry made note of any unusual circumstances or conditions arising on his post during his tour. At the end of the tour the completed card was punched again by the sergeant relieving, the actual time of relief (not the tour time) was noted on the back of the card, together with any comment by the non-commissioned officer to explain short or long hours, improper punching or other instance. Each day the cards were sorted, examined, checked and signed by the first sergeant. The signature of the lieutenant commanding and the commanding officer of the sector on the back of each card was the assurance of the individual officer to the battalion inspector, battalion commander and regimental commander that the record was accurate and true.

At intervals of two weeks sector cards were sent into battalion headquarters, where battalion inspectors were made responsible for the checking of the work. Thence they were forwarded to Regimental Headquarters, where the Adjutant's office sorted them into sectors, months, days, posts and hours, and filed them. The sorting work developed experts in catching inconsistencies in the cards. On a fully sorted set of posts for each 24 hours the expert might trace the movements of each patrolling non-commissioned officer and each inspecting officer from the time he left one end of the line until he arrived at the other end, or until his tour of duty ceased. Cards on which questions arose, which could not be explained by the cards themselves, were indicated by a metallic clip for future reference to the sector commander, and any great lapse of posts or time not otherwise explained was immediately called to the attention of sector commander by letter.

It was Colonel Rose who developed the method of personal and individual instruction of the sentry in the matter of Guard Cards and their value to the man on post. Stopping in the darkness of the line, after the usual preliminaries, the commanding officer would invariably ask to see the sentry's card and then a dialogue something of this nature would ensue between the new man and the regimental commander.

C. O.: Do you know what this card is for?

Sentry: Yes, sir, for the non-coms. to punch.

C. O.: That all?

Sentry: Well, yes sir, I guess so.

C. O.: Did it ever occur to you that this card is your insurance?

Sentry: No, sir.

C. O.: Well, it is. It is the thing that shows me whether or not you have done your duty, no matter what anybody says. It is the thing that carries your record as a soldier guarding the great artery of the heart of the world, this Aqueduct that means so much to the City of New York. It is your record—the record that you are making every day. Supposing you were to receive injuries or contract a disease through no fault of your own while in this work that a few years later from now would lay you up. You might ask for a pension. Instead of all the delay and proof necessary to establish your claim, the officers of this regiment could go directly to the Guard Cards and show that you were on duty on the day in question, that you performed your duty as a soldier faithfully and well, if that were the case. Does that card mean any more to you than it did before?

The answer was always, "Yes, sir," best corroborated by the eager grip with which the man on post took back his record card.

These lectures were varied in wording, but the idea was the same throughout. The man on post was cautioned to see that his rights were observed to the fullest in the handling of the card by the non-commissioned officers and encouraged to make a transcription of whatever notes he made on the card into his personal note-book.

Sector commanders followed out this plan of the Commanding Officer after one night of the individual lecture work on their sectors. And the men had the full grasp of their cards only after they had been given these talks.

The question immediately arises in the mind of the reader, "Could not these cards be beaten by collusion between the patrolling non-commissioned officer and the man on post?"

Of course. Human nature is human nature the world over, and in the beginning, while the sentry cards were the only check, and before the days of the post telephone, there were several instances where non-commissioned officers and sentries alike, looking for a little extra rest, played against their cards and the cards were punched two or three hours in advance. The probabilities are that this was done more or less throughout by new men, but the danger of an inspecting or staff officer dropping onto the line immediately after the advance punching was too great to make the

practice healthy. There was no way to fill the holes in the card once they had been made, and the excuse of "punched by mistake" could not get through when at 10 o'clock in the evening, for instance, an inspecting officer found a sentry's card punched every half-hour up to 12 o'clock midnight. Severe examples were made of the first offenders and the word gradually went abroad on the line that it was a dangerous matter to "stack the deck."

It is doubtful whether any one outside of the sorting office and the staff will ever know the extent of the tell-tale stories that the sector cards brought into headquarters, all unwittingly. They reported more than guard duty, for there were certain very definite conditions of Guard Cards that were early identified with very definite conditions on particular sectors, and the indicators never failed. In most cases it was found inadvisable to refer to the sectors on this phase, and conditions really indicated by the Guard Cards were apparently uncovered in some other way.

In the final days of the regiment's existence all Guard Cards, sorted by commands, years, months, days and posts were delivered to the office of the Adjutant-General of the State, where they stand to-day as the indisputable record of what the regiment did, hour by hour of its existence.

The work of giving an Aqueduct polish to the technique of interior guard duty was a task on which Colonel Rose early embarked and which he urged upon his sector commanders. Take from any New York regiment to-day a dozen men and place them on a dozen culverts or other vulnerable points along the Aqueduct at night. And the First Provisional officer, knowing nothing of their names or former service, can tell you whether or not they were First Provisional men by the way they do their work.

Aqueduct technique bore the same relation to ordinary interior guard duty that the motions of a highly trained boxer bear to those of the man who merely knows the rudiments. The First Provisional challenge—the intensive challenge, was in itself a work of art. No formal, curt "Halt! Who's there?" for the men of the water line, but a snarling, vicious, threatening "Ha-a-a-ltt!" with a quick hiss and suck of breath at the end, and then, after a moment of concentrated and contrasted utter silence, the sharp question that admitted of no evasion, "Wha-zzaa?" repeated once, if need be. It is almost impossible to convey the sound in the written word.

And if there were no answer from the lurking shadow in the bushes or the crash on the side-hill, there shot through the night a warning, to the metallic sinister click of a breech in action, "Answer or I'll fire!"

In the meantime the sentry had effaced himself from view, using the bank of the cut and cover, the shadow of a bush or bank, or the camouflaging dark spot of grass on the open cut and cover to conceal himself, watching his flanks critically. He was taught never to appear against the sky-line. Since, as the cut and cover, for the most part, ran high above the surrounding terrain, on one side at least, this made necessary intimate knowledge of every post to which he might be assigned.

By various hypothetical instances he was taught what number might be advanced with safety for the purposes of recognition, and how the remainder of the party might be handled. All this, he was shown, depended on the circumstances of the post, the hour and the weather, and he was constantly encouraged to work out problems along this line for himself.

More than this, it was instilled into his mind from the beginning that a uniform was no insurance, whether it were the uniform of a private or a brigadier-general. Any one, he was shown, could buy a uniform, and any one could forge cards, passes and documents. As a result the sentry must be sure of his own recognition, that of the patrolling non-commissioned officer or his commanding officer before he could advance any one through his lines. If he could not advance he arrested.

Since all things were subservient to the regiment's mission, that of guarding the line, the sentry received this intensive training throughout his entire period of service. It resulted in some queer incidents, none funnier than the challenge of a "greenie" in the early days of the Hudson Company on the line. Captain Benedict Gifford was inspecting his line when he was challenged near Culvert 96 on a black, black night.

"Captain Gifford and party," he answered.

"Advance, Captain Gifford, to be recognized. Halt! Recognized. Advance, Captain Gifford. Advance, party. Halt! I don't know you." (Turning to Captain Gifford), "Will you vouch for this party?"

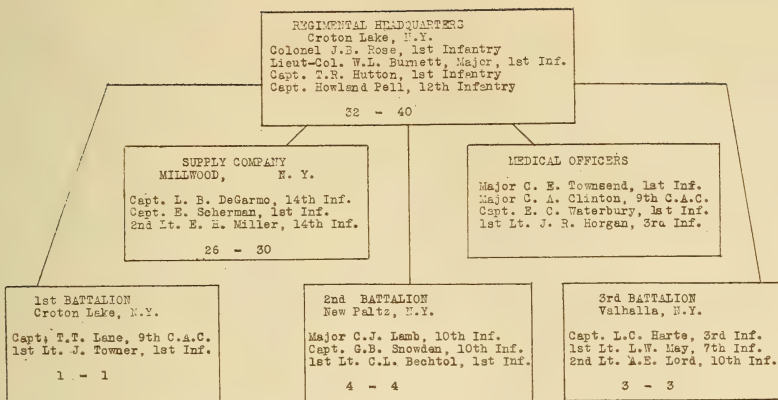
"I will," said the Captain.

"All right," said the sentry, "vouch!"

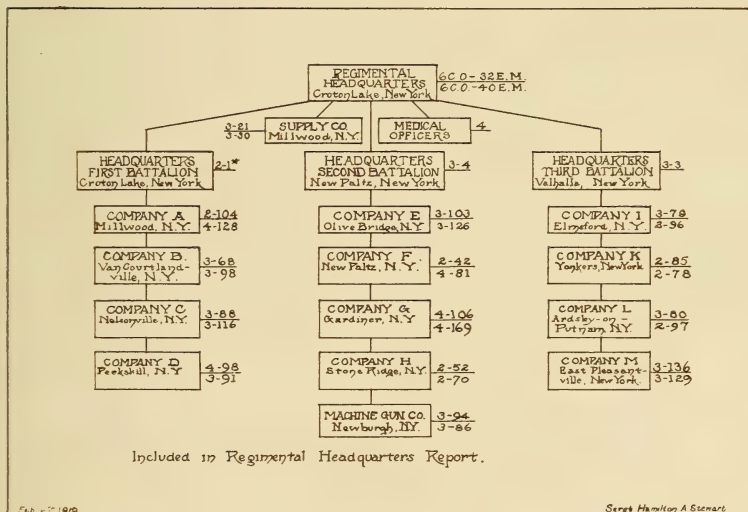
Another gem came from Captain Gibbs' line, where a man lost to grand opera chorus for Aqueduct service was being instructed in the rudiments of guard duty. Of foreign birth, he had a hard time with it, his customary salutation being, "Halt-who-there-a'vance!"

"Oh, sing it out!" said the sergeant, impatiently. "Sing it out! Say, Ha-altt! Give 'em time! Sing it out!"

And on the return trip the sergeant was stopped by a sweet, musical trill from the darkness that went something like this:



AUGUST 4TH, 1918.



SHOWING REGIMENTAL ORGANIZATION AND THE DISTRIBUTION OF TROOPS DURING THE SUMMER OF 1918, WITH THE VULNERABLE POINTS COVERED ON THE VARIOUS SECTORS

In connection with these tables refer to maps in pockets of the covers of this volume. First figures show authorized strength. Second figures actual strength.

SECOND BATTALION

| | | |
|---|---|--|
| <p>COMPANY E - SECTOR N-1 5 MILES HEADQUARTERS, TONGORE ROAD, OLIVE BRIDGE</p> <p>Captain E. J. Muller, 69th Inf.</p> <p>47 - 56</p> <p>SOUTH TONGORE SIPHON 12 CULVERTS 3 SIPHON HOUSES</p> | <p>Atwood Outpost, Tongore Road 1st Lt. J. F. Keefe, 69th Inf. 2nd Lt. P. J. Bradley, 69th Inf.</p> <p>57 - 70</p> | <p>17 Culverts</p> |
| <p>COMPANY H - SECTOR N-2 HEADQUARTERS, CAMP PEAK Main Road Stone Ridge to Peak. 10 MILES Captain C.A. Hinman, 4th Inf. 1st Lt. A.B. Suttle, 4th Inf.</p> <p>40 - 58</p> <p>11 CULVERTS 1 GATE HOUSE 1 SHAFT HOUSE 2 MANHOLES</p> | <p>Outpost Shaft 5, Roundout Pressure Tunnel, near Highfalls.</p> <p>5 - 6</p> <p>Outpost Shaft 8, Bonticou Tunnel, Mt. Rest Road, Highfalls.</p> <p>5 - 6</p> | <p>1 Shaft House</p> <p>1 Shaft House</p> |
| <p>COMPANY F - SECTOR N-3 4 MILES HEADQUARTERS, CAMP DECKER INTERSECTION MT. REST RD. & AQD. NEW PALTZ</p> <p>Captain E.M. Decker, 1st Inf.</p> <p>30 - 44</p> <p>11 CULVERTS 1 MANHOLE</p> | <p>Outpost Wallkill Pressure Tunnel 3 Miles from New Paltz 1st Lt. S.W. Richards, 10th Inf.</p> <p>12 - 37</p> | <p>8 Culverts 1 Shaft House</p> |
| <p>COMPANY G - SECTOR N-4&5 12 MILES HEADQUARTERS, CAMP GIBBS ON AQDCT. BET. CULVERTS 69 & 70 3 Miles from Gardiner</p> <p>Captain E. C. Gibbs, 8th C.A.C.</p> <p>30 - 46</p> <p>1 SHAFT 1 GAGING CHAMBER 1 GATE HOUSE 5 CULVERTS</p> | <p>Camp Girdner, Culvert 76, Aqcd. 2nd Lt. C.L. Girdner, 8th C.A.C.</p> <p>25 - 42</p> <p>Outpost Sherwood Corners, Inter- section Newburgh & Wallkill Rd. on Aqcd. 1st Lt. T. W. Thirkildsen, 1st Inf.</p> <p>22 - 42</p> <p>Outpost Shaft 3. Wallkill Pressure Tunnel. Gardner</p> <p>3 - 5</p> <p>Outpost St. Andrews, Culvert 88. 1st Lt. C. Higgs, 8th C.A.C.</p> <p>25 - 34</p> | <p>7 Culverts</p> <p>6 Culverts 1 Boat Hole</p> <p>1 Shaft House</p> <p>5 Culverts 1 Manhole</p> |
| <p>MACHINE GUN COMPANY - SECTOR N-6 HEADQUARTERS, MAIN ROAD LITTLE BRITAIN TURNPIKE & AQUEDUCT 8 MILES</p> <p>Captain C. Pierce, 23rd Infantry</p> <p>44 - 34</p> <p>5 CULVERTS 1 SIPHON HOUSE</p> | <p>Outpost Cochocton Turnpike, Turnpike & Aqcd. State Rd. 2nd Lt. R.C. Launt, 1st Inf.</p> <p>35 - 38</p> <p>Outpost Vales Gate, Moodna Pressure Tunnel, Newburgh.</p> <p>13 - 14</p> | <p>7 Culverts 1 Manhole</p> <p>2 Culverts 1 Siphon House 1 Shaft House</p> |

"Tra-la-la-la-la-la-la—HALT!" The Italian boy had sung out the best he knew how.

The Lieut.-Colonel, touring the line one night, ran into a casual one. After the usual formalities with a new sentry, he turned to go on. "Well, good night," was the sentry's comment. "Glad you stopped!"

And in another case a sentry crawling from the bushes beside the Aqueduct, where he had been making ready for slaughter, remarked with something of relief in his voice to a battalion commander: "Hell! I'm glad to see you. I thought it was some German blank of a blank!"

Subjective basis was necessary to secure desired objective. In other words, the man on post must appreciate the importance of his position and the thing he was guarding before he could become the ideal Aqueduct sentry. No amount of verbal instruction could teach the men of the First Provisional to epitomize the state militant in their very challenges, to crouch tense with bayonets ready for the approach to the final recognition, even though they were almost certain it was the corporal of the guard. No spoken word could tell them of the dangers of their post until they had looked into the eye of the spitting red streak on the hillside above them and heard the bullet whine overhead, or until they had been drenched to their knees in the midnight beating of brush and thicket for the pot-shooting prowler on the line. Until the Spirit of the Line spoke to a man, he was without the accolade of the veteran, tense readiness, crouched for the spring.

Hand in hand with the super-guard standard, and the Guard Card, went the post telephone system, part of the original promise of the City of New York. Although it was a settled thing in August of 1917 that the First Provisional should have a telephone system connecting every post, outpost and company post to battalion and Regimental Headquarters, it was not until April, 1918, that the regimental telephone system became an established fact. The appropriation had been secured late in the previous fall and throughout the late fall and winter the long line of poles and wires had risen from Hillview to Ashokan, reaching into every outpost of the regiment. Wherever vulnerability of the Aqueduct threatened the water supply of the City of New York (and that meant the counter-threat of a soldier and a bayonet) there appeared on the telephone- or electric-light pole above the culvert or beside the siphon, the green, weather-proofed box.

The system was designed and brought to consummation under Major W. L. Hodges, construction officer and in command of the 1st Battalion. The various posts of each company outpost were connected to the outpost headquarters, and outposts were in turn connected to company or sector headquarters. Sector or company headquarters could be reached or could reach direct to battalion headquarters. From the three battalions three trunks ran direct to the regimental switchboard at Croton Lake. And to insure against accidental or intentional damage to military telephone lines, each company was also connected to the local central, so that two routes of communication between regimental, battalion and company headquarters were always open.

When Colonel Rose talked with the most northern point on the line, for instance, he called 2nd Battalion headquarters, asking for connection to Olive Bridge. The operator at Olive Bridge barracks then connected him with the Tongore siphon post and the Commanding Officer could learn from the individual sentry the exact time of his last inspection and the condition of the weather.

But, of course, the big use and the real use of the telephone system was its value to the man on post. In the event of a disturbance or trouble of any kind on his post, a mere word into the receiver, following a ring, was sufficient to send the corporal of the guard and a patrol scurrying down the cut-and-cover to the aid of the sentry. And the knowledge that there was always help within call made the mental attitude of the guard more certain.

The installation of the telephone system made necessary some change in ordinary arrangement of the guard. A non-commissioned officer was required to be constantly on duty at the telephone and this usually fell to one of the non-commissioned officers of the guard. Battalion methods of reporting and checking by telephone differed, but in all cases men were required to report frequently by wire. On some sectors the custom prevailed of requiring sentries to give their general orders by number at the time of telephone report. The sergeant on the telephone board would call, "Number Four!" and from the sentry would come, "Here!"

"Give your sixth general order!"

"To receive, obey and pass on—" etc. The general orders were pasted in the telephone boxes, but few of the men read them for any length of time. Constant repetition taught them word for word.

The sentry was taught when handling a capture to keep between his prisoner and the telephone box, and under no con-

sideration to turn his back to his prisoner while telephoning. He was also cautioned against allowing the door of his telephone box to shut off the view on one side of his post while he was in the act of reporting.

Now it should not be understood that the telephone system eliminated personal inspection by officers and non-commissioned officers. Rather it augmented this inspection because it made for total supervision almost constant. And total supervision was the only answer to 1,500 men of rapidly changing personnel on 110 miles of vulnerability that meant so much to the State and the nation.

Like the Guard Card, the telephone system had its disadvantages as well as its advantages, one being inter-post chatter, hard to stop, and the other inter-post information as to the whereabouts of a patrolling non-commissioned officer, inspecting officer or sector officer. Not only was this inter-post. In some cases it was inter-company, it being considered the friendly thing for the sergeant at B to tip the sergeant at D to the fact that the "Old Man" was "raisin' hell and headin' sout'." And many and many a time the word has run down the listening boxes, "Look out for the Louie. He's coming down." It was hard to catch this sort of thing, but officers found that intermittent and scattered hitting of the line was the best solution. Captain Lord, while inspector of the 3rd Battalion, made a habit of jumping from sector to sector with such irregularity that there was little to indicate where he would appear next, and information transmitted from the post of his last appearance to the rest of the posts on the sector had the effect of tightening that line while he was scouting on another one.

When the shortage of man power left some of the telephone boxes uncovered it was suggested that by the impersonation of a non-commissioned officer or a member of the guard some enemy might, over the telephone, use a favorable time for giving from an uncovered box on a patrol post, orders or a call, that would result in stripping two or three posts of guards long enough to effect damage. A night test for this was made on the Company H line.

Learning the names of the men on post by listening in as the opportunity afforded at momentarily uncovered boxes, while the sentries covering more than one point were near another box, the staff officer selected for the work secured the necessary information as to post numbers, those who occupied them and the whereabouts of the patrolling non-commissioned officer. Selecting a post covering three vulnerable points, he waited until the sentry

was at the other end of his beat and then sent a call along the line from the uncovered box. The man on the next post answered.

"This is the sergeant talking," said the officer. "Pick up Blank and Blank and go down to 'Seven.' There's trouble there. Hurry!"

Seven was a quarter of a mile away. This would have stripped at least four vulnerable points for a period of 15 or 20 minutes. The staff officer waited a moment and then hung up the receiver softly. Suddenly the bell tinkled sharply and he listened in. It was the voice of the sergeant at headquarters.

"I want all of you men out there to repeat your fourth general order."

And one after another they came from along the line:

"To quit my post only when properly relieved."

* * * * *

To the power of the rifle had been added the power of instant communication with reserves. The guard trinity was complete: Sentry Cards, Super-guard Consciousness and the Post Telephone.

To hold this triangle intact, only supervision was necessary following establishment. That supervision by the non-commissioned officer, constantly on the move; by the commissioned officer during the night hours and as much as possible in the day; by the battalion inspector night and day; by the battalion commander; by the regimental staff and by the Commanding Officer—kept the line alive, intense, strong, and dominant. It placed guard duty on a pedestal and taught the gospel of the ever-vigilant sentry. It was the thing that made the Line Impregnable and called forth the comment of Inspector Underhill of the New York Police Department, Division of National Defense, at the close of the war in his letter to Colonel Rose:

"Great credit is due you for the delivery of this property (the Aqueduct) to the proper authorities with no reports, so far as I can learn, stating that you were compelled to report that damage had occurred to any part of such system while under your care."

With sectors embracing often as much as 20 miles, it was necessary to have transportation in order to make this supervision and inspection possible. How great the volume of such transportation work was is shown in the very work itself. A sector provided with but one car must have its car going night and day—night for inspection and day for the posting of its more

distant guards and the delivery of subsistence to outposts. What the breaking down of the car meant on such a sector may be readily appreciated. Commanding officers of the First Provisional's units spent much more of their own personal money than any other service could have justified in the hire of necessary transportation, for which they never claimed or received reimbursement.

The work of the battalion inspectors was of course impossible without automobiles, and in many instances the battalion inspectors were obliged to depend on privately owned cars for their day work, and on the hard-run cars of other officers for their night inspections. How important it was to keep the battalion inspector going may be gathered from the sample reports appearing in Appendix III, which shows the way in which the regimental commander was constantly kept in touch with the line and its detailed needs.

During the winter of 1917-18, when drifts made the roads on many sectors impassable for days at a time, horse-drawn cutters, mounts, snow-shoes and skis were used by unit commanders for inspection work, according to terrain or the individual ability of the officers. But the inspections were made and the line held from beginning to end, regardless of weather.

It was Colonel Rose's attitude and method that made the line what it was. "I don't mind finding an officer in bed at nine o'clock in the morning," he often said, "but he wants to look out if I get him there during the night. You officers stay on the line at night and sleep in the daytime—if you really feel you've got to have sleep."

And the Commanding Officer set the example himself with twenty-hour stretches of inspection and instruction that kept the staff officers on duty with him reeling in an effort to hold the terrific pace. During tight times on the line he maintained a stride of supervision that astonished his younger associates and put them to their best to make even an appearance of holding their own.

When the line slumped, as it did now and then, when many new men and the general perversity of affairs brought the guard duty below the standard set by Colonel Rose for the First Provisional, that was the time when those who knew began to watch for fireworks.

And they were never disappointed. On one occasion the Commanding Officer and the Lieut.-Colonel captured the rifles of a knot of growling sentries who sat about an open fire with their posts uncovered and grousing their luck. Then the men were held up by the officers and marched into their headquarters under

arrest. Line raids were frequent, and at the risk of being shot by an over-zealous sentry, the various officers of the regiment, but the Colonel most of all, tested and tapped the line, sneaked up on sentries, stole in and out of camps, and kept the line of an entire sector in a constant buzz of excitement, sometimes all night. None of these things were for the purpose of holding any man or sector to derision, but of teaching by new situations and new problems the best methods of meeting attack.

On another occasion Colonel Rose, single-handed, rolled up five posts of a first-night line and taught the sentries there a lesson they never forgot. They were green men when they began the night's work, but they were far from green when they finished. Wherever there were new troops on the line the intensive tapping and testing was done by headquarters, mainly for the purpose of keeping the line tense and lively until the initial danger from the all-knowing enemy alien should be over and the men steadied to their guard work.

In the fall of 1918, Colonel Rose employed Sergeant Red Leaf, a full-blooded Pueblo Indian and graduate of Carlisle University, attached to the Scribner's Farm post of Company D, for special scout-work on the line. Red Leaf was a sentry-jumper of the *n*th power and his natural ability to dissolve into a background made him much feared and cordially hated by the men on whose sectors he was used. But when he had slipped by a few sentries and had stolen up on one or two, he was invariably put to work elsewhere to prevent bad blood.

This brings up an incident that happened on the Company E line and in which Red Leaf played a star part. The Indian had been sent ahead of the party, comprising the Commanding Officer, the sector commander and the Adjutant. It was night, and down the cut-and-cover a ways the party met Sergt. Walter Kiernan with his Airedale patrol, told of in another chapter. The sentry on the next post challenged some one in the bushes and there was no reply.

"Wha-zaaa?" roared the sentry.

"Go on down, Patsy," said Kiernan. And one of the big Airedales trotted into the brush, from which there was no answer to the sentry's call.

Kiernan called warning to the sentry against shooting the dog. Again came the challenge in the dark, "Wha-zaaa?"

Just about this time Patsy located Red Leaf. Only the familiar barracks smell stopped the charge, but the idea of even a soldier in the bushes did not appeal to the dog. He growled a deep-throated inquiry in support of the sentry's question.

"Me—friend!" announced Red Leaf, getting up abruptly. "Please call the dog." He was willing to take a chance with the bullet, but not with the "Man-killer."

It was not the interior problems of maintaining the Impregnable Line, but the problems from without, that gave the Commanding Officer and the other officers of the First Provisional Regiment their hardest work. On superior authority and co-operation and support from the home stations of the units from which its men were drawn, the regiment naturally counted for aid. Frankly, it never received the latter in full and never the former until Lieut.-Colonel Edward J. Westcott became the Acting Adjutant-General. The attitude of the sources to which the troops in the field would normally look for strength and support was one of indifference, due for the greater part to lack of appreciation and understanding.

To prove that it was lack of knowledge of the work and its problems, rather than anything else, that was responsible for the home-station attitude, one needs but to observe the constantly reiterated, "I had no idea of the magnitude of your work," found in the letters of scores of visitors to the line. The very nature of the work forbade publicity, although Colonel Rose had three newspaper men on his staff who would have liked nothing better than to "cut loose" on the subject of the Job. The guardianship of the Aqueduct could have easily been made a popularized affair, but this would have been to invite the destruction of the vital artery that had been intrusted to the regiment's keeping. As a result, publicity was frowned on, and little was known of the First Provisional and its workings.

When persons once knew of the work from their own observation they appreciated it and gave it their support, as is shown in the case of the Aqueduct Citizens' Committee, comprised of persons living along the line and familiar with the line and its conditions. Lack of knowledge made for indifference, or in some cases antagonism engendered by inability to understand why things were needed for the work. It was this that made it necessary for Colonel Rose to fight in every direction to maintain his guard line. It was this that multiplied the odds against the regiment from the beginning.

Some of these odds, those from within, have been discussed. What were those from without? Facts, not criticism here, if you please, and only bare facts. They are sufficient for complete appreciation.

First, the inability of the City of New York to understand that under the Military Law the Commanding Officer of the

regiment was the sole judge of what was necessary, responsible only to the Adjutant-General or Brigade Commander in the matter of authority.

Second, the inability of the City of New York to appreciate that the guarding of the Aqueduct was not a civil matter, and that, once having passed to military hands, the military authorities, under the orders which brought them into the field, became responsible for the guardianship to State and nation until they were relieved.

This is best illustrated by what is commonly known as the Brush Incident, growing out of a report by the Acting Chief Engineer of the Department of Water Supply, Gas & Electricity, which would have resulted in the stripping of the line at the time of the nation's most critical period in its underground war with hyphenated sympathizers.

On Jan. 14th, the Acting Chief Engineer of the Department of Water Supply, Gas & Electricity of the City of New York presented to Commissioner Nicholas J. Hayes, Commissioner of Water Supply, Gas & Electricity, a recommendation which called for the reduction of the guard on the Aqueduct to 372 men. It was from the standpoint of the professional civilian and was earnestly and honestly meant, though in ignorance of the vital things of which the military authorities were cognizant. Had it been adopted, there is no doubt that hell would have raged in New York within a month. The recommendation, which should be noted carefully in its totality, was as follows:

HON. NICHOLAS J. HAYES,
Commissioner.

Dear Sir:

In compliance with your verbal instructions, I report herewith on the special guarding of the water supply system outside of the limits of the City of New York.

Upon the breaking off of diplomatic relations with Germany, in February, 1917, then Mayor Mitchel called upon Governor Whitman to furnish a military guard for the water works outside of the city limits. Governor Whitman assigned between 3,000 and 4,000 of the militia to this work, and a guard was placed on the Catskill system from a point a short distance below the Ashokan reservoir to the down-take chamber at Hillview reservoir, just north of the City line, and also on certain portions of the Croton system, and on the Long Island system. When this force was called into the Federal service early in August,

the guard on the Brooklyn system was discontinued. At that time the former guard on the Catskill and Croton system was replaced by a new militia unit, known as the First Provisional Regiment, New York Guard, which has been under the command of Col. John B. Rose and has a strength of approximately 1,500 men.

Under the law, the City of New York is required to pay the salaries of the men, their sustenance, housing, transportation, and all other expenses connected with their employment on the Aqueduct line. Over \$25,000 has already been paid for the purchase of automobiles for the use of the militia, housing is being furnished at a cost estimated, I believe, of over \$50,000. There is also a telephone system about to be installed at a cost of some \$30,000; a lighting system at a cost of some \$130,000; and gratings to screen off culverts at a cost of some \$7,000. The daily cost of the present guard is approximately \$5,000 and absorbs a man power of at least 1,500 men. If the safety of the water supply of New York City demands such a guard, the cost becomes a secondary consideration. If, however, the continuity of the water supply can be reasonably assured by a curtailment of the force employed, such reduction in force should be made, both to reduce the cost to the taxpayers of New York City and to release man power that is urgently needed in the war and other activities in which our country is now engaged.

Diplomatic relations were severed with Germany nearly a year ago. Since then an opportunity has been afforded to judge the attitude of enemy aliens who are in this country, and those who are liable to plot against our welfare and threaten the destruction of our public works have been largely located and placed under observation or control. It is to-day generally recognized that there is less necessity for closely guarding transportation lines, water supply systems, and similar engineering works, than existed at and immediately after the severance of diplomatic relations.

The City of New York is at the present time utilizing to its full capacity the Catskill water supply system. It is utilizing to approximately one-half its capacity the Croton water supply system. The Long Island and Richmond systems have been placed in reserve. If those portions of the Catskill and Croton system which are vital for continuous service are guarded, the interests of the citizens will be protected and the financial burden reduced.

The Catskill water supply system has been so planned and constructed that provision has been made whereby a large volume of water is stored in Kensico Lake, approximately 12 miles north of the city line. This supply is sufficient to meet the consumption of Catskill water for a period of not over 60 days. There may, therefore, be an interruption of flow through the 80 odd miles of Aqueduct north of Kensico, for a period of about two months, without stopping the supply of Catskill water to the city. It is evident that it would be reasonable to apply a far less intensive guarding scheme to the Aqueduct north of Kensico than south of Kensico. In the Croton water supply system, if the main Croton dam and the Aqueduct at Pocantico, Gould's Swamp, Ardsley and Dunwoodie, be guarded, the remaining portions of the system outside of the city limits are so located or of such a character that there is little opportunity for malicious interference with the continuity of the Croton supply. Under the above conditions a change in the guarding scheme now in force should, in my opinion, be made. I will therefore outline the present system and that proposed.

Present Guard and Patrol System

At the present time an elaborate guard and patrol system has been installed by the militia, fixed posts being maintained at a great many shafts, culverts and other structures along the 92 miles of Catskill Aqueduct, and at the Kensico and Hillview reservoirs. The men are assigned on the theory that every portion of the system must be continuously under observation, and that a force must be available for prompt mobilization in case an effort is made by a large number of men to attempt to destroy any portion of the Catskill system. A comparatively small force of militia is assigned to guard a few points on the Croton system. The Board of Water Supply police have undertaken the guarding of the Catskill works at Ashokan reservoir, and a short section of Aqueduct just below the reservoir. The following briefly sets forth the structures guarded and the force maintained:

Catskill works:

Ashokan reservoir head-works and one and one-half miles of Catskill Aqueduct below the screen chamber:—

The Board of Water Supply police maintain the guard for this section. The structures covered and the number of men assigned are usually as follows, one man being assigned at each of the points mentioned:

Upper gate chamber.

Olive Bridge dam and screen chamber.

Venturi meter in near-by culvert.

North and south chambers Esopus siphon, and

North chamber Tongore siphon.

This makes a total of from seven to eight fixed posts, and for 4 hours requires about 25 men.

Catskill Aqueduct from a point one and one-half miles below the Ashokan screen chamber to down-take chamber at Hillview reservoir, including also Kensico reservoir:— This portion of the Catskill works is guarded by the militia, nearly 1,500 men being assigned to guard and patrol duty.

Croton system:

The militia are guarding the Croton dam, Croton gate-house and New Croton Aqueduct at Shaft No. 9 (Pocantico), Shaft No. 14 (Ardsley) and Shaft No. 18 (Dunwoodie). The number of men assigned is about 40.

Outline of Proposed Guard and Patrol

The proposed guard and patrol system is based on the assumption that:—For the Catskill system north of Kensico reservoir only a few points need be under constant observation; that from Kensico reservoir to the City Line the Catskill system requires continuous guard and patrol; and that the Croton system requires similar protection for a few vital points. On this basis the following is proposed:

Catskill system:

Olive Bridge dam, Ashokan head-works:—Gates to be placed on the roadway at each end of the dam. Lights to be placed to illuminate the roadway and upstream and downstream faces of the dam. Access to the interior of the dam to be prevented by concreting all but one opening, located near toe of downstream face. Two men to be assigned to the day shift and three on each night shift. The men on the night shift to alternately, at hourly intervals, visit the upper gate chamber and the screen chamber. Lights to be placed at these structures. En-

trance to the underground works by means of the waste channel to be prevented by an iron screen. Board of Water Supply police are now available for this work. Required force, 9 men (including supervision).

Rondout pressure tunnel, Walkill pressure tunnel, Mooda, Hudson-Breakneck pressure tunnel, Hudson River drainage shaft and blow-off, Croton Lake pressure tunnel:—At both the downtake and uptake shafts of the pressure tunnels mentioned, and at the Hudson River drainage shaft and blow-off, fixed posts to be established and guards to be maintained day and night, with the exception of the day period at the Breakneck uptake shaft. Militia to be assigned to these posts. Required force on a militia basis, 75 men.

Catskill Aqueduct patrol between Ashokan reservoir and Bull Hill tunnel, just east of the Hudson River crossing:—In this stretch there are the Walkill and the Rondout pressure tunnel drainage chambers, and about 30 miles of Aqueduct to be patrolled. One man would be required for each of the pressure tunnel drainage chambers and also one man for the one mile of Aqueduct on the east side of the Hudson River, as this section is isolated and cannot, therefore, be included in any other patrol. The remaining 29 miles of Aqueduct to be patrolled can be examined at the beginning and end of the day, by having eleven men assigned to the work. Heavy iron gratings are to be installed over entrances to all culverts, passing under the Aqueduct, which are not otherwise protected, thus making it difficult to utilize these culverts as a means of injuring the structure through the placing and setting off of explosives under the Aqueduct. Required force, 14 men.

Catskill Aqueduct patrol between Bull Hill tunnel and influent chamber at Kensico reservoir:—There are about 23 miles of Aqueduct to be patrolled, and all points are to be examined at the beginning and at the end of the day. Gratings are to be provided on this section on all culverts. Required force, 10 men.

Kensico reservoir:

Kensico dam:—Gates to be placed at each end of the dam, the up and downsteam face of the dam to be lighted, all but one opening to the interior of the dam to be closed by masonry, two men to be on guard at all times during the daylight hours and three during the night hours.

Kensico upper effluent chamber:

Fixed militia post.

Kensico lower effluent chamber:

Two department employees, one to be assigned to each of the two night shifts.

Kensico screen chamber:

Two department employees, one to be assigned to each of the two night shifts.

Required force, 22 men.

Catskill Aqueduct, from Kensico screen chamber to Hillview efflux and downtake chamber:—For this portion of the system a military guard to be maintained with fixed posts at those points where damage might readily be caused by those so disposed and suitable military patrol for the remainder of the Aqueduct. A lighting system should be installed for this portion of the Aqueduct, the lights being of sufficient number and so located as to illuminate the entire line to be guarded. Gratings are to be provided for the protection of culverts. Required force on a militia basis, 286 men.

Croton system:

Croton dam:—Gates have been placed at each end of the Croton dam, the up and downstream faces of the dam have been lighted by electricity, and the dam is guarded by the militia. It is proposed to continue the present system of guarding. Required force, 9 men.

Croton gate-house:

At present there are two department employees on duty in this gate-house on the day shift, and one on each of the two night shifts. There is also a military guard, one man being continuously on duty. It is proposed to have two additional men employed by the department, to provide two employees for each of the two night shifts, and dispense with the military guard. Required force, 2 men.

New Croton Aqueduct:

This Aqueduct is almost wholly in a deep tunnel, and until last year open shafts at intervals of about a mile extended from the surface of the ground to the tunnel. Heavy concrete covers have been placed to close these shafts.

The guarding of this Aqueduct can be limited to the four locations where the Aqueduct is comparatively near the surface and might be damaged by those so disposed. Fixed posts should, therefore, be maintained at these points, which are, Pocantico blow-off (Shaft No. 9), Gould's Swamp crossing (Shafts No. 11-A and 11-B), Ardsley blow-off (Shaft No. 14), and Dunwoodie blow-off (Shaft No. 18). A military guard is at present maintained at these points, with the exception of the Gould's Swamp crossing. Required force, 32 men.

Attached hereto is a diagram on which has been indicated the points to be guarded and patrolled, and the general character of guard and patrol that is proposed.

A summary of the force that is now assigned and the force that it is proposed should be assigned to the guarding of the water-supply system outside of the New York City limits is set forth in the following table:

| <i>Section</i> | <i>Present System</i> | | | <i>Proposed System</i> | | |
|---|-----------------------|---------------------------------------|--------------|------------------------|---------------------------------------|--------------|
| | <i>Militia *</i> | <i>Dept. or Bd. W. S. Men</i> | <i>Total</i> | <i>Militia *</i> | <i>Dept. or Bd. W. S. Men</i> | <i>Total</i> |
| Ashokan head-works and one and one-half miles of Aqueduct..... | | 25 | 25 | | 9 | 9 |
| Aqueduct from head-works to Bull Hill tunnel (just east of Hudson River)..... | 610 | | 610 | 56 | 14 | 70 |
| Aqueduct from Bull Hill tunnel to Kensico Reservoir..... | 560 | | 560 | 16 | 10 | 26 |
| Kensico Reservoir..... | 40 | | 40 | 18 | 4 | 22 |
| Aqueduct from Kensico Res. to Hillview Res. and also Hillview Res..... | 250 | | 250 | 250 | | 250 |
| Croton System..... | 40 | | 40 | 32 | 2 | 34 |
| Total..... | 1,500 | 25 | 1,525 | 372 | 39 | 411 |

* The subdivision of the military force is an approximation only.

It will be noted from the above table that a comparatively large force would in the future be assigned to that portion of the Catskill Aqueduct lying between Kensico reservoir and the city line, if the present military system of guarding the Aqueduct is to be continued. The work of

guarding the Aqueduct is now more a police than a military problem. If the solution is placed in the hands of the Police Department it is believed that a special police force could be organized so as to still further reduce the number of men assigned to guarding the water-supply system. The following recommendations are submitted:

1. That the attention of the Mayor be directed to the present guard for the water-supply system outside of the city limits, which has been furnished by the Governor at the request of the city authorities, and which is costing the city approximately \$5,000 a day, and utilizing man power estimated at about 1,500 men.

2. That the Mayor be informed that the department is of the opinion that a very large reduction could be made in the guard now assigned to the Catskill Aqueduct, without endangering the continuity of the water supply. The reduction in cost that could be reasonably made would amount to some \$3,600 a day, and reduce the man power employed by about 1,100 men.

3. That the attention of the Mayor be called to the desirability of determining whether those sections of the Aqueduct which require continuous guarding or continuous patrol should be protected by State Militia, or by a city controlled force, organized under the Police Department.

4. That pending a determination of the extent to which the water-supply system is to be guarded, work be stopped on the installation of the telephone and lighting system for that portion of the Catskill Aqueduct lying north of Kensico reservoir.

Respectfully,

WM. W. BRUSH,

Acting Chief Engineer.

January 15, 1918.

*Cost of Telephone and Electric Lighting Equipment Required
by the Military Authorities for Protection of the Aqueduct.*

| | |
|--|----------|
| Telephone equipment..... | \$29,500 |
| Lighting lines and equipment..... | 80,000 |
| Interior wiring of cantonment buildings..... | 6,744 |

Estimated total cost of contr. wk..... \$116,244

*Estimated Annual Cost of Telephone and Electric
Lighting Service.*

| | |
|--|----------|
| Telephone system | \$20,000 |
| Current, lamps, etc., for lighting | 35,000 |

| | |
|--|----------|
| Estimated total cost of maintenance..... | \$55,000 |
|--|----------|

Securing letters from the Mayor which gave him access to all police circles, and to all information in the possession of the Fire Department, Colonel Rose threw a picked squad of his staff officers into the German maze in New York, clad in rough civilian clothes. On the docks, among the shipping offices, the warehouse districts and the known German gathering places they worked quietly for three days. Then Colonel Rose was ready.

He met the Acting Chief Engineer and Police Inspector Cohalane at Croton Lake and on Jan. 21st forwarded his historic reply that clinched for all time to come in the minds of New York officialdom the importance of Aqueduct work. It satisfied not only the city authorities, but those of greater power and interest, that the safety of the Aqueduct meant the safety of New York—that the safety of New York was not to be tampered with by civil interference of any kind. The letter was forwarded to Mayor Hylan and Governor Smith, then president of the Board of Estimate and Apportionment, and was as follows:

Jan. 21, 1918.

From: Commanding Officer, First Provisional Regiment.

To: HONORABLE JOHN F. HYLAN, Mayor of the City
of New York.

Subject: Guarding New York City's Water Supply.

1. The City of New York must protect itself against any attack, from any source, which will cripple its Water Supply System.

2. In this world-wide struggle, New York City must maintain an impregnable position.

3. The American Forces and those of the Allies are supplied from the Port of New York. Any attempt to weaken its usefulness will cause disastrous results.

4. The President of the United States in his message to Congress, in April, 1917, in no uncertain terms expressed the attitude of the American people toward the Imperial Government of Germany.

FIRST BATTALION

| | | |
|--|---|---|
| <p>COMPANY C - SECTOR S-1 20 MILES HEADQUARTERS NELSONVILLE Cold Springs Station Captain W.E. White, 14th Inf. 2nd Lt. L. H. Gutterman 37 - <u>48</u> 9 CULVERTS 9 MANHOLES 1 OPEN PIPE 2 SIPHONS</p> | <p>Garrison Outpost, 2½ Miles from Garrison Station. 1st Lt. P. A. Baldwin, 14th Inf. 13 - <u>19</u></p> | <p>2 Manholes 5 Culverts</p> |
| | <p>Indian Brook, 2½ Miles from Cold Springs Station. 10 - <u>19</u></p> | <p>2 Culverts 2 Siphon Houses 1 Manhole 1 Open Pipe</p> |
| | <p>Breakneck Outpost, Breakneck Sta. Storm King Mt. 10 - <u>30</u></p> | <p>3 Siphon Houses 3 Culverts 1 Manhole 1 Boathole</p> |

| | | |
|---|---|--|
| <p>COMPANY B - SECTOR S-2 7½ MILES HEADQUARTERS, PEEKSKILL HOLLOW RD. Near Peekskill. Captain J.J. Roche, 69th Inf. 2nd Lt. R.V. O'Grady, 69th Inf. 52 - <u>72</u> 11 CULVERTS 8 MANHOLES 2 BLOW OFF CHAMBERS 2 SIPHON HOUSES 1 AIR VALVE</p> | <p>Sprout Brook Outpost, Gallows Hill Rd. 6 Miles from Peekskill. 1st Lt. E.M. Kirkpatrick, 69th Inf. 11 - <u>26</u></p> | <p>2 Siphon Houses 1 Cable End, Garrison 6 Manholes Tunnel. 1 Blow Off Chamber</p> |
|---|---|--|

| | | |
|---|--|--|
| <p>COMPANY D - SECTOR S-4 & 5 12 MILES HEADQUARTERS, CROMPOND ROAD 3 Miles from Peekskill Captain F.C. Keuhne, 71st Inf. 1st Lt. J. N. Braden, 71st Inf. 36 - <u>32</u> 7 CULVERTS 2 MANHOLES</p> | <p>Field Street Outpost, 2½ Miles from Peekskill. 24 - <u>33</u></p> | <p>2 Siphons 6 Culverts 2 Manholes</p> |
| | <p>Scribners Farm Outpost, 3 Miles from Yorktown Heights. 2nd Lt. H. R. Lydecker, 8th C.A.C. 25 - <u>24</u></p> | <p>3 Culverts 6 Manholes 2 Siphons</p> |
| | <p>Croton Lake Outpost, West Croton Lake Station 5 - <u>9</u></p> | <p>1 Siphon House 1 Blow Off Chamber 1 Manhole</p> |

| | | |
|---|---|--|
| <p>COMPANY A - SECTOR S-5 HEADQUARTERS CAMP PELL MILLWOOD, N. Y. State Road about 4 Miles from Ossining. 15 MILES Capt. E. Van Zandt, 12th Inf. 1st Lt. I.J. Ussicker, 12th Inf. 48 - <u>52</u> 9 CULVERTS 5 MANHOLES 1 BOATHOLE</p> | <p>Camp Fisher, Chappaqua. 1st Lieut. 6 - <u>1-7</u></p> | <p>1 Culvert 2 Manholes</p> |
| | <p>Camp Dyer, S. Millwood 16 - <u>23</u></p> | <p>4 Culverts 1 Boathole 4 Manholes</p> |
| | <p>Camp Denny, Kitchawan. Lt. Ussicker 6 - <u>7</u></p> | <p>1 Culvert 2 Manholes</p> |
| | <p>Camp Winthrop, Croton Lake. 2nd Lt. 13 - <u>1-20</u></p> | <p>2 Culverts 2 Gate Houses 1 Boathole 1 Manhole</p> |
| | <p>Camp New Dam, Croton. 12 - <u>19</u></p> | <p>Spillway East end Bridge West end Bridge</p> |

THIRD BATTALION

COMPANY M - SECTOR S-6 & 7
24 MILES
HEADQUARTERS, VALHALLA, N. Y.
Captain R. L. Vandewater, 14th Inf.
35 - 39
KENSICO DAM

| | |
|--|--|
| Outpost 1, Pleasantville 12 - 11 | 2 Siphon Chambers |
| Outpost 2, Pleasantville 5 - 5 | 1 Culvert 1 Manhole Round House |
| Outpost 3, Pleasantville 47th Inf. 33 - 36 | 3 Culverts 1 Manhole 1 Bosthole |
| Outpost 4, Pleasantville 7 - 7 | Insulating Chamber |
| Outpost 4, Valhalla 15 - 15 | Influent Chamber Gate & Lower Chamber 3 Culverts 1 Bosthole |
| Outpost 5, Valhalla 10 - 14 | 2 Siphon Houses |

COMPANY I - SECTOR S-8
HEADQUARTERS TARRYTOWN RD.
ELMSFORD
27 MILES
Captain E. J. Young, 13th C.A.C.
1st Lt. W. A. Lynch, 13th C.A.C.
2nd Lt. W. D. Buckley, 13th C.A.C.
24 - 22
1 SIPHON HOUSE
1 SIPHON CHAMBER

| | |
|--|----------------------------------|
| Outpost 1, Aqueduct N. Tarrytown Rd. & Paine Avenue 8 - 11 | 2 Culverts |
| Outpost 2, Paine Ave., Elmsford. 11 - 15 | 3 Culverts |
| Outpost 3, Paine Ave. & State Rd. 7 - 11 | 1 Manhole Drains 1 Culvert |
| Landers Road Outpost, Landers Rd. & Aqueduct. 6 - 9 | 1 Culvert |
| Grenville Outpost, Grenville & Tarry- town Road. 9 - 12 | 2 Manholes 1 Siphon Chamber |
| North Tarrytown Outpost, North Tarry- town & New Croton System 7 - 9 | 1 Gate House 1 Siphon Chamber |

COMPANY L - SECTOR S-9A
5 1/2 MILES
HEADQUARTERS, FORT HILL RD.
Near Central Avenue
ARDSLEY - ON - PUTNAM.
Captain A. H. Westcott
Troop G, Sqd. D, 1st Cav.
2nd Lt. C. M. Servatius,
Troop G, Sqd. D, 1st Cav.
27 - 29
5 CULVERTS
2 SIPHON CHAMBERS

| | |
|--|-------------|
| Outpost 2, Platt Ave., Ardsley 11 - 19 | 2 Culverts |
| Outpost 3, Underhill Road 1st Lt. G. C. Weed 29 - 43 | 11 Culverts |
| Outpost 4, Ardsley. 4 - 6 | 1 Culvert |

COMPANY K - SECTOR S-9B
6 MILES
HEADQUARTERS, PALMER AVE.
YONKERS
Captain J. W. Johnson, 4th Inf.
1st Lt. O. D. Eaton, 4th Inf.
24 - 30
1 CULVERT
1 MANHOLE
1 SIPHON CHAMBER
SPILLWAY

| | |
|---|--|
| Outpost 1, Seacarle Farm, Tuckahoe Road 16 - 16 | 4 Culverts 1 Meter House |
| Outpost 2, Tuckahoe Road Yonkers. 10 - 9 | 1 Siphon Chamber 1 Culvert |
| Outpost 3, Dunwoodie 15 - 15 | 1 Gate House 1 Pump House Chlorinating Plant |
| Outpost 4, Hillview Reservoir 8 - 8 | North Gate |
| Outpost 5, Hillview Reservoir 5 - 5 | South Gate |

5. The Senate and House of Representatives, in Congress assembled, answering to the call, declared that a state of war with the Imperial Government of Germany existed.

6. Through sources, the reliability of which could not be questioned, the Mayor of the City of New York, in February, 1917, learned that conditions demanded that an adequate guard should be placed over the entire New York City Water Supply System; and immediately upon the breaking off of diplomatic relations called upon the Governor of the State of New York to furnish the necessary military force to guard that portion of the System outside of the City of New York.

7. Responding to this request, the Governor of the State of New York immediately ordered on duty a force of 3,700 officers and men. The Commanding General assigned them to duty.

8. Anticipating the withdrawal on August 10th, 1917, by the Federal Government of the above-mentioned troops, the Governor of the State of New York, on August 1, 1917, through the Adjutant-General, invited the Commanding Officer of the 1st Infantry, New York Guard, to make a study of the problem.

9. It was determined that a force of 53 officers and 1,200 men properly distributed over the Aqueduct, supplied with adequate transportation facilities, could handle the situation, provided the culverts were properly screened, and a telephone and electric lighting system installed.

10. The Governor then ordered the Commanding Officer of the 1st Infantry, New York Guard, to organize a provisional regiment of that number, and directed him to confer with the municipal authorities of the City of New York.

11. Conferences were held with the Mayor, the Comptroller, representatives of the Commissioner of Water Supply, Gas & Electricity and the Police Department, and distribution of troops satisfactory to the Mayor of the City of New York was made along the line of the Catskill and Croton Aqueduct Systems. Plans for the grating of culverts and the installation of telephone and electric-lighting systems were approved, and the necessary transportation facilities were authorized.

12. On August 10, 1917, the First Provisional Regiment was distributed along the entire line of the Catskill and Croton Aqueduct System.

13. Since that date the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment has continuously given the closest attention to the situation; and as a result of his studies speaks with absolute confidence; and, with all the power that is within him, states that any reduction in the number of men now guarding the New York Water Supply would not only be unwise, but would be extremely dangerous.

14. That the Aqueduct is efficiently guarded to the extent possible with the men and facilities placed at the disposal of the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment, is admitted.

15. On Saturday, January 12, 1918, the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment, with Hon. Alfred E. Smith, President of the Board of Aldermen, conferred with Hon. John F. Hylan, Mayor of the City of New York, with the result that the Mayor and the President of the Board of Aldermen pledged their support and co-operation.

16. On Wednesday, January 16, 1918, the President of the Board of Aldermen presented to the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment a copy of a report dated January 14, 1918, which had been submitted by the Acting Chief Engineer of the Department of Water Supply, Gas & Electricity, in which the Acting Chief Engineer recommended that a reduction in the number of men guarding the New York Water Supply above Kensico and outside of the Croton Lake System, be made.

17. The President of the Board of Aldermen requested the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment to consider this report, and present his recommendations at a conference to be called at a later date.

18. At the request of the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment, the Acting Chief Engineer and Inspector Cohalane of the Police Department accepted an invitation and came to Regimental Headquarters at Croton Lake, N. Y., where a conference was held, and a further discussion of the reports of the Acting Chief Engineer and conditions affecting the New York City Water Supply was had.

19. The Acting Chief Engineer furnished the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment with a large amount of information, giving in detail his complete view of the situation.

20. After a critical study of the report and the closest

scrutiny of the additional data presented by the Acting Chief Engineer, the Commanding Officer is more fully convinced than ever that there must be no reduction in the forces guarding New York City's water supply.

21. Stripped of every other consideration, the recommendation of the Acting Chief Engineer is based on the assumption that since the declaration of war with Germany, the danger of attack has decreased. His recommendation must therefore fall, unless he can prove beyond any question that this assumption is correct. What are the facts?

22. The declaration of war with Austria and the resulting order of the Federal Government that thousands of Austrians be discharged by their employers, enraged these men and made aggressive enemies of those who were formerly passive in their hatred of America.

23. The importance of this fact to the student of this problem is brought home by the knowledge that thousands of Austrians have been discharged by the New York Central and West Shore Railroads, and also by the operators of ship-yards and cement works throughout the territory through which the Aqueduct runs.

24. The records of the Fire Department of the City of New York give indisputable proof to the fact that our enemies are more aggressive than ever. The Federal Government, than whom there is no higher authority, is confirmed in this opinion.

25. The Federal Government, assuming the control of the docks of the City of New York, immediately placed guards thereon. It is needless to say that the discharge of hundreds of Austrians, previously employed as longshoremen, contributed to this action.

26. The determination upon the part of the Federal Government to make this change did not take place in February, March, April or May of 1917, but only within the past thirty days. We are forced to conclude that our enemies are more aggressive, and that danger of attacks has increased. No other conclusion is possible. As the basis of the recommendation falls, so falls the recommendation.

27. In the further analysis of the recommendations of the Acting Chief Engineer, one claim stands out very clearly, namely, "A very large reduction could be made in the guard now assigned to the Catskill Aqueduct without endangering the continuity of the water supply." This is

based on the belief that no breach could be caused above Kensico Reservoir which could not be repaired in sixty days.

28. There is only one basis for this opinion, namely, that a breach would be caused only at one point, at any one time. We are compelled to admit that this country is now at war with a resourceful and a most efficiently prepared enemy, who would not strike without the fullest preparation, and with the idea paramount of doing the greatest damage, without warning. To blow up the Aqueduct at but a single point, at one time, would be absolutely ridiculous. That this would cause no serious inconvenience, and would be futile, is as well known to our enemies as it is to ourselves.

29. With the position of New York City as a determining factor in the settlement of this world-wide war, there is nothing that our enemies in this country could do which would cause greater havoc and distress than the annihilation of its Water Supply System, which would afford the thousands of alien enemies now residing within the City of New York an opportunity to destroy the city by the torch. Therefore, if an attempt was made, the Aqueduct would not be blown up at but one point, but at every possible point that was left unguarded.

30. If seventy-two fires were started in the populous, well-protected City of New York by the torch in one day, would the master mind who has conceived that plan, stop at blowing up a single culvert, or would it blow up seventy culverts over a widely distributed area of forty-five miles, under conditions where the Acting Chief Engineer states that it will be unguarded for eighteen hours each day?

31. Will any one dare to claim that the destruction of seventy-two culverts, with a tremendous outpouring of water, which is admitted would destroy the foundations of the Aqueduct itself as well as interrupting the continuity of its flow, could be repaired within six months, and if the enemy could destroy the Aqueduct at thirty or forty points from Cornwall to Ashokan, would not a tremendous drive be made immediately in an attempt to destroy Kensico Reservoir and other vulnerable points?

32. Success at one point would encourage our enemies to go to the limit.

33. The City of New York requires 573 million gallons of water daily under normal conditions in times of peace.

Any one who assumes the responsibility of jeopardizing the safety of the City of New York must figure what the demand would be under abnormal conditions where an organized attack by the torch threatened the destruction of the city. If conditions were normal, the discussion of this question would be unnecessary.

34. With an organization composed of 50,000 German reservists in the City of New York, most of whom are university men, it is the part of wisdom that any one recommending a change must answer to the people of New York City, not whether this change was dictated by a policy of economy, but whether the safety of the city was at all times preserved at all hazards. The City of New York cannot afford to waste a single dollar; but the City of New York might better expend millions of dollars than to take a chance of having the city destroyed.

35. The margin of safety must be so great that at no time will that margin be wiped out, no matter what the demand may be. Under no circumstances can we consider any recommendation for a change which contemplates any added risk. It is just as necessary that the margin of safety should be preserved as it is essential that a commander shall have his support and reserve to draw upon.

36. It would be perilous to figure the requirements of the city at less than 700 million gallons daily. The maximum supply from the entire water system is 950 million gallons daily, made up as follows:

| | |
|---|-------------|
| Catskill, including Bronx and Byram . . . | 390 million |
| Croton | 390 million |
| Long Island and Richmond | 170 million |

Destroy either of the two larger sources of supply, and you throw wide open the doors, inviting destruction at the hands of our enemies. The City of New York cannot adopt a policy which would bring it in such dire straits that it had no alternative upon which to depend.

37. It may be claimed that the reservoir at Kensico, with a capacity of 25,000 million gallons, could be drawn upon in an emergency. The great minds which conceived the Catskill System placed that supply in Kensico as a reserve; and any policy which would create a necessity for the use of the reserve as part of its normal supply system,

would not only be unwise, but such a policy would place the safety of the city in jeopardy.

38. Eliminate the Catskill System by a thoroughly planned attack which will cause breaches in the Aqueduct at various points along the line, the immediate establishment of an Aqueduct guard on the Long Island and Richmond Systems—which are without protection now—and the augmenting of the guard on the Croton Systems, become an absolute necessity.

39. When New York City drew its water supply from the Croton and Long Island and Richmond Systems, it was necessary to operate forty-two pumping stations, consuming approximately 400 tons of coal daily and requiring a large force of skilled mechanics; and it was also necessary to operate pumps owned by private citizens in ten to twelve thousand buildings in New York City. These buildings are of no greater height than five or six stories, and are principally tenement-houses and loft buildings in Manhattan and Bronx which, prior to the time when water was supplied by the Catskill System, received no water above the fourth story during the daytime, except through the operation of these pumps.

40. With the utilization of the Catskill System, pumping stations and privately owned pumps were abandoned, with the exception of the three pumping stations now operated by the City of New York. This is possible because the water supply through the Catskill System comes in at a higher pressure. Afford an opportunity to our enemies to destroy the Catskill System, and in order that a reasonable margin of safety shall be preserved, the City of New York will be compelled to immediately operate thirty-nine additional pumping stations which will cost over three thousand dollars per day, and citizens of New York City will also be compelled to operate privately owned pumps in ten or twelve thousand buildings in New York City. The latter pumps have not been inspected during the past year or more, and as a matter of fact, there is nothing at hand to show that the pumps are ready for operation, or that they are even in place; and it is very doubtful if they could be obtained quickly in the open market.

41. In any event, the cost of an adequate guard placed upon the Long Island and Richmond Systems, the augmentation of the guard upon the Croton System and the operation of the city-owned pumping stations, provided coal

could be purchased, and if so at a price of \$8.00 per ton delivered at the station, would mean an expenditure of over five thousand dollars per day.

42. The basis of this report is, that by the adoption of his recommendation, the City of New York will save \$3,200 per day. This is made without a full realization of the great part that the City of New York plays in this world-wide struggle; without proper appreciation of that margin of safety which it is absolutely necessary that the City of New York must maintain. The big thought back of the question, which must be the guiding spirit and inspiration, is this: Dare we give consideration to any recommendation for retrenchment when the adoption of such recommendation may place the City of New York in a position where the lives of her citizens may be jeopardized, or where the city may be unable to render that support which the city owes to the nation in the present crisis.

[Signed] JOHN B. ROSE,
Colonel.

Followed a personal conference with Mayor Hylan and Governor Smith, at the conclusion of which Mayor Hylan wrote to Colonel Rose as follows:

CITY OF NEW YORK
OFFICE OF THE MAYOR

January 21, 1918.

SIR:

In accordance with the agreement reached after our conference of this date between yourself, the President of the Board of Aldermen and myself, I desire to say that there will be no application on behalf of the city for the lessening of the guard now protecting the city's aqueduct system; and I have further caused instructions to be issued to the Commissioner of Water Supply, Gas and Electricity to proceed as rapidly as possible with the consummation of the telephone and electric light contracts, as per your request.

Very truly yours,

JOHN F. HYLAN,
Mayor.

COL. JOHN B. ROSE,

Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment.

So ended the Brush incident. The position of the military forces on military matters was by it pre-eminently established and from that time until the end of the service the position of Colonel Rose on the matter of guard was unquestioned.

The attitude of the home station furnished the other big trouble. This attitude was most apparent in the problem of release and replacement which gave the regiment so many anxious hours. Since it was the attitude of the Adjutant-General, after the organization of the New York Guard, that all field duty must be voluntary and not ordered, release from the field could be secured not only for Federal enlistment or draft, but for the slightest of dependency claim, agricultural claim, or educational claim. And it was almost impossible for the commanding officers of units to stand between their men and those at home station constantly attempting to secure their release from the field. There were many real cases of dependency, but they were few in comparison with the many pseudo cases, made possible by the very attitude toward field service in the State. This one factor alone kept the release figures high.

In addition, there were constant releases for physical unfitness and general unfitness, upon the recommendation of unit commanders.

But the greatest loss in officers, as well as men, was to the Federal Army, where the lure of overseas service was in many cases supreme to the spirit of self-sacrifice that the men of the Aqueduct maintained throughout. When the last faint hope of federalization went fleeting, the exodus to the Federal Army was tremendous. Only the Spanish influenza and the resulting quarantine saved the line from being practically stripped of men and officers. Under orders of the Adjutant-General of the State, draftees and enlistments were held up while the epidemic raged, and the correspondence on this subject between the Commanding Officer, the Adjutant-General of the State and the Provost-Marshal-General at Washington, forms an interesting phase of the regiment's story. The first telegrams of protest in the matter of officers who had secured entry into the Federal service by one method or another, were as follows:

TO: THE ADJUTANT-GENERAL, STATE OF NEW YORK,
Albany, N. Y.

Capt. E. C. Waterbury, Assistant Medical Officer First Provisional Regiment, has been ordered to report to Fort Oglethorpe. After conference with the Chief Medical

Officer of this regiment, Major Charles E. Townsend, who informs the Commanding Officer that Major Reid of the Medical Corps, U. S. A., refused to accept Major Townsend's services a month ago and that of Captain Waterbury for Federal service, on the ground that the work which they were performing as the medical officers of this regiment was of such importance that they could only be relieved from duty. This statement was made at a time when the health of the men of the regiment was normally good. Major Townsend informs me that he cannot release Captain Waterbury in this crisis. In addition to the hundreds of cases of Spanish influenza, which has already caused ten deaths, typhoid has now broken out on the line, and while blood tests show only one assured case, conditions are so serious that the Chief Medical Officer states that he will not be responsible unless adequate support is given. The Commanding Officer takes this opportunity to again renew his request that a definite policy regarding the future of this regiment be determined upon. Officers and men have hoped for Federal recognition for the past fourteen months and stand ready to perform any service which may be assigned to them. If the task which has been assigned to this regiment is of sufficient importance to require the great expenditure which is necessary to maintain the regiment in the field, some assurance must be given that the regiment will not be torn apart by inroads caused by the draft and induction of officers and men into Federal service. The conditions cited above have depleted the strength of this regiment to a condition where the loss of three or four hundred men who are scheduled for release on account of draft, would make the position of the regiment as an effective force guarding the Aqueduct, absolutely impossible.

[Signed] JOHN B. ROSE,
Colonel.

TO: THE ADJUTANT-GENERAL, STATE OF NEW YORK,
Albany, New York.

The effect of the amendment of August 31, 1918, is to permit claims to be made by or in respect of necessary persons engaged in occupations or employments found to be necessary to the maintenance of the military establishment or the effective operation of the military forces. No

more important duty has been assigned to any troops in this country than the adequate protection of the water supply system of New York City, extending for 99 miles from New York City to Ashokan. For over 14 months the First Provisional Regiment of the New York Guard, with at no time more than 1,500 men, has guarded this system in such manner that not a particle of damage has been suffered to the property guarded, notwithstanding that this section of the country is infested with enemy aliens; many shots have been fired at sentries, and they have been attacked and so seriously injured that it was necessary to place them in hospitals. The peculiar nature of this duty has demanded special training on the part of men and officers, in addition to their knowledge of strictly military matters, the result being that certain men are indispensable to the conduct of the regiment's task, and owing to their many months of training in this particular duty, could not be replaced. Among this group is the Adjutant of the regiment. With the regiment struck by an epidemic of Spanish influenza, which has necessitated the organizing of two field hospitals, the establishment of a strict quarantine, and has caused the weakening of effectives by several hundred, including ten deaths; with the winter coming on and with the greater proportion of the men about to leave the regiment as soon as the quarantine is lifted, because of the draft—the Commanding Officer of the Regiment will not be responsible for the protection of this water supply system unless the situation is so brought to the attention of Provost-Marshal-General Crowder, that a decision will be rendered which will prevent the officers and men of this regiment being inducted into Federal service, and will insure their remaining on duty with this regiment until an investigation of conditions on this line has been made and the quarantine removed. Specifically, Capt. T. R. Hutton, Regimental Adjutant, has made application for induction, Photographic Section, Signal Corps, about Sept. 20th, 1918. Competent orders issued to local board Division No. 2, City of Utica, County of Oneida, N. Y., to induct applicant upon qualification for general military service by examining physician, local board; examination transferred to Board No. 5, for Westchester County. Applicant certified for general military service by local board No. 5, Oct. 16th, 1918. Will be ordered to report to C. O. School of Photography, Signal Corps, Columbia

University, City of New York. Request that action in this and all other cases be deferred.

[Signed] JOHN B. ROSE,
Colonel.

These telegrams were successful and orders were issued delaying and eventually preventing the departure of Captain Waterbury and Captain Hutton.

Then Colonel Rose took up the question of Federal draftees generally in the following correspondence:

To: MAJOR F. S. HUTCHINSON, U. S. A.,
Executive Officer, Selective Service Hdqtrs.,
Albany, N. Y.

The line of the First Provisional Regiment extends from Ashokan to Hillview, one hundred miles in length. Troops are quartered in buildings at sixty posts and outposts along this line. The character of this work is such that while a quarantine has been established, it is absolutely necessary for the Supply Company to deliver subsistence and quartermaster stores. Medical officers and Ambulance Corps drivers go from post to post, and as the work of guarding New York City's water-supply system must go on regardless of the chance of infection, all reasonable precautions have been taken. Inspections must be frequently made. All officers and men are thus liable to infection, and the word of the Chief Medical Officer, a man of unusual ability and rare judgment, should be law. He states the quarantine should not be lifted until the danger of infection and spread of disease by carriers is past; so, under the orders of the Commanding Officer, no member of this regiment is relieved from duty without direct orders from higher authority. The authorized strength of the regiment on August 1st was fifteen hundred. The actual strength at that time was eleven fifty-nine. The Board of Water Supply Police have been withdrawn from the headwaters of the Aqueduct and one hundred additional men from this regiment are required. Owing to the spread of the epidemic and the necessity for the establishment of two field hospitals, in which, at this date, twenty-five Federal patients have been placed by order of the Department of the East, Governors Island, and one hundred and twenty-five men of this regiment are also patients there, all of

which requires an organization of at least one hundred men for hospital and orderly service, leaves a total of eight hundred and forty men available for duty. There are between three hundred and four hundred additional men scheduled for release to draft boards, which would reduce our strength to about five hundred men. To attempt to guard the Aqueduct under these conditions would be ridiculous. It is estimated that approximately ten million dollars of the taxpayers' money of the City of New York has been spent for this work. Either it was necessary or there has been a tremendous waste and some one will be held accountable. Can you not assist in obtaining relief in this crisis? No man can be released to a local board unless immediate replacements are made by order of higher authority.

[Signed] JOHN B. ROSE,
Colonel.

The final ruling of the Provost-Marshal-General came on Nov. 11, 1918, and was as follows:

“C. O. FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT:

The following telegram from the Adjutant-General of Army, Washington, addressed to the Governor, repeated for your information:

“Re your telegram October 23rd, reference guard duty of New York Provisional Organization on Barge Canal and New York Aqueduct, Secretary of War recognized importance of the Public Utilities involved, but decides that exemption indicated cannot be considered in view of precedent which would be established and deems it wiser to replace personnel withdrawn by operation of Selective Draft from reserve of personnel available under State authority, even though such method temporarily reduces efficiency of Provisional Guard Regiment.

[Signed] “HARRIS.
[Signed] EDWARD J. WESTCOTT,
Acting The Adjutant-General.”

By this time the war was about over and the matter settled itself.

To secure replacements for the thousands who went from the

ranks of the First Provisional to the Federal army or to home station was by far the regiment's biggest worry. The line could not be maintained in its total impregnability with insufficient men for such maintenance. At the best, the work was without honor or glory, and the shorter the man power in the later days the greater amount of work per capita and the greater the dissatisfaction in some quarters. The regiment of September, 1918, was by no means the regiment of September, 1917, in so far as length of service went with the greater portion of the men on some sectors. There were units like that of Captain Johnson and Company A that maintained their backbone of veterans to the end, but there were many units largely comprised of very new men, and regimental ideals, standards and precedents cannot be instilled within a month into the mind of the new man, unless he sees real hardship.

Trouble in securing men from home station had begun in the previous winter with the attitude of superior authority that since New York City paid the bill, all replacements must be from the City of New York. This eliminated the replacements from up-State units entirely and the number of up-State men in the field was gradually but surely reduced while this method was in vogue. It resulted in the elimination of a large number of good up-State officers and made for change and shift on the line.

Even then the trouble would have been minimized had the home station organizations in New York City been willing or in a position to meet the requirements of the Aqueduct service. As has been indicated, the greater share of the officers at home station knew little of the work, and in all honesty and sincerity they maintained their armory units for the purpose of drill and parade at the expense of those in the Aqueduct snowdrifts, doing double duty in the cold because there were not enough men. When the privilege of inspection, physical examination, selection and rejection was denied the First Provisional during the spring of 1918, the difficulties of maintaining the Line Impregnable were almost doubled. Even then New York units were unable to meet the demands, and when Brigade Headquarters attempted to correlate the release and replacement situation with the New York Brigades matters went from bad to worse. An idea of how the release and replacement situation habitually stood may be gained from the following report made by the Lieut.-Colonel in July, showing that of 202 men called for in less than a month only 66 had actually been furnished. Between the lines of the report may be read the desperate condition which the regiment faced just before the return of Colonel Rose.

July 7, 1918.

THE COMMANDING OFFICER, First Provisional Regiment.
THE COMMANDING GENERAL, Provisional Brigade,
Albany, N. Y.

Release and Replacement.

1. Reports of Commanding Officers of the various units of this regiment show that although 202 men have been ordered replaced from New York regiments by the Adjutant-General, State of New York, only 66 replacements have been actually received on the line of this regiment under the various orders of replacement, since A. G. O. 143, which marked the beginning of the new method of release and replacement of this regiment.

2. Two hundred and seventy-six releases and replacements have been requested and sixty-six replacements have been secured, as shown in the following table:

| <i>Unit</i> | <i>Requested Released</i> | <i>Actually Replaced</i> |
|-------------|-------------------------------|------------------------------|
| A..... | 59 | 00 |
| B..... | 6 | 00 |
| C..... | 7 | 00 |
| D..... | 13 | 8 |
| E..... | 56 | 12 |
| F..... | 21 | 6 |
| G..... | 20 | 00 |
| H..... | 10 | 7 |
| I..... | 12 | 7 |
| K..... | 18 | 12 |
| L..... | 11 | 3 |
| M..... | 18 | 9 |
| MG..... | 25 | 9 |
| Total..... | 276 | 66 |

3. These figures do not include the Headquarters Company or Supply Company, both of which are under strength as a result of releases, the Headquarters Company being entitled to eight replacements.

4. The following table shows the number of men ordered into the field from the various organizations by the Adjutant-General under the new method of release and

replacement; that is, since and including S. O. 143, A. G. O., the actual number received from these organizations and the number still due. In recent orders replacements from regiments of the 2nd Brigade have merely been designated by the brigade number, so that in addition to the number specified from regiments of the 2nd Brigade, by name, there is a large balance due which merely appears under the heading "2nd Brigade":

| <i>Organization</i> | <i>No. Ordered into the Field</i> | <i>No. Actually Received</i> | <i>Balance Due</i> |
|---------------------|---------------------------------------|----------------------------------|------------------------|
| 12th Inf..... | 35 | 00 | 35 |
| 14th Inf..... | 22 | 15 | 7 |
| 23rd Inf..... | 3 | 00 | 3 |
| 47th Inf..... | 21 | 12 | 9 |
| 69th Inf..... | 14 | 9 | 5 |
| 71st Inf..... | 17 | 8 | 9 |
| 8th C. A. C..... | 10 | 00 | 10 |
| 13th C. A. C.... | 23 | 22 | 1 |
| "2nd Brigade".. | 57 | 00 | 57 |
| Total..... | 202 | 66 | 136 |

5. The discrepancy between the number asked and the number authorized is accounted for by passage through the mails and military channels of requests by this office for which no corresponding orders have been received.

6. Attention is respectfully invited to the fact that when the new system of release and replacement began, the units of this regiment were below strength in most instances, and since replacements are now being received for an equal number of men released, it is impossible to overcome the original shortage, unless a block replacement is ordered to fill the place of troops released, but not replaced before the new system was put into operation.

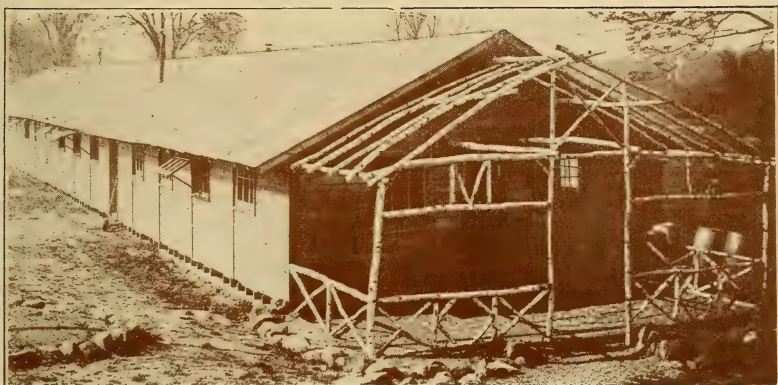
7. The orders of the Adjutant-General for commanding officers of home units to communicate with the Headquarters of the First Provisional Regiment concerning replacements ready to come into the field, is complied with in some instances by telephone, but this is never confirmed by letter, nor is the number of the Adjutant-General's order, under which replacements are sent out, furnished to this headquarters at the time the replacements

are made by home units. It is suggested that a very definite plan should be arranged to meet this difficulty. The situation at the present time is a confusing one for the First Provisional Regiment, and must be more so for the commanding officers at home station.

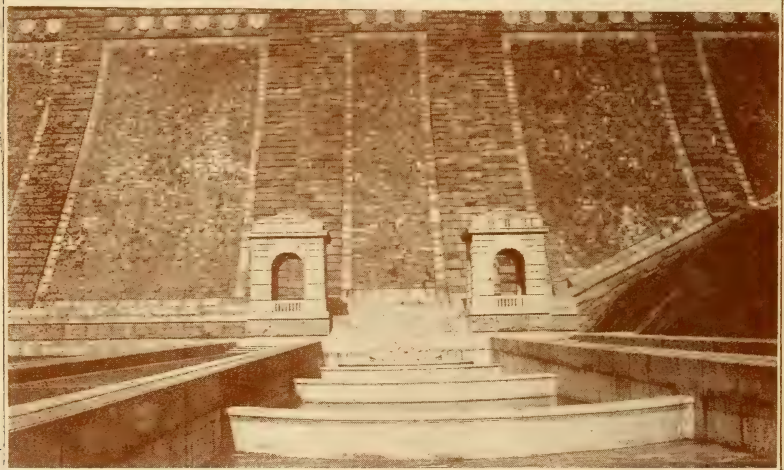
8. Failure to make replacements exactly as requested in the schedules forwarded daily from this Headquarters has made it impossible to comply in toto with the Commanding General's wish concerning distribution of troops according to organizations. For instance: Nine men are needed for 13th C. A. C. replacements in Co. I, which is the 13th C. A. C. unit on the First Provisional line; two 23rd Infantry replacements and eight 8th C. A. C. replacements are needed by the Machine Gun Company, which is composed of these organizations. When the troops are assembled, however, both the 8th C. A. C. and the 23rd Infantry have failed to produce any men. On the other hand, the 13th C. A. C. has twenty men ready for active service. The nine 13th C. A. C. replacements will bring Co. I to maximum authorized strength. It is obvious that no more can be sent there. The other eleven must necessarily be used to strengthen the weakened line of the Machine Gun Company, and as a result the scheme of replacing by organizations and maintaining organization distribution is broken.

9. Another matter which may be noted in the question of release and replacement is that the type of men, or rather boys, that is being furnished by some of the home units is far from satisfactory to the unit commanders from those organizations serving on the First Provisional line. A great number of boys sixteen years of age have come into the field * * * some of them physically unfit and others released within a few days upon the presentation of birth certificates and the parents' claim that the boys entered active service without their consent. It is obvious that there is something to be remedied in a condition which permits of request for releases and replacements for fifty-six men from one company in less than a month, most of them for dependency, as is the case with Company E. The fifty-nine asked for by Company A are almost all a result of Federal enlistment.

10. It is not necessary to point out that the vast number of releases and replacements is highly expensive in so far as transportation alone is concerned, to say nothing of



TYPES OF THE MEN WHO MADE UP THE LINE IMPREGNABLE, AND HOW
THEY LIVED. SOME SNAPSHOTS FROM THE MACHINE-
GUN COMPANY'S SECTOR



Upper—Top of Valhalla Dam. *Center*—Sixteen men of Company L, each from a different state unit. *Lower*—Foot of Valhalla Dam.

the hardship imposed upon unit commanders who are losing men steadily and gaining by replacement in what is, at the present time, an ever-shrinking ratio.

[Signed] WILLIAM L. BURNETT,
Major, 1st Infantry, N. Y. G.
Acting Lieut.-Colonel Commanding.

It was a long and up-hill battle to secure relief from such a condition as this, but with the fall, and the first-hand information by Lieut.-Colonel Westcott, the Acting Adjutant-General, concerning the needs of the line there came a change. Matters went back to their original status; up-State replacements were allowed on Sept. 1st, and eventually came concession to the point that Colonel Rose had advocated from the beginning—ordered duty.

That ordered duty, as might have been expected, came in the 4th Infantry, commanded by Col. Edward E. Powell, the most staunch supporter of the First Provisional at home station. Colonel Powell from the time of his first visit to the line appreciated its needs, and the regiment never lacked active support from the commanding officer of the 4th. Loyal, willing and eager to help, it was Colonel Powell who, with ordered duty in his regiment, bridged the gap in man power for the First Provisional in the fall of 1918 and supported its policies with an influence that was past all question. The staff and line of the First Provisional will never be able to express its full gratitude to the sturdy friend in Binghamton who meant so much to it in its tight pinches.

The attention of the reader is invited to the charts of strength which accompany this chapter and which show better than written words can the fluctuations of the line totals. Check-roll calls showed that on an average the regiment ran 20 per cent. of its strength on guard duty every six hours, or 80 per cent. every twenty-four. How narrow a margin this left for special duty, police, fatigue, supervision and sickness is apparent.

At the end of its service, with all its positions won or regained, the regiment's impregnable line remained unbroken. What visitors to the line found is best told in their own words in these letters that are here set down before the reader turns to that other side of the maintenance of the Line Impregnable—the shadowy, the intangible phase.

This from 1st Lieut. J. Howard Donaldson of Co. B, 28th United States Infantry, who won citation at the Hindenburg Line and saw all of the terrors of war abroad:

“DELTA KAPPA EPSILON CLUB
THIRTY WEST FORTY-FOURTH STREET
NEW YORK

Jan. 8, 1919.

CAPT. HOWLAND PELL:

MY DEAR CAPTAIN PELL,—I received your welcome letter the other day and was indeed very glad to hear from you. I also was sorry to have missed meeting your colonel. However, one can't expect to always find such dignitaries on hand at a moment's notice.

I wish once more to thank you for the pleasant time that you gave me at Croton, and express to you my appreciation of the good but thankless work that you have been conducting with *your* 'lost battalion' for the last two years.

You asked me what I thought of your organization, and I indeed feel highly complimented to think that my opinion is desired. I most certainly think that the work that you have been carrying on under the State Guard has been one of hardships and trials, one with little honor, and yet very essential. Your entire outpost system is well organized, sanitary, and the men are all in a good cheerful frame of mind. These things all go to show how a military organization is functioning, and I must say that my short visit was a great surprise and eye-opener to me. I really had no conception of how important and arduous a task you few unheard-of and unthanked men had been conducting.

Many's the man in Federal service on this side who has seen less real soldiering and had to undergo many less hardships than the men of your unthanked, unheard-of 'lost battalion,' which stood nobly by and did its duty as real soldiers at the Croton Aqueduct. However, after all, Captain Pell, now that the war is over and we are victorious, all that a man wants is the self-satisfaction of knowing that *he*, in his small place in our great army of freedom, has done his part and done it like a man. This priceless feeling of satisfaction may possibly be the only reward that your National Guard unit, especially the old 12th N. Y. Inf'y, may ever receive, yet it is that very spirit of self-sacrifice and forbearance under thankless circumstances that makes Americans—and makes them the leading people of the world to-day.

Once more I want to thank you and all the officers of the post for the hearty way in which I was received while with them as your guest.

Good-by and best of success for a speedy and successful completion of your duties in the army.

Very sincerely,
J. HOWLAND DONALDSON,
Ex-First Lieut. Co. B, 28th Inf'y."

This from a report of officers of the 12th New York Infantry following an inspection of the line:

"HEADQUARTERS 12TH INFANTRY, N. Y. G.

August 30th, 1918.

From: R. SAUNDERS, Capt. 12th Inf., N. Y. G.
To: COMMANDING OFFICER, 12th Inf., N. Y. G.
Subject: Unofficial visit to the First Prov. Regt. Guarding Aqueduct.

On Saturday, Aug. 17th, through the kindness of Captain Pell, an invitation was extended to Captain Dean and myself to visit with him the troops of the New York Guard on duty guarding the Aqueduct to New York City. We started from New York City with Captain Pell by automobile at 1.30 P.M., making our first stop at Palmer Avenue, Yonkers, at a camp commanded by Captain Johnson. * * *

* * * Colonel Rose and his officers were extremely courteous to us during the period we were at their camps and he informed me that his only regret was that more officers of our regiment did not come there to see the work that was being done. I would recommend that the officers of this regiment do everything within their power to assist in the recruiting of those companies from this command that are attached to the First Provisional Regiment and that they lend every assistance within their power to assist in the work which is more important in my opinion than most of us realize.

Captain Pell of this Command was very kind to us throughout our trip and made extra efforts to see that we were able to see all the conditions that prevailed in these camps thoroughly.

Respectfully submitted,
[Signed] R. SAUNDERS,
Captain."

And this from Inspector Thomas Underhill of the New York Police, attached to the Division of National Defense:

“POLICE DEPARTMENT
CITY OF NEW YORK
DIVISION OF NATIONAL DEFENSE

January 23, 1919.

COLONEL JOHN B. ROSE,
1st Provisional Regiment,
Ossining, N. Y.

MY DEAR COLONEL:

I trust you will pardon my delay in writing to you, expressing my thanks for the kind hospitality and courteous treatment extended to us by yourself and staff, on our recent visit to your headquarters at Ossining, New York.

* * * * *

My return trip to Ossining has been postponed for the reason that when I submitted my report to the Police Commissioner, showing the results of our visit and opinions regarding the Catskill System, I was ordered by him to confer with the Commissioner of Water, Gas and Electricity, in order to arrive at some definite conclusion regarding the safeguarding of the watershed and the release of the guard under your command.

I have conferred with Commissioner Hayes and Acting Chief Engineer Brush and have been informed by them that the arrangements for the future protection of the system are complete, and no doubt you will, in the near future, receive instructions to that effect.

In view of this fact it will be unnecessary for representatives of the Police Department to make any further surveys of the Catskill system, or to consider any plans for the future protection of the system, as the Department of Water, Gas & Electricity will assume all responsibility and provide the necessary protection for same.

* * * * *

I cannot close until I express an opinion regarding your work in connection with the guarding of the Catskill water system as viewed by New York policemen. The magnitude of your task and the great obstacles to be surmounted and difficulties placed in your path by nature, human beings and pro-Germans, can only be appreciated by a visit to the scene of your activities.

The Police Department was very fortunate in their escape from the task of guarding the water system to which you were later assigned. The protection of this great territory of 110 miles in length, including the supervision and observation of the many persons residing thereon whose loyalty and habits were a matter of concern to all thoughtful citizens, could only be accomplished by a force subject to military discipline and regulations and then only when commanded by an officer of your own undoubted ability, assisted by men such as those composing your staff. That you, within the short time allowed, were able to gather such a competent staff of officers and perfect the organization of your guard, which to our mind is above reproach and fitting tribute to your ability as an organizer and commander. New York City is very fortunate that your services were available at the opportune time.

In any great crisis Providence seems ready to produce the proper man at the proper time, while the United States Government had Charles Schwab for building ships, New York City secured John B. Rose to guard its water system.

That the establishment and erection of the camps necessary to protect the guard from the severe weather, the formation of a commissary department necessary to feed the men and the facilities required to transport the necessary food, clothing, medical supplies and fuel, in many instances over roads which are mere paths and difficult of progress for even those on foot, was successfully carried out, is difficult of comprehension to the ordinary mind. In our opinion you must have secured the aid of mountain burros or airships to accomplish this great task.

That you were able to maintain a guard at all times, under conditions which existed last winter, when the low temperature caused suffering among persons living in *steam-heated flats*, is a great triumph for you, and while partly due to the system of inspection inaugurated by you, it is also due, I believe, to your personal interest and influence as shown by your frequent visits to your subordinates and inquiries among them as to their needs and comforts, and the prompt measures taken by you to correct any condition which would cause discomfort to your men.

The command and supervision of a regiment distributed over a territory covering 110 miles was a more difficult proposition, in my opinion, than the guarding of a sector in France. While the men composing your guard were com-

pelled to endure all sorts of hardships and privations, there was no hope of recognition and regard from a grateful people who at times would honor and encourage them with cheers and receptions; they were alone with their thoughts and fancies. That your guard were not found dead from exposure or deserted their regiment can only be attributed to the thought and care given them personally by the competent men composing your personal staff.

I hope that the authorities of the State of New York will take some action which will result in recognition of some kind to all persons connected with your organization, that they be permitted to wear some device which will denote that they gave to this country their services in performance of a duty requiring as much sacrifice and fraught with danger only excelled by those on the actual firing-line, and that some suitable tablet be erected to commemorate the various deeds of valor performed by the members of your guard, and also a monument erected on the top of the highest mountain on the Aqueduct line to call to the minds of all persons viewing it the quality of courage and fidelity necessary to protect this water system.

Great credit is due you for the delivery of this property to the proper authorities with no reports, so far as I can learn, stating that you were compelled to report that damage had occurred to any part of such system while under your care.

This is not a history, but a candid opinion, not intended to flatter you, but to show the appreciation of your worth to the City of New York, as expressed by Lieut. McCarthy Andy and myself.

Yours sincerely,
[Signed] THOMAS V. UNDERHILL,
Inspector, Division of National Defense."

* * * * *

Such was the Line Impregnable.

EQUIPMENT

*"When we came I got a Springfield
That was born in '61,
Then they peddled ammunition
Never meant to fit the gun,
Month ago I got an Enfield,
Week ago I had a Krag;
Now I've got a spiky Russian,
But I ain't a-going to brag;
'Cause there must be lots of Rosses
And we ain't had "Flinlocks" yet.
If they're loose and no one wants 'em
They'll be sent up here; you bet!"*
—From "Seven-Bent Ballads."

THIS chapter is a short one for a number of reasons. The first one is the best and needs no discussion. Equipment, like transportation and housing, furnished the First Provisional with a number of anxious hours; like the other problems of the regiment, it was solved a great deal better than could have been expected under war-time conditions affecting the market.

And here, as elsewhere at a dozen points in this work, the regiment rises as a man to sing the praise of Col. J. Weston Myers, Chief Quartermaster of the State and in charge of the New York Arsenal. Had there been no friendly, hard-working, interested, genial Colonel Myers the lot of the First Provisional in the matter of equipment might have been many times harder than it was. Handicapped as he was by the lack of available funds and the condition of the war-materials market, Colonel Myers accomplished wonders for the men in the field. He could appreciate when few else could the stern necessity for breeches and the naked truth of the underwear problem. Perhaps no one else knew how near the regiment was forced to the use of O. D. paint on several occasions, or how nearly the barrel market came to being cornered in the extremes that prevailed at one time and another to prevent violation of the law regarding the exposure of flesh.

It was his kind help, his good humor and his eternal loyalty to the regiment that helped the organization through many of its rough places, and there was no man not actually on the pay-

roll that was more a part of the regimental family than the guardian spirit of that "venerable old pile" on Seventh Avenue.

Some idea has been given of the condition in which the new State forces were left in the summer of 1917 by the departure of the Federalized National Guard troops to Camp Wadsworth for Spartanburg. This condition applied equally to quartermaster and ordnance property, to medical supplies and the live stock. When the First Provisional took the field, Colonel Myers, on his own responsibility, had to dip freely into the Federal property of the old New York Division to meet the situation. Hesitation for authority would have meant more hardship than wash-bowl plates at Highland and Junior cots all over the line. It would have meant no rifles and no ammunition, to say nothing of the other deprivations that the troops would have been obliged to sustain had Colonel Myers been of the red-tape variety.

But the equipment, even at its best, was not all that might have been desired for troops entering the field for protracted service under all weather conditions. At that time not a depot unit had woolens. All units entered the field in cotton and there was no woolen available until long after the frosts in the mountains were nipping the boys on post.

No attempt will be made in this chapter to discuss the reasons for the lack of equipment, as speculation and retrospection in such a matter are of little avail. The instances cited are without intention of criticism and are merely recorded for the benefit of organizations entering the field in the future, and as an essential part of the full story of the First Provisional's career.

Continuing on the matter of personal clothing. In the beginning this was limited to ponchos, shoes, hats, leggings, shirts, of which there was a proverbial shortage, and cotton breeches and blouses.

Then came the colder weather and overcoats, but the overcoats were of the old blue-cape type that survived the civil war. They were warm, but they were too picturesque to suit the spirit of the line. Some of the units entering the field from home station in the late fall brought O. D. overcoats with them, while the men on the line were wearing the blue. Not a sufficient number of O. D. overcoats could be purchased initially to equip all units of the line, and it was there that dissatisfaction started among the men on the subject of overcoats.

How the men hated those blue "Valley Forgers," as they were called. There recurs the picture of a group of enlisted men from one of the blue-stricken sectors, on their way into the village for a night off, sneaking into the bushes at the roadside just at the

village entrance, hiding there their blue markers and then braving the cold of the late fall in their uniforms throughout the evening, rather than to carry the much-cursed "Forgers."

A little dialogue from the darkness of the S-4 line gives an idea of the way in which the colonial blue overcoats were received by the men.

It is night on the Aqueduct and the hand in front of the face is just as visible as the one in the pocket. A corporal and relief are going out along the cut and cover.

From the culvert a voice challenges in ordinary tone. This is before the days of the intensive challenge, and it is about relief-time, anyway.

"Halt! Who's there?"

"General Washington and party."

"Advance, General Washington, to be recognized. Halt! Advance party! Say, what the hell you doing here; this ain't the Delaware River, it's the 'Duct. Where did you get that kimono?"

The blue overcoats furnished a lot of fun, with all of the dissatisfaction the men felt. And when the O. D.'s came they were the more appreciated.

And then the sheep-lined overcoats, life-savers for the men on post, with their high collars and their thick, warm lining. The sheepskins were not numerous in the beginning, just about one for each post on some of the sectors, allowing one for the patrolling non-commissioned officer and another for the sector chauffeur. This presented a problem, and it was a serious one—that of transmitting skin or scalp infection from the man relieved to the man relieving. It finally simmered down to an order requiring the collar of the overcoat worn underneath the sheepskin to be turned up between the sheepskin collar and the head.

With the overcoats came the woolens, the winter caps and the gloves. The Red Cross supplied socks and sweaters for the regiment through the State Arsenal, and there were few men on the line who did not receive a sweater from some one besides. Lumbermen's arctics cared for the footgear problem, but not as well as the four-buckle overshoes which fell to some of the more fortunate sectors and which were issued during 1918. The felts in the lumbermen's arctics were found to wear out quickly and the men acquired a bad habit of wearing the felts around the barracks, to the consequent detriment of their feet. As an all-around proposition the four-buckle overshoe was supreme for the work. The regiment never did have boots in any quantity. Several pairs of rubber boots could be found at every post, but they were purchased and not issued.

And the winter cap. This was a Scotch cap design with ear-laps and a tie-string that made for a great deal of face-and-ear protection in extreme weather, but in other kinds of weather the men of the line evolved a headgear that was distinctly the First Provisional cap. By reversing the headgear, turning the peak up inside the cap, and tucking the strings out of sight, the men created a distinct bonnet type that at first glance might have been mistaken for one of the foreign army headgears except that it was O. D. The originators probably intended it as an imitation of the trench cap, but it was so distinctly different and at the same time so snappy in appearance that the men were allowed to wear them. Since it was a First Provisional creation and could under no condition be mistaken for an overseas hat, many of the line officers had caps converted and wore them with their insignia. It was the one distinctly First Provisional piece of wearing apparel that appeared in the regiment's history.

Springfield 45-70, Springfield 1903, Krag-Jorgensen, Ross, and Russian Remington—these were the various types of rifles that at one time and another were used on the First Provisional's line. What the problem was in the case of supplying ammunition for such a mixture as this can be easily imagined, but the types were isolated by sectors or outposts and that made it a little easier.

The old and new Springfields and the Krags came onto the line with the original regiment, only the 69th men having the new Springfield originally. The majority of the companies had Krags, with the old Springfields restricted to the Troop G sector, where the Syrians of Captain Westcott's command enjoyed the salute effect secured by firing one of them, although the kick was not so pleasant.

New companies coming onto the line during the winter brought the Ross rifles then being distributed to the New York Guard, and at the same time there came from home station a few more of the new Springfields. Company B, Company D, and Company M were equipped with the latter type of arm.

In July, 1918, the Russian Remington was delivered along the line to all sectors except those with the new Springfields, which were the property of home station organizations. This standardized the ordnance of the regiment to a large extent and the men were mightily interested in their new pieces with the vicious spiky bayonet attached. Because there were no bayonet-scabbards available, general orders were issued calling for the carrying of the rifle with the bayonet habitually fixed while on post. There was a certain psychological advantage to this not to be discounted, as the long rifle and bayonet gave the man on post a distinct

sense of superiority over any one that might try to rush him. It resulted in fewer violations of the orders against carrying ammunition in the chamber or breech until after the first challenge.

There never were issue revolvers on the line of the regiment except in isolated instances. Supply Company truck-drivers and a few of the line sergeants had side-arms, but it stopped there. The desire of the patrolling non-commissioned officer to carry side-arms resulted in the importation of such a large and varied collection of chance weapons that orders were issued against the holding or possessing of any arm not issued. This eliminated a danger ever present with all varieties of revolvers around men's bunks in barracks.

The conservation and expenditure of ammunition is discussed in the chapter on the Impregnable Line, so will not be considered here except for the notation that frequent checks on the amount of ammunition at all posts held the regiment ready for emergency work at all times.

Tentage is also spoken of in another chapter, and is, therefore, eliminated from consideration here, as is the Junior cot. There remain the Gold Medal cots, blankets, and living equipment generally.

One of the biggest problems of the line was cot maintenance. A Gold Medal cot will, under ordinary wear, last quite a while; certainly a year, without ripping or breaking. But when two or three are gathered together in the same place and sit on the same cot while they talk it over, something is certain to happen to that cot in a short time. This is a barracks habit that is hard to break. Some officers tried to remedy it by putting hinged drop boards onto the foot of each cot, and some had benches made. There were not enough canvas stools to meet the situation and none were available. Until the last day of the regiment's history, cot breakage and rippage was a big problem, so big that the supply officer established a cot-mending department in charge of a sergeant at Millwood for that work exclusively. Carelessness was, without doubt, chargeable for half of this ripping, but it was the daily habit of carelessness and not the maliciousness of barracks rows or cot fights that led to the great amount of cot breakage on the line of the First Provisional. The balance of the damage was due to the fact that the regiment, running true to form, had nowhere else to sit.

Blankets were furnished by Colonel Myers in abundance, but company cornering led to difficulties. General instructions called for from three to four blankets per man, according to territory, but in some cases men had five to seven blankets apiece, while in

others there were times when things were down to two blankets apiece, not adequate for protection from the cold and leading to a habit of sleeping in the clothes.

In the beginning there were only the O. D. single blankets, with not a great deal of warmth to them. Then the double reds were issued from the recesses of the arsenal's storage places and the men almost fought for their warmth and comfort. Another issue was of hairy grays, warm and heavy, but a trifle rough on a man's skin, while more lately there issued the smooth grays, the blues and the blacks with the red stripe. As a result there were some sectors where the morning blanket airing looked like an advertisement for the Rainbow Division. The blanket situation was involved a bit by the establishment of hospitals and the consequent big demand during the influenza epidemic, but Colonel Myers met this in characteristic fashion by going into the open market and purchasing blue and white hospital blankets that saved the day.

Field ranges from the old National Guard days were the only cooking facilities of the regiment at first, together with a few kitchen ranges. These were variously adapted to the barracks when the troops left tentage and in many cases ranges were purchased from company funds for the various posts and outposts. The heating facilities of the barracks have already been discussed, but the heating of the tents has not. Sibleys were used along the entire line, and the men of the First Provisional learned from some night dashes with fire-pails that it does not pay to excite a Sibley with fuel and then go to bed leaving the draft hole uncovered.

The mess equipment consisted of the blue-and-white agate-ware so well known to National Guard troops. The use of this ware agitated the medical officers not a little, because of the possibilities of chipping, but there was not a case of cut stomach on the entire line while the troops were in the field. This was not because plates were not scraped, however.

Both cooking and mess equipment was amplified by purchases from company funds.

All of which fulfils the promise made at the beginning of this chapter concerning its length. In the compilation of this history, complaint or appearance of complaint has been studiously avoided, but there is no disguising the truth that the men of the First Provisional were for the greater part of the time without what even approached full equipment. And there were many times when mess kits were cups or bowls only, and when men were obliged to eat with their fingers because they had nothing

else to eat with. Often they were improperly and scantily clad; often only improvised insoles of cardboard ripped from food cartons were between their feet and the mud of the cut and cover. And it was the terrific struggle for these things which should have been theirs by right of their very service that occupied so much of the efforts of headquarters in the early days of the regiment's history.

THE TRAIL OF THE OCTOPUS

THE blinking of a parlor lamp in coded "International"; the flare of calcium in measured portions high on the ledges of Keg Mountain; the fiery tails of rockets that were never intended for any Independence Day celebration; the wanderings of the book agent, the cattle-buyer and the well-driller of peculiar accent; the night boomings of great low-gray cars of foreign make and close-covered bodies among the back roads of Westchester County; the real-estate purchases that could never be traced—of such was the trail of the Octopus in the lower valleys of the Hudson and along the line of the Aqueduct in the Great War.

It was the trail, seemingly broad and seemingly plain, but it seldom led far. By how many of the great snaky arms of the German-American organizations in this country it was made, or with what ultimate purpose in view, will never be generally known. That it is even at this date known in large part only to a few is very certain. But since the time may come again when another Octopus may reach out with a thousand arms into the very heart of the nation, this is no time for the telling of how the trails were followed or what they revealed. Let there suffice a few word sketches to show the additional problem that the trail of the Octopus meant to the First Provisional, and how that problem was met.

Ours is a wonderful nation—wonderful because of its belief that all other peoples of the world are ready to play the game on the same four-square principles that made the suave European diplomats smile—before the Great War. They used to smile about the American Secret Service, too, until it became pretty apparent that Bernstorff's private and confidential mail matter was being decoded and put onto President Wilson's desk daily, so that the President had it nearly as quickly as the Embassy of William Rex, and Almost Emperor. After the Mexican exposé they stopped laughing entirely. The next time there is a war pointed this way, the country with malice in mind and on mischief bent is going to try to knock out a few of the stars on the U. S. S. S. team before it starts business. That will be very necessary, because if that is not done there won't be any business.

But to return to the original remark that ours is a wonderful nation. The Great War proved that to a finish on the subject of German propagandism alone. Hardly a year before the "overt act" the German-American Alliance at its stated State meeting in Utica stood up and hammered President Wilson right out in chapel. Could you at that time make one of every four American citizens believe that there was German propagandism afloat in this country? You could not. It took nearly a year and several millions of feet of motion-picture film, with a few thousand reams of paper thrown in for good measure, to convince the United States of America that there was anything wrong with the Hun that had been planted in its borders, or who, because of his natural Hunnishness, had been available to the Imperial German Government as a part of its great net in this country.

But when the country did come to, it opened its eyes wide and didn't even ask, "Where am I?" It knew. Result: the United States Secret Service had more volunteers than the regular army. Everybody watched everybody else. The thing got to be a matter of more or less hysteria in some sections and some innocent persons suffered. Perhaps it was the general, hearty and unanimous attitude of the G. A. P. on the subject of propaganda-spreaders that kept the head of the Octopus down and out of sight. But the arms went on wiggling—very quietly. Sometimes they were only feelers.

Imagine, if you can, a small, intricate, central wheel of control and transmission spinning rapidly at the World's Heart. Then consider a little larger wheel of many more cogs just outside it, also revolving rapidly. Outside still another and a greater wheel, moving more slowly, and still outside another, just turning and that is all. There you have the German espionage and offensive system in this country during the Great War. It is of the cogs of the second wheel that this chapter for the most part deals.

A glimpse of the workings of the very inner wheel and of its connection to the outer wheels has been given in the chapter that tells of New York as the hot-bed of German propagandism. It will be noted how nicely the cogs fit.

Parenthetically, and before continuing: In less than five years there will be a general move to discredit everything bearing on the subject of German-American activity on this side of the water during the Great War. It will be pointed out that had all the written matter on the subject been true the supposed hosts of the Kaiser in this country would have struck and struck hard. And many other things will be pointed out also. The government for various reasons will not take up the subject, nor will it prob-

ably open the books of the Federal prisons or internment camps. And a peace-fed people may quite likely say, (1) "Well, we guess there was a lot of injustice done during the war." (2) "They were pretty loyal."

(1) There was. Only the justice would have been more evenly distributed if the war had lasted long enough to locate them all.

(2) They were. Lots of them really were. The rest were, too, for the most part. The cogs of the third and fourth wheels didn't move very fast. They couldn't. It wasn't healthy. Gustave Hundundbosche was a good citizen all right. It was healthy to be. Like Mr. Kipling's Yellow Dog, Dingo—he had to.

From midsummer, 1917, until the great American smash on the Argonne front in 1918, the territory in the vicinity of New York, the Hudson River, and the great training and embarkation camps clustering around the Metropolis was a center of Pan-German activity. It was inevitable that the guard work of the First Provisional could not stop at the line of the New York City property if it were to be successful and efficient. It must have advance information as to probable sources of trouble and real knowledge concerning hyphenated residents of the neighborhood, that its position might be at all times as secure as could be reasonably expected.

And it was this which brought about the early organization of the Map Detail in the fall of 1917, composed of members of the Veteran Corps, including Corp. Frederick G. Clapp, Cannoniers Henry E. Nasond, Clifford V. Smith, with D. L. Somerfield as draftsman, on the east side of the river, while Sergt. Henry D. Brandyce, now ordnance officer of the 8th C. A. C., was in charge of the entire work on the west side of the river.

These units, forming the first organized arm of the regiment's Intelligence Service, covered the entire length of the Aqueduct from Hillview to Ashokan in the late summer and early fall of 1917, making detailed sketch maps of every sector, sub-sector and vulnerable point, together with the notations of all houses and other buildings adjacent to the Aqueduct, with the composition of the families living in them, their nationality and inclinations in the matter of the war, and as to whether or not they were naturalized. A sample of this work appears on the opposite page, without localization, because of the names which appear on it and the reports on them.

It will be noted that the culverts and other vulnerable points are shown, together with such telephone poles as are necessary to indicate the exact location of the culverts by number. It will also be noted that the nature of the immediate terrain is shown,



Upper—Improvised culvert-screens made by the men of the line.
Lower left—Small stick screen over culvert on E line, with call-box in background. *Right*—Exposed pipe at Tongore siphon, Company E sector.



FRIENDS OF THE REGIMENT

Upper left—Mrs. Sarah H. R. Genet, mother of the late Edmond Genet of the Lafayette Escadrille and nurse at the Ossining Field Hospital. *Right*—Mrs. Imlay Bennet, whose services to the Intelligence Department of the regiment were invaluable. *Lower left*—Miss Mattler, the student-nurse, who nearly paid the final price at Newburgh Hospital in the early days of the influenza epidemic. *Right*—Mrs. Richard Keough, volunteer stenographer from the National Women's League for Service, serving at headquarters.

although no attempt is made to give topography because of possible confusion resulting.

When the First Provisional entered the field it was without maps of any kind. Three months later it was in possession of a full set of military intelligence prints showing the exact line from one end to the other, together with valuable information concerning the neighbors on the line. Each sector commander was provided with a print of his line and neighborhood and charged with the duty of keeping the information thereon up to date. It was an easy matter to do this. In every neighborhood by careful elimination there could be found some loyal person, usually a woman with a son or a husband in the service, who would keep the sector commander informed concerning changes in personnel that his men might fail to get at the corner grocery or in the gossip that they picked up on the road.

And the men were trained to use their eyes and ears; to remember faces, and to keep watch on recurrent visitors.

Increasing activity by enemy aliens in the spring and early summer of 1918 led to the definite establishment of an Intelligence Department in the regiment, so well organized that at no time did the officers who comprised it know certainly who the others in it were. Through the central control of the Commanding Officer who assigned the necessary tasks to the various individuals, it was flexible and of real use, without the undesirable atmosphere of melodramatic mystery. During the summer general instructions were issued for a canvass and intelligence survey for two and a half miles on either side of the line. While this was never carried out in its totality, many of the sector commanders during this period extended this arm of their intelligence work, brought their territorial maps to date, and established card-index systems on questionable locations or persons.

In the vicinity of Regimental Headquarters a five-mile circle was drawn with headquarters as a center, and mounted details, working, for the most part, after evening mess, with the aid of topographical maps, made a careful survey of the territory, including all deserted houses and other buildings, as well as those occupied.

It was in the early summer that the Sheriff's Emergency Force of Westchester County, a mounted detachment of volunteers from private life, well armed and equipped, established field headquarters in the vicinity of Peekskill and began operations directed toward the location and apprehension of alien enemies. Some of the cogs of the second wheel, emboldened by the absence of such a force hitherto, had been circulating propaganda and communi-

cating by a system of flash code from a point near Embarkation Point at Camp Merritt (Hook Mountain) across the Hudson in a northeasterly direction, and thence from signal station to signal station down south to some unknown receiving station at sea.

These lights, which were so easy to see and so hard to locate, formed the greater outward manifestation of the efforts of the Kaiser's agents. It was only by triangulation and ceaseless endeavor that their sources could be located, and when once these had been found, the very work necessary to find them had in most instances warned the aliens that their receiving stations and sending stations had been discovered and they made off.

In the Keg Mountain case, which was brought to a focus by the Sheriff's Emergency Force, however, there was considerable of the tangible on which to work. A group of persons, many of whom may have been innocent participants in a huge camouflage, organized a society which, known as "Nature's Friends," established quarters on Keg Mountain. Without going too extensively into the details of the matter, this organization was given over largely to the deliberations of parties of German hyphenates who used week-end trips to the headquarters of the society as their excuse to get together. The cabalistic sign of the organization, found still on the rocks along the Keg Mountain road, directed the way of new-comers to the place where these ardent "Friends" met. Keg Mountain as a sending station was well known to all who watched the trail of the Octopus, and the magnesium marks may still be seen on some of the ledges from which the dot-dash signals were sent. The Sheriff's Emergency Force, under Capt. Harry K. Jessup, broke up this rendezvous and cleaned out the mountain effectually, several arrests resulting. This drastic action put the fear of the Lord into the hearts of enemy aliens of the vicinity, but the line of signal stations was merely moved a few degrees.

Deserted houses, or unused bungalows on property that could be bought by some intermediate, little-used summer estates, in deserted localities, and especially when these were at points of vantage, were used by the aliens in their work. In the vicinity of Lake Oscawana there was particular activity for some time, and this was handled quietly by Major Hodges for the regiment.

Early in the summer all the forces having to do with alien activities in the Hudson Valley were co-ordinated by the United States Military authorities at West Point under Capt., later Major, James B. Ord. Capt. Theodore T. Lane represented the First Provisional Regiment at the initial conference at West Point. This prevented duplication of effort, discouraged hysteria and put the

entire proposition on a military basis. Confidential bulletins, subheaded as to topics and carrying useful information, were periodically sent to the various agencies directed toward enemy alien activities, for their information and guidance. The following is an example of the matter contained in them:

BOMBS

The first case of attempted sabotage in this vicinity occurred during the last week of August, when an attempt was made to wreck one of the West Shore tunnels near West Point.

A small nitro-glycerine bomb was used. It was an innocent-appearing paper tube about one inch in diameter and two or three inches long. If a passing train had detonated this bomb a serious wreck would have resulted.

SUSPECTS

The following are under investigation:

Richard Roe. Blauvelt, N. Y. Suspected of signaling information of troop movements. Military Intelligence following.

John Doe. Spring Valley, N. Y. Suspected of being pro-German. Has been reported as making seditious remarks. He is a — on the — N. Y. Naturalized. Intelligence office at West Point following.

The Blank Company. The ownership of this place is reported as being enemy alien. It is reported that many Germans are employed in this plant. Sheriff's Emergency Force following.

Mr. J. Beacon, N. Y. American member of a religious sect which does not believe in war. This outfit is closely allied with the "Russelites," who neither believe in war nor in patriotism. Closely associated with Mr. J — is Mrs. D — of Marlboro, N. Y., who received orders from God, her commanding officer, to go forth and prevent young men from fighting. Mr. Waite following.

Such items, together with signal information, etc., comprised the bulletin. All information secured by the regiment regarding lights, enemy aliens or other proper intelligence matter, was, by request of Major Ord, forwarded to his office.

While fully ninety-five per cent. of the "signal" activities, so called, was pure war hysteria, it is certain that the other five per cent. was very real and very dangerous, and the regiment did its part in the separation of the false from the true. In this it was materially assisted by Mrs. Imlay Bennet, of Lake Mahopac, who, as a volunteer, covered, at the request of the Commanding Officer, a large territory north of the line in the summer resort section. Mrs. Bennet went about her work quietly but efficiently and her reports were clear and concise. She was largely responsible for the location of enemy aliens in her neighborhood and spent a great deal of time and effort in localizing light sources.

The regiment co-operated in the summer of 1918 with the State Troopers in the arrest of a man who, though charged with being an enemy alien and a German reservist, proved his innocence and was released from custody. It was not the arrest, but the trail to which it led, that was of importance. By it a Bohemian-Germanic colony of so-called artists who had been engaged in sketches in the vicinity of the Aqueduct and whose activities it had been impossible to control was dispersed.

And there is little doubt that only the constant presence of the counter agencies kept the head of the Octopus down. In one or two notorious German colonies not far from the headquarters of the regiment it was the custom during the periods of particular enemy activity to circulate freely with mounted patrols of two or three men. It is a hard matter to free the mind from two generations of military control, and while the German mind and hand were ready enough to work in the usually free American rural atmosphere, the casual visit of the uniformed horsemen who now and again stopped for a drink of water, or who hammered past his door with a thud of hoof-beats during the night, was sufficient to stir in the Germanic mind that fear bred by the very régime which was at that time making its supreme effort to gain world control.

Careful watch was kept on all contracts employing dynamite in the vicinity of the Aqueduct and contractors warned against leaving explosives where they might be stolen by some one bent on mischief. On one occasion a large cache of dynamite was discovered in a patch of woods near the Aqueduct, ownership of which was never established, although the place was watched carefully.

From first to last the work of following the trail of the Octopus was, in so far as the regiment was concerned, prevention rather than punishment. Keeping its own line clear, it passed on all other necessary information to agencies which followed it to a conclusion of one sort or another.

HOUSING

NEXT to food and drink it is man's first need that he be sheltered from the elements. Given this protection, he can manage to go without clothes, but protection is necessary, and as proof that it is a fundamental of life, there is no beast or bird that does not find shelter of some kind.

It is a long cry from the tree-nest and the stone cave of our progenitors to the huge cave-man buildings of the present age. To prove that the war game is a fundamental passion of the human race, observe, however, the tent. Since the dawn of time men have lived in tents—first rude skin shelters, later the black tents of the nomad, then the pavilions of the crusaders. And the tent, because of its structure, has survived the advances of the ages. In so far as the housing of the soldier is concerned, the primitive cave of winter shelter has given way to the barracks, but the tent, that was the prehistoric man's summer quarters, is still the summer shelter of the soldier. In the case of the First Provisional it came very near to being his winter shelter, too. The tent is primitive, and so on the housing question of the First Provisional the tentage of the command will be considered first.

The original tentage of the regiment—that issued at Peekskill and Lambert Farm—was white, the vintage of '98, conicals, officers' walls and hospitals. It had been beaten by the rain and winds of many encampments, and it had seen its best days in the Paleozoic Age of National-Guardism. Some of the experiences that the men of the regiment had with it have been related in the story of mobilization days. It was not first-grade material and the lack of tent floors added to its drawbacks. There were few companies of the line that had tent floors prior to the fall of 1918, simply because authority could not be secured for the purchase of lumber.

A few O. D. storage and supply tents remained at Peekskill when the New York Division left the State, clearing with it the O. D. pyramidals and other tentage that had been Division property, but there was scarcely sufficient of the O. D. tentage to furnish storage room and office room for headquarters and the Supply Company of the new regiment.

The greater share of the line tentage was composed of the conicals, and so it remained until the summer of 1918, when O. D. pyramidals nearly enough in number to meet the regiment's needs were distributed. And these the commanding officer on his own authority ordered floored at the time of the influenza outbreak.

At headquarters the office tents were sided, and in some cases framed front and back, with windows at either end. In the case of the officers' walls these were first sided, then framed and finally taken off of many entirely, leaving a tent-shaped shack that was roofed and tar-papered, because these, like the other tents, were too aged to resist the elements unaided. The regiment never had shelter tents.

This, in a short-cut fashion, describes the housing conditions of the regiment as far as tentage was concerned. But the organization's biggest proposition was barracks.

Barracks caused more excitement for the First Provisional than any other question, unless it was transportation. In the beginning, the period of service on the Aqueduct was doubtful, and so for a few weeks, while the organization was in what Lieut. Weed has termed the melting-pot stage, the winter housing question was not brought up.

But as soon as it became apparent that the regiment was in all likelihood in the field for the duration of the war, and that some one would be guarding the Aqueduct until the end of the war, anyway, Colonel Rose called the matter of barracks to the attention of the Adjutant-General.

This was on September 18th, and the Adjutant-General directed Major James A. Blair, Jr., attached to his office, to confer with the officials of the City of New York regarding barracks.

Prior to that preliminary steps had been taken with the city. Since the commands on the western side of the river were certain to feel the cold weather before those on the eastern side, the commanding officer of the regiment had on Sept. 3rd directed Major Charles J. Lamb to make a report on the needs of the 2nd Battalion. This was submitted on the following day, and on the 6th of September a letter was forwarded from the Commanding Officer to the Chief Engineer of the Department of Water Supply, Gas & Electricity, City of New York, making formal application for the assignment of an engineer or architect representing the City of New York. The representative of the department was to proceed with the Commanding Officer of the regiment and a medical officer to the points indicated in Major Lamb's report to determine how winter conditions could best be met.

When Sept. 24th had arrived and there had been no action, Colonel Rose, in company with Major Blair, visited Mayor John Purroy Mitchel, being referred by him to Comptroller Pendergast.

There ensued a conference at which Arthur E. Hadlock, Deputy Comptroller, Acting Corporation Counsel Louis H. Hahlo, Chief Auditor of Accounts David E. Kemlo and the two officers were present.

At this conference Colonel Rose pointed out that time was the big factor to consider in the erection of barracks. Since advertising for bids and procurement of labor for the building of the barracks made the matter an almost impossible one for the city to handle, the responsibility for the entire construction was assumed by Colonel Rose and he was given full written authority to proceed with construction, the city to pay the bill and become owner of the buildings upon the withdrawal of the troops.

At all times of the regiment's need some man was found within the regiment itself who met that need. Major Hodges, as officer in charge of construction, had general supervision of the matter of barracks, but he was not a builder. The regiment turned to Sergt. (later Lieut.) Herbert L. Lockwood, famous in the steel world, who had served with the regiment in the V. C. A. during mobilization period, and back to the ranks came Lieut. Lockwood to plan and carry out the construction of the First Provisional's barracks.

Lieut. Lockwood, after a survey, decided that the unit system would best meet the conditions of haulage and unskilled labor with which the barracks must contend in their erection. He finally submitted plans calling for the construction of 2,520 feet of barracks buildings 20 feet wide in seven-foot multiples for the men of the First Provisional Regiment. At least that is what the total length of the buildings would have been had they all been placed end on end.

The sectional building was a result of careful study and application and was immediately approved by Major James A. Blair and Capt. J. Hayden Bates upon their inspection of the barracks situation.

Lockwood's first letter is H, and that H meant hustle for the regiment. One week from the time he entered the field he had his plans, specifications and bills of particulars ready. Cutting red tape, he saved the city right and left by the purchase of raw lumber in huge quantities (between 350,000 and 400,000 feet altogether) and hauled it by barges to Lord & Burnham's mill at Irvington, where he had made such representations that practically the entire plant was turned over to him for his use. This

firm would only accept 5 per cent., which did not more than compensate them for wear and tear on their property. Two weeks from his entry into the field, Lieut. Lockwood had his lumber at Lord & Burnham's mill and the milling started.

The basic principle of the barracks, as Lieut. Lockwood explained it to the men of the regiment in *The Watchdog* at the time, was the design of a unit capable of sleeping four men. The barracks to accommodate the vari-sized detachments at the posts and outposts were made possible by the indefinite extension of the four-man-unit idea to meet the needs of the particular point where the building happened to be located. Thus:

A building for 10 men and 50 men was identical in cross-section, differing only in length and its interior arrangements. The gable ends were standard and furnished in sections, ready to bolt into place. The side walls were furnished in the same manner in 7 x 7 sections, notched to receive the rafters. All other parts were furnished cut to length, drilled and notched, except the floor and roof boards, which were furnished in random lengths and laid in the field to tie the building together longitudinally. All parts were bundled and marked and the entire success of the barracks construction after it passed through the mill stage depended on the care used in the erection of corner posts, side and center posts, footing pieces, sills and joists. A complete set of prints and directions accompanied every barracks building for the benefit of the men who were to do the work.

The side section was furnished with a door or window or without either, according to the need of the building. The standard army requirement of a window to each two cots was thus made possible without change of any interior arrangement.

Barracks walls were of double boarding, with water-proofed building paper between them. The roof was covered with heavy roofing paper, and the floors were of tongue-and-groove boards. The gable ends in the dormitories were furnished without doors to insure the comfort of the men. Interior partitions were arranged to suit local conditions.

The specifications and material tables called for a total of from 8 to 10 tons of nails and a car-load of roofing paper, in addition to the material already described.

Some discussion as to the necessary authority for barracks construction held back the actual delivery of the material to the sectors until Nov. 9th, when five additional motor-trucks were received from the State Arsenal by Captain De Garmo. Major Hodges, Lieut. A. T. McKinstry and Lieut. Arthur Wynne were detailed to the work, and later Lieut. Harvey N. Smith, of Sector

N-4 was on the barracks detail. During the period between the first delivery of lumber to the Lord & Burnham mill and the actual delivery of barracks material to the sectors, Lieut. Lockwood was in all places at once. He used his own trucks to haul building material from seaboard to the Lord & Burnham mill, when he found that he could not secure railroad shipments in time, and did this gratis. He was indefatigable and, despite all of the worries that came to him in the course of his work, was always sunny and smiling.

When the delivery to the line began a detail was sent to Irvington for the loading, and it was during the period in which this detail operated that Mrs. William Usher Parsons, of Irvington, did so much for the regiment in the care of these men. In addition to her hospitality, Lieut. Lockwood spent a great deal of his own money, for which he was never reimbursed.

Between Nov. 9th and Dec. 13th, when a terrific blizzard blocked the roads and prevented the building of barracks, there were 35 working-days, including Sundays, which, multiplied by the number of trucks, gave a total of 175 truck days. Owing to the condition of the trucks, however, the Supply Officer's records showed that 101 truck days were lost through breakdowns and repair time. Rail delivery was impossible, due to the geographical factor, which again entered the regiment's history at this point.

On Feb. 7th the following condition of barracks construction prevailed in the regiment:

ON THE SECTORS WEST OF THE HUDSON RIVER

Headquarters at Davis Corners:

New barracks, in addition to B. W. S. building, erected and occupied.

Headquarters at Atwood:

New barracks, 80 per cent. completed, but not entirely ready for occupancy.

Headquarters at the Peak:

New barracks, in addition to B. W. S. building, 50 per cent. completed.

Outpost at Shaft 5:

Remodelled B. W. S. locker-house, occupied.

Outpost at Shaft 1:

Remodeled B. W. S. locker-house, occupied.

Outpost just south of Bonticou Tunnel:

Remodeled B. W. S. locker-house, material delivered on ground.

Headquarters Camp, Mountain Rest road:

New barracks erected, and occupied.

Outpost at Shaft 6, Walkill Valley:

Addition to B. W. S. locker-house, erected and occupied.

Headquarters at Ireland Corners:

New barracks, in addition to B. W. S. building, erected and occupied.

Outpost at Culvert 76:

New barracks, in addition to B. W. S. locker-house, erected and occupied.

Headquarters at Sherwood Corners:

Remodeled B. W. S. barn, occupied.

Headquarters at Cocheton Turnpike:

New barracks to be erected, material in transit.

Outpost at Vail's Gate:

Addition to B. W. S. locker-house, erected and occupied.

ON THE SECTORS EAST OF THE HUDSON RIVER

New barracks, erected and occupied, at Cold Spring, Break

Neck outpost and Indian Brook outpost.

Outpost at Garrison:

B. W. S. building, remodeled and occupied.

Outpost at Sprout Brook:

B. W. S. building, remodeled and occupied.

Outpost at Cat Hill:

New barracks, erected and occupied.

Headquarters at Crompound road:

Barracks, 50 per cent. erected.

Outpost at Field Street:

Barracks, not yet delivered.

Headquarters at Scribner's Farm:

B. W. S. building, remodeled and occupied.

Outpost at South Croton Lake Siphon:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Outpost at New Croton Dam:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Outpost at Baer's Corners:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Headquarters at Millwood:

New barracks, erected and occupied.

Outpost at North End of Millwood Tunnel:

B. W. S. building, remodeled and occupied.

Outpost at Washburne Farm:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Outpost at Harlem Railroad Siphon:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Outpost at Pleasantville Treating Plant:

New barracks, erected and occupied.

Headquarters at Pleasantville:

New barracks, erected and occupied, in addition to B. W. S. building, remodeled and occupied.

Outpost at Kensico Influent:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Outpost at Kensico Effluent:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Outpost at Kensico Chlorinating Plant:

New barracks, erected and occupied.

Outpost at North Kensico Siphon-house:

New barracks, 75 per cent. erected.

Outpost at South Kensico Siphon-house:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Outpost at Eastview Spillway:

New barracks, erected and occupied.

Outpost, $\frac{1}{2}$ mile south of Eastview Spillway:

New barracks, erected and occupied.

Outpost, $\frac{1}{4}$ mile north of Elmsford Siphon:

New barracks, erected and occupied.

Outpost at Ardsley, Harts Corners road:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Headquarters at Underwood Avenue:

New barracks, erected and occupied.

Outpost at Platt Avenue:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Headquarters at Jackson Avenue:

B. W. S. building, remodeled and occupied.

Outpost at South Fort Hill Siphon-house:

New barracks, erected and occupied.

Outpost at North Brindmoor Siphon-house:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Outpost at Inlet House, Hillview Reservoir:

New barracks, delivered, but not yet erected.

Outpost at Outlet House, Hillview Reservoir:

New barracks, delivered, but not yet erected.

Outpost at Shaft 9, $1\frac{1}{2}$ miles north of No. Tarrytown, New Croton Aqueduct:

B. W. S. building, remodeled and occupied.

Outpost at Gate House, New Croton Aqueduct, Ardsley-on-Putnam:

New barracks, not yet delivered.

Outpost at Chlorinating Plant, New Croton Aqueduct, Yonkers Avenue:

B. W. S. building, remodeled and occupied.

On Dec. 15th there were two officers and fifteen men quartered in tents. At the Harlem siphon near Pleasantville a disused siding was connected, through arrangement with the New York Central, and a boarding-car placed on the siding as barracks until the barracks could be built. At other points buildings were loaned to the regiment, in one instance men sleeping in the basement of a school-house.

Before Jan. 1st all men were out of the snow.

Of the trials and hardships of barracks construction by unskilled labor, of the long hauls over mountain roads, and of the cold, cheerless work of erection and finishing the buildings while the thermometer was dropping at winter's touch and the work of to-day might be buried under the snowdrifts of to-night; the provoking blunders made by the inexperienced, and of the natural cussedness of inanimate material—chapters could be written that were better left unwritten. The main point is that the barracks were built, though at what cost of anxiety, hard work, and hardship for those charged with their construction no one but those involved in the actual building will appreciate.

The barracks were heated throughout by stoves, which were purchased for the purpose in graduated sizes for the varied uses to which they were put. With all of the care used in the preparation of the structures, they were none too warm, and in the mountains the men suffered severely on some of the coldest nights. On one occasion the thermometer in the Bonticou barracks registered ten degrees below zero one morning. That was too cold for comfort. Lack of siding to keep the wind from blowing under the barracks was remedied after the first winter in all cases.

The Cat Hill barracks and the Field Street barracks were the last to be constructed in the winter and spring of 1918. In the fall of 1918 barracks were erected at Glenville outpost on the Company I line, at St. Andrews on the Company G line, and at Little Britain Turnpike on the Machine Gun Company's sector. A barracks was also begun at Brown's Station, but was discontinued when the armistice went into effect. During the fall, authority was given for the lining of all barracks with beaver board and expenditure necessary to put the buildings into repair.

The cost of this work, as well as the additional barracks, was charged against the original appropriation of \$85,000 for housing for the men of the regiment, secured from the City of New York by Colonel Rose.

Reference to the sectional maps of the First Provisional line will show the location of each building used by the regiment. Wherever possible, B. W. S. buildings were used, often in conjunction with the barracks buildings. Although there were B. W. S. houses at Olive Bridge, Atwood and the Peak, for instance, they were in no case large enough to accommodate the men at the posts, and were used as administration buildings for the larger part while the barracks served as dormitories.

The headquarters of the 2nd Battalion, New Paltz, was originally located at the Tamney Hotel, and later on Chestnut Street, where a private house was rented together with the big lot surrounding it; that was used as a supply depot.

The offices of the battalion were on the lower floor, eating-rooms in the basement, and the quarters of the various officers on the upper floor. It was a comfortable building and its location made it easily accessible from all points of the line on the western side of the river. Main highways running out of New Paltz direct to Kingston and Newburgh, and back roads that tapped F. H. and G, made it an ideal location for battalion headquarters.

During the epidemic of mumps referred to in the chapter on health, a house was rented on Chestnut Street, New Paltz, as a field hospital, and was maintained for some time.

Housing with reference to Regimental Headquarters has already been discussed. The latter days of headquarters history were made pleasant and comfortable through the generosity of V. Everit Macy, and the establishment in the old Holbrook School at Ossining made for happy memories of the last three months of field life. It seemed like a long jump from the homeless headquarters organization that perched on Crow Hill to the splendid establishment in the Macy estate, with lights, steam heat and abundant space for every one. To the public-spirited citizen responsible for the change the officers of the Headquarters Staff will never be able to express their appreciation sufficiently, nor to Mr. Vincent Phelps, Mr. Macy's manager, who made things so comfortable with his co-operation.

Headquarters of the 1st Battalion was, for the large part, located where the Regimental Headquarters were, except during the time that Captain Roche had command of the battalion, when they were transferred to the B. W. S. engineer's house at the Peekskill Hollow road, headquarters of Company B.

On the 3rd Battalion's line the headquarters was at Valhalla, in a concrete house at the base of the dam and about two hundred yards west of it, and the same distance east of the Valhalla railroad station. The Company M post was located first in an old city building on the same street and later in the engineers' building next to it, a more commodious affair.

Company posts, or "headquarters," as they were known, changed but little on the line; A was always at Millwood, first the gray barn at the left of the road leading to Chappaqua and later in the barracks. B was always at the B. W. S. engineers' building on the Peekskill Hollow road. C occupied first tentage and later barracks on Gallows Field near Cold Spring. D was first in a yellow B. W. S. house which burned and later in barracks erected on the site of the former house just south of Peekskill on the Crompound road near the Paur's Inn turn. E was at Atwood first and later at Olive Bridge. F was first on the old Company E 1st Infantry camp site under tentage on the side of the mountain above New Paltz, and later in barracks at Camp Fort Orange on the Lake Mohonk Road. G shifted about considerably, being first under canvas when the sectors were divided, later at the yellow B. W. S. building on the upper end of the sector, and known as Camp Gibbs, Camp Decker and Camp Johnson in turn, and finally at Sherwood Corners. H was always at the Peak in a B. W. S. building that was augmented by barracks. I post was from the first in the B. W. S. building on the White Plains road near Elmsford. K headquarters was first divided between Fort Hill road B. W. S. building and an old shanty at the intersection of the Aqueduct and Tuckahoe road, but for the greater part of the time at the B. W. S. house on Palmer Avenue near the Bryn Mawr station. L headquarters was maintained consistently at Fort Hill road after sector S-9 was divided and the company boundaries established. The Machine Gun Company headquarters was first at Vail's Gate in a B. W. S. house. This later became an outpost, and headquarters was at Little Britain, some of the time in the Brynes Hotel and some of the time in barracks.

Supply Company headquarters was first under tentage north of the Croton Lake road at Millwood, then in the green building south of the railroad tracks, later at Peekskill State Camp and finally at Ossining. The matter of hospital housing is discussed in the chapter on the health of the regiment.

PAPER-WORK OF THE REGIMENT

IT is the bane of every line officer's life; the hounding spectre that is omnipresent, shouting from his desk until appeased, and reinforced by every mail. To nine of every ten officers, army paper-work is a bugbear, to be relegated to an efficient non-commissioned officer and to be kept as little in evidence as possible.

But if there is one establishment where records must be clear, absolute and flawless, it is the military establishment, and so paper-work, with all the precedents, the regulations and the orders that have made it an institution, is of necessity a part, and a very large part, of the life of any organization, whether in the field or at home station.

The rules of army paper-work had been, through long years of garrison duty in the nation, and years of home-station service or concentrated encampments in the State, so molded and formed that they were predicated on such service. There has never been a time in the State's history, prior to the occupation of the New York Aqueduct, when a Form 44 or consolidated morning-report could not be taken direct from the morning report books of the various companies comprising a regiment in the field. Six of every ten questions arising in the course of a regiment's day could be answered by the officers concerned in personal conferences with the commanding officer, the adjutant, or the supply officer. Because of the very nature of the United States garrisons, and of the grooved routine of armory life, few new conditions arose that must be met with orders. The very permanency of personnel both in the regular army and the National Guard held the paper-work of an organization to minimum. In peace times all National Guard paper-work in a regiment could be done by the adjutant, the regimental sergeant-major and a clerk.

Such were the standards of paper-work at the entry of this country into the war. The text-books of the subject did not go beyond these standards; did not contemplate conditions arising in a regiment strung along one hundred miles of territory on active service, with new conditions to meet daily, and with a constantly shifting personnel due to entry of men into overseas service.

And so to the First Provisional Regiment upon its entry into the field there was left the task of blazing its own way in this phase

of its administrative work. Because at some future time another organization may face the same problems and batter its administrative head against the same obstacles, it is the endeavor to give here, at the risk of wearying, an idea of those obstacles, the ways in which they were met, and the results of the solutions found for them.

It is probable that no regiment in actual guard service approaches the paper-work of the First Provisional Regiment in volume alone. To give an idea of the volume here are some salient facts connected with the paper-work of the First Provisional Regiment.

The correspondence in the Adjutant's office alone filled twelve steel vertical filing-cases in eighteen months.

An average force of seven persons was employed in the Adjutant's office from shortly after the entry of the regiment into the field until just before its service terminated. Of these four were stenographers for a greater share of the period.

At one time in the regiment's history the daily output of the Adjutant's office was 125 pieces of mail-matter, and at no time did the daily total fall below 50 pieces of mail-matter.

On one date ten orders, circulars and bulletins were issued from the Adjutant's office, some of two pages in length.

A total of 48 general and 104 special orders were issued from August to December 31st, 1917. A total of 48 general and 224 special orders were issued during the year 1918. These are regimental orders alone and do not include regimental circulars and bulletins or the orders and bulletins issued by battalion headquarters.

More than 40 varieties of reports were required monthly by General Orders 44, 1918, of the various officers of the regiment.

In the beginning of the organization's history, Colonel Rose expressed the determination to keep paper-work at a minimum, and it was with this idea in mind that the staff and line officers proceeded throughout. But an increasing number of reports, as well as an increasing volume of correspondence and written action, pushed the amount of paper-work to a size that but few of the officers of the regiment themselves appreciated until shown.

Perhaps it is well that an officer without experience in routine armory paper-work was selected for the position as Adjutant. It may be equally true that the Commanding Officer, sensing that new trails must be blazed in this line of effort as well as elsewhere, purposely chose one who would not be so greatly influenced by the hidebound rules and precepts of precedent in the administrative work of a regiment.

To one looking from the outside in the first few weeks of the regiment's history, the Adjutant's office must have been a humorous affair. Housed in a big brown storage-tent on the shoulder of Headquarters Hill, its portals open to every frolicking breeze that scrambled papers promiscuously, unlighted save for barn lanterns with tin-plate reflectors, and equipped in its beginnings with one typewriter and one borrowed table, six box-files and a hotel-menu duplicator, the Adjutant's office was a meager affair.

And the men who made up the office—Acting Sergt.-Major Herbert W. Speares, drawn from Troop H of the 1st Cavalry, of whom much is told in the early history of the regiment's mobilization, a good stenographer, general office man and a steadying influence at all times, untiring and smiling; Lieut. Clarence Bechtol of the old First, who knew something of company paper-work; Corporal Julian Jackson, a stenographer, son of the commanding officer of the Oneonta company that was made Headquarters Company; and Private Charles Blizzard of the Oneonta company, chosen for his red hair and his smile as he toiled with a shovel in a latrine pit on the first day of his arrival. This was the office force.

The sum total of paper-work knowledge enjoyed by the personnel was small enough, and no one outside the office had time to give help. For the fundamentals the force depended on the Regulations and "Moss on Paper-work." For the adaptation of the same to the situations that constantly arose there was nothing to depend on except personal adaptability and good judgment. How much the little blue book written by Major James A. Moss of the United States Army meant in those first days may be gathered from an incident that occurred one morning shortly after the entry of the regiment into the field.

The Adjutant was at his desk when the sergeant-major came down from mess, without his usual morning beam, and immediately began rummaging under the blankets that were used to cover all tables with papers every night. Presently he chuckled.

"I dreamed last night we lost Moss," he said, holding it above-head, "and the thing stuck with me so this morning that I got worried, and here he is."

Perhaps the first big problem met by the Adjutant's office was in the matter of filing system. At first the correspondence-book method in vogue in the army and prescribed by State regulations was used, but it soon became apparent that the volume of correspondence would swamp the correspondence-book method with the force available to do filing work. Some scheme had to be adopted which would make possible the care of the regimental

files, together with other office work, by one man. It was from Sergt. Edmond J. Dixon, Q. M. C., who later became sergeant-major of the 1st Battalion, that the Adjutant first secured information concerning the dual-number filing system in use at the State Arsenal. This system, adapted and expanded to meet the needs of the First Provisional's work, was put into operation shortly after the 1st of September and continued in use, with only a few additions, until the regiment left the field.

It consisted of assigning arbitrarily numbers to destinations or sources of letters. The 1st Battalion headquarters was Roman I, and the 2nd Battalion headquarters, Roman II. Since there were six sectors on the north side of the Hudson and nine on the south side, the first 15 of the Arabic numerals were used to designate them in geographical order. Captain Broadbent's sector was, for instance, N-1, while Captain Johnson's sector was S-1 and Lieut. Smaney's sector, S-9B. The Adjutant-General's office was the next consecutive number, since it was the next largest source or destination for correspondence, and was arbitrarily assigned the subdivision number 16; 17 was the State Arsenal.

Then subjects were similarly assigned numbers. At that time the dogs of the Airedale Patrol were being brought onto the line, and so dogs happened to be No. 1; Officers' Commissions was 2; Disposition of troops, 3; and so on.

So that a letter to Sector North 1 on the subject of Dogs would be filed, N1-1; a letter to the Adjutant-General or from the Adjutant-General on the subject of Commissions would be marked and filed, 16-2. The correspondence was filed under the various numbers chronologically and there was never a time in the history of the office when a piece of correspondence on any subject could not be found within a few minutes, providing that the subject and the approximate source or destination were known. At the conclusion of each six months the files for that period were closed. It was a most satisfactory system.

There was this one drawback to it, but the same drawback would have prevailed in any system used by the regiment. It has been stated that the records of a military establishment are vital. To the First Provisional Regiment the careful keeping of its records meant life or death as its later history proved. The strength of the regiment's position was in its written record, and in the mass of documentary evidence which it could produce from its files to show how well it had lived up to its obligations and how those obligations had been met by other agencies.

It was an early established rule in the Adjutant's office that one person must be held personally responsible for the files and

filing, and this task fell to Private Charles Blizzard, in addition to his other duties, which were copying orders, caring for incoming and outgoing mail, and doing his share of office police. How well the files of the regiment were kept may be judged from this. The First Provisional Regiment always had its case ready in documentary form.

Following is a copy of the filing chart in use during 1917, which will give an idea of what it embraced. When it is considered that the subjects were so grouped that only 64 subjects and 46 subdivisions were used to cover the multiform correspondence of the regiment, the efficacy of the system will be at once apparent.

SUBDIVISIONS

- I. 1st Battalion
- II. 2nd Battalion
- III. 3rd Battalion

N-1.2.3.4.5.6.6A

Sectors:

S-1.2.3.4.5.6.7.8.9.

- 16. Adjutant-General's Office
- 17. State Arsenal
- 18. Col. John B. Rose
- 19. Lieutenant-Colonel
- 20. Adjutant, 1st Prov. Regt.
- 21. Disbursing Dept.
- 22. Medical Dept.
- 23. Supply Dept.
- 24. Transportation Dept.
- 25. Board of Water Supply
- 26. City of New York—Mayor
- 27. Headquarters Company
- 28. 1st Infantry, N. Y. G.
- 29. 3rd Infantry, N. Y. G.
- 30. 1st Cavalry, N. Y. G.
- 31. Troops Available
- 32. Officers Available
- 33. Conferences
- 34. Requisitions
- 35. Receipts
- 36. Telephones
- 37. 10th Infantry, N. Y. G.
- 38. Court
- 39. Historical

- 40. Electric Light and Power
- 41. Log
- 42. V. C. A.
- 43. Circulars
- 44. Red Cross
- 45. Extra Service
- 46. Provisional Brigade

SUBJECTS

- | | |
|---|--------------------------|
| 1. Dogs | 32. Transportation |
| 2. Commissions (Officers) | 33. Supply |
| 3. Disposition of Troops | 34. Water Supply |
| 3A. New Troops | 35. Desertions |
| 4. Application for Duty | 36. School |
| 5. Discharges | 37. Bechtol |
| 6. Authority to hire auto, type- writers, etc. | 38. Organization |
| 7. Supplies and Requisitions | 39. Protection of troops |
| 8. Aqueduct Structures | 40. Sanitary Inspection |
| 9. Furlough—Leave | 41. Reserve Officers |
| 10. Forms (Requisitions, etc.) | 42. Enlistment |
| 11. Telephone (Location of, etc.) | 43. Relief from Duty |
| 12. Reports | 44. Shooting |
| 13. Recruiting | 45. Equipment |
| 14. Commissions (Civilians) | 46. Squadron A |
| 15. Roster | 47. Police Dept. |
| 16. Nomination | 48. Appointment |
| 17. Inoculation | 49. Aeroplanes |
| 18. Special Orders | 50. Resignation |
| 19. Maps | 51. Expenses |
| 20. Sentinels | 52. Inspection |
| 21. Identification Cards | 53. Ammunition |
| 22. Court Cases | 54. Fireless Cookers |
| 23. Pay-rolls | 55. Subsistence |
| 24. Delivery Trucks | 56. Regimental Papers |
| 25. Quarters | 57. Anonymous Letters |
| 26. Auto Service | 58. Accidents |
| 27. Vouchers | 59. Dental |
| 28. Official Letters | 60. Voting |
| 29. Reckless Driving | 61. B. W. S. Police |
| 30. Camera | 62. Complaint |
| 31. Medical Attention | 63. Recreation |
| | 64. Draft |

The greater portion of August, 1917, was devoted to the organization of the office itself, in addition to the daily routine and the procurement, compilation and checking of various information required by regimental and superior authority at the time concerning the work. Of this, the most important was a lengthy report made to the Adjutant-General's office on the location of posts and disposition of troops which appears elsewhere. A tack map showing all day and night posts of the regiment was kept by the Adjutant's office.

During August and early September the office was conducted without flooring in the tent, and the dust worked up by the constant churn of feet created anything but a healthy atmosphere. Just before the middle of the month, however, the office was floored, and this added greatly to the comfort of every one. It made unnecessary the constant propping of desks and typewriters on their down-hill extremities and made the place more livable. As yet there were no lights except the barn lanterns, and with the constant night work that often ran until two and three o'clock in the morning, this was trying on the eyes.

Private Thomas O'Connor of the Service Company attached to the State Arsenal, became a member of the office force just after the 1st of September, and Private Edward J. O'Brien was added as a stenographer just after that time. Early in September, Corp. Thomas W. Therkildsen was brought to Regimental Headquarters and assigned to duty as stenographer in the office with the rank of battalion sergeant-major.

On the 10th, Sergt.-Major Speares was relieved from further duty upon the return of his troop to home station. In the month that he had been a part of the Adjutant's office he had stabilized the work, brought it to a high degree of efficiency, and had proven himself a "getter" of anything needed for the work of the office. His prowess as a rustler became generally known, and he never failed on any of the tests that resulted from it. Where he found table linen and whisk-brooms on five-minute notice has always remained a matter of mystery.

But this is not paper-work; it is a diversion of pleasant memories which must be pardoned for its injection at this point. The fact is that the Rustler Supreme Magnus of the First Provisional Regiment was relieved from duty on the 10th of September and went his way with a record of efficiency and helpfulness behind him which stood as a model for the Adjutant's office during the remainder of the regiment's service in the field.

The importance of a paper-work school or at least a lecture on the subject for newly mobilized regiments before actually taking

the field, never had a better demonstration than in the condition which was found to exist about the middle of September when the press of organization work permitted the calling in of all extracts from the morning reports then in arrears. It was found that some of the organizations had kept no copies of their attendance records, or that they had been lost (there being no morning-report books available in all instances), and the records of attendance from Aug. 10th until Sept. 1st were in many cases never fully straightened out in so far as the Forms 43 were concerned. Organizations that were behind in their reports were shortly afterward relieved from duty on the line, leaving the records incomplete.

This taught a lesson that was never disregarded thereafter. From the 1st of September, 1917, until the last days of the regiment in the field, the reports of the regiment on attendance were invariably and almost painfully accurate. Line and staff learned from the bitter experience of those first twenty days. The matter might have been charged to the profit and loss of mobilization period, but there was really no excuse for it. The remedy would have been preliminary instruction, but there was no time for that during the actual period of mobilization.

Sergt.-Major Therkildsen took the place of Sergt.-Major Speares, and at the time of Corp. Julian Jackson's release from field duty because of his health, he was replaced by Abraham W. Glick, who entered the field with the detachment of Company C, 3rd Infantry, under Lieut. Harvey N. Smith. Glick remained with the regiment until the summer of 1918 and was one of the best men the office ever had.

Three wooden files had been added to the office equipment, together with a Corona typewriter that was especially valuable in the preparation of reports while on the road. This little typewriter never needed a repair man to keep it in working order despite the large amount of slamming around which it necessarily received during the hundreds of miles that it traveled in the Adjutant's automobile. The office furniture was added to from time to time through the carpentry efforts of Corp. Edward Waddin, the telephone operator, and eventually each stenographer and clerk had a little home-made table-desk with a drawer.

Considerable representation was made to the Adjutant-General's office on the subject of office equipment, but it was not until Oct. 7th, when Major James Blair, representing the A. G., visited the headquarters at Croton Lake and saw the need of equipment that anything was done. On that date Major Blair put official approval on the purchase of necessary office equipment and supplies, including 8 steel filing cabinets, 11 desks, chairs,

letter baskets, and two mimeograph machines. These were delivered during November and made a great difference in the work. Special Orders 245, A. G. O., carried the authority for necessary purchase and the rental of typewriters.

It was during October that the correspondence of the regiment began to mount in volume out of all proportion to that of the previous months. It was also during this month that the check-roll call of the regiment, referred to in the chronological history of the organization, was instituted by Colonel Rose.

Since this became more or less of a fixed, though irregular, regimental custom for a time, it became a part of the regimental paper-work; something absolutely new to regimental paper-work precedents. The idea of it was to account for the exact location of every officer and enlisted man in the regiment at a given time, and the first two check-roll calls were sprung without any previous warning whatsoever. At about two o'clock in the afternoon of Oct. 18th, all company commanders were notified that at 3.15 they would be required to tell by telephone exactly where all officers and men of their command were at that time, and what they were doing.

The 1st Battalion took it literally, and such answers as, "washing his face," "looking at a picture-book," "playing cards," "watching a card game," and many other ones, came through on the first call, which kept the wires busy until just before six o'clock. A sample page of the results of the first check-roll call is given herewith. It is of the 9th C. A. C. command on Sector S-4, Capt. John M. Thompson commanding:

| <i>Name</i> | <i>Rank</i> | <i>Where</i> | <i>What Doing</i> |
|--------------------|-------------|---|----------------------|
| Capt. Thompson | Captain | At hdqrs. | Supervision |
| Lieut. Welsh | Lieut. | On leave to N. Y. | On leave |
| Sergt. Bolermolist | Sergeant | Office | 'Phoning report |
| " Marsh | " | In camp | Sleeping |
| " Clinton | " | On leave | New York City |
| " Bolladido | " | On line | Inspecting guard |
| Sup. Sergt. Murray | Sup. Sergt. | Poughkeepsie | After supplies |
| Corp. Smith | Corporal | On guard. Lower-end inspection of Posts 8 to 12 | On guard duty |
| " Tully | " | On guard, lower-end inspection, Posts 6 to 1 | On guard duty |
| " Goldberg | " | At camp | Drilling |
| " Sullivan | " | " " | " |
| " Rubino | " | " " | " |
| Cook Dolson | Cook | Mess Shack | Getting Supper ready |
| " Eisilly | " | " " | " " " |

| <i>Name</i> | <i>Rank</i> | <i>Where</i> | <i>What Doing</i> |
|-----------------|-------------|-------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Pvt. Clack | Private | Mess Shack | K. P. |
| " Ryan | " | " " | " |
| Mech. Noon | " | Mechanic | Making floor in Cap- tains' tents |
| Mus. Corrie | Musician | Headquarters | Drilling |
| Pvt. Gaffney | Private | Hdqrs. Post 1 | On guard |
| " Frankel | " | " " 2 | " " |
| " Ford | " | " " 3 | " " |
| " Hold | " | " " 4 | " " |
| " Klenert | " | " " 5 | " " |
| " White | " | " " 6 | " " |
| " Gaffney, E. | " | " " 7 | " " |
| " Kennedy | " | " " 8 | " " |
| " Reiner | " | " " 9 | " " |
| " Meltzer | " | " " 10 | " " |
| " Cook | " | " " 11 | " " |
| " Whalen | " | " " 12 | " " |
| " Ryner | " | " 1st Battn. | " " |
| " Carroll | " | " " " | " " |
| " Hlavac Sponza | " | Office of company | Clerical work |
| " Healy | " | New York City | Absent with leave |
| " Hubbert | " | " " " | " " " |
| " Harwidt | " | " " " | " " " |
| Sergt. Clinton | Sergeant | " " " | " " " |
| Pvt. Goldberg | Private | Unknown | " " " |
| " Corofolo | " | Hdqrs. | Drilling |
| " Nelson | " | " | " |
| " De Ganio | " | " | " |

Boiled down to the information required; that is, the number and percentage of the commands on guard duty, in camp, off duty, and on special duty, the recapitulation of the two battalions by companies and by battalions showed the following results on the first check-roll call:

FIRST BATTALION

8.45 P.M.

| | <i>Total</i> | <i>Guard</i> | <i>Per</i> | <i>Camp</i> | <i>Per</i> | <i>Off</i> | <i>Per</i> | <i>Special</i> | <i>Per</i> |
|------------------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|-------------|--------------|-------------|--------------|----------------|--------------|
| | | <i>Duty</i> | <i>Cent.</i> | <i>Duty</i> | <i>Cent.</i> | <i>Duty</i> | <i>Cent.</i> | <i>Duty</i> | <i>Cent.</i> |
| <i>Battery B</i> | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | 1 | 1 | 100 | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 61 | 15 | 24 | 4 | 7 | 42 | 69 | .. | .. |
| <i>Battery D</i> | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | 1 | 1 | 100 | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 65 | 15 | 23 | 5 | 8 | 45 | 69 | .. | .. |
| <i>Co. F, 1st Inf.</i> | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | 1 | .. | .. | 1 | 100 | .. | .. | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 39 | 12 | 30 | 7 | 17 | 20 | 51 | .. | .. |

FIRST BATTALION—Continued

8.45 P.M.

| | Total | Guard | Per | Camp | Per | Off | Per | Special | Per |
|-------------------------|-------|-------|-------|------|-------|------|-------|---------|-------|
| | Duty | Duty | Cent. | Duty | Cent. | Duty | Cent. | Duty | Cent. |
| <i>Battery A</i> | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | 3 | 2 | 66 | .. | .. | .. | .. | 1 | 33 |
| Men..... | 56 | 11 | 19 | 2 | 4 | 43 | 77 | .. | .. |
| <i>Co. B, 69th Inf.</i> | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | 2 | 1 | 50 | .. | .. | 1 | 50 | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 51 | 8 | 15 | 10 | 20 | 33 | 65 | .. | .. |
| <i>Co. A, 69th Inf.</i> | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | 2 | 2 | 100 | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 52 | 19 | 36 | 4 | 7 | 29 | 57 | .. | .. |
| <i>12th Inf.</i> | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | 3 | .. | .. | 3 | 100 | .. | .. | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 108 | 22 | 20 | 14 | 13 | 72 | 66 | .. | .. |
| <i>9th C. A. C.</i> | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | 2 | .. | .. | 1 | 50 | 1 | 50 | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 100 | 22 | 22 | 7 | 7 | 71 | 71 | .. | .. |
| <i>Battery C</i> | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | 3 | .. | .. | 2 | 66 | 1 | 33 | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 100 | 31 | 31 | 6 | 6 | 63 | 63 | .. | .. |
| <i>Co. G, 1st Inf.</i> | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 22 | .. | .. | 4 | 18 | 18 | 82 | .. | .. |
| <i>Headquarters</i> | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | 12 | .. | .. | 10 | 83 | 2 | 17 | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 5 | .. | .. | 5 | 100 | .. | .. | .. | .. |
| RECAPITULATION | | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | 30 | 6 | 20 | 18 | 68 | 5 | 17 | 1 | 33 |
| Men..... | 659 | 155 | 23.5 | 68 | 10.5 | 436 | 66 | .. | .. |

SECOND BATTALION

| | Guard | Per | Camp | Per | Off | Per | Special | Per |
|------------------------------------|-------|-------|------|-------|------|-------|---------|-------|
| | Duty | Cent. | Duty | Cent. | Duty | Cent. | Duty | Cent. |
| <i>Co. B (Olive Bridge, N. Y.)</i> | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | .. | .. | 1 | 50 | .. | .. | 1 | 50 |
| Men..... | 16 | 32 | 21 | 42 | 6 | 12 | 1 | 2 |
| <i>Co. A (Atwood, N. Y.)</i> | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | .. | .. | 1 | 50 | 1 | 50 | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 19 | 29 | 40 | 61 | 3 | 8 | .. | .. |
| <i>Co. H (Stone Ridge, N. Y.)</i> | | | | | | | | |
| Officers..... | .. | .. | 2 | 100 | .. | .. | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 16 | 20 | 45 | 62 | 8 | 11 | .. | .. |

SECOND BATTALION—Continued

| | Guard Duty | Per Cent. | Camp Duty | Per Cent. | Off Duty | Per Cent. | Special Duty | Per Cent. |
|--|---------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|-------------|--------------|-----------------|--------------|
|--|---------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|-------------|--------------|-----------------|--------------|

Troop B (New Paltz, N. Y.)

| | | | | | | | | |
|---------------|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|
| Officers..... | .. | .. | 1 | 50 | 1 | 50 | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 19 | 28 | 38 | 47 | 11 | 16 | .. | .. |

Co. I (Gardiner, N. Y.)

| | | | | | | | | |
|---------------|----|----|----|-----|----|----|----|----|
| Officers..... | .. | .. | 3 | 100 | .. | .. | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 18 | 18 | 70 | 71 | 10 | 10 | .. | .. |

Troop G (Walden, N. Y.)

| | | | | | | | | |
|---------------|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|
| Officers..... | 1 | 33 | 1 | 33 | 1 | 33 | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 15 | 24 | 36 | 58 | 11 | 17 | .. | .. |

Co. F (Vail's Gate, N. Y.)

| | | | | | | | | |
|---------------|----|----|----|----|---|----|----|----|
| Officers..... | .. | .. | 1 | 50 | 1 | 50 | .. | .. |
| Men..... | 19 | 25 | 47 | 65 | 8 | 10 | 2 | 2 |

Headquarters

(New Paltz, N. Y.)

| | | | | | | | | |
|---------------|----|----|---|----|---|----|----|----|
| Officers..... | .. | .. | 4 | 80 | 1 | 20 | .. | .. |
|---------------|----|----|---|----|---|----|----|----|

RECAPITULATION

| | | | | | | | | |
|---------------|-----|------|-----|-------|----|------|---|-----|
| Officers..... | 1 | 5 | 14 | 70 | 5 | 20 | 1 | 5 |
| Men..... | 122 | 25.5 | 291 | 61.25 | 59 | 12.4 | 3 | 0.6 |

NOTE: Above figures will not equal the total strength of Oct. 18th, as there are several classes not included in the tabulation.

It will be noted that more than 20 per cent. of the regiment was shown on actual guard duty at this time. With an average of six-hour shifts, this put 80 per cent. of the regiment on guard duty every twenty-four hours, allowing but 20 per cent. for special duty, of which there was considerable sickness, absence with and without leave, and detail work, such as kitchen police, etc. From this it will be immediately seen that the guard margin of the regiment was small.

General Orders No. 21, issued with the benefit of the first check-roll call's experience, prescribed a form for all future check-roll calls, classifying company posts and outposts separately, and prescribing definite classification for the manner in which the men were to be reported. This resulted in standardized check-roll calls from every company on the line on Oct. 24th, of which the following report from Co. A, 69th Infantry, later Provisional Company B, is a very good sample:

Co. A, 69TH INFANTRY

Sector S-2, from south end Garrison Tunnel to south Peekskill
siphon chamber.

Cortlandville, N. Y.

Officers

Headquarters Camp, Cortlandville, N. Y.

On Line Inspecting:

Captain J. J. Roche.

1st Lieut. E. N. Kirkpatrick.

Men

Headquarters Camp.

In Camp on Duty:

R. O. O'Grady, 1st Sergt.

Philip Campiglia, Mess Sergt.

Thomas F. Nash, Supply Sergt.

Frank X. Marr, Sergt.

Michael A. Keenan, Sergt.

Frank W. Deacher, Sergt.

William Bishop, Pvt., Co. Clerk.

George B. Colby, Cook.

In Camp Off Duty:

| | |
|-------------------|--------------------------|
| Private Orendach. | Private Larkin, J. B. A. |
|-------------------|--------------------------|

| | |
|------------------|------------------|
| Private Schlitt. | Private Trainor. |
|------------------|------------------|

| | |
|-----------------|-------------------|
| Private Boland. | Private Tholssen. |
|-----------------|-------------------|

| | |
|-----------------|-----------------|
| Private Dawson. | Private Keller. |
|-----------------|-----------------|

| | |
|----------------|-----------------|
| Private Burns. | Private Moonan. |
|----------------|-----------------|

| | |
|------------------|----------------|
| Private Bingham. | Private Wynne. |
|------------------|----------------|

| | |
|-----------------|---------------------|
| Private Stokes. | Corporal Conerford. |
|-----------------|---------------------|

| | |
|-------------|----|
| Total | 14 |
|-------------|----|

On Guard:

Private Burke, J. M., Post 7, Cat Hill Manhole 71,
Culv. 131.

Private Larkin, J. J., Posts 8 and 9 Cat Hill, Culv. 132
and 133.

Private Barrett, J. H., Post 10, Cat Hill Culv. 134.

Private Doyle, T., Post 12, North Peekskill Siphon
Chamber.

Private Coogan, Post 13, Manholes 73 and 74 and Blow-off Chamber and Manhole 74.

Private Fitzpatrick, Post 14, Manholes 75 and 76.

Private Scully, Air Valve 78, Manhole 79, Blow-off Chamber 77, Culv. 135.

Private Klapthor, Post 15, Manholes 80, 81 and 82 and Culvs. 136 and 138.

Total..... 8

Supervising Non-Coms.:

Corporal King, Jos., Post 11, patrols from north Siphon Chamber to Cat Hill Tunnel.

Total..... 1

Special Duty:

Mechanic O'Connor with officers on line.

Total..... 1

Absent with Leave:

Hynes, Chas. M., Sanitary Corps, in city.

Williams, Michael, Private, on pass.

Total..... 2

Absent without Leave:

Private Thomas J. Manley, New York, it is thought.

Total..... 1

In Arrest:

Private Reiss, in camp, 5 days, disobedience and A. W.

O. L. Waiting for G. C. M.

Total..... 1

Sick:

Doyle, Daniel, Peekskill Hospital, since Oct. 23rd.

Total..... 1

Outpost, Sprout Brook:

Supervising N.-C. O. Sergt. John Bowen.

Total..... 1

In Camp on Duty:

Roche, T. Cook.

Total..... 1

In Camp Off Duty:

| | |
|-------------------|-------------------|
| Private Lyons. | Private McElhern. |
| Private Pelierei. | Private Hennessy. |
| Private Crowley. | Private Green. |
| Private Looney. | Private Young. |
| Total..... | 8 |

On Guard:

| | |
|---|----|
| Private Sullivan, Manhole 67, Open Drain 130, and Cable into Tunnel. | |
| Corporal Wall, Posts 2 and 3 connecting 1 and 4. | |
| Private Larkin, Post 4, at N. Sprout Brook Siphon Chamber. | |
| Private Close, Post 5, Manhole 70 to Blow-off Chamber 69, Sprout Brook Division House and Manhole 68. | |
| Private Djornquist, Post 6, S. Sprout Brook Siphon Chamber. | |
| Total..... | 5 |
| <hr/> | |
| Total men..... | 52 |
| Total officers..... | 2 |

As will be at once seen, the check-roll call added tremendously to the work in the Adjutant's office. On check-roll call nights no one thought of sleep until a late hour, and the recapitulations furnished a big problem.

The immediate benefit of it was to keep the line tightened and to assure the commanding officer of the regiment that each individual unit commander knew the whereabouts of all men of his command at all times. A check-roll call was likely to strike the line at any time of day or night, and after the issuance of General Orders on the subject there was no further warning. Totals must of necessity check against the morning report of the command involved on the same day or explanation was required.

It was about this time that there was put into effect at headquarters the information slip system, which proved to be a time-eliminator of the nth power in routine matters. Since manpower in the Adjutant's office was constantly as serious a problem as it was elsewhere in the regiment, the information slip, patterned after Moss, was an indorsement-eliminator, a big aid to the office daily. Routine matters referred to the supply officer or disbursing officer for their information, as well as matters passing between the post commandant's office and the Adjutant's

office, referred from the Lieutenant-Colonel to the Adjutant's office for file, or referred from the Adjutant's office to the Judge-Advocate or summary court officers for their information, were invariably handled with information slips after their establishment as a part of the prescribed regimental forms, and an average of ten to twenty indorsements were thus saved daily. A typical information slip is herewith reproduced:

INFORMATION SLIP
HEADQUARTERS 1ST PROV. REGT.
Ossining, N.Y.

Attached referred to
C. O.
Supply Officer
Medical Officer
Disbursing Officer
1st Battalion Hdqrs.
2nd Battalion Hdqrs.
3rd Battalion Hdqrs.
Judge Advocate

For

Notation and return
Necessary action
File
Remark
Investigation and report
Recommendation
Correction as indicated
Information and guidance

Captain, 1st Infantry, N.Y.G.
Adjutant

Early in November, Frank C. Dehm of the 71st Infantry joined the Adjutant's office as a stenographer. Dehm was one of the hardest workers that ever pounded the keys of a typewriter at Regimental Headquarters. Once the lure of New York called him back to the big city and he was released, but later he came back again and filled a big gap in the stenographic force.

By the last of November, when the headquarters office moved into winter quarters in the little white building between Kelly's Hotel and the Crow Hill road, lights had been installed in the camp on the hill and the office furniture had arrived; the mimeograph was turning out as many orders in a minute as formerly could be produced in three hours of steady stroking of the gelatine duplicator, and it was a well-established office all the way through. With beaver-board lining, double windows and a couple of stoves on the lower floor as well as one on the upper floor, the little old building was mighty comfortable—sometimes too much so. Corp. Howard Seufert of Company L, 10th Infantry, the Adjutant's former company, was added to the ranks of the office men and O'Brien and O'Connor entered Uncle Sam's Q. M. C.

About this time there was added to the force in a clerical capacity a man who from that time until the regiment left the field stood as insurance to the Adjutant's office against clerical errors in all matters where figures were concerned. Corp. Francis Coughlan of the 14th Infantry was the kind of an accountant who did not know what it was to make a mistake, and as soon as this became apparent he was permanently attached as accountant and report clerk. Later, as a sergeant, he had complete charge of all matters pertaining to morning reports, all percentages of strength and sickness, and at the same time checked extensions and footings on all bills going through the Adjutant's department.

Upon Dehm's release there came into military life for the first time as a stenographer in the Adjutant's office, Ralph L. Ruebsamen, who later, under a supreme court order, was permitted to change his name to Ralph L. Rodney. As a matter of fact, he was seldom called by his full name. The irrepressibles in the Adjutant's office dubbed him "Rube," and "Rube" it was, even after his name was changed. Continuing, with one slight intermission, until the 1st of October, Sergeant Rodney was for some time Regimental Sergeant-Major, subsequent to Lieut. Therkildsen's promotion. Rodney was, in the parlance of the office, "a horse for work." For some time during the spring and summer he was given charge of and made responsible for the monthly summary court fine reports from sector commanders, and the compilation and culling from battalion inspectors' reports for transmittal to Brigade Headquarters. He has the distinction of being the one man of the office force at whom Cupid aimed his bow while he toiled between the clicking type-mills and the town of Mt. Kisco over the muddy back roads. He was married shortly after leaving the service in the fall of 1918.

Mylert McIntyre of the 12th Infantry was the first stenotype

operator to become a part of the office, joining the ranks of the toilers while the snow was still on the ground in the early spring of 1918. McIntyre and his stenotype were a big help, and McIntyre's good judgment as a stenographer was of particular assistance in work where much judgment is always required. He could take dictation faster than the average person could give it.

The brigading of the regiment added considerably to the duties of the Adjutant's office, but after the early part of 1918 night work, as a general proposition in the office, was discontinued. One non-commissioned officer was on duty at all times, and the office force slept in the winter office building. In the summer the Adjutant's sleeping-quarters were directly in the rear of the summer office, and one non-commissioned officer was required to remain on night duty only until the time the Adjutant turned in.

On April 1st the office moved back to the hill-top and summer quarters.

Early in June the Federal enlistment lure struck the headquarters and line of the First Provisional. Glick departed, soon to be followed by Rodney and Blizzard, but both the latter, being rejected, returned to the old work. Ralph S. Happel of Troop B had been placed in charge of the filing work, and it was thus possible to give to Blizzard on his return the well-earned position of Regimental Sergeant-Major that his experience with the office entitled him to. Rodney, upon his return, was carried as sergeant first class. About this time Lieut. Therkildsen, who had been attached to the office since the previous fall, was detailed to duty on the line, and with the enlistment of McIntyre in the navy, Herbert F. Thornblade, a stenotype-operator, was enlisted in one of the line companies and brought to headquarters.

These were tight times for the Adjutant's office in the matter of stenographic help, and Mrs. T. R. Hutton was enlisted as a volunteer stenographer to help through some of the tight places. With Thornblade added to the force, Rodney returned, and Joseph W. Judge, of Company A, 1st Infantry, brought into the field as a stenographer, things eased off a bit. Then Happel was drafted into Federal service, and Willard G. Ruff, of Troop B, was for a time filing-clerk. J. J. Sheahan of the 71st Infantry was temporarily attached to the headquarters office as a stenographer.

The number of reports had greatly increased since the entry of the regiment into the field. The contents of General Orders 44, issued in June, were somewhat of a shock even to those handling the reports. The order is reproduced herewith and gives an indication of the volume of routine reports handled by the Adjutant's office, exclusive of the routine correspondence and the special

reports required. This does not consider the reports furnished the City of New York upon direction of the Brigade Commander, including daily summary and monthly consolidation of Form No. 44.

HEADQUARTERS
FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT
NEW YORK GUARD

CROTON LAKE, N. Y.
June 18, 1918.

GENERAL ORDERS
No. 44

1. For the information and guidance of Officers of the First Provisional Regiment, this Headquarters has prepared a tickler, which shows the reports required by the various Headquarters, when required, their nature, form, to whom they are to be sent, and the authority for the same.

2. The following reports and returns are required as noted below.

3. Wherever the terms G. O. and S. O. are used they refer to General Orders and Special Orders of this Regiment unless otherwise specified.

DAILY

| <i>By</i> | <i>Nature</i> | <i>Form</i> | <i>To</i> | <i>Auth.</i> | <i>Remarks</i> |
|------------|---------------------|-------------|-----------|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Unit C. O. | Morning report | Telephone | Bn. C. O. | R. 931 | Time set by Bn. C. O. |
| Unit C. O. | Morning report | 43 Mail | Reg. Hq. | R. 931 G. O. 41-1917 | Extract from morning report |
| Unit C. O. | Sick report | Teleph. | Bn. M. O. | G. O. 29 c. s. | Note hospital days |
| Bn. C. O. | Consolidated report | Teleph. | Reg. Hq. | G. O. 17 c. s. | Before 9 A.M. |
| Bn. Insp. | Inspection report | Letter | Bn. C. O. | Reg. Circ. 27 and 33 c. s. | As directed |
| Bn. M. O. | Sick report | Teleph. | Bn. C. O. | R. 944 | Written report of inspection made |

WEEKLY

| <i>By</i> | <i>Nature</i> | <i>Form</i> | <i>To</i> | <i>Auth.</i> | <i>Remarks</i> |
|------------|--------------------|-------------|-----------|-------------------------------|--|
| Unit C. O. | Car report | Letter | Reg. Hq. | G. O. 14-1917 | Showing mileage of gas, oil, tires and repairs |
| Bn. C. O. | Inspector's report | Letter | Reg. Hq. | Reg. Circ. 27 and 33 c. s. | To be at Reg. Hq. by Sunday, A.M. with comment |

SEMI-MONTHLY

| <i>By</i> | <i>Nature</i> | <i>Form</i> | <i>To</i> | <i>Auth.</i> | <i>Remarks</i> |
|---------------------|--------------------------------------|-------------|----------------|--------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Surgeon- dentist | Treatment report | Letter | Chief M. O. | C. O. | Detailed report of treatment |
| Chief M.O. | Report of Sur- geon-dentist | Letter | Reg. Hq. | C. O. | With comment |
| Chief M.O. | Hospital and prescription book | 67 | Brig. Hq. | G. O. 2 Prov. Brigade | On the 1st day of the month |
| Chief M.O. | Hospital and prescription book | 67 | Brig. Hq. | G. O. 2 Prov. Brigade | On the 15th day of the month. |

MONTHLY

On the 1st day of each month

| <i>By</i> | <i>Nature</i> | <i>Form</i> | <i>To</i> | <i>Auth.</i> | <i>Remarks</i> |
|------------|--|-----------------------|------------|--------------------------------|--|
| Unit C. O. | Guard cards | Prescribed | Reg. Hq. | G. O. 18-1917 G. O. 6 c. s. | |
| Unit C. O. | Roster | R. 482 | Reg. Hq. | C. O. | Showing losses and gains |
| Unit C. O. | Subsistence report | As fur- nished | Reg. S. O. | G. O. 8 c. s. Reg. Cir. 5 | Showing all bills for month |
| Unit C. O. | Ration return | Q. M. Form No. 223 | Reg. Hq. | R. 1115 G. O. 15-1917 | |
| Unit C. O. | Forage ration return | 91 | Reg. Hq. | R. 673 G. O. 42-1917 | Wherever public animals are maintained |
| Unit C. O. | Vouchers and bills | | S. O. | Circ. 1, Prov. Brig. | For previous month |
| Unit C. O. | Transportation | 31 | S. O. | | |
| Unit C. O. | Requisition for electric bulbs | Letter | S. O. | G. O. 39 c. s. | |
| Unit C. O. | Delivery slips for ice | | S. O. | G. O. 37 c. s. | |
| Unit C. O. | Requisition for forms | Letter | Reg. Hq. | Reg. Circ. No. 8 | For month next following |
| Bn. M. O. | Sanitary report | Prescribed | C. O. | G. O. 29 c. s. | Venereal |
| Unit C. O. | Hospital report | Letter | Bn. M. O. | G. O. 24 c. s. | Showing hos- pital men days |
| Unit C. O. | Report of worn or expended parts of autos, wagons, sleighs, harness, or other method of transportation | Letter | S. O. | G. O. 42-1917 | |

H-A-L-TT !—WHA-ZAA ?

On the 5th day of each month

| <i>By</i> | <i>Nature</i> | <i>Form</i> | <i>To</i> | <i>Auth.</i> | <i>Remarks</i> |
|------------|------------------|-------------|-----------|---------------|--|
| Unit C. O. | Telephone report | Prescribed | Bn. C. O. | G. O. 9 c. s. | Accompanied by checks payable to S. O. |

On the 10th day of each month

| <i>By</i> | <i>Nature</i> | <i>Form</i> | <i>To</i> | <i>Auth.</i> | <i>Remarks</i> |
|-----------|------------------|-------------|-----------|--------------|--|
| Bn. C. O. | Telephone report | Prescribed | Reg. Hq. | G. 9 c. s. | Accompanied by checks payable to S. O. |

On the 25th day of each month

| <i>By</i> | <i>Nature</i> | <i>Form</i> | <i>To</i> | <i>Auth.</i> | <i>Remarks</i> |
|------------|---------------------|-------------|-----------|--|---------------------------------|
| Unit C. O. | Summary court fines | Letter | Reg. Hq. | G. O. 13 c. s. Cir. 23 c. s. S. O. 10 Prov. Brig. | From the 25th of previous month |

On the 26th day of each month

| <i>By</i> | <i>Nature</i> | <i>Form</i> | <i>To</i> | <i>Auth.</i> | <i>Remarks</i> |
|------------|---------------|-------------|-----------|------------------------|--|
| Unit C. O. | Pay-rolls | 33 | Reg. Hq. | Cir 11 and 33 c. s. | Accompanied by yellow slips when necessary |

WHEN OCCASION ARISES

| <i>By</i> | <i>Nature</i> | <i>Form</i> | <i>To</i> | <i>Auth.</i> | <i>Remarks</i> |
|------------|--------------------------------------|-------------------------|-----------|----------------|---|
| Unit C. O. | Request for release and replacements | Letter | Reg. Hq. | G. O. 43 c. s. | Giving name, grade, home unit and reason for release |
| Unit C. O. | Unusual happening | Letter in quadruplicate | Bn. C. O. | C. O. | |
| Bn. C. O. | Unusual happening | Letter in triplicate | Reg. Hq. | C. O. | |
| Unit C. O. | Copy of commitment papers | Prescribed | Reg. Hq. | G. O. 4 c. s. | Prisoner should be accompanied by IPA, DL and commitment papers when forwarded to prison camp |

WHEN OCCASION ARISES—Continued

| <i>By</i> | <i>Nature</i> | <i>Form</i> | <i>To</i> | <i>Auth.</i> | <i>Remarks</i> |
|------------|--|-------------|-------------------|-------------------------|---|
| Unit C. O. | Transportation requests | 130 | A.-G. | S. O. 27 Prov. Brig. | Signed with letter of transmittal |
| Unit C. O. | Report of property lost, stolen or destroyed | 102 | S. O. | R. 1060 | |
| Unit C. O. | Report of transfer | Letter | Reg. Hq. | C. O. | Showing name, grade, unit and unit to or from which transferred |
| Unit C. O. | Destruction of packages | Letter | Reg. Hq. | G. O. 28 c. s. | |
| Unit C. O. | Transfer | 25 and 25-A | Receiving Officer | G. O. 43-1917 | Triplicate |
| Unit C. O. | Hire of civilian physician | Letter | Reg. Hq. | G. O. 43-1917 | Triplicate |

BY ORDER OF MAJOR WILLIAM L. BURNETT
Acting Lieut.-Col. Commanding

T. R. HUTTON,
Captain, 1st Infantry, N. Y. G.,
Adjutant.

OFFICIAL:

T. R. HUTTON,
Capt. 1st Inf. N. Y. G., Adjutant

These reports were checked as received on daily, weekly and monthly charts, arranged by companies, and at any time showing exactly what units were in arrears and to what extent.

Early in the summer a demand by Brigade Headquarters for release and replacement schedules of men to be relieved from the field made necessary the organization of this work by itself under charge of the sergeant-major. Requests for release approved by immediate and intermediate commanders came through to the Adjutant's office and were there compiled into the form shown herewith:

FORM OF RELEASE AND REPLACEMENT SCHEDULE

SCHEDULE OF RELEASE AND REPLACEMENTS
FOR THE FIRST PROV. REGT., N. Y. G.

| <i>Name</i> | <i>Prov. Co.</i> | <i>Original Status</i> | <i>Cause of Release</i> | <i>Regiment from which Replacement Is Desired</i> |
|-----------------------|----------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------------|---|
| Mix, William A., Pvt. | B | Co. F, 23rd Infantry | Dependency | 69th |
| Mann, John L., Pvt. | E | Co. B, 69th Infantry | Fed. service | 69th |
| Ford, Arthur W., Pvt. | F | 4th Co., 8th C. A. C. | Fed. enlistment | 47th |

FORM OF RELEASE—Continued

| Name | Prov. Co. | Original Status | Cause of Release | Regiment from which Replacement Is Desired |
|-----------------------------|--------------|------------------------|---------------------|---|
| McCutcheon, Arthur, Pvt. | M. G. | Co. H, 23rd Infantry | Phys. disability | 23rd |
| Luyster, William, Pvt. | M. G. | Co. M, 23rd Infantry | Phys. disability | 23rd |
| Haner, George, Pvt. | M. G. | 9th Co. 13th C. A. C. | Dependency | 23rd |
| Smith, Terence J., Pvt. | M. G. | Co. G, 23rd Infantry | Dependency | 23rd |
| Taft, George W., Pvt. | M. G. | 8th Co., 13th C. A. C. | Dependency | 23rd |
| Vogt, William, Pvt. | M. G. | Co. B, 23rd Infantry | Dependency | 23rd |
| Burroughs, W. H., Pvt. | M. G. | 13th C. A. C. | Dependency | 23rd |
| Horan, Thomas, Pvt. | M. G. | 13th C. A. C. | Dependency | 23rd |
| Gildersleeve, Herbert, Pvt. | Hdqrs. | Co. F, 1st Infantry | Fed. service | |

and recapitulated as follows:

RECAPITULATION

From: Commanding Officer, First Provisional Regiment, N. Y. G.
 To: Commanding General, Provisional Brigade, Albany, N. Y.
 Subject: Release and Replacements.

1. Requesting that orders be issued relieving from further duty with the First Prov. Regt. and returning to their original status the men listed in the attached schedule.

2. Requesting that orders be issued for the replacement of these men as indicated in Column 5 and totaling as follows:

| Organization | Number | Destination |
|---------------------------|--------|--------------------------------|
| 69th Infantry | 1 | Co. B, Vancortlandville, N. Y. |
| 69th Infantry | 1 | Co. F, Olive Bridge, N. Y. |
| 47th Infantry | 1 | Co. F, New Paltz, N. Y. |
| 23rd Infantry | 8 | M. G. Co., Newburgh, N. Y. |
| Total . . . 69th Infantry | 2 | |
| 47th Infantry | 1 | |
| 23rd Infantry | 8 | |
| | — | |
| | 11 | |

JWJ

JOHN B. ROSE,
Colonel.

This form was approved by the Commanding General and thereafter became the standard for release and replacement schedules.

A separate card-index system, checked against requests and actual releases under orders from the Adjutant-General, was maintained as a tickler and final cross check on the releases themselves. By this card index the omission of three schedules totalling over seventy-five men was located shortly after the omission occurred, and a great deal of confusion avoided in consequence. At periods when superior headquarters lost track of the exact status of the releases requested, the releases issued and the replacements that had actually been made, reference to the schedules and a chart kept by the sergeant-major in connection with the daily recapitulation enabled the department to give immediate information.

While on the subject of releases and cross indices something should be said concerning the cross index established and maintained on the general and special orders of the regiment—an index that required perhaps an hour a day to keep up, and which often saved hours of labor in running through back orders for some particular information that was wanted by some one of the departments or by a unit commander. A sample of the Order Index is given herewith:

Specimen of Index Card

Jo — —

Joslyn, Cook Raymond. Batt. A, 3rd F. A. Release
S. O. 107.

Jorgensen, Pvt. Viggo. Co. B, 47th Inf. (F) Re-
lease S. O. No. 118—Par. II.

Jones, Corp. Wm. R. Troop G, Sq. D. (L) Release
S. O. No. 123—Par VI.

Johnson, Pvt. Gilbert. Transferred to Supply Co. as
Acting Sgt. Chauf. S. O. No. 202—Par. V.

In addition to this a cross-index system was kept for the current correspondence at one time. The dual-number system was so simple, however, that this was not vital to the immediate location of correspondence and was used more as a check on the filing-clerk than for any other reason.

Summary Court cases were filed alphabetically, while descriptive lists were filed according to companies and then alphabetically. Orders, filed chronologically in the correspondence file under their respective subdivision and subject, were also kept in bound form, available for reference, and extra sets were filed for future reference.

To Sergeant Coughlan fell the duty of a daily summary of the

condition of the regiment, made in quadruplicate, one copy going to the Commanding Officer, one to the Lieutenant-Colonel, one to the Adjutant and one to the sergeant-major for filing. A sample report is printed herewith:

MORNING REPORT, DECEMBER 24TH, 1918.

| <i>Present</i> | | <i>Absent</i> | | <i>Present and Absent</i> | |
|-----------------|---------------|-----------------|---------------|---------------------------|---------------|
| <i>Officers</i> | <i>E. Men</i> | <i>Officers</i> | <i>E. Men</i> | <i>Officers</i> | <i>E. Men</i> |
| 59 | 969 | 2 | 82 | 61 | 1,051 |

Prisoners 10

A. W. O. L. 2

—
12

Sick percentage, 6.50

A. W. O. L.

| <i>1st Battalion</i> | | <i>2nd Battalion</i> | | <i>3rd Battalion</i> | |
|----------------------|---|----------------------|---|----------------------|----|
| Co. A. | 0 | Co. E. | 0 | Co. I. | 0 |
| Co. B. | 0 | Co. F. | 5 | Co. K. | 0 |
| Co. C. | 0 | Co. G. | 0 | Co. L. | 16 |
| Co. D. | 0 | Co. H. | 1 | Co. M. | 0 |
| — | | M. G. Co. . . . | 2 | — | |
| 0 | | — | | 16 | |
| | | 8 | | | |

Total, 24

This was placed on the officers' desks before 10.30 o'clock in the morning and gave a complete idea of the condition of the regiment. At a glance the commanding officer was able to tell what the problem of the day was, as far as man power was concerned, before the Regimental 44 came to him for signature.

Sick charts in percentages and strength charts in units were maintained throughout the regiment's service, both appearing in the pages of this work. During the influenza epidemic field-hospital charts were maintained at the Adjutant's office, showing the rise and fall of influenza cases and general cases and the deaths as they occurred at each hospital. It was during the epidemic that Capt. John Towner was for some time attached to the Adjutant's office for the special sick reports required.

One of the biggest problems with which the Adjutant's office

had to contend was the maintenance of descriptive lists in proper fashion. This was a part of the great detail made necessary by the coming and going of the eight thousand men who at one time and another were a part of the First Provisional Regiment. It was impossible to keep all descriptive lists to date. In many cases men entered the field without any descriptive lists whatsoever, and by the time their descriptive lists were forwarded they had been returned to home station. The same thing was true of men who came out in units. There were numerous instances of men inspected and selected for service, who with their descriptive lists in the pockets of the inspecting officer and their name on the roster forwarded to the Adjutant's office, developed in two or three hours cases of acute dependency that resulted in their not entering the field at all.

The departure of the National Guard troops, after months of federalization, and the consequent use of United States forms had left the State short of the proper amount of State forms necessary for the transaction of the business of a regiment in the field service. This was accentuated by the very conditions under which the regiment operated, as, for instance, in the matter of Forms 43, where duplicates from each company for a month meant the use of about 1,000 Forms, 43 every 30 days. In addition to their reports to the First Provisional Regiment units in the field were also rendering weekly returns to home station, and they were seldom or never provided with forms from home station for this purpose. The result was a tremendous consumption of forms. Forms 44 were used in as proportionately large quantity, and had not the field headquarters of the 1st Infantry also been located with the headquarters of the First Provisional there would have been tight times in the matter of forms. On a number of occasions the office of the Adjutant-General must have been convinced that the First Provisional was using Forms 43 to paper its barracks with, but actually few were wasted; they were too precious.

Not the least of the difficulties under which the Adjutant's office operated from the beginning was the mail schedule in and out of Croton Lake Station, the nearest post-office. Letters mailed to the Adjutant-General or the Brigade Headquarters at Croton Lake Station arrived in some cases four days later at Albany, and in the meantime superior authority often sent through a reminder letter on a subject that had already been answered. This resulted in cross-communications and helped to involve things a little even under the best of circumstances. When the regimental headquarters moved to Ossining, this condition was eliminated.

Line mail time was never improved, however. A query to the commanding officer of Company E at Olive Bridge, passing through the Adjutant's office from Albany, required at least five days, and in winter seven or eight, for the round trip to and from the head of the line. This was without any delay at the company headquarters. Another three days might be consumed in getting it from Croton Lake to Albany, with the result that from eleven to fourteen days would be required for a question by Brigade Headquarters to be answered and back to the source of inquiry.

The question of mail time is introduced as a warning to troops taking the field. At the best, delay of army correspondence is certain, and that no misunderstanding may arise at superior headquarters, it would be well for company and regimental commanders, immediately upon ascertaining the length of time required for the passage of mail through the channel, to convey that information to superior headquarters. This will eliminate all questions as to the promptness with which correspondence is handled at subordinate headquarters and starts things right in so far as the transmittal of paper-work is concerned.

The influenza epidemic in October added a large volume of paper-work and special reports, and it was in this crisis that the Adjutant called on the National League for Women's Service that had done so much for the regiment in the way of auxiliary motor transportation. In response the League sent to headquarters Mrs. Florence Cox, Mrs. Lindsay Reid and Mrs. Richard Keogh, all of New York, who served as volunteers throughout the greater part of October. At that time the field hospital had been opened at Ossining and the stenographers were quartered with the nurses there, being brought to Croton Lake each morning and returning at night. The work which these women did in that crisis cannot be overestimated, as it bridged the work of the Adjutant's department over what seemed then a very uncertain time. Judge, and George W. Sackett, who had entered the field with him, were relieved just after the final departure of Rodney, as was George A. Seiler, who was temporarily stenographer.

On the night of the 25th of October the Adjutant's office moved to the new headquarters in Ossining, and on the morning of the 26th business opened as usual and was carried on as though no movement had occurred. The new office on the ground floor of the west wing and occupying a portion of the old mess hall of the Holbrook Military Academy, was a commodious and almost luxurious affair when compared with the first quarters of the same department. With desks, electric lights, an ample supply of typewriters, whirring mimeographs, glass-partitioned private

offices, steam-heated and a fireplace, it was a wonderful contrast to the dirt-floored, windy, ill-lighted and ill-fitted office of the first days of the regiment's history.

The term of the volunteer stenographers expired and the office was left with only Sergeant Thornblade shortly after the movement of the headquarters. Authority was secured for a civilian stenographer and Mrs. Hutton was again brought back into service, first as a volunteer, but later under pay. From that time until the conclusion of the service she and Sergeant Thornblade handled the stenography work of the office, which was considerably increased in the later days of the regiment's history.

The final complete organization of the office on December 15th, when Captain Hutton retired as Adjutant, to be assigned to special duty in the preparation of the regiment's history, was as follows:

Adjutant, Avery E. Lord, Captain, 1st Infantry.

Sergeant-Major, Charles J. Blizard, 1st Infantry.

Sergeant, 1st Class (records and reports), Francis Coughlan, 14th Infantry.

Sergeant, 1st Class (stenographer), Herbert F. Thornblade, 14th Infantry.

Sergeant (files and filing), Ralph Waterman, 1st Infantry.

Sergeant (order clerk, and copyist), Richard Ryal, 4th Infantry.

Corporal (reports), Forest Swingle, 4th Infantry.

Civilian Employee (stenographer), Ida Oram Hutton, Utica.

So the Adjutant's office stood at the conclusion of its work, well-housed, completely equipped, comfortable, well-organized and stable after its long struggle with the unprecedented in army paper-work. From the lines of this chapter two lessons may be drawn for those who may in later years find themselves face to face with similar or the same propositions that confronted the administrative office of the First Provisional Regiment: Method and Spirit.

Analysis of the methods employed in the paper-work of the regiment shows that only adaptability, interpretation of the regulations, and the precedents of army paper-work along the broadest lines, and the formation of an organization intended to meet the peculiar problems and conditions of the regiment's affairs, could have met the situations as they came. Perhaps the best illustration of this is in the filing system, which, because of its flexibility and catholicity, was later adopted for the 1st Infantry. Following an inspection by Lieut.-Col. Howard Smith, the Inspector-General of the State, it was given official sanction in the final sentence of Paragraph No. 34, G. O. 19, A.-G. O. 193.

The results obtained in the Adjutant's office in spite of shortage of equipment and knowledge in the early days and of man power at all times, are the best evidence of the spirit that permeated the men who at one time and another made up the office family. The department was particularly fortunate in the type of men that comprised it. Blessed with an ever-present sense of humor, an ability to see beyond the irritating details of the day the bright possibilities of the morrow, and always conscious of the fact that they were accomplishing the unprecedented, the clerks and stenographers formed at practically all periods of the regiment's history a flying wedge of highly developed team-work. And for the greater part, they were Personalities, each with a particular individuality that singled him out. The personal side of the work was the thing that made it go so well. It is the personal recollection that will remain the longest with one who, as these lines are written, gives without hesitation the full credit for the performances of the department to the men who served well and faithfully in the ranks and made it possible.

"Cog," of the eternal smile, the dragging foot and the waving hand; Glick, beaming through his glasses or growling about the mess; O'Brien, flushed, worried and profane; Speares, blinking in the lantern-light of the early days as he pounded at the Corona in the late watches of the night; Rube, soberly concerned at some untoward event or gently remonstrative on the subject of the Journal; Dehm, with his everlasting pipe and his black eyes snapping above it; Tom O'Connor of the cadenced manual and the swinging broom; little Thornblade and big McIntyre, with their yards and yards of "Chinese-laundry ticket" notes; and Blizzard, he of the flaming hair and pink cheeks, hunched above exasperating duplicator, and stroking, stroking, stroking, bent over his files, peering short-sightedly at his schedules or poking at the stove in an effort to smoke out some undesirable visitor—all these are mental snapshots of the men who helped to make a success of paper-work without precedent. They are the men who held intact the records of the regiment and in its day of Armageddon enabled it to stand and do battle armed with documentary evidence that made the position of those who opposed it untenable.

DOGS OF THE REGIMENT

*"Dogs of the Line, make answer—
What of the job and you?
What of the day and the night patrol?
What of the skunk and the woodchuck hole?
What of the bacon strip you stole?
What of the work ye do?"*

*"And an Airedale spoke from the 'Shokan,
Where the Tongore Siphons stand:
'This is our job—go to and fro
On the hard-packed earth or the beaten snow;
Down to the culvert mouth and in,
Through and through. And then we begin
Up at the top of the Line again;
Up and down in the snow and rain.' . . ."*
—*"The Dog Patrol."*

NIGHT in the 'Shokan.

Not a night of twinkling stars and creamy moon, but a shrouded, thick, sullen autumn night, swept by bare gusts from the giant black mountain shapes bending above the bays of the great lake; a thick, black night on the scarcely distinguishable line of cut and cover and the swooping white streak of the siphon path.

With every puff of wind naked tree branches grind and creak in the woods and there is a sudden rustle and murmur in the thickets and the long grasses of the cleared places. Then silence, until from afar to the north, at the lake's southern margin, a whisper that rises to an approaching roar tells of another blast. Again utter silence in the broad valley save for the distant moan of forests on the mountain shoulders.

Silence, profound and deep as the blackness of the night itself, enveloped in all the mystery of the unknown dark, oppressive, almost intangible in its presence; silence broken now by crunch of feet on the Atwood road that runs within stone's-throw of the cut and cover. It is a belated farmer trudging along the rough way.

Crashing into the dark there breaks from the cut and cover a hoarse challenge, such as was never uttered from human throat, a deep, thick, roaring, short-chopped bay; a threatening, cadenced "Bar-r-r-f!—Bar-r-f!—Barf!"

And the traveler, with an involuntary shudder, tightens his hold on the bundle that he carries and quickens his steps with the subdued exclamation, "The dogs!"

* * * * *

That hoarse, warning challenge has traveled far across the silent valley. The kitchen door of a little farm-house is opened for a moment, and a broad ray of yellow light streams out into the night, silhouetting the figure of a woman who halts in the act of shutting out the darkness as the deep-throated note comes through the night spaces. For a moment she listens and then closes the door with something of fear and horror in her eyes.

"The dogs!" she says to her husband.

* * * * *

Past midnight, and again silence; the brooding silence of the early morning hours, when the night wind has died and all the forces of nature, exhausted, in the ebb-hours of the twenty-four take their rest; silence on the long line of the cut and cover, where only a silent, looming shadow by the 'phone-box over the culvert tells of life guarding life.

Silence, split now, and shattered with nerve-tearing suddenness by a wild scream at the gates, where a farm road crosses the line of the Aqueduct; the scream of a man in mortal fear, followed by a snarling, charging roar.

A strong voice booming through the night, "Hold him, Rags!"; the sound of running feet, the flash of an electric torch, and a whimpering, worrying sound by the road crossing.

From the darkness into the flare of white light that gleams on the concrete posts of the B. W. S. fence a strong hand reaches into a writhing jumble of black shadows between the gates and drags backward a huge, slaving, broad-chested, bewhiskered demon of the night whose white teeth, uncovered by snarling lips, clash as the steel body strains forward.

"Get that man up," says the dog sergeant, and a shaken, white-faced Pole, with one coat-sleeve in tatters, staggers to his feet.

"Hang on to Help and get Betsy when she comes down. She's back there somewhere," continues the man in uniform, who holds the big, plunging Airedale, to one of the sentries. "Now you look here," he continues to the shaken traveler. "You ought to know by this time that you want to keep off of here at night. You can't take no chances with these dogs. They don't know you from the Kaiser. If you want to get across, you holler for the sentry.

I know, I know," as the Pole starts to explain. "I know who you are, but your boss has told you and the men on post have told you not to try to cross here at night. Sometime you'll get what the Austrian did down near Atwood. You keep away from here at night."

* * * * *

The light dies out with a snap, a shrill whistle rings along the cut and cover and on the hard, beaten pathway the pad! pad! pad! of the four-legged guardians of the Aqueduct dies away into silence. The Airedale patrol is working southward to the kennels at Atwood.

* * * * *

Of the Airedale patrol of the First Provisional Regiment more has probably been written and said than of any other phase of the regiment's life, because it was the sort of thing that appealed strongly to the imagination and gripped the interest at once. It was distinctly First Provisional, and although in its beginnings it was limited to but two sectors of the line, time only was necessary to make it an established thing from the Ashokan to the last post at Hillview.

Like the other distinctive methods of the regiment, it had birth in the mind of the Commanding Officer during his second swing on the northern end of the line following mobilization and occupation. The Olive Bridge-Atwood sector looked thin; it was in wild country, hemmed in by woods and thickets close to settlements where German sympathizers were known to live and far from centralized aid.

"Dogs," said Colonel Rose, "are, I think, our answer up here. If they work they can be extended to other sectors. See what you can do with Airedales." And the Adjutant went to work on the establishment of a dog patrol.

Imprimis, there was no money for the purchase of dogs. But Utica, the Adjutant's home, was an Airedale-breeding center. With this in mind, the Adjutant called Mayor James D. Smith on the telephone and explained the situation. At the same time he advised D. M. Johnson, of Utica, by wire, of the need for five or six Airedales for the beginnings of the work. Mayor Smith and Mr. Johnson busied themselves with such effect that on the 15th of August there were shipped from Utica five dogs, two full-grown Airedales, Rags and Patsy, the former donated by E. J. Otis, of Utica, and the latter by Dr. C. J. Baldwin, of Utica; Betsy, a young bitch given by Albert A. Friedel; Help, from

D. M. Johnson; and Brownie, a half Airedale, half mastiff, from Claude T. Firsching. D. M. Stewart of Tuckahoe later donated a full-grown Airedale Tipperary, which was sent to the Troop B sector; and W. T. Wood, of 146 Court Street, Brooklyn, furnished a big, handsome yearling, Dick. From W. H. Roberts, of Utica, came Rocket, a heavy, full-grown dog of the English type, and Mrs. M. E. Gates, of Mt. Kisco, presented the regiment with Judy, a police dog. Mrs. Gates was also instrumental in securing Dick.

Of these dogs, Patsy, Rags, Help, Betsy and Brownie were established at Awood, where the test was to be conducted under the direction of the Adjutant and immediately supervised and carried on by Sergeant William H. Rivers, Co. A, 1st Infantry, later Co. K, 10th Infantry. The questions to be answered by the test were these:

Could a patrol dog be subsisted on the kitchen scraps of five men without extra subsistence cost?

Could an Airedale be trained to the inspection of culverts and the brush immediately on the city property?

Could he be inculcated with the idea that a man not in uniform was a suspicious character that must be kept from the Aqueduct?

Would the blooded animal be able to stand the weather conditions which a patrol dog must face?

If all these questions could¹ be answered in the affirmative, the test would be successful. If any one² were answered in the negative, then something else must be tried.

The Airedale had been chosen for his heart and his head, for the well-known sagacity, adaptability and faithfulness of the breed; and the judgment of the Uticans who had made the test possible had brought to the regiment the best of material on which to work: Rags and Patsy, heaviest of their type, broad and deep of chest, heavy-boned and full of fight; the younger pups, true-bred with the exception of Brownie, and anxious to learn.

And the old adage that you cannot teach an old dog new tricks had a setback then and there. Perhaps it was because of the methods that were employed; perhaps it was because they were Airedales, kings of their tribe; perhaps it was because of the utter transplanting of them from one life to another; but in the next three months they had answered all of the questions in the affirmative.

The first task was to divorce them from their former lives, and in this their housing meant a great deal. A line of individual kennels was established in the rear of the Atwood barracks and close to the bank of the Aqueduct itself, each kennel provided



THE PATROL DOG AND HIS WORK

Upper left—Sergt. William Rivers and "Patsy." *Right*—Not Airedales, but born and bred to the line. *Center*—A glimpse at the Atwood training-school for Airedale patrol dogs; "Storm King," one of the first line-bred Airedale patrol dogs. *Lower*—With his inspection of a vulnerable culvert finished, the Airedale trotted out and went to the next. Something in the culvert; for all the patrol dog knew it was a bomb, and scratching, barking, and working until he could get a hold on it or until help came, he fulfilled his mission. Another end of the training-school "line."

with a raised-slat platform at its doorway, where the dog might lie above the dampness of the ground. From each kennel to a wire screen fifty feet away ran a trolley wire to which the dog's chain was fastened by a snap-ring that traveled from one end of the wire to the other. And to stimulate the dog to exercise, his food and water were invariably placed at the far end of the run. They were all born fighters, and as a result their trolley wires were kept far enough apart to prevent mixing in the dog lines. This establishment cost approximately six dollars per dog.

One man fed them, cared for them and trained them. With the new rank of dog sergeant, Rivers, who had raised Airedales and knew their ways, began his work.

The men of the company were friendly with the dogs, but were not allowed to play with them, fondle or feed them. All this was left to Rivers. Civilians visiting the camp were encouraged to poke sticks at the dogs and in other ways irritate them. Their entire world consisted of the dog-line and the Aqueduct, and they were taken from one to the other and nowhere else. The only men they knew were men in uniform at the barracks or on the line, and so well was the idea of the uniform impressed on them, that when Capt. Hayden J. Bates, of the Quartermaster Corps, clad in a black rubber coat, visited the dog-line at Atwood, in the fall of 1917, he had his troubles.

To teach the dog the desired work on the line he was first taken on walks along its length, impressed with the importance of the brush on either side and given to understand that it was a business proposition throughout. Then the culvert, cleaned of all stones and rubbish, was brought to his attention. On that sector there are many high culverts and the trainer first accompanied his dogs into the interiors, later sending them through alone, or in the case of a shaft culvert merely in and out.

On another visit the trainer would find a bundle of rags previously placed on the floor of the culvert by a sentry, and the dog was impressed with the importance of immediately getting this outside, barking as he did so. Later, this bundle of rags contained a stone or rock in its interior, and the dog, balking at first at the unaccustomed weight, was cheered on with his work by the trainer, who worked the animal into such a high state of excitement that he never thereafter forgot that a bundle in a culvert was an occasion for barking.

Finally, the time came when the instructor, standing on the top of the cut and cover, could order the dog down to the culvert's mouth, and the animal, running through to the shaft end, would bark notice that he had gone completely through, or, in

the case of a plain culvert, would emerge on the other side. Finding a package, bundle or even a stone on the culvert floor, he barked and tugged until it was outside and help came.

So the training went on with the long patrols, the use of imaginary bombs in the culverts, the search in the bush for imaginary, and later for real, prowlers. By the time winter set in the Airedale patrol was an established fact.

In the daytime the dogs were seldom used, but at night, when the keen scent and the keen hearing of the Airedales were of the greatest advantage in the guard work, they were abroad on the Aqueduct once or twice in charge of the dog sergeant. Aside from that they were confined closely to the dog-lines.

Naturally, they became more vicious than the ordinary dog, constant living in the open sharpened sight, scent and hearing to the uttermost, and their long midnight prowls made them strong and heavy. Every ounce of food eaten gave its full quota to strength and spirit; imbued with one idea, they ranged the cut and cover and the brush beside it with the single aim of finding something or some one. In the inspection of line and culvert they came to a natural division of the work. Rags and Patsy were the culvert specialists, while Help and Betsy ranged the brush. Brownie proved the case of the thoroughbred against the mongrel for specialized work. He fell by the wayside in the training school and never approached the others in ability or hard, systematic effort.

There were two or three incidents with civilians on the Aqueduct, incidents where the dog sergeant's quick action and supreme control of his animals saved the offenders, and then the fame of the Airedale patrol went throughout the countryside. There were no more innocent visitors to the cut and cover at night. How far the story of their prowess went to the hyphenated sympathizers with the fatherland is a question, but the fact that few of the general disturbances, when the malignant forces from the German underworld tested and tapped the guard-line of the First Provisional, affected the Atwood-Olive Bridge sector, is significant.

During especially troublesome times on other parts of the line the dogs were on various occasions loaned to other sectors, either singly or in pairs. Had there been sufficient funds available for the purchase of bitches the entire line could have been equipped within a year, but only natural increase could be depended on without funds.

Betsy did her best, Patsy was proud and happy, and Sergeant Walter J. Kernan, Co. L, 10th Infantry, who succeeded to Sergeant Rivers' place when the latter left the line, nearly burst

with pride in mid-May when eleven puppies squawked and squealed in the maternity ward at the dog-training camp.

The plan of the survival of the fittest was decided upon in the raising of the pups. No special care was to be given. The usual worm medicines and distemper medicines, the usual cleaning, grooming and good food, and that was all. There would be no special sheltering from the weather after the first two months; no excusing from line duty as soon as the pups were old enough to get about. It was severe, but it was necessary. As a result the weaklings died and the strong ones lived. Two off-color whelps were given away, and the net result was Shokan, a strong dog that later went to Major Charles J. Lamb, commanding the battalion, Storm King, the finest pup of the lot, now owned by Mrs. H. M. Turner, of Chappaqua, who did so much for the First Provisional Regiment in the way of transportation, Atwood Bess and Tongore Girl all remaining by the right of nature's oldest law.

About the time the pups started training, Colonel, an Airedale formerly owned by Capt. Leo C. Harte, was added to the Atwood school. The pups were getting the work nicely and had mastered the art of culverteering when the armistice told of the beginning of the end. But before the regiment left the line Betsy had registered again, this time with nine that lived and flourished, sons and daughters of Rags, and hardier and healthier than their half-brothers.

The Airedale patrol had accomplished its purpose and was ready for expansion at the time when it became necessary to disband it. Started as a test, it developed into a proven fact, and during the development furnished a protection to Sector N-1 that no other agency could have furnished. How well the gospel of "Keep away" was preached by the dog sergeants and their charges the people of that vicinity know, and how many times the crouching shadow in the bushes beyond the city line was frightened off by the low, threatening growl on the other side of the wire fence none know but the dogs themselves.

When the patrol was disbanded there was immediate application for the animals. Rags was loaned to the Eastern New York Reformatory at Napanoch, later returning to civil life. Patsy went to Sergeant Kernan, Tongore Girl to William E. Oram, of Lee, N. Y., Help back to his owner in Utica, and Betsy remained behind at Atwood until her pups came. The disposition of Storm King and Shokan has already been noted. The new pups, also carrying the names of the line, were in part given and in part farmed out to officers of the regiment, who valued

them for their association. So passed one of the most distinctive and picturesque features of the long guard-line of the First Provisional.

And of those other dogs—the mutts, the mongrels and the curs—that came to the line in the first days of occupation by National Guard regiments and that stayed until the last of the First Provisional's men had departed, something, too, must be told. They were of all sizes and shapes, their colors were of all tints and shades, they were often dirty, generally hungry and always noisy, but their tongues were warm and their noses cold, and they answered the eternal call that the camp and uniform hold for the dog, no matter whether he be mongrel or thoroughbred, well-housed or homeless.

The companies of the First Provisional Regiment with their posts and outposts averaged 20 dogs each. That meant an average of 250 to 300 dogs along the line of the First Provisional continually; or, in other words, always 1,000 extra legs, 500 extra ears, 500 extra eyes and 250 additional and very keen noses helping the guard-work. And this does not take into account the comradeship of man and dog, the feeling of company and help that the dog on the post gave the man on the post.

Just how far the last-named factor entered into the guard-work was never fully appreciated by headquarters until one night on an inspecting tour on the Company F line, the commanding officer found the boy on the last post north, at the very foot of Bonticou Crag itself, with a tiny bull-terrier puppy tied to the cover of a manhole for company. To the lonely boy on post at the forest's edge, where the scream of an occasional wildcat on the mountain, and the tracks of the black bear in the snow the next morning, told of other dangers than the two-legged prowler, the presence of that puppy meant help, comfort, and companionship, something warm and alive that loved you—but not well enough to stay unless you tied him there and put your overcoat down to keep him warm.

A similar thing was the custom at one of the lonely posts in the Gould Swamp siphon, but in most instances the dogs accompanied the men to the posts and stayed with them until they were relieved. Some dogs, legacies of the old National Guard troops, preferred one or two posts to any others and covered them consistently during the night, while others followed certain men, regardless of the post to which they were assigned.

Again, there were dogs that did not do post work at all, but accompanied the non-commissioned officers on their rounds of inspection. And there was one cat on the line that trotted out

to the same post with the relief every night and slept in the telephone-box until morning.

Some of the members of this canine line that ran from the aristocrats at Ashokan to the last little cur at Dunwoodie were left-overs from the old National Guard regiments, some of them were imports, and some of them were—acquisitions. And then there was a certain percentage of transients and casuals—dogs from good homes near by that could never resist the call of the line any longer than their respective rope, collar or chain could. The best answer to a question concerning their treatment was the fact that they stayed with the men and loved them. And of such a condition is the canine heaven.

When the regiment went they went, too, disappearing little by little as the line thinned and their friends went back to the easy workaday world, where there are no siphon-houses, culverts or boat-holes. They went with the men that they had known in the long nights of cold and dreariness to places by warm fires and to gorged tummies, to family adoration, and the proud reference, "This is the dog Bob had with him on the Aqueduct."

Friendly, watchful and helpful, the dogs of the regiment played a big part in its success and added no small part to the sum of happiness for the men who comprised it.

PAY PROBLEMS

BY

CAPTAIN HOWLAND PELL,

Reserve List

Disbursing Officer, First Provisional Regiment, New York Guard.

"Me? I've been on post eight hours,
Goin' back again to-night.
Overtime? Yeh, in the guard-house
If you don't. Oh, that's all right—
We git paid a lot of money;
Yeh, that's why we like to stay.
Why, they pay us—even Sundays—
Dollar twenty-five a day!"

—From "*Seven-Bent Ballads*."

IT is a military axiom that an officer assigned to special duty when a regiment is ordered from its home station into the field, should at once be impressed by the idea that his particular work is of the greatest importance to the welfare of the organization. For if he has that feeling he at once endeavors to make good, otherwise the organization will soon suffer the effects of incompetency or neglect.

It is very hard for a line officer to be taken from the men he has enlisted and trained, but he should be rewarded by the thought that he is broadening his work, and if successful he is acting for the best interests of the entire regiment and is helping it. He also advances the welfare of his own unit by being in a position to compare their performance of duty with the other units.

This was especially true with the organization of the First Provisional Regiment, composed of units from nearly every part of the State and made up from engineers, artillery, cavalry and infantry, and guarding the line of the New York City water supply with a line of posts and outposts over 150 miles in length.

The first order from the Commanding Officer was to *guard the line; protect all vulnerable points*. That meant to get the men out first, then arrange to feed, house and pay them; and it *was* done in a manner to even more than satisfy the Federal authorities whose troops we relieved.

The duties of the disbursing officer began a few days after the troops were located in their widely separated posts by visiting the most northerly post at Olive Bridge, just south of the great Ashokan reservoir, and proceeding down the line to each post, ending with the most southerly, near the Hillview reservoir just inside the city limits.

There were at first 24 posts, but they were wisely, at an early date, consolidated to 17.

The disbursing officer on visiting each post entered into a blotter the approximate amount of expenses incurred by each commanding officer from his entry into the field up to date, registering the names of the officers and numbers of enlisted men. He then advised that a book be procured in which all expenses incurred should be entered until a regular system could be arranged. That all bills should be receipted in advance and made out in triplicate, attaching two to the State form No. 36 and attaching the third for the supply officer. The form No. 36 was later superseded by a special city form prepared to cover the various purchases necessary for so large an organization in the field.

The various units were scattered along an air line of about 100 miles, but it was necessary to go over 50 miles additional in order to visit each post by motor. The main roads were excellent, but those across country in many cases were very much out of repair and difficult for transportation, especially in wet weather. These conditions made the task of the supply officer very difficult and at first it was necessary for the various commanding officers to hire transportation to deliver supplies to their outposts and to make their purchases as best they could. This action resulted in a vast number of bills from venders all along the line and a corresponding task for the supply officer to check off the items and prepare the vouchers for approval.

For convenient reference the disbursing officer kept a list of the vouchers charged to each unit in a blotter, with the dates of receipt, approval and forwarding to the Adjutant-General's office. Later, when transportation was furnished, the supply officer was able to purchase in bulk and deliver supplies—thus the men were fed—and the accounts passed for payment. And as the soldier cannot do his duty properly without food, so the officer in charge of the supplies must be considered most essential to the welfare of a regiment in the field.

Next to the problem of feeding the soldier is the question of his pay. Since the days of Cæsar the well-fed and well-paid soldier has been most susceptible of the discipline which wins the

battles of the world. Next to his food, the soldier looks for his pay, either to purchase necessities for himself or to remit to his home. Without it he is fretful and worried, but if he has signed his pay-roll and knows he is going to receive it about a certain date, his mind is free from care.

When this regiment first came into the field the State form of pay-rolls was not made until the end of August, 1917, consequently the first pay was not received until September 23, 1917. There was much delay, as many of the officers were not familiar with the methods of preparing the rolls and did not realize the necessity of having the men sign their names. The first pay-rolls were distributed by the disbursing officer under the direction of Lieut.-Col. Edward V. Howard, A. A. G., in charge of pay, who very kindly prepared a dummy roll which was used as a sample.

The rolls were collected and returned to Colonel Howard at the Arsenal, New York City. When the pay-checks were ready, Colonel Howard went up the line, leaving the checks and rolls with the commanding officers of the various units.

In September, 1917, there were thirty different rolls paid at various dates from Oct. 9th to Nov. 1st by Major Frederick Crossett. The rolls were sent in at different dates as the units were relieved by permanent troops, many rolls being returned for correction, which caused delay. In October the present disbursing officer was placed in charge of the pay-rolls, of which there were 32. The greater number were taken up Oct. 29th and the checks were ready Nov. 7th, but there were later rolls not paid until the 13th and 21st of the month.

There were 26 pay-rolls for November, taken up on the 30th and paid Dec. 14th.

In December it was decided to have a Xmas pay-roll made up to the 15th. There were 28 rolls taken up Dec. 18th and 20th and paid Jan. 5th, 1918. The second half were taken up Dec. 30th and paid Jan. 16th. The January rolls were taken up Jan. 29th and paid Feb. 16th. February taken up on the 26th and paid March 15th. March taken up on the 27th and paid April 12th.

In April the sanitary roll, prison roll, hospital rolls for east and west side of the Hudson River, were omitted, the names of the men being carried on their respective company rolls, which were taken up April 29th and paid May 10th. The May checks were ready June 8th, the earliest date thus far. June checks were ready July 12th; July on Aug. 9th; August on Sept. 7th; September on Oct. 5th—another new record. October checks were taken up on the 27th and sixteen units from New York to New Paltz paid

by 11 P.M., Nov. 2nd, the other three units north of New Paltz by 10 A.M. the following day. November checks were ready Dec. 5th and December on Jan. 2nd, 1919.

The amounts of the rolls were between \$60,000 and \$70,000, the largest amount being for November, 1918, \$70,925.51, with about 2,000 individual checks, each of which was handled by the disbursing officer, who checked the amount off with the officer receiving the same.

The early preparation of the pay-roll and the signing of it by each man is most essential to the payment. When the rolls were first made up but few were completely signed and many errors occurred which made delay.

The regimental paper, *The Watchdog*, rendered great service by publishing articles on the pay-rolls showing standing of each unit as to results in signatures, and many companies sent in their rolls with all the signatures complete, very few showing many blanks.

As the distances were great between company headquarters and outpost, it was difficult at times to get signatures, especially when men were detailed, in cases, over fifty miles away, or prisoners, or in hospitals. In this case a "yellow slip" or city receipt was furnished.

The record pay-roll was that of Company G, Capt. John W. Johnson, for September, 1918, which contained 226 names, all of which was signed up.

The great difficulty was the final distribution of checks. Some captains were always able to give them out, having addressed envelopes for those who had been relieved, but in the case of men who were A. W. O. L. with equipment or who owed fines, the checks were returned to the Comptroller of the City of New York, marked "hold," to be released only by the officer returning them. There was no difficulty in distributing the pay-checks due officers, but with the enlisted men there was, in many cases, neglect to provide home addresses when men were released, due to their own carelessness or oversight on the part of their officers.

Several foreign officers made the pay trip with the disbursing officer and expressed themselves as greatly surprised at the extent of the territory necessary to cover to reach the various posts. They were also much impressed by the rapidity with which the checks amounting to between \$4,000 and \$7,000 for each of the eighteen various units were received and receipted for.

The round trip of over 325 miles from New York City to Ashokan reservoir was made by automobile in all kinds of weather. During the severe winter of 1917-1918, it was necessary to always

carry an ax and shovel in the car to cut out of ruts or dig out of snowdrifts. On one pay trip the car had to be abandoned at White Plains and the journey was made by train, sleigh, horse-back and on foot through deep snow with the temperature around zero.

It may be of interest to describe the route, for probably there never was and never will be a State regiment covering so long a direct line. The Second Provisional covered a line of nearly 400 miles, but it was a scattered line and not continuous.

Starting from the Municipal Building, New York City, the route was up to the city limits by Central Avenue to Palmer Avenue, Yonkers, where was the headquarters of Company K; thence back to Central Avenue to Fort Hill Road to Company L; from there over the ridge to Company I, at Elmsford; thence towards White Plains to Valhalla to Company M and 3rd Battalion headquarters, thence north through Pleasantville and Chappaqua to Company A at Millwood, and then to Ossining or Croton Lake for headquarters and Supply Company. The next post northerly was Company D on the Crompond road near Peekskill and then over Locust Avenue to Company B at Cortlandtville. The route was then over the Boston Post Road to Brown Garage, where the commanding officer of Company C, at Nelsonville near Cold Spring generally met the disbursing officer, receiving his pay-checks in the road if clear, or in a near-by farm-house if stormy. The Post Road was then followed up the Fishkill village and through Beacon to the Newburgh ferry, going through Newburgh. The next post was the Machine Gun Company at Vail's Gate or Little Britain; thence north through St. Andrews-St. Elmo to Co. C at Gardiner's or Sherwood Corners. New Paltz, headquarters of the 2nd Battalion, was generally a resting-point before going up to Company F on the Shawangum Mountain, near Lake Mohonk; via High Falls and Stone Ridge, Company H at the Peak was reached and thence over a spur of the Catskills to Company E at Olive Bridge near the Ashokan reservoir, which was the most northerly post. The return trip was made through Kingston, crossing the river to Rhinebeck, and down the east bank of the Hudson River. The scenery was beautiful and in pleasant weather the trip was delightful, but there were many stormy days and many miles of muddy, slippery, snowy rough roads.

Messrs. Wolfe, Newkirk and Berrigan, of the City Pay Department, made the trip on different occasions and were much impressed by the experience and methods of payments.

All officers serving in regiments liable for field duty should at

once prepare themselves for the necessary procedures for subsistence, transportation and pay. Every officer should be required to prepare a dummy pay-roll, to follow the printed instructions and to understand the necessity of having it ready for signature on the first day of the month and to personally see that the men have signed up as directed. Organizations should be provided with pay-rolls before leaving their home stations, and to have them ready for immediate signature.

The disbursing officer has been termed the "disturbing officer," for it is his duty to insist upon proper performance of all detail necessary to secure payment of bills for transportation, subsistence, medical care, rent and many other necessary expenses, and to have the pay-rolls ready for approval at the stated date. As these important duties are vested in the disbursing officer, it would surely seem that this officer is a most essential one.

The pay-roll of the First Provisional Regiment, N. Y. G., is the largest amount ever paid to any regiment in State service in this country, and the monthly pay probably greater than any regiment in the United States Army up to the beginning of the Great War.

The hearty and sincere thanks of the regiment are due to the men who helped make the speedy payments possible: Capt. Forbes Dunderdale and his staff at the Adjutant-General's office, under the direction of the Adjutant-General, used every effort to accomplish the rolls for delivery in New York. No easy task when one stops to consider that it meant figuring out nearly 2,000 separate amounts, besides the checking off the names.

When the rolls reached the Finance Division of the Comptroller's office all the officials very kindly made use of every facility to hurry the payments. Especial thanks are due the Deputy Comptrollers, Hon. David E. Kemlo and Hon. Frank J. Prial; Messrs. Elmer D. Newkirk, Edward E. Berrigan, Christopher Morrell, John Plunkett, who signs one hundred checks a minute, of the Central Pay Division; Messrs. James T. Curtin and Harry Walsh of the Mayor's Warrant Division, and Mr. Thomas J. Dougherty of the Comptroller's office.

THE LEGAL PHASE

BY

CAPTAIN THEODORE T. LANE, 9TH C. A. C.,

Judge-Advocate of the Regiment.

THE legal work of the First Provisional Regiment, being principally trials for breaches of military law, naturally covered a multitude of sins.

As summary court in all cases of wrong-doing in the 1st Battalion, my trial work dealt with the deeds and misdeeds of about 450 men along a stretch of about 30 miles. Under the conditions governing our form of service, it was impossible to have a fixed day and place set for holding court, or to designate one locality where the men must always be brought for trial. Transportation difficulties, especially in the winter, would have made such arrangement impracticable.

Therefore the summary court roamed at large and tried the accused at the various camps where they happened to be stationed.

The usual method was for a commanding officer of a sector to communicate with the court, stating that he had a number of men held for trial at a certain camp or outpost; the summary court would then set a certain day for calling at the camp and holding court. The fact that I was also Inspecting Officer of the Battalion, and as such was continually visiting the different camps and parts of the line, made this itinerant court work fit in very nicely with my other duties.

The summary court has power to try enlisted men for breaches of discipline and violations of laws governing the military organization and is limited as to its power of punishment. The fact that we were at first instructed by the A. G. O. to proceed according to the rules of the U. S. Army Manual of Courts Martial, and were subsequently placed under new regulations as to punishments by Sections 132, 133 and 134 of the Military Law of the State of New York, caused somewhat of a change in the punishments imposed.

The New York Guard had rather a hard time getting its bear-

ings at the outset, owing to lack of definite legislation, until subsequently the amended Military Law of the State as promulgated by General Orders No. 29, A. G. O., June 23, 1917, for the National Guard, was by the terms of the Stivers Bill, made applicable to the New York Guard.

With the limited number of officers and the extent of our guarded territory—approximately 100 miles—it was a difficult matter to take from their sectors and bring together five officers for a General Court Martial, and word having been received from Brigade Headquarters that G. C. M.'s were not to be looked upon as popular episodes, the Summary Court gradually took over many cases that ordinarily would have gone before a General Court Martial.

In our regiment of from 1,200 to 1,500 men, with the personnel constantly changing (as was ours, because of the continual releases and replacements of men) almost every article of war was breached. In all, with an average of about 1,300 men at any one time, a total of about 8,000 names have been carried on our rolls.

I tried by Summary Court over 550 cases, most of them covering several charges; in General Courts Martial I was trial Judge-Advocate in over 25 cases. The offenses included absence without official leave, desertion, larceny, insubordination, assaults on privates and non-commissioned officers, sleeping on post, deserting post, and shootings resulting in the wounding of fellow-soldiers. The sentences imposed by G. C. M. ran from 15 days confinement to confinement for 6 years and 6 months, besides dishonorable discharge, forfeiture of pay, etc. In addition to these cases, there were many tried by the Summary Court officers of the 2nd and 3rd Battalions.

Under Par. 130 of the Military Law of New York State, the Military Courts of the National Guard are set forth as Courts of Inquiry, General Courts Martial, Special Courts Martial and Summary Courts Martial; in construction, procedure, forms, cognizance of subject and powers, *except as to punishments*, they are similar to the Courts Martial provided for in the United States Army. Sections 132, 133 and 134 of the N. Y. Military Law set forth the powers of punishment of General, Special and Summary Courts respectively.

General Courts Martial may impose fines not exceeding 200 dollars; may sentence to forfeiture of pay and allowances; to a reprimand; to dismissal or dishonorable discharge; to reduction of non-commissioned officers to the ranks; or any two or more of such punishments may be combined.

Special Courts Martial may not try commissioned officers, but have the same powers of punishment as General Courts Martial, except that fines imposed may not exceed one hundred dollars. Summary Courts Martial may try enlisted men for breaches of discipline and violation of laws governing the military organization; may impose a fine not exceeding twenty-five dollars for a single offense; sentence non-coms. to reduction to the ranks, sentence to forfeiture of pay and allowances.

By Par. 135, all Courts Martial of the National Guard—and by the Stivers Bill, the New York Guard—may impose sentences of confinement in lieu of fines authorized, but not over one day for each dollar of fine authorized.

By virtue of the Stivers Bill, the Military Courts of the New York Guard were made similar in all respects to those of the old National Guard, but before that bill was passed an uncertainty existed as to just what the New York Guard Courts Martial procedure should be.

As a matter of fact, the punishments allowed do not appear to be inadequate when applied to infractions by men engaged only in armory or practice work, but when troops are in active service in the field, there are some offenses for which the punishments prescribed appear insufficient. Murder, manslaughter, rape, mutiny, surrendering a command, treachery, spying and other offenses do not seem adequately covered by the maximum punishments allowed a G. C. M. by Par. 132 of the Military Law.

Par. 14 of the Military Law, stating that the Articles of War of the United States Army shall apply to the State Military forces *except when inconsistent* with the State Military Law, states further that no punishment prescribing the death penalty shall be inflicted except in time of actual war, invasion or insurrection declared by proclamation of the Governor to exist, and then only after approval by the Governor of the sentence inflicting such punishment.

But under Sections 132, 133 and 134 of the Military Law setting forth the powers of punishment prescribed for the Military Courts of this State, it seems that no death sentence may be imposed.

However, this is not a discussion of laws and statutes, but a series of reminiscences.

Twice were writs of habeas corpus sued out against the regiment. In the first a soldier had been accused of attempted rape, assault, and other acts, and by arrangement was held by the military authorities, but lodged in a jail, pending trial by G. C. M. An attorney sued out a writ for the man's release from jail on the ground that he was not charged with an offense against the Military Law, and

further, that the military authorities were delaying his trial. The return to the writ stated that he was charged with violation of various articles of war; that charges had been drawn for a G. C. M. (certified copy of charges annexed) and that he would be tried by G. C. M. as soon as same was named by the Adjutant-General of the State. The man remained in custody, but if the writ had been successful he would still have been obliged to report to his company, and would have been arrested by the military authorities and taken to camp a prisoner immediately upon his release from the jail. By arrangement with the District Attorney, this man was afterward turned over to the civil authorities for trial, as Brigade Headquarters considered that the punishment which a General Court Martial could inflict under Par. 132 would not be sufficient if the man were found guilty.

The second habeas corpus was sued out by a parent to produce the son in court and withdraw him from active duty in order that he might attend school.

Three times we refused to produce the relator in court, and three times the case was adjourned, until the soldier was released by proper military authority from active duty, as the quarantine which had been placed on his camp had been lifted. The return to the writ set forth the following reasons for failing to produce the man in court:

1. A soldier under a valid enlistment contract cannot be said to be a "person imprisoned or restrained in his liberty" under Par. 2015 of the Code of Civil Procedure, providing for writ of habeas corpus for such persons.

2. Par. 2028, Code of Civil Procedure, contains the following: "When a person who has been duly served with either writ, refuses or neglects, *without sufficient cause* shown by him, fully to obey"—etc. The question as to whether or not the cause shown is sufficient is for the court to decide.

Our contention was that the following are sufficient causes for failing to produce the relator in court:

- (a) The fact that a quarantine has been placed upon a camp of which the soldier is a member.

- (b) The fact that the soldier is posted at a place, under proper military orders, to guard public utilities.

- (c) The fact that the posting of properly enlisted soldiers as guards over public utilities can be made ineffectual, and such protection taken from said utilities, by simultaneous issuances of writs of habeas corpus, if the courts hold that the fact that soldiers are on such duty is not "sufficient cause" for not producing the soldiers in court.

A ruling on these points was very much desired by the Commanding Officer of the regiment, to establish a precedent should such questions arise subsequently.

An opinion was rendered by Hon. Joseph Morschauser, Justice of the Supreme Court of the State of New York, as follows:

SUPREME COURT
Dutchess County

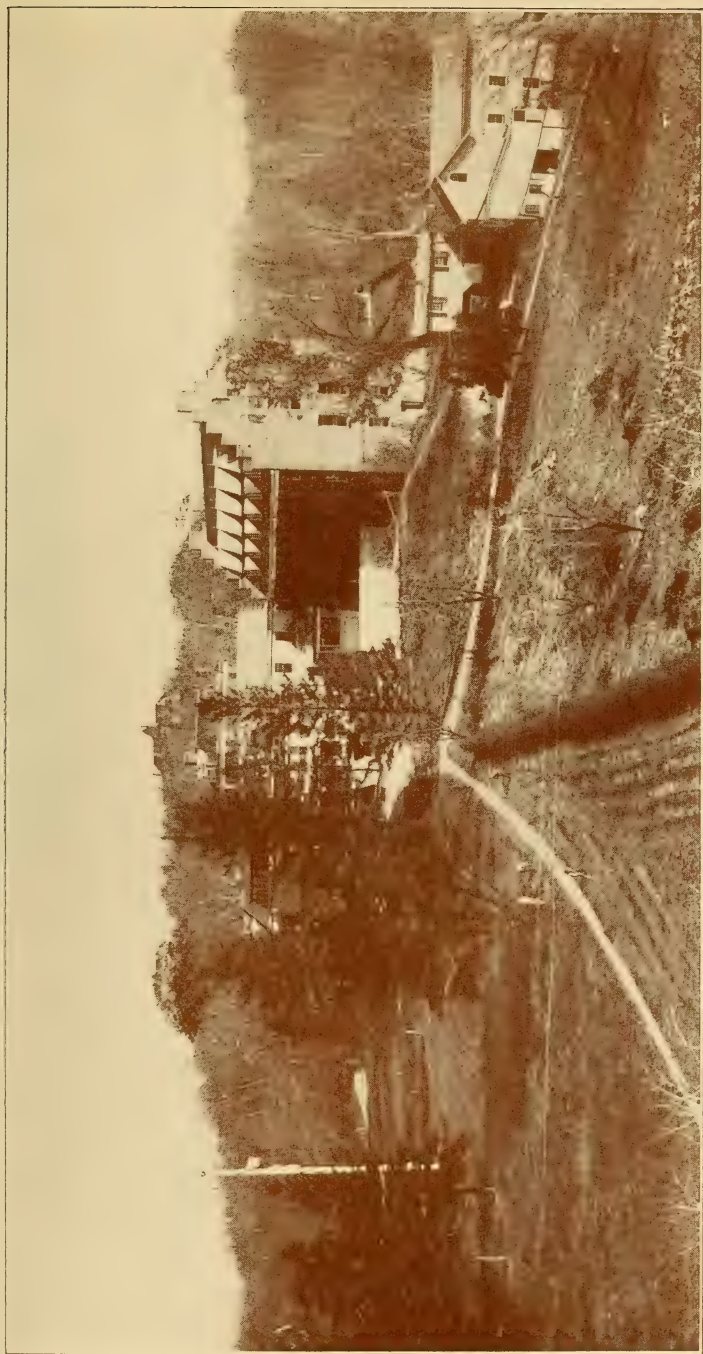
The People *ex rel.* Melville C. Butler

vs.

Colonel John B. Rose, *et al.*

Upon application duly made a writ of habeas corpus having been duly allowed and duly served herein, and on the return date a return having been duly made from which it appears that the said relator is in the military service of the State of New York and which military service has charge of the protection of the New York Aqueduct for over one hundred (100) miles, and that in and about said camp and in the community there is now raging an epidemic known as the Spanish influenza. It further appears from said return that many of the soldiers engaged in the military service are ill and suffering from the Spanish influenza, I am satisfied that the return made by the commanding officer is sufficient at this time and that in furtherance of justice and to protect the rights, welfare and safety of the public no action should be taken at this time upon said writ until there is a change in the existing conditions. Where such conditions exist as have been presented on the return it is not necessary for the commanding officer to produce the relator in court. Conditions may arise such that it would be impracticable, inconvenient and unsafe to produce a relator in court upon a writ where his presence is required in the guarding of a large and important public work. It is sufficient to return in my judgment at this time that the relator is needed in the military service for the protection or the guarding of such Aqueduct.

Adjournment is duly granted until such times as conditions as mentioned herein are such that he can with safety to the public as well as convenience to the military authorities be produced in court.



REGIMENTAL HEADQUARTERS AT OSSINING

Left—Parade-ground. *Center*—Administration building and barracks. *Right*—Hospital building. *Extreme right*—Guard-house and stables. Formerly the Holbrook Military Academy.



FRIENDS OF THE REGIMENT

Upper left—Col. J. Weston Meyers. *Right*—Lieut. Herbert L. Lockwood. *Center*—Capt. Charles Carlock of the Red Cross. *Lower left*—Supt. Vincent Phelps of the Macy Estate. *Right*—Major Trimble and Lieut.-Col. Howard Smith.

The Summary Court acts as judge and jury. It hears the evidence, decides as to the guilt or innocence of the accused, and imposes the sentence. And here it may be stated, that inasmuch as fully 95 per cent. of the men tried by me as Summary Court pleaded "guilty," and of the 5 per cent. who pleaded "not guilty" at least three-quarters were proved guilty by the evidence adduced, it is fairly evident that the officers of the First Provisional Regiment were not in the habit of preferring charges unless they had good and sufficient reason and good and sufficient evidence to support the charges.

Of the General Court Martial cases tried, in every case the accused was proved guilty of at least one of the charges preferred.

Sentences varied, even for identical offenses, owing to various causes—the man's former record, his previous convictions, his attitude—whether regretful, indifferent, impertinent, brazen, etc. The endeavor on the part of some, when tried in the presence of their comrades, to appear devil-may-care and reckless, has brought many of them to further grief. For example, one man tried for getting drunk and raising a disturbance in a neighboring town, when sentenced turned away with the remark to his comrades that he wished he had some more out of the same bottle. He was promptly brought up again on a new charge and given another sentence. This little episode had a salutary effect on the remainder of the group who were awaiting trial for the same offense.

Many were the excuses given for the various transgressions.

One man, tried for being absent without official leave—known as A. W. O. L.—pleaded hopefully that he had gone home, found that his mother was tired, and had stayed around the house to help her wash the dishes, make the beds, etc. This filial devotion was very affecting, but when I asked him (on a guess) why his sister did not help his mother, he said his sister worked all day; when asked further (another wild shot) why his other sister did not help, his imagination failed him; he muttered that she was too lazy, and then gave up in disgust. It had not occurred to him to deny that he had any sisters.

Another, arrested in New York and brought back to his camp, after being A. W. O. L. for several days, stated that he had been sick at home. When asked (chance shot again) who the girl was with whom he had been out walking he said it was only his sister. The natural inquiry followed: How, if he was sick at home, could he be out walking with a girl? This seemed to puzzle even his facile mind.

In all excuses for overstaying leave, the query, "Why did you not telephone, telegraph or write, explaining the circumstances

and asking for an extension?" generally resulted in confusion. One optimist hopefully explained that he had earnestly desired to telephone, but didn't have the price, and, unfortunately, the idea of telegraphing or writing had never occurred to him.

By an amazing coincidence, practically all of the A. W. O. L.'s who were arrested and brought back were just about to start back to camp when caught.

In trials for striking or refusing to obey a non-commissioned officer, there was generally a tale to the effect that the wicked non-com. had prefaced his orders by a profane greeting, known as "calling me out of my name," and great show of righteous indignation and manly determination not to allow a non-com. to put it over on a free-born American citizen.

Fights were always started by "the other fellow," but by exercising a great liberality in allowing each man to tell his story and to say all he could in his own behalf, the truth was generally developed. For I found that after the charge and specifications had been read and the plea taken, the simple words, "Well, Private N., what have you got to say about it? You needn't talk if you don't want to," opened wide the flood-gates, and before the accused had finished his vehement protestations he had gotten so entranced with the sound of his own voice that he invariably let slip something fatal, and a couple of questions later on threw him into a hopeless mass of contradictory explanations.

The frequency with which the men sentenced to forfeiture of pay would suddenly recollect a mother at home was astonishing. Having had their fun, enjoyed their parties and caused various degrees of trouble, the culprit when brought to trial and sentenced would advance the mother plea and conversation would ensue:

Court: "Didn't you have a mother at the time you engaged in this breach of regulations?"

Accused: "Yes, sir."

Court: "And you didn't care a rap about what your mother might suffer from your acts while you were having your good time, did you?"

Accused: (No answer).

I have met with some surprising requests, such as the following, when a man had been sentenced to forfeiture of pay and a term of confinement: "Would the captain make it more confinement and take off the forfeiture of pay?" Whereupon he would be reminded that the Court was endeavoring to punish him, not to oblige him.

I asked one of these petitioners, sarcastically, if he would not like me to present him with a theater ticket, but he looked at me

blankly and said that he wouldn't be able to use it. I have not tried sarcasm since.

Which reminds me of the case of one prisoner who was tried for stealing four dollars from a fellow-prisoner, and, after pleading guilty, remarked, "Anyway, he couldn't use it. He was in the jug." "So were you," retorted the injured one. "Well, I was going to get out the next day," said the pilferer, in justification.

Which again reminds me of a story Major Burnett tells of a prisoner calling out of a cell window to a boy in the street, "Hey, Bill, what time is it?" "Aw, wot's it to yer," said the boy; "yer ain't going anywhere."

Occasionally a private, advised by some clever fellow-culprit who wished to show how the idea would work out, would refuse to sign the consent to trial by Summary Court, which was printed on the Form No. 123. This consent is unnecessary in the case of a private, since the law limited the term of confinement to which a Summary Court might sentence a man to twenty-five days for an offense. But as I always preferred to have their signatures, if possible, I would ask him if he preferred trial by G. C. M. with a court of officers, a reporter, and a typewritten record of the evidence to go on file in the State records, and call his attention to the fact that a General Court Martial or Special Court Martial had far more power of punishment than a Summary Court. This generally changed his attitude; but if he still refused to consent, I tried him, anyway, to his surprise.

Different men are affected differently by the various punishments. To some men a term of confinement means nothing; the disgrace of wearing blue jeans and being a prisoner does not affect them; the only thing that "gets under the skin" is loss of pay. To others the shame of imprisonment is worse than the loss of pay.

Some non-com.s when "busted" show no regret—even seem relieved that they are privates once more, with less responsibility. These men stay "busted."

Others feel the loss of their stripes keenly, and most of these, by subsequent good work, regain their chevrons and seldom lose them a second time.

Before trying the men I always found it of great value to consult with their commanding officer as to the characters and types of the men to be tried. The C. O. of a company knows better what punishment will properly affect his men than the Summary Court, who knows little about the individuals unless they are old offenders and have been up before him previously.

The removal of one man from a small group of apparent "bad actors" will often be the salvation of the remainder of the group,

for there is always a coterie of weak-minded youths misled by the bad example of some "dare-devil" whom they admire.

In the case of five ex-prisoners brought to trial for "beating up" a private who had been a prison guard and performed his duties properly, it took two hours to get the true facts. The five denied the act and had combined on a beautiful story; the man beaten was the only witness against them. After nearly two hours of ceaseless rapid-fire questioning one man and then another forgot something he or one of his pals had said, contradictions began to fly and the psychological moment arrived. "Well, Private A," I remarked, "you say so-and-so, but remember Private B said so-and-so a few minutes ago, and Private C said such and such. Now see here, A, do you mean to say that B is a liar, or is it Private C? Private B, do you hear what A says? Are you lying to me, or is A lying to me about you?" etc., etc.

A moment more and all five were at loggerheads, the *esprit de corps* of the alliance was gone and the beautiful story was a wreck.

Two men had been the strong-minded ones, two others had taken a hand in the game because they "didn't want to be quitters," and one claimed snow-white innocence in the matter, basing his claim upon the assertion that he only danced around the fight and yelled, "Kill the bastard! Kill the bastard!"

One incident proved that man's best friend, the dog, is not always to be relied upon. Walking through the woods along the cut and cover on an inspection tour, about three o'clock one winter morning, I passed a post where a sentry should have been, but—I walked on to the next post and discerned a dark mass in the snow. Approaching quietly, I was almost upon it when a piece of the dark mass broke away and came for me, barking wonderfully for such a small fraction. The remainder of the mass arose and resolved itself into two sentries, very much startled. In the subsequent trial, all they had to say was, "Gee! we never thought the dog would fall asleep, too."

Another inspection tour developed the stubbornness with which some men can cling to an idea. On another part of the line, about 1.30 one night, I found a sentry sitting down, back against a tree, sound asleep. Taking his rifle and hiding it, I poked him in the ribs with my foot. He sprang up, recognized me and stood blinking. "Asleep?" I asked. "Oh no, Captain." "Did you hear me coming?" "Oh yes, sir. I was just resting, but I knew it was you and was just getting up. I wasn't asleep." "Let me see your rifle." This should have settled it. But no. This resourceful youth explained that he knew I was taking his rifle and had not protested because he was afraid I might get angry if he stopped

me. And at his trial he stuck to his tale with a firmness worthy of a better cause.

Again, night inspection, sentry asleep. Gentle awakening, and story.

Sentry: "Captain, I was sick, awful sick."

Captain: "Did you report sick or call the relief?"

Sentry: "No, sir. I got sick after I came on post and thought I'd be all right again. And I was so sick I put my lunch and sat down for a minute just before you came."

Captain: "You say you vomited?"

Sentry: "Yes, sir, something awful."

Captain: "All right, here's a flash-light; now show me the awful evidence."

Total defeat. This man stood trial and pleaded guilty without reference on his part to his awful sickness.

I have noticed a strange lack of appreciation on the part of many non-com.s as to why they are more severely punished for infractions of the Articles than privates for the same infractions. They do not seem to realize that an offense by a non-commissioned officer, who is supposed to set an example, is worse than the same offense committed by a private.

While there were few cases of drunkenness in the regiment, nevertheless they occasionally cropped out, and the invariable story was, "I only had one little drink, but it got me because I'm not used to it." "Where did you get it?" "Why, a man I'd never seen before came up to me and asked me if I wanted a drink." Summary Court, wearily, "A colored man?" Culprit, "Yes, sir, a colored man."

Turning again to excuses for A. W. O. L., the following is an old stand-by. "Yes, sir. I moped because my mother was sick." "Did you explain that and ask for leave?" "No, sir, I was afraid if I asked for leave I wouldn't get it, so I took a mope."

Parenthetically, "taking a mope" is the same as "taking a French."

Another staple excuse for A. W. O. L. is this: "My brother was home on leave from Camp Merritt and he wanted to see me." "If your brother wanted to see you, couldn't he visit you at your camp and save you a court martial?" "Well, sir, I never thought of that."

I recall one man who, after seven days A. W. O. L. and arrest, explained that his brother was in the 27th Division; that his mother told him the 27th Division was about to sail from France; so he stayed home, waiting for his brother to arrive.

Two men away on leave, overstayed and announced the follow-

ing tragic journey. Being broke, they "hopped a freight" at a certain town near Albany, expecting to slip off at Cold Spring. But the freight did not stop at Cold Spring and their first chance to get off was at Peekskill. Nothing daunted, they adorned another freight going north, again with the excellent idea of getting off at Cold Spring; but this freight slid through Cold Spring at about forty miles an hour and detained them until they had arrived at the town whence they started. This would have discouraged most men, but these were of sterner caliber; so they jumped another freight going south, roared through Cold Spring again, in despair fell asleep, and awoke in time to detrain at Ossining. All confidence lost in the freight route, they borrowed car-fare from some Company A soldiers and finally arrived in Cold Spring, victims of persistence.

Sometimes, in one command I have tried one man, at others ten or fifteen. On one occasion there had been an epidemic of A. W. O. L. in one command, and the delinquents marched in so continuously that we always referred to that time as the day they were "tried by platoons."

On the night of Dec. 31, 1917, in a shed at Millwood, by lantern-light, I tried twenty-six cases between 10 P.M. and midnight, but they were fortunate in their time of trial, for I had to be lenient on New-Year's eve.

On that day, besides the cases at Millwood, I tried men at Peekskill State Camp, Cortlandtville, and Crompound road, near Yorktown Heights; in all, twenty-nine, making a total for the day of sixty-five cases. This was of course a most unusual occurrence, and was the result of a desire to "clean up" all bad records before the new year began. Sometimes weeks have passed without any call for Summary Court.

On Jan. 3, 1918, a number of G. C. M. cases were set for trial at New Paltz, on the west side of the Hudson, near Highland. Our journey from Croton Lake included two trips across the Hudson on the ice. This was a full day, for eight complete G. C. M. trials were held on that day; and about one o'clock in the morning Major Burnett, President of the Court, Captain Pell, one of the members, the Judge-Advocate, and Mr. Moore, the reporter, shivering and weary, tramped across ice-hummocks on the frozen Hudson and climbed up the long steeps of Poughkeepsie, thoroughly "fed up" on Courts Martial.

We were fortunate in obtaining for our G. C. M.'s the services of Mr. Charles W. Moore, of New York. He was always ready to do his part, other court work permitting, even though the compensation allowed was small, considering the time and trouble in-

volved and the distance traveled. The G. C. M. record has a peculiar form of its own, and a stenographer unfamiliar with that form would cause considerable delay and confusion in getting the record properly completed.

One remarkable thing about this trial work, and one which, it seems to me, redounds to the credit of the men and their sense of justice, is the fact that none of them, to my knowledge, ever seemed to bear any grudge because of their punishment.

I have gone inspecting and found on post sentries who had just been released from a term of confinement imposed by me, and we have discussed the various cases with interest and laughed over some of the attempted "alibis" that did not work; but never have I seen any sign of ill feeling. The men take their medicine without whining; they have their dance and they pay the piper if they have to, without complaint, and there is nothing personal involved. They break the regulations. If they are caught and tried, their next move is to outwit the court. If they fail in this, it's unfortunate, but they "didn't get away with it. Better luck next time."

MORALE

"It ain't so much the things you eat,
Or what you have to wear;
It ain't the double tricks that count,
Or how the sergeants swear;
But the thing that makes me want to bust
The military law
Is when I can't get off to see
My girl in Chappaqua."

—"Seven-Bent Ballads."

PART I

RELIGIOUS ACTIVITIES

"GUTS plus *esprit de corps* equals morale." It is the regimental chaplain's definition, given at one of his lectures before a training-class of line representatives at headquarters, and it is injected at this juncture that the subdivisions of that portion of this history relating to morale may be better understood by the average reader.

The chaplain preached a sermon on the subject of guts, once, and it was a good one. That short, ugly word is not used in the best of society. There it is called stamina, or "the stuff a man is made of." But when one is talking to men, and not at them, he must use the same kind of language that his hearers use. A missionary would have a healthy time trying to speak English to a crowd of Mongols from one of the inner provinces of the globe's great Yellow Mother, and by that same sign, there is little advantage in pure Browning English when one is addressing folks (not people, please) who in their own parlance, "talk United States."

So if there is any criticism of the use of that word here it must be placed on the chaplain, who as a regimental scapegoat has no equal. He will tell you that himself.

So far, this has more of the appearance of a digression than an exposition along the lines of the platform promised in the second paragraph. But to a consideration of Morale.

If the chaplain's definition of morale is taken at face value, and there is no reason why it should not be, then the inculcation of *esprit de corps*, and the development of natural, though perhaps latent stamina, are in the large part all that is necessary to develop morale. Now, there are as many different ways of developing morale as there are classifications of persons in whom morale has to be developed, and the needs for which it is to be developed.

The First Provisional Regiment was made up at one time and another of units drawn from nearly every organization of the New York Guard and from practically every portion of the State. It was presumably the most catholic (and the word is used here in its broad sense) organization that ever entered the field on State service. Its ranks held everything from bank presidents to the janitors of the banks themselves, and from the hardy, browned, big-handed, keen-eyed farmer boy of Central New York to the slight, under-fed, cop-dodging, white-faced, work-hating, Sub.-L product who came into the field because it was "some place to go."

Keeping that in mind, it will be seen that only a very broad policy, administered by very broad men, could get the answer. Everything must be fundamental, primary and direct. The *esprit de corps* of the regiment had been given its beginnings by Colonel Rose at Lambert Farm and Peekskill, and had been nourished by the officers and through the medium of *The Watch-dog*, but these things alone could not get the entire answer desired. As a basis on which everything must depend there must be the proper attitude and frame of mind; the proper atmosphere.

When Colonel Rose issued instructions to the various units of the regiment for church services, either held at the camps or made available for the men in near-by communities, it was not only for the purpose of creating a religious atmosphere, but for the purpose of providing the balance that means so much in the life of a man in field service. Since man is inherently and instinctively religious, lack of opportunity in that direction results in a condition which is not healthy for the man or the work he is doing. It is the necessary base to everything.

With religious life came contact with persons and organizations in a position to administer to the social needs of the men through canteens, recreation-rooms, entertainment at private homes, and so on. To round it all off, the recreation of the physical side, or, in other words, the athletic, was encouraged. These three things helped to develop the rounded-out soldier character necessary to the *esprit de corps*.

And since it was largely through the religious channel that most

of the other things came to the regiment, the religious life of the regiment must first be considered.

In the beginning, at the time of the organization's entry into the field there was no chaplain. The regiment, strung along one hundred miles of line in isolated groups, must look to the towns near by for the religious side of its existence, and it was for this reason that Colonel Rose, in the first few days of the regiment's history, instructed all commanding officers to see to it that their men had opportunity to attend services either at their camps or in the near-by towns. Weekly reports were required.

At some commands one method was used and at others the other. Both the Olive Bridge and Atwood posts of Sector N-1 had services of Roman Catholic and Protestant denominations at their barracks, or in fair weather in the open. Other commands sent their men to church in detachments at near-by towns.

The first military mass said in the field was at the Harlem siphon north of Valhalla on the 26th of August, when the priest then in charge of the Thornwood Roman Catholic parish said mass for the men of the two outposts located then on either side of the siphon. This mass was arranged for by Sergeant Brandyce of the 9th C. A. C.

On Headquarters Hill at Croton Lake, Rev. H. R. Silk, of the Episcopal Church at Granite Springs, began holding Sunday morning services shortly after the entry of the regiment into the field. Services were at first in the Commanding Officer's quarters, the tent being used as a chancel, while the little congregation sat under the fly in front. A combined lectern and litany desk, made by Sergt. Melville Johnson, of the Headquarters Company, was used, and Dr. Silk supplied the prayer-books and hymnals for the services. At first there was no music. A volunteer choir made up of civilians from the Croton Lake chapel, and the men of the Headquarters Company carried the melodies for the familiar old hymns that were used throughout. Later the services were held in the officers' mess-hall, this continuing until the removal of Dr. Silk from the Granite Springs parish left headquarters without a chaplain.

During the latter portion of Dr. Silk's work at headquarters an effort was made to secure a volunteer choir each Sunday from Ossining. Through the co-operation of George F. Hyatt and Mrs. H. D. Brandreth this was made possible, and a field melodeon was also furnished by the Ossining people.

Oct. 28th, 1917, was, in response to President Wilson's proclamation for a day of prayer, observed along the entire line by special services. At Regimental Headquarters, Dr. Silk held

services with special patriotic program, and spoke on the bringing of peace through the armies of righteousness. At Millwood mass was said in the morning and a Protestant service was held in the afternoon. Members of Captain Johnson's command marched to the Presbyterian Church at Cold Spring, where a portion of the church had been reserved for them, and where Captain Johnson conducted the service.

Winter conditions made the continuation of religious services more and more difficult as the drifts piled up through December and January. At Regimental Headquarters during this period, Colonel Rose conducted services on several occasions with inspiring messages to the officers and men attached to the post, including his famous acid-test sermon. During his absence services were taken in turn by Major Hodges and the Adjutant in the men's mess-hall.

This in a general way gives the condition of the organization with regard to its religious activities prior to the advent of Rev. Charles W. Baldwin, rector of St. Mary's Church, Scarborough. He was commissioned chaplain of the 1st Infantry in May, and from that time until demobilization, was, under the direction of the Commanding Officer, responsible for more good things for the men of the regiment than any other one person. Preaching the gospel of cheerful right living in terse, convincing talks at his services, he bent every effort and used every available contact to the betterment of the men of the regiment. It was through the efforts of Captain Baldwin that the Y. M. C. A. and the Red Cross became deeply interested in the regiment; it was through him, as point of contact, that the Aqueduct Citizens' Committee of One Hundred was organized; it was through him that the Holbrook Military Academy property was turned over to the regiment during the epidemic of Spanish influenza in the late fall, and it was through his efforts with the Citizens' Committee and the other organizations interested in the men of the Aqueduct, that comforts, games, cigarettes, motion pictures, entertainments, shower-baths, and many other things were made possible for the enlisted men. The work of Captain Baldwin for and with the First Provisional Regiment cannot be overestimated.

His personality found instant favor with the enlisted men. From the first day of his service he lived up to Colonel Rose's description of him as a "fighting parson." He was never shocked by the crudities of those with whom he had to deal, and he had a real man's appreciation for the temptations and the difficulties of the men. He was an advocate of hard-hitting, four-square, red-blooded goodness, and had little use for the namby-pamby

type of sanctity. His common-sense, every-day type of religion appealed to the men on the line, and following his period of training at the chaplains' school in Camp Zachary Taylor, he returned to the line with valuable technique in addition to his innate ability to get and hold men. What he did in helping the men of the regiment in a social way will be told later. A few glimpses of his religious work will serve to round out the picture of the religious life of the First Provisional.

At 4.30 o'clock on the afternoon of Sunday, May 19, 1918, the new volunteer chaplain held his first services on Headquarters Hill. It was characteristic of the man and his work that his first service was held from the boxing-ring between the two mess-halls, where many of the bloody encounters of the regimental pugilists had taken place.

With Sergt. Mylert McIntyre at the piano, placed in one corner of the ring, and the congregation of soldiers and visiting civilians ranged on chairs and benches along the side-hill, Captain Baldwin was introduced by Lieut.-Colonel Burnett and with a few prefatory remarks by the chaplain the unique service began. Captain Baldwin, in his opening talk, made it apparent that he believed actions rather than creed determined a man's status with relation to right or wrong. "Live up to what you say you believe," was the only thing ever demanded by him.

His first text was also characteristic. "Be strong; give unto every one his just dues and do good to all men." And in fifteen minutes he had driven home the truths of his text to his congregation.

He made a rule of half-hour services with ten- or fifteen-minute talks, generally the former. In the first week of his service with the regiment he visited forty camps on the First Provisional's line and distributed over six hundred books donated by his friends, together with musical instruments, games, smoking tobacco and cigarettes. Thereafter, until his departure to Camp Zachary Taylor, late in July, he held services at Regimental Headquarters each Sunday, visited from ten to thirty camps along the entire length of the line weekly, and through the co-operation of the Episcopal Church Periodical Club distributed books and games.

It was the attitude of the chaplain toward his work that made him such an invaluable asset to the regiment. As an instance of this:

It was one Sunday afternoon during service on Headquarters Hill. Because of the heat of the sun, the library or recreation tent, a big platformed storage, was used as the chancel and the congregation sat before it in the shade. One of those sudden

summer rains came up, with the sky getting gradually darker and darker, until the first sprinkles began to dampen the congregation a bit. The chaplain, being under the tent, did not notice the rain, and was proceeding, engrossed in his talk, until at a point in it where the word "water" occurred he threw out his hand in a gesture which brought it outside the tent, and as he did so a drop of water struck it.

With a hand still outstretched, he paused and smiled. "I guess it is water," he remarked. "The congregation had better come inside." And the service was finished with the minister in the center of a tightly squeezed group.

The chaplain returned to duty with the regiment on Aug. 10th, after his period of service at the chaplains' school in Camp Zachary Taylor, Kentucky. He continued his work with even better success from that time on, and during the training-school period at Regimental Headquarters gave several addresses before the men brought from the various units of the line for special instruction.

On Sept. 29th, Supply Company trucks, sector cars, and auxiliary motor service brought from every unit of the regiment on the east side of the Hudson River details to the stated regimental service held at St. Mary's Church, Scarborough, as a tribute from the men of the regiment to Captain Baldwin.

It was a beautiful bright Sunday morning and the men of the various companies, clad in their Sunday best, made a splendid appearance. As each company arrived, it was formed along the side of the Albany Post Road facing the church, and at 11 o'clock, while the church bells rang a final call to worship, Sergt. Bugler Corrie and the headquarters field-music sounded church call. This was immediately followed by assembly, and then, headed by the field-music, the staff, non-commissioned staff, Headquarters Company, Supply Company and the company details of the two battalions marched up through the church grounds to the church itself. At the entrance the field-music swung out of line and played the remainder of the column into the church, where the organist took up the processional.

With the entire church filled with soldiers, it was impossible to seat the civilian congregation and all of the detachments of the National League for Women's Service, the Motor Corps of America and the Red Cross Motor Corps who marched in the column. Many found seats in the cloister, and others sat on chairs outside the doors of the church.

The regular Episcopal service with modifications was used, and the chaplain gave to the men of the First Provisional Regi-

ment that morning the message of the gospel of self-sacrifice. He spoke of the work in which they were engaged, the lack of glory and fame which was so certainly a part of it, of the necessity and vital importance of the work, and called upon his hearers to sacrifice glory and the plaudits of men in the spirit of self-sacrifice which makes life worth while. It was at the time of the regiment's biggest losses to the Federal ranks, and it meant much in stemming the tide of the constant exodus.

That service came at the most opportune time in the regiment's history, for it was at the beginning of the influenza epidemic that tried the hearts and souls of the men of the line. Its effects were far-reaching in the dark days that followed when the message the chaplain had given his boys reached along the Aqueduct.

And during the epidemic, while the men were in quarantine, the efforts of Captain Baldwin were tireless and unremitting. To keep up the spirit of the men he journeyed back and forth on the line with his motion-picture machine, sleeping in the infected camps, and between Sept. 30th and Oct. 30th gave sixteen addresses and twenty motion-picture shows. The big task was to get the minds of the men off the epidemic, inspire them with courage and avert the panic that might easily have come in those camps which seemed especially cursed by the scourge.

In the field hospitals at Newburgh and Ossining, beside the beds of the sick and the dying, the chaplain worked without rest and without regard to his own physical condition. At the end of the first surge of the epidemic he passed through a physical collapse which left him weak, but with the recurrence of the epidemic he was back to the bedsides again and continued without break until the end.

He inculcated into the regiment the spirit of true religion and good living. As a member of the staff at Regimental Headquarters, where he was constantly stationed after his assignment to duty with pay on Nov. 1st, he was one of the most popular of the officers, and his books, his good humor, and his tireless energy made life at headquarters the happier for his presence.

Nor did he hesitate at the boundary-lines of his spiritual duties and his social obligations with the regiment. He participated in the ceremonies at headquarters, taking his place as officer of the day or officer of the guard at guard mount, and enjoying the secular side of the work hugely. As a man, a chaplain and an officer he was one of the biggest single assets of the First Provisional Regiment and embodied the principles of the religious phase of its existence.

PART II

RECREATIONAL

I—SOCIAL

Diogenes once said—no, it wasn't Diogenes at all. Diogenes is the man who went around with a barn lantern when the city of Athens wouldn't furnish him with electric lights—it was Aristotle. Aristotle once said in a few thousand pages of Greek that happiness and goodness were interchangeable, or words to that effect. That is the text of what is to follow. Good soldiers are happy soldiers, and *vice versa*. Consider the First Provisional.

From the time of its entry into the field until the formation of the Aqueduct Citizens' Committee in July, the social side of the regiment's recreational activities was for the greater part unorganized. In the great rush attendant upon the providing of recreation for the vast numbers of men pouring into the national army cantonments or going overseas to France, the national organizations specializing in this work overlooked the thin line of the First Provisional for the time being, with the exception of such work as was done by local chapters or branches. So, in the consideration of the early recreational history of the regiment, it must be borne in mind that it was meager enough and in many cases only spasmodic.

The word "social" when used in this connection includes the canteen work, entertainment of men by organizations or private individuals, and the ministering to the fundamental wants of the soldier, which are for something to eat, something to smoke, a place to go, and music. He needs the tidbits that do not comprise a part of the component ration—cakes, pies, doughnuts, ice-cream, dainty wafers, ginger pop, and the other soft drinks. He is constantly out of smoking materials, and before pay-day is quite likely to be without the wherewithal that makes them possible. He likes a change of indoor scenery and the companionship of women, and if he is not given the proper setting and the right kind of women, he will find an improper setting and the wrong kind.

He enjoys entertainment of all sorts, and is contented with the better sort if it is given to him, but will get some sort in any event. He expresses himself in song, and will have a perfectly hilarious

evening with his mates in a tent, singing all the printables and unprintables known to the game, but, more than that, enjoys real music and a chance to participate in it. To give a concert to a camp where the soldier has no part is a mistake. To give one where the soldier has a chance to be a big part is a success.

The people of the various communities along the line of the First Provisional Regiment who did so much for the men of the camps in the early days had all this to learn, and often by more or less humiliating experience. Your soldier will never complain about the sort of entertainment he gets at hostess house or canteen. He just stops coming, and as a result is the hardest kind to "get".

Without naming any names, there is an instance that proves this point exactly. In a certain small town on the line of the First Provisional was a dear lady who wanted to do something to help the boys. With the best of intentions and motives she invited some dozen of them to tea at her house one afternoon. This, in her mind, was a "nice way of entertaining them." It was. They balanced teacups on their knees in embarrassed agony; said "Yes, 'm," and "No, 'm," in scarlet-faced interludes, or growled monosyllables at one another; did not dare ask to smoke; sweated profusely, and were stiff, uncomfortable and forlorn until it was time to go. The only real excitement they had that afternoon was a crap game with the dear lady's chauffeur on the way home. They "cleaned him out," too. Did they visit that house again? They did not. They could not be induced to it with a block and tackle. To be talked at by a "bunch of ladies," to drink tea, and to be hot and uncomfortable all about nothing, was not their idea of a good time.

On the other hand, there was the method employed by Mrs. Roberts Walker, of Scarsdale, whose home is one of the best-appointed of Westchester County's country-places. As a member of the National League for Woman's Service she had met the boys on the line while she was in uniform. There was one point of contact.

They wanted baths. She knew that and invited them to use her bath-tubs. Now ninety per cent. of the soldiers of the First Provisional would face nearly anything to get a bath, and when they found that at Mrs. Walker's they were merely told where the bath-rooms were, without any great amount of conversation about the men and their needs entering into the matter, they were not shy about taking advantage of her offer. When they came down from the bath-rooms they found that there was something to eat, all set out on a table where a fellow could help himself



Upper left—Colonel Rose and Lieut.-Col. Burnett emerging from St. Mary's Church on the day of the regimental service. Right—The chaplain, Capt. Charles Baldwin, one of the biggest assets of the First Provisional Regiment. Center left—A Sunday afternoon service at headquarters with the boxing-ring serving as chancel. Right—The Staff marching in to regimental service. Lower left—The "Fighting Parson" in his fighting clothes. Right—Thompson, Corey, and Hanlon leading church march.



Mrs. James Speyer, "Mother of the Regiment" and originator of the Aqueduct Citizens' Committee, which did so much for the men of the First Provisional.

and no one watching him. There were cigars, cigarettes, and tobacco in the living-room; and, yes, they could play the piano if they chose. Mrs. Walker did not bother them, but if they did not know how to play the piano she would be glad to play for them. She played. That was another point of contact.

And they appreciated all this so much that when she invited three or four of them to come to dinner they did it just to please her. They took one helping of things, cleaned up plates while she talked about things in general, and then refused a second helping. "No, their appetites were not very good." She laughed and helped them again all around and then a third time. She did not give them a many-course meal, but there was plenty of what there was and it was awfully good. Mrs. Walker had the right method. The men came to her house often, going up-stairs to their baths, descending after the baths for a smoke, and finally going their ways. And in all the time that she entertained she never found that her confidence in the men was mistaken. On the line a man might be the "toughest guy in camp," but at Mrs. Walker's he was a gentleman.

The same was true of Mrs. H. M. Turner, of Chappaqua, who, with Mrs. William Mills of the same village, acted as guardian angel to the Camp Fisher and Camp Dyer posts of Company A's line. Both were habitually in the uniform of the Motor Corps of the National League. Their work on the line made them conversant with, and appreciative of, the problems of guard duty and subsistence. They could talk with the men on those things in a fashion that showed they knew what they were talking about. When they went to the barracks on transportation work there was always an exchange of comment on general conditions. When the boys visited their homes they did it gladly, for they were seeing friends who knew the line and the men of the line. They were comfortable with such.

Perhaps the most substantial advance made in the recreational work for the men in the early days was through the plan of canteen afternoon or evenings at the barracks where the men were quartered. In their own surroundings, with a Victrola or a piano, ice-cream, cake, soft drinks and plenty to smoke, the men had their best times. Red Cross and organizations of a similar nature carried on this work. This was a result of the appreciation of the women of the chapters in the various towns along the Aqueduct that the work was important and that the men who were doing it were entitled to the same consideration as men abroad or training in the National Army cantonments. Fortunately there were a few in each community to spread this gospel and the results were help-

ful to the men. In the mountain camps on the 2nd Battalion line, however, it was more or less of a struggle to bring the canteen dainties to the line, and the men of the 2nd Battalion had to depend more on the efforts of their officers than did the men in the 1st and 3rd Battalions.

Let it not be understood that the officers of the two battalions nearer New York were behind those of the 2nd Battalion in caring for the recreational wants of their men. Only, in the case of the 2nd Battalion, such efforts stood out with greater emphasis because they were in many instances all that stood between the men and social zero.

Summary Court fines, the interest of friends, and the people at home station were used in buying Victrolas, securing pianos and making the barracks better places in which to live. A recreational room was an absolute necessity at each place, but unfortunately there were many camps where the recreation of the men in the daytime interfered seriously with the sleeping arrangements of the night guard. And this, too, must be regulated. One commanding officer met it one way and another another, according to physical properties available and the spirit of his men.

There were some posts on the line that were made up of such notorious hard workers that they had no time to think of amusements at their own camps until some time during the winter months. There was one such post that started late in the game, and this brings up the consideration of a particular reason for something besides the daily grind for the man on Aqueduct work.

In the beginning all of the men were deeply impressed with their job. With some of the more serious-minded it was more or less of an obsession in the beginning. And the long hours of watchfulness on post, the constant peering into the dark, and the keen, nervous tension under which the more imaginative and more conscientious of the men worked, left its mark. Man is naturally a gregarious animal. Put him on work that separates him from his fellow-men for six hours at a stretch once or twice a day, according to the man-power at his outpost, and he is likely to become close-mouthed, uncommunicative, and, if he is of a certain type, morose and even moody, after a while. And that is bad for the soldier be he young or old.

There was the case of the Mt. Vernon detachment that Lieut. Higgs had on Sector N-6. The story comes from him, and is here given as an illustration of the point. The men were all hard workers and all enthusiastic about the job on which they had been placed. The safety of the Aqueduct had been preached into them at the time of their original inspection at the armory. It had

been drilled into them by every officer that had been over them. It became the first thing in their lives. And little by little the long watches on the cut and cover got into their very nervous systems. The talk and the laughter at the mess-tables and in the barracks at night became less and less loud. That is a bad sign in any barracks, and Lieut. Higgs began to look his men over carefully as to their mental attitude.

He found that some of them were getting into the habit of sitting by themselves on their cots until bedtime, moody and silent, and that others retired to a corner with a book or magazine the moment a meal was over, even disregarding pass privileges.

This, as a direct result of the life they were leading on the Aqueduct. They were passing through a transitory stage which, if left to pursue its full course, would lead to a reaction. He dreaded that reaction, so he proposed a barracks party. The proposal met with little enthusiasm, but he pressed it and the invitations were sent out. Even then the men were not overly anticipatory. The day of the party came and the barracks had to be put in the best of shape for the event. No effort was made by the men to do anything extra to beautify the place beyond the ordinary policing. Lieut. Higgs directed that the barracks floors be mopped. The men went at it in a half-hearted way until he himself took one of the mops and got busy. Then came the matter of decoration and there was no enthusiasm on that score until he started it. But the morning after the party, which was made a big success by sheer drive and hustle, the men were of a new frame of mind. They wanted to know when there was to be another one. The entire spirit of the men changed. They had something new to talk about. Their work was done in the same conscientious fashion, but the mesmerism of the cut and cover was broken. They were no longer under the hypnotic and soul-deadening influence of routine.

And so it was that sooner or later there came to every camp on the line the things that made for home life in the barracks, for fun, and evenings of rollicking song or games. Gambling is one of the most prevalent of army sins, but there was comparatively little of it on the line of the First Provisional. Perhaps this was because the officers set the example or because it was not generally looked on with favor by the senior non-commissioned officers, who knew of the attitude of headquarters on the subject of "crap" and poker. Bunk-drinking is another army sin, but there was little of it on the First Provisional's line. The other things, and the hard, steady work kept the men's minds too busy for any excesses.

Little by little the posts of the line picked up the accessories of amusement for their men. The post of Company M, at Pleasantville, was one of the best examples of this, for there the men had a pool-table, a piano, Victrola, and practically all of the other barracks entertainment paraphernalia. Metamorphosis of the post furnished not a little outlet for excess energy and the men derived real pleasure in beautifying the grounds and interior of the barracks under Captain Muller.

Canteen work became an established thing at many of the posts. Headquarters was furnished with a night of entertainment combined with a French class, once a week at the hall on the Preston estate near Mt. Kisco, and during the winter the men of the Headquarters Company attended dances there. Active in the work for headquarters were, Mrs. H. R. Bishop, of Mt. Kisco; Mrs. Preston, Mrs. Murray Dodge, Mrs. W. A. Andrews, and Mrs. A. E. Tighe. Dances were also held by the companies, in which Company H always shone, and at 2nd Battalion Headquarters there were a number of good dances, in which the men of Troop B participated.

These French classes gave the men of headquarters, the Croton Dam outpost, Kitchawan and Millwood something new to think about and resulted in some funny incidents. None of these was any funnier than when the cook of the men's mess at headquarters posted the menu for the day in French, after a laborious hunt through his text-book for the proper names of the various ingredients. That was at a time when purchases outside the component ration was being frowned upon by the Brigade Quartermaster.

One of the quartermaster-sergeants from Millwood drove up with a truck-load of subsistence just before noon and stopped to look at the menu which the cook had posted on the mess-hall door. He took a long look at the cook's effort and shook his head.

"I don't see how in hell you fellows get away with all this fancy stuff up here. We don't get it at Millwood," he growled. "Who are you going to feed all that corned beef and cabbage in there to—the officers?"

Much interest had been taken in the men of the Company L sector by the good people of Scarsdale, White Plains, Gedney Farms and vicinity, and during the winter a committee was formed to establish a hostess house for the men of the sector in particular and all men of the Aqueduct in general. The matter was taken up with Colonel Rose by Thomas Simpson, head of the committee, and when the Commanding Officer assured his hearty sympathy in the project the affair was incorporated, with Mr.

Simpson as president, Charles J. Davis, of White Plains, as secretary, and Mrs. Thomas Simpson, treasurer. The board of directors included Mrs. Simpson, Mrs. Otis Luke, Mrs. Charles J. Davis, Michael J. Duffy and Mr. Simpson, all of White Plains, with Willard E. Day and Frank J. Cassidy, of the Gedney Farms.

On the afternoon of Feb. 22nd, while swirling clouds of heavy, wet snow swathed the blood-and-white stripes of the flag, and innumerable great flakes on the field of blue made its stars myriad, Lieut.-Colonel Burnett accepted the Hostess House in the name of the men of the regiment, the finest gift that had been made to the organization since its entry into the field. While the snow-covered men of Troop G and Battery A stood at parade rest, Mr. Cassidy made the speech of presentation, just after formal retreat. Members of the regimental and battalion staffs and a large number of civilians participated in and witnessed the ceremony, which was held in front of the Hostess House on the Underhill road near Outpost No. 3 of the Company L line.

The house had been well fitted by the public-spirited citizens who had planned it. A comfortable two-story building with wide porches had been refurnished and renovated throughout, with a big reception-room, music-room, dining-room, and kitchen on the lower floor, and officers' room, card-room, bath-rooms and game-rooms on the upper floor. Curtains, rugs, easy-chairs, soft-tinted wall-papers and paints made the interior a delightful one, and the register of the Hostess House in the months that followed showed that the men of the sector appreciated and used it. Approximately twenty-five men per day visited the Hostess House throughout the period of its existence, which was terminated by the demobilization of the regiment.

A maid was kept constantly at the house, and various members of the house committee took the days of the week in turn. The management of the Hostess House proved the ability of such an institution to practically run itself, and the appreciation of the men more than paid for its establishment and maintenance. To the good people who inaugurated it goes the credit for the first organized recreational effort on a large scale along the line of the regiment.

Spring found the recreational work going well from Ashokan to Hillview, and with the entry of Captain Baldwin into the organization's life other things began immediately. If there was one thing which the regiment lacked it was bound books. Through the efforts of such organizations as the Breatly League of New York City, of which Miss Vanetta Glucksmann was the spokesman in Aqueduct work, the regiment had been supplied with magazines,

but the chaplain appreciated the need of books and his first effort was to install a library at every company. The Army and Navy Book Club of Albany also helped with this. Then came games and musical instruments, and in the early summer the Y. M. C. A., becoming interested, supplied some of the units with baseball equipment, through Field Secretary Ivan P. Flood, who had headquarters at White Plains.

In late June and early July a group of persons who had been interested in the work of the men on the Aqueduct individually, were brought together through a combination of circumstances and the efforts of the chaplain and Mrs. James Speyer, of Scarborough. Mrs. Speyer, who, as the "mother of the regiment," was one of the best-loved women known to the men of the line, had become interested in the Aqueduct and its guardians at Millwood, where she had seen the needs of the men of Company A and had helped to meet some of those needs in a very complete way. It was her inspiration and her love of the men of the line that led to the formation of the great committee that did so much for the boys in olive drab.

This was during Colonel Rose's illness. Captain Baldwin advised the acting lieutenant-colonel of what was pending, some time before the organization of the committee was actually put under way and secured the acting commanding officer's consent to participate in the organization.

On July 10th the following letter was sent to approximately one hundred persons in the counties of Westchester, Orange, Putnam, Ulster and New York whose names had been suggested by the unit commanders of the First Provisional as having shown an interest in the men and their welfare:

AQUEDUCT GUARD CITIZENS' COMMITTEE

NEW YORK, July 10th, 1918.

The undersigned have known for a considerable time that the recreational and other needs of the officers and men of the so-called "First Provisional Regiment," which is guarding the new Aqueduct on both sides of the Hudson River, were not being met as they should be. Last month Mr. Kenneth D. Widdemer, Organizing Secretary of the New York War Camp Community Service, was asked to make a special report on this subject, and a copy of this report is herewith enclosed.

The "First Provisional Regiment," of about 1,500 men,

is recruited from the National Guard Regiments of New York, and is composed entirely, both as regards officers and men, of New Yorkers. The men of this regiment go into Federal Service at the rate of over fifty per week, 90 per cent. of whom are sent abroad as Non-Commissioned Officers. The Regiment is, therefore, a training-camp for the United States forces, in addition to doing actual field service on the 95 miles of the Aqueduct.

The duty of guarding the water supply of New York City is, of course, an important one, and the men who volunteer to do this work are entitled to have as much done for them, both as regards sanitary living conditions and recreation, as the men in the larger camps in this country and abroad.

A number of our patriotic fellow-citizens residing in the towns and villages near the Aqueduct have during the past year done a good deal for some of these posts. While these individual efforts have been much appreciated by officers and men, and by the authorities (whose hearty co-operation we have every reason to expect), we are of the opinion that the problem can be more efficiently and economically solved by co-ordinating all efforts and by giving all residents of Westchester, Putnam, Orange and Ulster counties a chance to do their share for these men, who have felt lonely and forgotten, although in one of the most beautiful and densely populated sections of our State.

We are sure that it is only necessary to call the attention of our fellow-citizens to existing conditions to enlist their active and financial support. We invite you to become a member of a Committee of One Hundred Residents of Westchester, Putnam, Orange and Ulster counties, to co-operate with us in this work. Will you kindly notify promptly Mr. Lewis Gouverneur Morris, Yonkers, whether you are willing to serve on this Committee. As soon as the list is complete a meeting will be called for organization.

Yours very truly,

CAPTAIN CHARLES W. BALDWIN, St. Mary's
Rectory, Scarborough.

LEWIS GOUVERNEUR MORRIS, Yonkers.

ALTON B. PARKER, Esopus.

JAMES SPEYER, Scarborough.

WILLIAM CHURCH OSBORN, Garrison.

FINLEY J. SHEPARD, Irvington.

ROBERTS WALKER, Scarsdale,

This met with immediate response, and as a result there was held at the home of Stuyvesant Fish, at Garrison-on-the-Hudson, on the afternoon of July 20th, a meeting at which the Aqueduct Guard Citizens' Committee was formed, with more than one hundred members. This was preceded by a luncheon at the home of Mr. and Mrs. Speyer, at which the staff officers of the regiment present met for the first time the Hon. Justice George L. Genung, of the Ninth Municipal Court, New York City. Justice Genung represented the New York War Camp Community Service, then active in the national camps and in New York City. He had at that time volunteered to act as field representative of the Citizens' Committee with the regiment during the summer, and this offer had been accepted.

The Commander-in-chief of the State forces expressed his approval of the project in the following letter:

STATE OF NEW YORK
EXECUTIVE CHAMBER
ALBANY

July 19, 1918.

LEWIS GOUVERNEUR MORRIS, Esq.

119 Hudson Terrace,
Yonkers, New York.

DEAR MR. MORRIS:

Thank you very much for your kind invitation to attend the first meeting of the Aqueduct Guard Citizens' Committee to be held on Saturday afternoon, July twentieth, at "Glenclyffe," the home of Mr. Stuyvesant Fish, Garrison-on-the-Hudson.

I regret sincerely my inability to attend this meeting, owing to a previous engagement of long standing for that date.

May I avail myself of this opportunity to express my hearty approval of the organization of such a committee to promote the welfare of the State Troops who are guarding the watershed and my appreciation of the good work your committee has undertaken.

Cordially yours,

CHARLES S. WHITMAN.

At the meeting in Mr. Fish's home the committee formally organized and settled upon constitution and officers as follows:

CONSTITUTION

AQUEDUCT GUARD CITIZENS' COMMITTEE

(Adopted at the First General Meeting Held at
Garrison, N. Y., July 20, 1918.)

NAME

The name of the Committee shall be the "Aqueduct
Guard Citizens' Committee."

OBJECT AND PURPOSES

The object and purposes of the Committee shall be to provide for the recreation and other needs of the officers and men guarding the new Aqueduct.

The Committee will seek and stimulate the co-operation of State and City authorities, and will welcome and try to co-ordinate the work of all agencies, whether National or Local, and all individual efforts having the same object in view.

The General Committee will meet at the call of the Chair, or at a written request of twenty-five members addressed to the Secretary.

The Officers of the Committee shall be a Chairman, two Vice-Chairmen, a Secretary, and Treasurer. They shall be elected at the first general meeting of the Committee, and hold office for one year, or until their successors are appointed.

COMMITTEES

There shall be an Executive Committee, composed of the Officers, the Chairmen of Committees, and two Members-at-Large from each of the Counties of Westchester, Putnam, Ulster and Orange.

The Chairmen of the Committees, and Members-at-Large, shall be appointed by the Chair, subject to the approval of the General Committee.

The Executive Committee shall have all the powers of the full Committee, but it shall not have the right to incur indebtedness in excess of the funds on hand. It shall appoint a Director, and other Officers, needed for the work.

Three members will constitute a quorum, and the Committee will make its own rules for the conduct of its business.

In addition to the Executive Committee, and subject to it, there shall be the following committees, each to consist of five or more members to be appointed by the Chairmen of the special Committees in consultation with the officers of the General Committee, viz.:

Finance Committee
 Comforts Committee
 Entertainment Committee
 Canteen Committee
 Committee on Transportation
 Committee on Sanitation

and such other Committees as may seem expedient from time to time.

OFFICERS

Chairman

Hon. Alton B. Parker Esopus

Vice-Chairman

Mr. Stuyvesant Fish Garrison
 Hon. John G. Van Etten Kingston

Treasurer

Mr. James Speyer Scarborough
 (24-26 Pine Street, New York City)

Secretary

Mr. David T. Davis Tarrytown
 (Office, 55 Liberty Street, New York City)

Members-at-Large of the Executive Committee

Westchester County

Mr. A. P. Cobb Tarrytown
 Mr. Roberts Walker Scarsdale

Putnam County

Mr. Stuyvesant Fish Garrison
 Mr. A. A. Healy Cold Spring

Ulster County

Mr. Edward Coykendall Kingston
 Mrs. James O. Winston Saugerties

Orange County

Mrs. E. H. Harriman Arden
 Hon. B. B. Odell Newburgh

Chairmen of Committees

(and *ex-Officio Members of Executive Committee*)

Appointed at the General Meeting, July 20, 1918

Finance Committee

Mr. Samuel Sloan Garrison

Comforts Committee

Mrs. James Speyer Scarborough

Entertainment Committee

Mrs. Peter Duryea Scarborough

Canteen Committee

Mrs. Caspar Whitney Bronxville

Committee on Publications

Mrs. Roberts Walker Scarsdale

Committee on Transportation

Mrs. Francis H. Leggett Stone Ridge

Committee on Sanitation

Mr. R. E. Willis Hastings-on-Hudson

MEMBERS OF COMMITTEES AS CONSTITUTED TO AUGUST 5, 1918

Finance Committee

Mr. Samuel Sloan, Chairman Garrison
 Mr. John Henry Hammond Mt. Kisco
 Mr. James Speyer Scarborough
 Mr. Felix M. Warburg White Plains
 Mr. Robert S. Brewster Mt. Kisco
 Hon. Martin Vogel Chappaqua
 Mr. Finley J. Shepard Tarrytown

Comforts Committee

| | |
|---------------------------------------|------------------|
| Mrs. James Speyer, Chairman | Scarborough |
| Mr. Scott R. Hayes, Vice-Chairman . . | Croton Lake |
| Mrs. J. Clifton Edgar | Greenwich |
| Mrs. I. N. Spiegelberg | Briarcliff |
| Mr. De Witt Millhauser | Hartsdale |
| Mrs. Edwin Gould | Dobbs Ferry |
| Mrs. Heber R. Bishop | Mt. Kisco |
| Mrs. Hiram Bloomingdale | Ossining |
| Miss Mary Haldane | Kingston |
| Mr. F. O. March | Philipse Manor |
| Mr. Frederick M. Hilton | Briarcliff |
| Mrs. J. F. D. Lanier | Ardley |
| Mrs. Dwight S. Richardson | Briarcliff Lodge |
| Mrs. Lewis G. Morris | Yonkers |
| Miss Elsie Janis | Philipse Manor |

Entertainment Committee

| | |
|---------------------------------------|---------------|
| Mrs. Peter Duryea, Chairman | Scarborough |
| Mr. Irvin S. Cobb, Vice-Chairman . . | Ossining |
| Captain Charles Baldwin | Scarborough |
| Mrs. James Speyer | Scarborough |
| Mrs. D. H. Davison | New York City |
| Mrs. Harold Turner | Chappaqua |
| Mrs. Frank Higginson | Kingston |
| Mrs. George Haliday | Walkill |
| Mrs. Ralph Waldo Trim | Croton |

Canteen Committee

| | |
|---------------------------------------|-------------|
| Mrs. Caspar Whitney, Chairman | Bronxville |
| Mrs. John C. Ten Eyck | Yonkers |
| Mrs. Roberts Walker | Scarsdale |
| Mrs. V. Everit Macy | Scarborough |
| Mrs. F. R. Winne | Newburgh |

Committee on Publications

| | |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------------|
| Mrs. Roberts Walker, Chairman | Scarsdale |
| Mr. R. E. Willis | Hastings-on-Hudson |
| Mrs. William U. Parsons | Dobbs Ferry |
| Mrs. John R. Hall | Scarsdale |
| Mr. A. Winne | Pulitzer Bldg., N. Y. |

Committee on Transportation

| | |
|--------------------------------------|-------------|
| Mrs. Francis H. Leggett, Chairman... | Stone Ridge |
| Mr. Stuyvesant Fish, Vice-Chairman | Garrison |
| Mr. Edward Coykendall | Kingston |
| Mr. T. Horton | Kingston |
| Mr. J. D. Schoonmaker | Kingston |
| Mrs. B. B. Odell | Newburgh |
| Mrs. V. Everit Macy | Scarborough |
| Miss Mary Haldane | Kingston |
| Mrs. A. M. Hall | Esopus |
| Hon. Justice George L. Genung | Croton Lake |

Committee on Sanitation

| | |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------|
| Mr. R. E. Willis, Chairman | Hastings-on-Hudson |
| Mr. R. H. Shreve, Vice-Chairman | Hastings |
| Dr. L. W. Hubbard | Mt. Vernon |
| Mr. F. M. McCoy | Peekskill |
| Mr. Justice Seeger | Newburgh |
| Mr. Bruyam Hasbrouck | New Paltz |

DIRECTOR OF THE WORK

| | |
|--|-------------|
| Hon. George L. Genung | Croton Lake |
| (Headquarters, First Provisional Regiment) | |

LIST OF GENERAL COMMITTEE TO AUGUST 5, 1918

| | |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Arnstein, Leo | Dobbs Ferry |
| Barnum, Dr. and Mrs. M. W. | Ossining |
| Bloomington, Mr. and Mrs. Hiram .. | Ossining |
| Benet, Mr. and Mrs. Imlay | Lake Mahopac |
| Breuchard, Mr. and Mrs. Jules | Olive Bridge |
| Baldwin, Captain and Mrs. Charles W. | St. Mary's Rectory, Scarborough |
| Bailey, Mrs. J. Muhlenberg | Yonkers |
| Brown, Hon. and Mrs. C. F. | Newburgh |
| Bishop, Mr. and Mrs. Heber Reginald | Mt. Kisco |
| Brewster, Mr. and Mrs. Robert S. | Mt. Kisco |
| Clearwater, Hon. A. T. | Kingston |
| Cobb, Mr. and Mrs. Irvin S. | Ossining |
| Cobb, Mr. and Mrs. A. P. | Tarrytown |

| | |
|---|-------------------------------|
| Coykendall, Mr. and Mrs. Edward . . . | Kingston |
| Duryea, Mr. and Mrs. Peter | Scarborough |
| Dunham, Dr. and Mrs. Carroll | Irvington |
| Danforth, Mr. and Mrs. C. E. | Sleepy Hollow Country Club |
| Dayton, Miss Laura | Highland |
| Davis, Mr. and Mrs. David T. | Tarrytown |
| Delafield, Mr. and Mrs. E. C. | Riverdale |
| Edgar, Dr. and Mrs. J. Clifton | Greenwich |
| Ettlinger, Mr. and Mrs. Louis | Peekskill |
| Fish, Mr. Stuyvesant | Garrison |
| French, Mrs. Lydia C. | Garrison |
| Guinzburg, Mrs. Victor | Chappaqua |
| Gould, Mr. and Mrs. Edwin | Dobbs Ferry |
| Hasbrouck, Hon. and Mrs. G. D. B. | Kingston |
| Hays, Mr. and Mrs. Daniel P. | Pleasantville |
| Haas, Mr. and Mrs. Kalman | Mt. Kisco |
| Hammond, Mr. and Mrs. John Henry | Mt. Kisco |
| Hayes, Mr. and Mrs. Scott R. | Croton Lake |
| Hall, Mr. and Mrs. John R. | Scarsdale |
| Haldane, Miss Mary | Kingston |
| Higginson, Admiral and Mrs. | Kingston |
| Hilton, Mrs. George P. | Saugerties |
| Harriman, Mrs. E. H. | Arden |
| Healy, Mr. and Mrs. A. A. | Cold Spring |
| Hitch, Mrs. Fred Delano | Newburgh |
| Hoysradt, Mr. and Mrs. Warren J. | Bronxville |
| Hilton, Mr. and Mrs. Frederick M. | Briarcliff |
| Hoe, Mrs. Robert | Bedford Hills |
| Hall, Mrs. Charles Mercer. | Esopus |
| Kelley, Mr. and Mrs. Hennan A. | Kingston |
| Kunz, Mr. George F. | Peekskill Hollow |
| Law, Mr. and Mrs. Walker W. | Briarcliff |
| Lord, Mr. and Mrs. Charles E. | Tarrytown |
| Lanier, Mr. and Mrs. J. F. D. | Ardley |
| Lewisohn, Mr. Adolph | Ardley |
| Leggett, Mrs. Francis H. | Stone Ridge |
| Macy, Mr. and Mrs. V. Everit | Scarborough |
| Millhauser, Mr. and Mrs. De Witt | Hartsdale |
| Morris, Mr. and Mrs. Lewis Gouverneur | Yonkers |
| Metz, Lieut.-Col. and Mrs. Herman A. | Mamaroneck |
| March, Mr. F. O. | Philipse Manor |
| Norwood, Dr. and Mrs. E. E. | Kingston |
| Osborn, Mr. and Mrs. William Church. | Garrison |

| | |
|---|--------------------|
| Olcott, Mr. and Mrs. J. Van Vechten | Garrison |
| Odell, Hon. and Mrs. B. B. | Newburgh |
| Pugsley, Hon. and Mrs. Cornelius A. . | Peekskill |
| Parsons, Mr. and Mrs. William Usher. | Garrison |
| Parker, Hon. Alton B. | Esopus |
| Redmond, Mrs. Henry S. | Portchester |
| Richardson, Mrs. Dwight S. | Briarcliff Lodge |
| Roberts, Miss Grace | Highland |
| Sloan, Mr. and Mrs. Samuel. | Garrison |
| Spiegelberg, Mr. and Mrs. I. N. | Briarcliff |
| Speyer, Mr. and Mrs. James | Scarborough |
| Sharpe, Hon. Sevrin B. | Kingston |
| Shepard, Mr. and Mrs. Finley J. | Tarrytown |
| Stelle, Mr. and Mrs. Frederick W. . . . | Ossining |
| Stroock, Mr. and Mrs. Joseph C. | Newburgh |
| Smiley, Mr. and Mrs. Daniel. | Lake Mohonk |
| Turner, Mr. and Mrs. Harold | Chappaqua |
| Vogel, Hon. and Mrs. Martin. | Chappaqua |
| Vanderlip, Mr. and Mrs. Frank A. . . . | Scarborough |
| Villard, Mr. and Mrs. Oswald G. | Dobbs Ferry |
| Van Etten, Hon. and Mrs. John G. . . . | Kingston |
| Walker, Mr. and Mrs. Roberts. | Scarsdale |
| Warburg, Mr. and Mrs. Felix M. | White Plains |
| Willis, Mr. and Mrs. R. E. | Hastings-on-Hudson |
| Webb, Captain and Mrs. Vanderbilt. . | Peekskill |
| Wiborg, Mr. B. | Easthampton, L. I. |
| Whitehouse, Mr. Worthington | White Plains |
| Winne, Mrs. F. R. | Newburgh |
| Ziegfeld, Mr. and Mrs. F. | Hastings |

A budget totaling approximately \$12,000 had been made up by the Executive Committee. At the first meeting in Garrison over \$7,000 was raised immediately by subscription, and the Committee entered upon its work with Justice Genung as field director. A committee badge, the medal of which was made up of the Great Aqueduct Seal, was adopted.

An indication of the scope of the Committee's efforts is contained in the following copy of the resolution adopted at a meeting of the Executive Committee held on the 16th of August:

COPY OF RESOLUTION

Adopted at Meeting of Executive Committee of Aqueduct
Guard Citizens' Committee on August 16th, 1918.

Until further resolution of the Executive Committee of the Aqueduct Guard Citizens' Committee the following Committees and the Treasurer shall have respectively the following functions and duties:

1. Finance Committee

The Finance Committee shall make a budget and see to it that the funds of the Aqueduct Guard Citizens' Committee are allocated to the several Committees in an equitable manner so as to meet the most pressing needs for health, sanitation, transportation, canteen, entertainment, etc.

The Chairman of each Committee shall submit to the Finance Committee for approval a detailed estimate of the funds required for the six months ensuing from the date of such submission.

No debt shall be incurred by any officer or by any Committee without the previous approval of the Finance Committee.

2. Comforts Committee

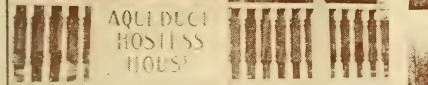
The Comforts Committee will provide without charge comforts for the men. It will collect articles needed, such as sweaters, mittens, helmets, books, periodicals, Victrolas, records, boxing-gloves, baseballs, cards, musical instruments, etc. Only such articles may be purchased as cannot be obtained through gift.

Requisitions for money to purchase articles are to be made by the Chairman or Vice-Chairman to the Finance Committee, and upon its approval the articles may be purchased and the Treasurer will pay the bills.

It is important that comforts be distributed impartially among the different posts and naturally where most needed.

3. Entertainment Committee

The Entertainment Committee shall have the charge and management of all entertainments, to be given impartially at the various posts. No fees are to be paid to entertainers, but their expenses are to be paid from the Committee funds at the request of and if approved by the Chairman of the Entertainment Committee. It shall be the duty of this Committee to arrange games and sports.



Left column, top to bottom—A mill at headquarters; Bauer and Keegan; Units of the First Provisional participate in the 1918 *Fête de Mai* of the Sleepy Hollow Country Club; Captain Westcott and the directors of the Hostess House; D plays A at Millwood. Right column, top to bottom—Bill Becker, heavyweight champion of the First Provisional; The Hostess House on the Underhill Road, near Scarsdale; A boxing bout in the shadow of Bonticou Crag by Troop B men; Captain Lord and the regimental non-com. staff on the football field at Ossining headquarters.



[MRS. PETER DURYEA (VIOLA ALLEN), WHO MEANT MUCH TO
THE REGIMENT [IN ITS BRIEF PLAYTIMES

4. Canteen Committee

The Canteen Committee shall have the charge and management of all canteens, whether stationary or traveling. The canteens shall be stocked and have for sale useful articles which the men need and can afford to buy. No articles are to be given away free. All articles are to be sold for cash at a price of 10 per cent. above cost.

The Finance Committee will furnish funds to stock the canteens and will appoint a Purchasing Agent to do the purchasing, which is to be done by wholesale wherever possible.

Strict and exact accounts are to be kept of all purchases and the bills therefor are to be paid by the Treasurer on the O. K. of the Purchasing Agent and Chairman of the Finance Committee. A strict and exact account is also to be kept of all sales.

Each soldier is to sign a book kept by the Canteen Manager, stating the article and amount paid by him. Once a week the amount of cash taken in by the canteen during the preceding week is to be turned in to the Treasurer, together with the books showing the sales made during the said week.

All requisitions for articles desired by the canteen to replenish stock are to be made in writing and turned in to the Purchasing Agent. The Finance Committee may pay some one to check up and make an inventory at any time of stores on hand in canteen.

No other Committee shall make sales to soldiers.

5. Committee on Transportation

The Committee on Transportation shall arrange for the transportation of necessary material and supplies to various posts of the articles furnished by the Comforts Committee and for entertainments. It shall also arrange transportation for the men to entertainments and to near-by towns and villages.

The Committee shall incur no expense without the approval of the Finance Committee, and expenses incurred with such approval shall be paid for by the Treasurer.

6. Committee on Sanitation

It shall be the duty of the Committee on Sanitation to take all measures necessary and to co-operate with the

authorities so that all such measures as may be necessary for the health and physical welfare of the men shall properly be taken by them.

Baths (hot and cold), fly-screens, disinfectants, medical and hospital service, first-aid kits and other necessities shall be arranged for by said Committee.

The Treasurer

The Treasurer shall have charge of all the funds of the Committee and shall pay such bills as have been approved in writing by the Chairman of the Finance Committee.

Mrs. Peter Duryea, known and worshiped by the theater-going public as Viola Allen, was a member of Captain Baldwin's church in Scarborough and as such became interested in the Aqueduct and its men. And it was due to the efforts of Viola Allen that arrangements were made with the Stage Women's War Relief early in July for a series of performances by professionals at the camps on the line. The regiment was divided into three zones and the schedule of performances planned accordingly. The first was given at Camp Pell, Millwood, on the night of June 29th, 1918, when men from Companies D, B, and M, and the headquarters men, enjoyed, with a crowd of civilians, and the men of Company A, a splendid program of vaudeville numbers. The men of the command had erected a stage in the natural amphitheater made by the triangle of the Croton Lake and Chapqua roads and the Aqueduct. It was a wonderful night for the affair, and with the camp and stage brilliantly lighted by hundreds of incandescents and colored Japanese lanterns that first performance made a memory picture that will remain long with those who saw it.

At a subsequent performance at headquarters the regiment came into touch for the first time with the famous Mother Davidson, who did so much for the men of the national cantonments during the war. Energetic, enthusiastic and active, Mother Davidson heard of the work that was being done on the Aqueduct by the Stage Women's War Relief and began to make inquiries. At the headquarters performance on July 6th, which began in a beautiful setting of flowers, ferns, footlights and soft-colored electrics, and concluded in the officers' mess-hall to the accompaniment of a terrific thunderstorm, she made up her mind that the boys of the Aqueduct needed her. There followed in the deserted, wet mess-hall after the entertainment a conference with the chap-

lain, the Adjutant, and Mrs. Duryea, and from that time on the Mother Davidson players co-operated with the Stage Women's War Relief in bringing joy to the men on the Aqueduct.

This is the only place in the entire volume where there is reference to that little stranger within the seams who has received so much attention in the public print during the great war. There was a certain prisoner of the First Provisional who shall be nameless. He was noted for two things. That is, he was noted for two things, figuratively speaking. One was his ability to dodge work, and the other his ability to attract company. He had lots of company.

Periodically, he was given a kerosene bath, but there were always sufficient survivors to hold a meeting of the veteran association. The worst of it was that he never seemed to mind them. One day the battalion medical officer wanted a cootie for a microscopic demonstration. The first sergeant went up into the company street where the prisoner was at work.

"Commere, you," he said. "Doc wants a cootie."

"Well, I don't see what you're taking things away from me for," answered the prisoner, in a tone of complaint, as the first sergeant, with unerring instinct, turned a seam in the man's shirt-front and returned to the medical officer with his prize.

Imagine, then, the near-riot that ensued when at one of the entertainments a sleight-of-hand artist reached over to the prisoner in question and seemingly extracted from his shirt-front five playing-cards and an imitation mouse.

"Bane gettin' pritty big, huh?" roared the Scandinavian cook, and the crowd yelled. The visitors wondered what the boys were laughing at.

Performances, as shown in the following schedules, were given at the various camps from June to November:

First Entertainment

June 29th

Millwood, N. Y.

Program by arrangement with the Stage Women's
War Relief

Miss Mabelle Adams.....Violin Solos, Songs and Recitations

Miss Brown.....Accompanist

Miss Bocock.....Monologist, Southern Songs
and Stories on the Banjo

Mlle. Luano (*Première danseuse* from the Hippodrome).In Dances

Second Entertainment

July 6th Headquarters, Croton Lake

Program arranged by Mrs. Speyer

Mr. John Palmer.....Comedy Monologues

Miss Carrie Bridewell (Metropolitan Opera).....Songs and Operatic Selections

Miss Dorothy Hoyle.....Violinist

Mr. Hyler Card tricks and Sleight-of-hand

Mr. Chichester, Accompanist

At the first two performances Mrs. H. M. Turner, of Chapqua, provided transportation for the men, and in subsequent entertainments on the east side of the river was largely instrumental in securing transportation for the visiting soldiers.

The scope of the Entertainment Committee was enlarged to cover other recreational needs, and three large stationary open-air platforms were constructed at Millwood, Scarsdale, and Elmsford. (The lumber was paid for out of the Chaplain's Fund, the boys in the camps doing the carpenter work.)

It was designed to use these platforms for boxing, games, etc., at other times, but being expensive to erect and sometimes difficult, it was found more practical to have two portable platforms made—one at the Peak near Kingston, for use in camps on the west side of the river, and the other, made under the direction of Captain Roche, at Peekskill, to be transported to whatever points entertainments were given on the east side. The performances were scheduled with care and every effort made to give each and every camp equal opportunity to see them.

Either the Chairman or the chaplain (generally both) attended each performance and saw to it that the platform, piano and other accessories were in place; that the artists were met and conveyed to and from trains and camp, and refreshments furnished them when needed.

Third Entertainment

August 10th At Scarsdale (Company L)

Program by arrangement with Mrs. D. H. Davidson,
Affectionately known in all camps as "Mother Davidson"
Mme. Yvonne de Trévillé

(Grand Opera Singer) Songs and Operatic Selections
Miss Margaret Sumner (now
entertaining in France) Recitations

Miss Fay Foster.....Composition of "The Americans Come"

319

Fourth Entertainment

Program

Fifth Entertainment

Sixth Entertainment

| | |
|--|---------------------------|
| August 29th | At the Peak |
| Program by arrangement with Stage Women's War Relief | |
| (A Three Days' Trip) | |
| Miss Mabelle Adams..... | Violin, Songs and Stories |
| Miss Brown..... | Accompanist |
| Miss Bocock..... | Songs and Stories |
| Miss Marcelle Johnston (Opera | |
| Singer)..... | Songs |
| Mr. Tom Lewis..... | Comic Talks and Stories |

Seventh Entertainment

August 30th (Afternoon) Olive Bridge
 Misses Adams, Brown, Bocock and Johnston and Mr.
 Tom Lewis

Eighth Entertainment

August 30th (Evening) Camp Gardiner
 Same program as in afternoon
 Transportation by Mrs. Francis H. Leggett

Ninth Entertainment

September 6th Peekskill
 Program by arrangement with Mrs. Davidson
 Mr. Henry Davison.....'Cellist
 Miss Gwen Lewis.....Recitations and Songs
 Miss Ives.....Recitations to Music
 Garda Kora (Interpretative
 Dancer).....Greek Dances and Pantomime
 Miss Sara Barnett.....Comedy Monologue
 Mr. Ferdinand Himmelrich (Pianist and Instantaneous
 Composer)
 —and Mother Davidson

Tenth Entertainment

September 12th New Paltz
 Program by arrangement with Stage Women's War Relief
 Mr. and Mrs. George Spink
 (Well known in Vaudeville). Songs, Duets, and Mono-
 logues, with Piano
 Miss Welki.....Recitations
 Miss Ruth Benton.....Singer
 Miss Haum.....Dancer
 Miss Walcott.....Accompanist

Eleventh Entertainment

September 20th . Pleasantville
 (Held in Carnegie Library because of rain)
 Program by arrangement with Mrs. Davidson
 Miss Beverly Sitgreaves
 (Prominent Actress)Dramatic Recitations
 Mr. Bowers.....Violin Solos

Eleventh Entertainment—Continued

| | |
|-----------------------|----------------|
| Miss Schiller..... | Pianist |
| Miss Gibson..... | Songs |
| Miss Mary Stuart..... | Monologues |
| Mr. Niemeyer..... | Comic Stories |
| Billy Rhodes..... | Songs at Piano |
| —and Mother Davidson | |

Twelfth Entertainment

| | |
|--|------------------------|
| September 27th | Little Britain |
| Program by arrangement with Stage Women's War Relief | |
| Miss Lucile La Jerne..... | Talks and Stories |
| Miss Anelon Burns..... | Violin Solos and Songs |
| Miss Shepperd..... | Piano and Songs |
| Miss Helen Hunt..... | Comic Recitations |

All entertainments for October were canceled because of quarantine for influenza.

Thirteenth Entertainment

| | |
|---|--|
| November 21st | At the Peak |
| Program by arrangement with Mrs. Davidson | |
| Mr. Ferdinand Himmelrich.. | Piano Selections and Instantaneous Composing |
| Miss Raymond..... | Violinist |
| Miss Rudd..... | Accompanist |
| Miss Kann..... | Songs and Operatic Selections |
| Miss Cecile Weston..... | Humorous Songs and Recitations |
| Miss Weston (sister)..... | Accompanist |

Special entertainment, with sketch, etc., arranged for at headquarters at Scarborough for Thanksgiving had to be canceled two days before because of fresh cases of influenza in the hospital.

Co-ordinating all activities for the welfare of the enlisted men, the Aqueduct Citizens' Committee gave standing and standard to all recreation work of the First Provisional. It brought about renewed interest by the Red Cross and Y. M. C. A. and other auxiliary branches of welfare work connected with army life.

And this committee of leading citizens from the Hudson River counties proved a big asset to the regiment in another way. Un-

hampered by official position, it spoke, and spoke boldly for the enlisted men and their welfare to State and city officials. Non-partisan in nature and affiliated with powerful leaders in both of the big political parties of the State, it was a bulwark and aid to the regiment and the maintenance of the Line Impregnable.

It provided a fund for the chaplain, and, furnishing shower-baths and fixtures, made arrangements at the same time to pay for the shower-baths in the proposed Red Cross canteens in the event of the city's failure to do so.

A committee on publication was organized which in the final days of the regiment's history secured the payment of all of *The Watchdog* bills. The comforts committee, of which Mrs. Speyer was chairman, did much toward adding to the happiness of the men of the line, and the entertainment committee, of which Mrs. Duryea was the chairman, co-ordinated the amusement activities.

In January, 1919, as the regiment neared the end of its service the big general committee disbanded, leaving the disposition of the remaining funds of the organization in the hands of a committee of four, consisting of Judge Parker, Mr. Speyer, Captain Baldwin, and Secretary Davis.

There remains the work of the Red Cross along purely recreational lines, and the work of the Y. M. C. A.

Much of the individual work of the local Red Cross Chapters along the Aqueduct has already been outlined. It was not until midsummer of 1918 that the Atlantic Division of the American Red Cross placed an official representative in the field with the Aqueduct troops, Capt. C. E. Lindsey, who made a survey of the Aqueduct with the idea of canteen buildings at twelve points and a traveling canteen truck to visit the outposts at stated intervals.

Following this survey and conference with the Commanding Officer, it was decided to erect eleven of the canteens on the regiment's line. One was already in existence at the Palmer Avenue headquarters of Company K on the outskirts of Yonkers, having been erected during the service of Captain Johnson's command on that sector. Eleven others were to be built in the following locations: Headquarters Hill, Company A, at Millwood, B at Peekskill Hollow road, C at Cold Spring, D at Crompond road, E at Atwood, H at the Peak, G at Sherwood Corners, Machine Gun Company at Cohecton Turnpike, M at East Pleasantville, and L at Fort Hill road.

The buildings were to be 18 by 40 feet, with a large assembly-room in the forward part of the building, and kitchenette with sink, shower-baths and toilet in the rear. According to the estimates made at the time these buildings would cost about \$1,000

apiece. Mr. William Knight, of the American Red Cross, was in direct charge of the barracks construction.

Due to the signing of the armistice, only the canteen buildings at Regimental Headquarters and Company M were completed. The canteen at Company K had been in use for some time. Had the war continued the plans of the Red Cross would have meant a great deal of comfort to the men, but at the time the first of the canteens was being erected at Regimental Headquarters the influenza epidemic was beginning to sweep the line and both the regiment and the Red Cross had to turn attention to the life-and-death fight almost immediately.

In July, 1918, Ivan P. Flood, of the Westchester County Y. M. C. A., submitted a plan of Y. M. C. A. work for the line of the 1st and 3rd battalions. This plan was approved and in a measure carried out, although there was nothing of a general nature for the entire regiment until October, when the chaplain appeared before the war council of the Y. M. C. A. in New York and told of the Aqueduct and its needs. For the first time in its history the National Y. M. C. A. provided a field secretary for State troops, and Mr. Hugh Richings reported to the First Provisional during November. He lived along the line, making the 2nd Battalion headquarters at New Paltz his base and doing excellent work in a quiet and unpretending way that made him many friends among the men. With motion pictures, books and games Mr. Richings did a great deal of good for the regiment, especially among the companies in the mountains.

And so the chapter of human kindness ends. It would be impossible to recount the names of all who did much for the men of the Aqueduct, even were all the names available, which they are not. But the reports of the chaplain show that to the Church War Commission, to the Soldiers' and Sailors' Club at Ossining, to the New York Bible Association, the Scarborough School, Mr. William Rockefeller, the Church Periodical Club, and to many other individuals and organizations the men of the regiment owed much in thankfulness. And to all of the named and unnamed let this stand as the regiment's thanks.

PART III

ATHLETICS

A regiment of six-on, six-off proclivities, inclinations and instincts is not apt to have an amazing amount of surplus steam

to expend in running bases, swatting the horsehide or damaging human maps with hair-padded leather.

On the other hand, no matter how hard a regiment works its men, if they are red-blooded, will run something, swat something and damage something in the natural course of events and human nature. It is for the public weal that when the runners run they run bases; that when the swatters swat they swat horsehide, and that when the damagers damage they damage something that is not classed as real estate or city property. Some faces may come in the former class, but the city takes no chances.

Organized regimental athletics were not a part of the First Provisional's history. There were two near approaches to this condition, but geography bobbed up in this as in everything connected with regimental affairs, and the results were disastrous. The first near-regimental sport along organized lines was boxing, and it did better than its four-base successor in the matter of longevity. Perhaps this was because the regiment operated under different conditions in its era of boxing than it did in its short era of battalion baseball. But one sport at a time.

Just how regimental boxing had its start would be a difficult matter to exactly fix upon, but it is an even gamble that it resulted from some remarks made by the once-commander of old Depot Battery A, Capt. Leo C. Harte, who brought into the field from Syracuse as husky a crowd as ever struck the First Provisional's line all at one time. They embraced representatives of the famous Syracuse school of pugilistic art that has one time and another developed some good fighters, and it is probable that one remark led to another and finally to facts. In any event, Oct. 4, 1917, marked the first of the big bouts at Regimental Headquarters—the bouts that led to— But this is getting ahead of the story.

The first fights were staged on the platform of what was later to be *The Watchdog* office, over which canvas had been stretched tight and around which ropes had been erected. It was a chilly, starry evening when the group of officers and men gathered around the nitrogen-lit ring where the principals hammered at one another in short machine-gun rounds of the first mills. That was the night when Dorn of the Supply Company was slashed fore and aft by Hoffman, the fighting smiler of Battery A, and when little Eddie Doyle, of the Headquarters Company, fell victim to the bantam-weighted Luden of the Battery. They were both bloody affairs and the only real, nice, calm exhibition of the evening was the Dixon-Low sparring match that served as a semi-final to the Hoffman-Dorn mix-up.

The next week's affair was a Twelfthnight, viewed from any angle, for that was the night when Fighting Bill Becker, of Company A, made his debut as a regimental pugilist and left Bugbee of the Headquarters Company a sadder and more swollen man. It was also the night when McKee, of the 12th, scrapped Big Tully of the 9th Coast for a shade from gong to gong, and although Tully had it on his opponent in weight, McKee made it up in cleverness, quickness and a great willingness to take punishment. Jimmy De Roma, of the Headquarters Company, had it all his way with a mite named Caruso from the 9th Coast, and it was on this night that Palmer & Harrison, Inc., of the 12th, made their first appearance in burlesque boxing that caused the members of *The Watchdog* contest board, in whose honor the bouts were staged, to hold their sides with laughter.

Hoffman held his honors with Dominick Rubino, of the 9th Coast, on the following week's card, and Willie Falkner, of the 12th, went to a draw with Brian Riley of the 9th Coast. The occasion was the first of the "School Boxing Matches," where new men entered the ring, each coached by a semi-professional, and learned a lot about the game, while they were affording a large measure of entertainment to the spectators.

This school boxing was the result of a general demand for knowledge in the art of self-defense that ran through the regiment as a result of the bouts at headquarters, and it proved to be a most successful and useful innovation. Boxing picked up in all of the camps on the eastern side of the river, as more or less garnished faces on post would have told the visitor on the lines, but it had a good effect and gave the men something to talk about. On the line of the 2nd Battalion, Troop B showed the most interest and began preparing a challenger to meet Becker, who skated blithely along the regimental championship course.

Pines Bridge Manor, at the foot of Headquarters Hill, had been a boxing center in the halcyon days of Jim Coffey, and after the weather turned inclement for outdoor boxing the bouts were staged in the old ring in the loft of the hotel. Through the efforts of Edward J. Kelly, proprietor of the hotel, Billy Gibson promised to bring to headquarters for instruction purposes a card including Bennie Leonard, Billy Grup, Patsy Cline, Young Russo, Willie Meehan, Augie Ratner, and others. A big Y. M. C. A. tent was secured from Peekskill and pitched on the flat in front of Pines Bridge Manor. All arrangements had been made for the transportation of honor men from the companies of the regiment to headquarters on Oct. 30th for the big card, but the weather man spoiled it. The winds rose on the night of the 29th, the rains

descended, and the floods came, and that was all there was to it. All the plans for entertainment and feeding of the men that had been so carefully made were upset by J. Pluvius, who had apparently upset something else in the bargain. There was no big fight.

After that, boxing dragged along with more or less interest, as work piled up and winter added its problems to the already large ones of the regiment. But in March there was an intense revival of interest, for Fighting Bill Becker, of the 12th, who stood as regimental champion, was pitted against Joe Birdsall, of Ossining, for honors, with Billy Gibson as referee. *The Watchdog* announced it like this:

"Our Bill, Bill of the Twelfth, Bill of the Smile and the out-thrust jaw; Bill of the 'sniff, sniff,' and the sliding footwork; Fighting Bill Becker, as the posters say, is going to fight for the honor of the regiment at Ossining, Thursday night."

To make it short, Becker was beaten and beaten badly. He was out of condition, over-confident, and under reach. Birdsall hammered him around considerably and the o. d. went home chagrined. At which *The Watchdog* remarked merrily, under the caption, "Song of the Twelfth":

My pay-check is tattered and shattered,
My pay-check is all on the blink.
For Bill, he got horribly battered
And I bet a lot on that Gink.
Bring back,
Bring back,
Oh, bring back that pay-check to me!

It was the end of organized pugilism in the First Provisional. The boxing had served its purpose. It had taught many men how to hold up two hands where one had fluttered wildly before; it had given amusement to the men of the regiment and bound them closer together with a common interest. And that is the larger part of the mission of all organized sport.

It was shortage of man power rather than anything else that killed the battalion baseball leagues formed during March and started during April, with scheduled games.

Credit for the organization of regimental baseball goes to Major W. L. Hodges, who, about the middle of March, announced a schedule for the 1st Battalion. April 6th, Company D trimmed Company A, 13-7, and B beat C, 15 to-0. Those first two games were riotous affairs, especially the opener at the 69th grounds,

where the Company B rooters stirred things up in great shape. Major Hodges threw out the first ball at the opening game of the league, the D-A game.

The following week D took the lead in the battalion, defeating C in the ninth inning when the score stood 8-5 in favor of the men from Cold Spring. The score at the inning's end was 9-8. C took revenge on B the same week, and D won from A, leaving the 71st men at the top of the heap. In the 3rd Battalion the Valhalla men defeated Company I, 13-12.

Things were going wonderfully, and then—down came the ax. From the high and mysterious regions where no private must even peep came the dictum. The line was too thin for the number of men that had to fly around during ball games. Baseball as an organized proposition stopped with a dull, sickening thud.

As units the companies of the line developed baseball and basket-ball teams that played with teams from the near-by cities and villages. Company D, for instance, produced a splendid basket-ball team, and after the dissolution of the battalion league, the Company D baseball team continued to play with teams from the vicinity. At Company H headquarters there was always a good baseball team and basket-ball team. Company A had a soccer team at one time, and the Headquarters Company in the fall of 1918 produced a fairly good football team which enjoyed a happy though short-lived existence. Due to the constant change and shift of men, through release for overseas service, it was impossible to long hold any team intact at any of the camps, and this militated in a large way against organized athletics. Volley-balls and volley-ball nets, quoits, baseball paraphernalia and basket-ball equipment were furnished by the Y. M. C. A. and from company funds.

First Provisional calisthenics were as distinctive as First Provisional guard duty, First Provisional barracks, or First Provisional paper-work. Adapted from the best in the French and English schools by Colonel Rose, they became standardized by constant application at Regimental Headquarters and were finally prescribed for the line companies. Like everything else First Provisional, they were active, intense and constructive. Their value was dual—psychological and physical. Because of the element of contest entering into them they were interesting; their very forms and results sent the men to the barracks laughing, and their vigor made them immediately productive of physical development.

Here is a concrete example of the value of the First Provisional school of calisthenics.

They were put into effect with the fall training-class of two men from each unit on the regiment's line that came into headquarters in September, 1918, for special work and instruction. After a month of these calisthenics, 22 of the 26 men were put into football scrimmage one afternoon for an hour of incessant play marked by but one five-minute breathing period. Not a man dropped out of the game; not a man was laid out, and every one of the 22 was out for calisthenics the next morning.

There were 24 parts to the First Provisional School of Calisthenics. Witness a typical morning on the oval at headquarters:

The men trot on slowly, clad lightly or heavily, according to the morning. Taking distance, they are ready.

(1) The Windmill. At the command, "wind up," first the right arm is swung around and around, stiff, from the shoulder. The movement is reversed; then the left arm; reversed; then both arms; reversed. Rest.

Now it must be understood in the beginning that except when otherwise indicated all these movements are at the tense. Fists are closed, muscles are tightened, and head, shoulders and legs set under tension until the command, "Rest," when the entire body relaxes and almost droops; one foot is thrown about ten inches from the other and the right wrist is clasped by the left hand, or the left wrist by the right hand, and pressure suddenly applied. This jerks the shoulders back into a strained position, which, nevertheless, rests the back muscles and develops the chest.

(2) Fists on shoulders, elbows touching. Back—as far as the shoulders will go; continued:

(3) Arms extended forward and horizontally, hands open, palms touching. Back as far as possible in wide sweep, rising on toes at the time and endeavoring to touch the backs of the hands behind the back while arms are horizontal.

By this time your command has warmed up. The blood is performing its natural functions; the stiffness is out of the muscles. The lungs are ready to receive full benefit of the breathing exercise. Rest. Then:

(4) Raise arms at sides to horizontal; from this position inhale, raising arms extended slowly overhead from the side. Hold at vertical momentarily. Lower arms, clench fists and pound vigorously on chest, exhaling by tightly compressed whistle.

(5) Fists on shoulders; elbows touching, jerk forearm down to horizontal position at side; continue.

(6) Heels ten inches apart, hands on hips. Squat to heels, weight resting on toes, slowly as possible, body erect. Rise in same manner. This exercise gives full effect only when lowering

and rising motion is scarcely perceptible. Instructor should give adequate time for last man to get down and then give command, "Springs." Men spring themselves two or three times before command, "Rise."

(7) Fists on shoulders, elbows touching. Full swing of fists downward to position four inches in rear of legs. Arms should be in tense arc at last position.

(8) Off your feet! Men throw themselves to the ground in the shortest way possible without attempting to break fall. This is done on both right and left sides, feet leading in fall.

(9) Scissors—high! One.—From attention leap into the air directly up, throwing hands together above head and landing with feet spread wide apart. Two.—Bending forward and down, swing hands, palms together from position above the head to as far between the legs as possible. Three.—Stand erect, swinging hands back to position above head. Four.—Leap upward as far as possible, assuming, upon landing, position of attention and reversing Number One.

(10) Squat! With heels together squat to ground, placing hands, with fingers wide-spread, flat on ground, palms down, elbows inside knee joints. Fog! Rock forward on elbows and hands, lifting feet from ground. This position can be sustained for some time after a little practice.

(11) From the position of squat throw feet back straight, resting on hands and toes, with body bridged and rigid. Forward to squat position. Continue.

(12) Chest, touch. From bridge position, lower on hands until chest only touches ground. Repeat. This may be varied by biting a mouthful of grass each time.

(13) Roll to the right, maintaining a position with right hand and foot touching ground, body rigid, width of body perpendicular to ground. Raise left arm and leg in air. Lower. Roll and repeat on left side, raising right arm and leg.

(14) Stand on right leg only, left drawn up and clasped near ankle, toe of left pointing down in rigid position. Rise on right toe. Same on left leg.

(15) Whirls. (a) On one foot, arms extended, jump into air and face to right, landing on one foot at position of right-face. (b) On one foot, arms extended, jump into the air, landing at position of about-face. (c) On one foot, arms extended, jump into the air, making complete circle and landing facing in same direction as at time of command. (d) The same whirls may be used in beginning with both feet on the ground, and should be used both to the right and left.

(16) Backward and down on hands in squatting position, hands and feet only touching. Extend legs together briskly at command, "Forward," and withdraw to body at command, "Back." At forward, body is bridged and rigid, face toward the sky.

(17) From "Back" of (15), extend first the right and then the left leg, alternately and fast, throwing the buttocks and torso into the air as this running exercise goes on.

(18) Prone. Raise legs to vertical alternately, and then both together, hands clasped behind neck.

(19) Prone, lunge. From prone on back, hands clasped behind neck, draw in legs so that knees nearly touch chin. Thrust legs violently into air upward and forward. This should lunge the body a distance of about six inches at each repetition.

(20) Knee and body lunges. From position of attention step forward with right leg, bending down and clasping it around above knee with both arms, chin against knee. Alternate with left; four counts.

(21) Cross swings. With heels ten inches apart and fists clenched, raise arms parallel to ground, with forearm at right angles to upper arm; swing right and then left as far as possible, putting strength into hook and maintaining position of toes.

(22) One-two punch. With left foot extended and hands in boxing position: One.—Advancing right foot, shifting weight of body and cross-hooking with right, left guarding face; Two.—Advancing left foot, shifting weight and cross-hooking with left, right guarding face. May be alternated with right and left upper-cut, head down.

(23) Shoulders roll. With men in line at an interval of four feet. Forward, run four steps, and then roll on right shoulder, feet bunched to erect; four steps, and roll; continue; alternate with left. It is the football roll and is hard. Soft ground or thick-grassed turf should be used for initial lessons.

(24) Hop-fight and battle royal. Men choose partners and, hopping on one foot, attempt to buck opponents over with shoulders. If other foot touches ground it is default. Alternate with left foot and shoulder. Close with battle royal, in which men form in ring and every one is every one's else enemy.

These, with Indian wrestling, old-fashioned Snap-the-Whip, Bull-in-the-ring, and Body Tug-of-war, made up the First Provisional's calisthenics. As the men increased in strength and wind the length of the exercise time was increased by increased repetitions of the various exercises. Periodical endurance tests were held on (10), (11) and (12) and the Battle Royal. Occasionally the men were sent to company streets, hopping in single file.



MEN AND OFFICERS OF THE FIRST PROVISIONAL WHO WERE UNIQUE
IN THEIR WORK

Upper left—Lieut. Edgar Friend, dental surgeon of the First Provisional, doing some excavating on Lieut. Therkildsen. *Right*—Lieut. Louis Gutterman, who had charge of the Camp Whitman Hay Detail, one of the meanest jobs of the whole work. *Center*—Capt. Howland Pell, the paymaster and voucher specialist. *Lower left*—Capt. Eugene Scherman, regimental inspector. *Right*—Sergt. Ray Yngstrom, poet, philosopher, and nurse, who volunteered to face the influenza epidemic and drew as his share of the work the incineration of the deadly scourge refuse.



Top row, left to right—Lieut. Martha Turner, National League for Women's Service; Captain Rupprecht, National League for Women's Service; Capt. Edith O'Brien, Motor Corps of America. *Center*—Capt. Adelaide Baylis, National League for Women's Service, later of the American Red Cross Ambulance Corps. *Bottom row*, left to right—Corp. Prudence Cobb, Motor Corps of America; Lieut. Agnes De Jahn, National League for Women's Service; Lieut. Maud Spaulding, Ambulance Corps, Dutchess County Home Defense Reserve.

Officers were brought into headquarters from the line and taught these exercises that they might teach the men of their commands. At the time of the influenza epidemic the Commanding Officer toured the entire 2nd Battalion line, giving lessons in the calisthenics personally. On one day he went through the entire setting-up exercises with the men of five different posts.

These First Provisional calisthenics are not here given as better than those prescribed in the regulations, but they were better for the conditions they were intended to meet. They are not offered as the best, but as the best of both the French and English schools, adapted to best meet the needs of the First Provisional's work. And they proved their worth.

* * * * *

All of which proves the chaplain's contention regarding the equation referred to at the beginning of this portion of the regiment's history. From religious activities and from recreational work the men developed *esprit de corps*. From the athletics they drew stamina and *esprit de corps*. And guts plus *esprit de corps* resulted in the morale that was needed to maintain the line.

TRANSPORTATION AND SUPPLIES

I

THE THREE KINDS

SOME ONE has said that the degree of a country's civilization may be measured by its transportation.

If that is true, it explains why the officers of the First Provisional Regiment were in such a savage state most of the time. According to that standard, the army that Pharaoh lost when the Israelites watered his stock at the Red Sea was considerably advanced in the matter of civilization over the twelve hundred men who took the field in the interests of the New York City water supply in August, 1917, and continued thereon until after the armistice was signed. Holy Writ records that there were several hundred chariots destroyed when the captains of Pharaoh's host made a wrong guess as to where the ford was. The First Provisional had no chariots, and the captains of the host never had to guess where the Ford was. They knew. It was stuck somewhere, with something broken.

Webster's Dictionary, which, next to the First Provisional Regiment, is supposed to be the best authority as to what transportation really is, will tell you that the word is derived from the Latin word, "Trans," meaning across, and the verb, "porto," meaning to carry. In other words, the general idea of transportation is something that will carry something or some one somewhere.

For a peace-time definition that has nothing to do with guarding the water supply of the City of New York; that is all very well, but the books have the wrong idea.

Transportation, like all Gaul, is divided into three parts, the first and the surest kind being what you can borrow; the second what you furnish yourself, and the third publicly owned transportation. The first two kinds go and the third does not—not always; that is, not generally, or, in other words, sometimes. The first two kinds are "without expense to the City or State of New York." Somebody else pays for the tires, oil and gas. The

third kind is pretty near in the same class, because it wears out few tires and uses little gas or oil. The only big item about it is repairs. Sometimes it breaks down on the way back from the repair shop.

There is another thing about the third kind. It is hard to find. If the First Provisional Regiment had been in the field another year, some of the publicly owned transportation would have melted into the scenery. There is a little verse or two which appeared in *The Watchdog* once, and which tells the story nicely. It was entitled the "Regimental Song-and-Dance," and it can be sung to the tune of the "Regimental March."

"We've a darned long line
And it's mighty fine
When cars are free as air;
But in guarding pipe
It's a case of swipe
If you'd travel anywhere.
'Cause the cars are short,
And although one ort
To go here and there and yon,
You can bet your boots
And some cheroots
That conveyance stops at 'con.'

CHORUS:

"Oh, the chug! *chug!* CHUG! of the little Ford
And the smell of gasoline!
As we climb aboard and we pray the Lord
For another small machine.
Then we go a mile; wait an hour, while
We get as mad as can be.
Till we leave the ship and wind up the trip
On the good old N. Y. G."

A regiment of 1,500 men on 100 miles of line meant, fundamentally and primarily, transportation, and plenty of it. The very plan which Colonel Rose adopted for the work, and the very number of men which replaced the 3,200 Federalized National Guard troops were predicated on a certain amount of transportation, which was agreed to by the City of New York. How hard a time the regiment had to secure that transportation has already been told in the story of mobilization days, and it is

of the handling of that transportation, of the needs of the line, and of the auxiliary transportation that this chapter deals.

And since on transportation depended the supply department of the regiment, the matter of supplies and supplying is considered in this connection. But that is a matter for an expert to discuss, and transportation and supplies, from the expert's viewpoint, are taken up in this chapter by Captain De Garmo and Captain Miller personally, who, as the officers responsible for both sides of the river from the beginning of the regiment's history, know more about it than any one else. Use of transportation and methods of supply are so fully cared for in the two articles that this introduction will deal only with the matter of early routing, and the auxiliary transportation furnished the regiment by the public-spirited women and organizations of Westchester County and elsewhere.

* * * * *

The First Provisional Regiment entered a territory, strange, for the most part, to its officers and men, without road maps on which the Aqueduct and its posts were shown, and with little or no information as to the time-saving routes in getting from one post to another, or the state of the short-cut roads.

That was in the days of the old green Lozier, the Police Department trucks, the decrepit motorcycles, and the hired transportation. In other words, the days of H. Pushae Williams, who, as 2nd Lieutenant and transportation officer, was tireless, energetic and indefatigable.

To Lieut. Williams, "in addition to his other duties," fell the task of marking the roads, so that the drivers of the Supply Company trucks, inspecting officers and sector drivers could find their way about without losing time. Transportation then, as always, was at a minimum and there was not time to lose in round-about travels. *

And so from Ashokan to Hillview and in all the little cross-roads, back roads, and intersecting ways that led to the outposts, there sprang up the black arrow with the notation, N. Y. G. on the card which bore it, or the white-painted arrow on the fence-post, stone wall or telegraph-pole. These arrows saved much time in the early days, and at the close of the regiment's service there were still a number of the painted arrows and one or two ragged old cardboard indicators at various points along the line. The method was typically First Provisional and is mentioned here for that reason.

How much territory was necessarily covered by the various

inspectors and staff officers from day to day may be judged that in the first two months of the regiment's service the odometer on the Commanding Officer's car showed a total of 18,000 miles. Other staff officers, the battalion commanders and the inspectors covered as much proportionately.

Almost from the first the regiment was without transportation for the Chief Medical Officer, the Medical Officer of the 1st Battalion, the Disbursing Officer, the Inspecting Officer of the 1st Battalion, and the Supply Officer, except such transportation as was furnished by them personally or secured by them for use in the service. The Chief Medical Officer furnished his own car throughout the entire period of service. The Medical Officer of the 1st Battalion, Capt. E. C. Waterbury, also furnished his own car, and when that was laid up through accident while making an inspection, he was rendered helpless except for the aid furnished by the auxiliary motor corps. Captain Pell, as the Disbursing Officer of the regiment, furnished his own car from the time of his entry into the field, wearing one out and maintaining both at his own expense. Capt. T. T. Lane, as Inspecting Officer of the 1st Battalion, was absolutely dependent upon the auxiliary motor corps until he purchased a car for the service, and, due to repairs made necessary by the continual service to which the car was put, was never entirely independent of outside aid. Capt. Leo C. Harte, commanding the 3rd Battalion, was obliged to use his own car for the work, or else deprive the Medical Officer or Battalion Inspector of a car. Whenever any need arose beyond the bare necessities of the usual day's work outside assistance had to be called on. The breaking of a sector car rendered the sector helpless in the matter of supplies and subsistence delivery to outposts, unless there was some source from which a car could be secured.

The auxiliary motor units which from time to time served with the First Provisional on Aqueduct service, formed the greatest asset the regiment had outside of its own resources. This had been acknowledged by the State government in one instance, and since the history of the First Provisional is interwoven with the splendid work of these organizations, something should be said at this time of them.

Early in the regiment's history the need for a volunteer emergency transportation service became obvious. There was nothing to insure headquarters against conditions arising on the line which might make necessary the immediate shipment of reserves to some given point. The Commanding Officer had been advised to be prepared for all emergencies, and, should the time come ripe

for an attack in force by German reservists in this country, there was little doubt that such attack would be made. The line was too thin to permit of a sufficient force at any one point to meet such an attack, and it was therefore a necessity to have on call sufficient transportation to make a quick movement of troops.

The National League for Woman's Service had established a motor corps, and it was to this organization at its offices in New York City that the need of the regiment was explained. It was pointed out that in addition to an emergency force, transportation to meet the various needs arising from time to time other than in crises, would be appreciated, and this led to a visit to headquarters during the week of Sept. 16th, 1917, by Capt. Helen Bastedo, Lieut. Adelaide Bayliss, of Bedford, and Private I. Hopper, representing the corps. Previous to this time much work had been done during the mobilization period by the corps through individual arrangement with the members of the V. C. A. located on the lower sectors, so that the representatives of the league were informed as to the work.

The visit resulted in the establishment of a service by Lieut. Bayliss, who personally did most of the work throughout the late summer and the autumn of 1917 at headquarters. In the mean time Lieut. Rogers of Bronxville was aiding the lower sectors in the same manner, furnishing them with transportation when the need arose, transporting supplies and men on occasions, and assisting in the movement of both details.

In the late autumn, Lieut. Bayliss delegated the work which she had been doing at headquarters to Miss Margaret Cochrane, postmistress at Bedford Village, who was one of the most enthusiastic of the auxiliary drivers. And throughout the storms and cold of the winter, Miss Cochrane, who could give but one afternoon a week to the work, was always ready for any trip that might come to hand.

During the early spring, Lieut. Bayliss, still working for the regiment, secured the interest of Mrs. Harold L. Turner, of Chappaqua, whose brother, Col. Prentice Strong, commanded the 1st Field Artillery. Mrs. Turner was so profoundly interested in the work and showed such an appreciation of the needs of the regiment, that she was made corps lieutenant early in the summer and set about organizing an effective body to carry on the transportation for headquarters and Companies A, B, and D. In this she was assisted by Mrs. William Mills, of Chappaqua, and Miss Ruth Elliott, of White Plains.

In addition to her uniformed corps of twelve, Lieut. Turner maintained a reserve corps of private citizens who signified their

willingness to loan their cars in cases of emergency or at intervals. With Lieut. Turner and her uniformed group taking the burden of the routine work for headquarters and the companies mentioned, while the others were held in reserve, there was effected the most satisfactory auxiliary transportation arrangement that had yet been experienced by the regiment. About the same time Lieut. Agnes De Jahn, of Scarsdale, organized a similar unit which met the needs of the 3rd Battalion line and at times assisted headquarters. Captain Rupprecht, in command of the Greenwich, Conn., unit of the National Woman's League for Service motor corps, also furnished cars on regular schedule during the early part of the summer at Regimental Headquarters and assisted in the transportation of troops on the line.

These women met all kinds of emergencies, not least of which was the transportation of the Medical Officer and the Inspection Officer of the 1st Battalion on their daily tours. Often the auxiliary drivers would cover 150 miles in a day and 200-mile trips were not uncommon. Short-haul work comprised the greater part of the service, and every effort was made to avoid calling out the drivers at night. On many occasions, however, this was absolutely necessary, as in the case of the Medical Officer, or when frequent tire and engine trouble brought the cars into camp late.

On one occasion Lieut. Turner was called into service when prisoners escaped from the prison camp. This was really dangerous work, as the men had made up their minds not to be caught.

That afternoon furnishes an interesting example of the work of the auxiliary corps. Within a half-hour from the time she was notified of the emergency she was at headquarters with her blue car that traveled so many miles in the service of the regiment. The car was utilized in posting pickets at the intersecting roads in the vicinity and in establishing contact between the mounted patrols sent out to cover the back roads, as well as the infantry patrols covering the fields. Later it was used to take a field ration to designated points where the men were to eat. And meantime it was operated in conjunction with the headquarters cars in covering the railroad stations and lines and the State roads.

Just after evening mess the car started out from headquarters with an officer and two armed searchers. As it was proceeding along the Croton Lake road one of the fugitives stepped out of the bushes and started along the road. The brakes went on with a slam and the officer covered the prisoner with a revolver as the car slid by. For an instant the head of the driver was between the weapon and the prisoner, but the driver did not turn a hair. Later she remarked that she had not been very comfortable.

In 48 hours Lieut. Turner covered the entire line of the First Provisional Regiment twice, and 24 hours later covered it again. On one occasion she was caught in a terrific rainstorm as she was returning from headquarters after a day's work. On a lonely, dark road, with engine broken down and with no certainty of help, she quietly went to work on her engine, and although drenched, was able to proceed in a half-hour.

Her big job was in the organization of the transportation forces that conveyed 500 men of the First Provisional to the Peekskill State rifle range for instruction on the 2nd, 3rd, 5th and 6th of July, 1918.

The regiment had no transportation available for this, and without the assistance furnished by Lieut. Turner and her associates the men of the regiment on the eastern side of the Hudson would have been unable to receive the benefit of small-arms practice, as it was necessary to cover all points on the line while men on practice were temporarily relieved. At the request of the Commanding Officer, Mrs. Turner undertook to co-ordinate the work of more than 20 volunteer cars daily along the line of the 1st and 3rd Battalions, taking the men to the rifle range and getting them back to their units. In this she was assisted by Captain Rogers, Captain Rupprecht and Lieut. De Jahn. For this particular bit of work she was thanked by the Adjutant-General of the State in a letter which commended her and the work of her corps.

With the formation of the Citizens' Committee, the Red Cross Motor Corps advised that it would undertake to handle regimental transportation. This it was never able to do, except in cases of sickness, but this announcement led to the demobilization of Mrs. Turner's corps about the 1st of October. She responded in emergencies, however, until the last month of the regiment's service in the field, and was in charge of the transportation of the men to camp entertainments.

The work of Lieut. Spaulding and the Poughkeepsie unit of the Ambulance Corps Home Defense is discussed in the chapter dealing with the influenza epidemic, but has its place at this point in chronological order as a transportation matter. Lieut. Spaulding's service, and that of her corps members, were invaluable to the First Provisional and doubtless saved the lives of many men on the line. Figures from Lieut. Spaulding show that during the epidemic her unit totaled 2,639 hours 12 minutes, and 13,241 miles.

This included the period from Oct. 8th, through Nov. 22nd, and was divided among 28 drivers, as follows:

| <i>Driver</i> | <i>Time</i> | <i>Mileage</i> |
|--------------------------------|------------------|----------------|
| Lieut. Spaulding | 672 hrs. 50 min. | 3,568 |
| 2nd Lieut. Emma Sherrill . . . | 10 hrs. 30 min. | 120 |
| 1st Sgt. Ethel Clapp | 93 hrs. | 479 |
| Sgt. Helen Waldo | 107 hrs. 45 min. | 502 |
| Corp. Henrietta Fraleigh . . . | 5 hrs. | 82 |
| Corp. Evelyn Jones | 6 hrs. 45 min. | 70 |
| Corp. Dorothy Smith | 30 hrs. 15 min. | 250 |
| Corp. Catherine Waterman . . | 144 hrs. 31 min. | 555 |
| Corp. Helena White | 97 hrs. 35 min. | 340 |
| Pvt. Marguerite Bower | 10 hrs. 30 min. | 170 |
| Pvt. Mary T. Brinckerhoff . . | 9 hrs. 45 min. | 74 |
| Pvt. Harriet Butts | 21 hrs. | 282 |
| Pvt. Edythe Campbell | 179 hrs. 10 min. | 863 |
| Pvt. Anna Clay | 105 hrs. | 520 |
| Pvt. Hortense Doob | 16 hrs. 30 min. | 154 |
| Pvt. Marguerite Guernsey . . | 36 hrs. | 189 |
| Pvt. Mable Lent | 11 hrs. | 150 |
| Pvt. Myra Matteson | 48 hrs. 55 min. | 452 |
| Pvt. Louise Newcomb | 60 hrs. 35 min. | 320 |
| Pvt. Flora Perkins | 67 hrs. 30 min. | 224 |
| Pvt. M. May Reynolds | 69 hrs. 30 min. | 453 |
| Pvt. Marion Rhyners | 61 hrs. 30 min. | 254 |
| Pvt. Marion Sedgwick | 8 hrs. 50 min. | 150 |
| Pvt. Lillian Tiffany | 39 hrs. 40 min. | 376 |
| Pvt. Louise Wagner | 306 hrs. 15 min. | 776 |
| Pvt. Margaret Washburn | 68 hrs. 50 min. | 332 |
| Pvt. Jane Wesley | 261 hrs. 35 min. | 1,169 |
| Pvt. Lillian Wolin | 90 hrs. | 367 |

With the transfer of Regimental Headquarters to Ossining the auxiliary transportation history entered its last phase. And it fell to the Tarrytown Unit of the Motor Corps of America to write the last page of that history. Major Bastedo had become the head of the Motor Corps of America and it was fitting that, since she was responsible for the beginnings of auxiliary work in the regiment, it should be her organization that concluded it. Arrangements were made with Capt. E. V. O'Brien and Lieut. J. Todd, of the Tarrytown unit, whereby one car was furnished each day at headquarters in the last rushing days of the regiment's service. Those who served with the Tarrytown unit in this work included Sergt. L. Stern, Corp. Prudence Cobb, Corp. Jessamine Patteson, Privates J. Bacon, P. Bacon, E. Diggs, C. Herman, J. La Bau, K. Randall, C. Rosenstein, S. Walker, and M. White,

In addition to their transportation work, both Corp. Cobb and Private La Bau served as nurses in the hospital.

The question may be asked which was asked at the beginning of the work of women with troops in the field abroad, "What of the endless possibility of complications arising between persons of the opposite sex, of all varieties of temperament, thrown together at all hours of day and night on the broad highway?"

And the answer is the record as it stands, without question, and without incident. The results confute the false prophets who predicted disaster. It was given to the First Provisional to be a part of that stepping-stone with which woman, in the hour of her country's greatest need, mounted up to her place beside the man behind the gun—a place from which she can never be removed.

The most delightful thing about the auxiliary transportation was its utter impersonality, respected alike by the men and officers of the line. The uniform worn by a motor-corps driver made her a member of the regiment and that eliminated the question of personality at once. Visitors at headquarters might now and then have been a bit shocked by the curt orders sent out to the women drivers in emergency work. But withal a fine courtesy and a dignified though undisguised admiration for the women of the corps characterized the attitude of the officers and men throughout.

"We are, of course, not obliged to volunteer, but when we have once volunteered we will take orders unquestioningly." This was the attitude of those women of Westchester County and vicinity who did so much for the First Provisional. And the orders they received were not easy ones to carry out in all instances. Take an example of one incident in the motor-corps work. It is a telephone conversation with a staff officer on one end of the wire and a motor-corps lieutenant on the other:

Officer: "Hello! Hello! Is that you, lieutenant? Well, there's been a bad accident at Cold Spring; one of the boys had a nasty tumble. Everything is out up here and we've got to get the doctor there just as fast as we can make it. Hospital case, you know."

Voice at the other end: "Oh, my! Well, I'll come myself."

Officer: "What's the matter? Haven't you had dinner?"

Voice: "Oh yes; just some people here for the evening."

Officer: "Tough luck. Be at the foot of the hill in a half-hour and pick up Doc. Good-by."

In a half-hour she had changed from a dinner-gown to her uniform, had driven half a dozen miles, and was waiting for the medical officer. It spoiled her evening. She was unable to return to her guests till ten o'clock. But it was a part of the hand she had undertaken to play for her country in its time of need.

II

TRANSPORTATION LINES

BY

CAPTAIN L. B. DE GARMO, R. L.,

Supply Officer of the First Provisional Regiment from
August, 1917, to November, 1918

* * * * *

[EDITORIAL NOTE.—It will be observed that Captain De Garmo, who saw much service in the Guard on the Border in 1916, has considered the transportation needs of the regiment in the same class as required for combat troops holding a line of defense. It should also be noted that in this paper he disagrees with Captain Miller, the 2nd Battalion Supply Officer, on the matter of mules. This different viewpoint results from the different terrain covered by the two supply officers. While mules would have been of great help to Miller on the mountain roads, De Garmo could gain little or nothing by their use on the improved highways east of the Hudson. The great need of his department was new trucks, and this is his theme.]

* * * * *

Speed is the essence of transportation in the army, both during war time and peace. An army traveling on foot in the old days got along very nicely with mules and horses, the animals, keeping pace with the marching troops, hauling their loads of 4,000 to 5,000 pounds very comfortably on ordinary roads. Even in the present war, mules and horses were indispensable to the quartermaster and ordnance departments, it being necessary at times to use them as pack animals to bring the ammunition up to the gunners of the larger ordnance pieces. But far back of the lines, where the roads had not suffered from the terrific gun-fire of the enemy, all material was transported by the five- and ten-ton trucks which have become to us in this vicinity such a common sight.

The purpose of this comparison is to show how necessary good transportation is to both combatant and non-combatant troops, no matter what the duty to be performed, no matter what the result.

Taking this matter up further, so as to fix in the mind of the reader the importance of good transportation, I might say that battles have been lost because not enough attention had been paid to its transportation, and a good part of our cause was nearly lost because we were equipped with weak material.

The function of combat, field, ammunition, supply, sanitary, and engineer trains is to keep the commands to which they are attached at all times ready for action without hampering their freedom of movement.

To meet these requirements demands not only well-thought-out orders by the superior authority, but also the highest sense of responsibility on the part of those in command of these trains.

These officers must be prepared to make any sacrifice in order that their trains shall arrive at the destination appointed at the hours fixed.

Our own transportation problems were varied and many. The folly of second-hand material is only too apparent. Careful plans were laid out by Colonel Rose and myself in August, 1917, as to exactly the number of motor-cars that were necessary to do our work. We both knew that we were about to take on our shoulders a two-year job, and we desired brand-new equipment to do it with. We are still waiting for it, and the armistice has been signed.

The State camp at Peekskill was picked as the rendezvous for the troops which were to guard the east side of the Hudson River, and Highland, N. Y., across from Poughkeepsie, N. Y., the rendezvous for troops of the west side. Ten days' rations were ordered and delivered at the nearest docks, viz., Morton Line dock, Peekskill, for State Camp; and Hudson River Steamboat dock at Highland for Highland Camp.

Four trucks were delivered at Peekskill Camp by the Adjutant-General's department for our use. But, however, these trucks had seen their best days, having been used at Camp Whitman during the Mexican trouble in hauling supplies from Peekskill to Whitman and back. The next problem was to find drivers, and this meant that men who had only driven Ford cars in their lifetime jumped aboard these trucks and made some attempt to run them. We laid up at Peekskill for two days, and on the third day started to send out camp equipage and commissary supplies with the troops along the fifty-mile line.

If any one had sat down to think it over carefully he would have said it could not be done, but as none gave the problem much consideration as to the feasibility, in due course of time every one was settled on the line with practically everything he needed.

Of the Ford trucks of the two-ton type that were with the Supply Company, it was only possible to keep two running for several months because of the constant breaking down of some part of their machinery and being sent to a near-by garage for repairs. Many difficult problems on long hauls were carried out successfully. However, more efficiency could have been attained had we had new trucks and more of them. There is no doubt that commanders went without a great many things that should have been delivered on account of their semi-garrison duty.

Two types of trucks are essential in the class of work which had to be performed in the First Provisional Regiment; that is to say, the heavy-type trucks, from two to five ton for short and long hauls that did not necessitate rapid delivery. Lighter trucks equipped with pneumatic tires and high speed with a capacity of fifteen hundred pounds for distant hauls where speed was required and an early delivery of some article of quartermaster material needed at the camp. This can be described more thoroughly by giving an example.

During the winter of 1917-18 we had a very severe season. Winter O. D.'s were not delivered as early as they should have been, and when they were received by the Supply Officer it necessitated a quick delivery to all points of the line where the uniforms were badly needed for the comfort of the troops. The heavy truck, with large capacity and slow movement, such as the U. S. Army equipped their forces in Europe, are the best type of transportation for long hauls of subsistence supplies that are not required in an emergency.

The good old faithful mule so long used would not have been even an auxiliary to the Supply Department of the First Provisional Regiment, as our hauls were too long and the terrain of the country too rolling to permit them to withstand the terrific strain. They would not have even stood up under the shortest hauls and under the best conditions that we had.

In December, 1917, our trucks were increased from four to ten, but with such trucks as supplied, they being no better than the first, we were still unable to keep any more than two or three running at any time, and up to the present writing we are still waiting for the new trucks asked for when we first came on the line in August, 1917, and we are still working with our original trucks which have been many times in the repair shops, four of which are in the scrap-heap now.

III

SECOND BATTALION SUPPLY PROBLEMS

BY

CAPT. ELMER H. MILLER, Q. M. C.

On Aug. 8th, 1917, our trouble began. To make a complete story, I must begin at the very first. On Aug. 6th, 1917, I was told by Colonel Rose, then in Newburgh, to go to Highland and take care of some troops that were coming in at that point, upon which I foresaw my troubles, having been in Highland a few days before. When I arrived at Highland the first instalment of 480 men waited at the railroad station, and the only thing that we could call our own was a very high hill about one and a half miles from the station. This point was to be our camp, if it could be called such, for as yet no truck had arrived from the Arsenal or Peekskill State camp, and it seemed to me, after looking over "the boys," that our whole future depended upon the arrival of those trucks.

Knowing motor-trucks and the quartermaster truck-drivers, I did not give up hope, though it was late in the afternoon. The men were guided to camp. Soon after our night "mess" (the name is correct) a very welcome chug-chug was heard coming up the mountain road, which every one was to learn spelled blankets and tents for what was to be known as the 2nd Battalion, First Provisional Regiment. When the two trucks were unloaded, it was my next duty to get something for breakfast. Where or how I did not care, but I was going to get it for the boys.

I took one truck and went down to the ferry landing. There they told me that the boat had stopped running for the night, so I had to kidnap the captain and take the boat to Poughkeepsie to get supplies. I first had to wake the baker and then the manager of Armour's cold-storage plant, but we got our breakfast. From then on we had trouble with transportation. The next day our two trucks went back to Peekskill. We did not hear of them again until three days later, when they arrived with cots, blankets and mess kits. On this day we had to take over our line of guard on the water supply of New York City. We broke camp at 4.30 A.M. and proceeded to our respective places, Companies A, B and H going from Highland to Kingston by way of the West Shore. There we separated the companies, A Company going to

Atwood, B to Brown's Station and H Company to High Falls. The troops for the south end were sent to Cornwall by rail, for St. Elmo and New Paltz by cars. The Supply Company (namely myself and one man who could not drive a truck) started out to get supplies through to each company. With one truck that did not have any lights or brakes we had to go to each company, and driving over roads we had never heard of before, without lights and brakes, was no small matter. The Supply Company was in distressing need of trucks and truck-drivers, as it were. We had to buy our supplies by day and deliver them by night.

On Aug. 12th, 1917, I received two more trucks from Peekskill, which gave me a total of three. But we were soon to find out that our rejoicing was to be very brief, for one of the trucks was unserviceable and would not run, so we had to get along on two trucks, which I now know was our full equipment in regard to truck transportation.

I often sat up at night and wished for the "old army mule." The Supply Company could have been strengthened 100 per cent. with four teams of army mules or four more trucks. With the roads in the condition as they were in that battalion, it would take six motor-trucks at all times, or four teams of mules. And I would rather have had the mules for all times. On Nov. 24th, 1917, it snowed about eight inches and our motor transportation was laid up for seven days, during which time we hired teams to deliver our rations. I then bought one set of traction rings, which we attached to one of our trucks. This did very nicely, until Dec. 12th, when it snowed so hard that our trucks were out of commission until late in March. All of this time we had an average of seven teams each day, at \$5.00 per day. On Feb. 3rd we moved Troop G from St. Elmo to Newburgh, which took us 27 hours to complete, for lack of proper transportation. At no time was our transportation up to what it should have been, and at times we had to depend on personally owned cars.

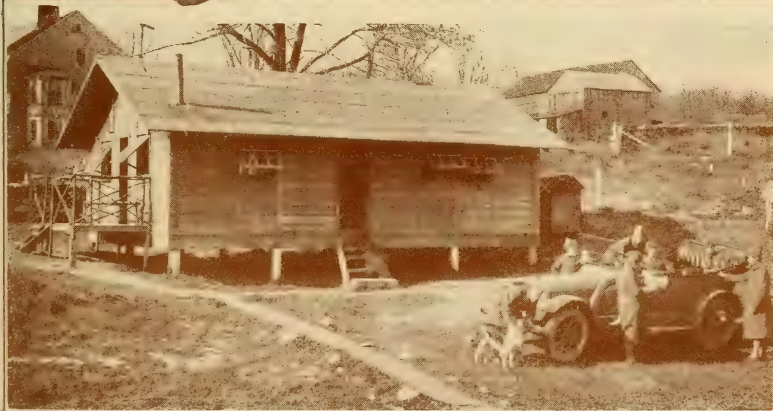
At the beginning of the regiment there were no rations purchased, so that the Supply Officer had to make purchases to cover its battalions. The S. O. of the regiment bought and shipped all rations to the 2nd Battalion, but this was a failure, as the Supply Officer himself had two battalions to look after that covered about 65 miles of line, and then all shipments were made by boat to Highland from New York City, and at times the freight would be so heavy that the boat could not take it all. Of course, rations for troops in the field did not bother the captain of the boat, so our supplies would often lie on the wharf at New York City for four

and five days at a time, and the battalion would have to ration on about one-half of the allowance. On Sept. 15th we started to ration the 2nd Battalion from purchases made from J. J. Hasbrouke, New Paltz, N. Y. We at first sent out a ten-day ration, with the exception of meat, bread and butter, which were delivered by our trucks to each camp and outpost on Tuesdays, Thursdays and Saturdays.

After trying this for one month, we found that our trucks were on the road every day, and we did not care to have this, as the roads were in so very bad a condition that the trucks had to be overhauled about twice a week. So on Nov. 1st we sent out a 30-day ration at 42 cents, with the exception of meat, bread and butter, which we delivered as before. This was our best method, as with road and weather conditions the company commanders could figure on one month's ration that had to run one month. As before, with a ten-day issue, and inexperienced mess sergeants, the company would always run short.

I have found the great trouble with the shortage of rations lies in cooks and mess sergeants that do not know or will not figure just what it takes for one meal for a company. Most mess sergeants go to the cook and tell him that the company ought to have this and ought to have that, but very few of them could tell how much. So one day the company lives in comfort and the next day it gets hardly anything.

We sent out on the 10th of November, 1917, a little list of articles that would help cooks and mess sergeants to ration their companies much easier than they had been doing. We figured that a loaf of bread should make eight slices, one can of tomatoes (No. 3 cans) would serve four men, one can of pineapple would serve five men, two slices per man, and so on down the list. This worked out very well, so we issued on the 25th day of November a 15-day emergency ration, consisting of soda-crackers, canned corn, beans, peas, tomatoes, sweet potatoes, canned soups and corned-beef hash, and luck was with us, as on the 25th of November we received a very heavy snow that sent our transportation out of business. But by the 1st of December the roads had cleared up so our trucks could again carry out a 30-day ration in addition to the 15-day emergency issue, which would carry each company until the 15th day of February. They needed it very badly, for on Dec. 12th about three feet of snow fell and we could not use our trucks again until along in March, so from the 12th of December until March we had to depend upon horses and sleighs that could only carry about 500 pounds. This took care of us very well until the first of the month, when we had to send out another



Upper left—Lieut. Maud Spaulding and Ambulance Corps drivers, N. Y. H. D. Right—Lieut. De Jahn and Sergeant Pope, N. L. W. S. Center left—Sergt. Charles Martin, chauffeur to Colonel Rose. Right—The Bread Fleet. Lower—Lieut. Turner's "Bluebird" at Camp Fischer.



OFFICERS AND MEMBERS OF THE DUTCHESS COUNTY AMBULANCE UNIT, N. Y. H. D., WHO
RENDERED VALIANT SERVICE DURING THE INFLUENZA EPIDEMIC

Top row, left to right—Myra Matteson, Edythe Campbell, Helen Palliser, Alice Schmidt, Lillie Eilers, Marie Kaufmann. *Second row*—Carrie Van Nostrand, Anna Clay, Alice Deyo, Florence Pearce. *Third row*—First Sergt. Ethel Clapp, Corp. Louise Wagner, Corp. Henrietta Fraleigh, Corp. Helena White, Corp. Catherine Waterman. *Bottom row*—First Lieut. Maud Spaulding, Second Lieut. Emma Sherrill.



Upper—The Watchdog Contest Board (Colonel Rose, center). Lower—Sergt. Howard Seufert, mailing department of *The Watchdog*, later a Château Thierry man.

30-day ration. We loaded all rations in cars and shipped them to High Falls by rail for the three companies on the northern end. From there we hauled it by sleighs to each post, which took us about three times as long to deliver. For the south end we shipped to Gardiner by rail and there sent our sleighs out for three companies; the Machine Gun Company would get its issue from Newburgh, as this State road was kept open to traffic.

Up to this date the 30-day issue has proven best, as a line that covers about 52 miles could not very well be covered but about once a month, with the very poor condition of our transportation.

[NOTE BY THE EDITOR.—Captain Miller has modestly refrained from telling of one of his prize “stunts”—the movement of gasoline across the Hudson ferries throughout the entire war without detection or delay. Ferries will not take vehicles carrying gasoline, and, appreciating this early in the game, Captain Miller invariably marked his gasoline drums, “Disinfectant,” while the drivers of his supply train were coached as to the ostensible nature of the loads they carried. It was not until the last week of the 2nd Battalion’s demobilization that a green truck-driver gave the snap away at the Newburgh ferry, and as a result was delayed two days while he vainly sought for some ferriage line that would take his explosive cargo. The incident is cited as an example of Miller’s ingenuity and resourcefulness.]

LITERATURE OF THE REGIMENT

"* * * And we did a lot of kidding,
Spent an awful lot of steam—
(Steam that might have raised the devil
In our regimental scheme)—
Used to josh 'twixt post and outpost,
And we took a lot of pride
In our little weekly paper;
Then—*The Watchdog* died!"

—From "*Seven-Bent Ballads*."

THE title of this chapter is not a misnomer; neither is it an exaggeration. In the ranks of the First Provisional Regiment, during its eighteen months of service, there was real literary ability, and that ability, through the various mediums of expression offered, held the mirror of the written word to life on the line and portrayed it faithfully.

The lesson of this chapter is announced at its beginning, that he who reads may observe the truth. The lesson is this: Troops in the field do their work best when they are afforded a medium of expression wherein that work can be discussed pre-eminently.

This statement does not need proof. It has the indorsement of the cantonment heads and the division commanders of the great war. It is already proven in the *Rio Grande Rattler* and *Wadsworth Gas Attack*, of the 27th Division, and in the *Stars and Stripes* of the American Expeditionary Forces. It finds proof in the cantonment publications, in the syndicated sheets of the southern camps, and in the post pamphlets. And it proved itself on the line of the First Provisional Regiment in the history attendant upon the birth and the death of the regimental paper, *The Watchdog*, which furnished to the First Provisional its medium of expression.

Since it was through *The Watchdog* that the literature of the regiment found expression and the light of day, it is to the origin and growth of *The Watchdog* that we must first turn in this analysis of field-service fragments. And so:

Scarcely two weeks after the regiment had entered the field the project of a regimental newspaper was launched. The line was long and thin, longer and thinner than any regiment's line in

history; 15 scattered companies to weld into a regimental whole and to imbue with one idea. The seeds of organization consciousness and unity had been sown at Lambert Farm and Peekskill in mobilization days. Now the need was for something to nourish the new growth and carry on the work of cohesion. What medium better than a paper that would tell the man at Atwood what his comrades of Cold Spring and Pleasantville were doing? What better than an organ of Impregnable Line propaganda? What more satisfactory than something in which the men of the regiment by the mere telling of their own work and the reading of the work of others could give and get new ideas tending to make that work nearer perfect? It would be for the benefit of the men, the officers and the regiment as a whole.

Following a conference with Major Lamb and other staff officers, Colonel Rose directed the Adjutant, a former newspaper man on the staff of the *Utica Daily Press*, to secure estimates on the publication. Inquiries both by letter and person were made from several papers in the vicinity of Croton Lake, and finally at Yonkers. And it is at this point that Daniel F. Nolan, well known in Westchester County politics and as the publisher of the *Yonkers Daily News* for many years, enters the history of the regiment.

It is a difficult matter for any member of the old *Watchdog* staff to discuss Dan Nolan without an insane desire to throw up his hat and yell. Never was a better friend of the First Provisional than this keen, jolly, young veteran of the political wars of Westchester; full of wise and happy counsels, patient, boasting, sympathetic and appreciative. Destiny had ordained that Daniel F. Nolan was to publish *The Watchdog* for the First Provisional Regiment, and that was all there was to it. The situation was explained to him and he submitted figures. He had the establishment and his figures were lower. The job went to him. It is certain that he never made a cent from the publication of *The Watchdog*, to say nothing of the way in which he was obliged to wait for his money. But to all intents and purposes the plant was a *Watchdog* plant from the time a member of the staff entered the place; there was nothing that could not be done to make the paper a typographical success.

The Adjutant, as editor, was given full control of the paper's policies and contents under the general though not specific direction of the Commanding Officer. Quartermaster-Sergt. James F. Murray, formerly of the *New York American*, was made assistant editor, and Sergt. Joseph Chase, of the V. C. A., who had made some sketches for *The Waterwagon*, a four-page leaflet published

by the V. C. A. while on the line, accepted the post of "Art Editor." *The Watchdog* was fortunate in its art department. As a cartoonist of national fame and a portrait-painter of considerable reputation, Sergeant Chase meant much to the success of the paper in its earliest days, and, though an extremely busy man, he never failed in later times to answer a call for a sketch.

To Capt. Howland Pell were consigned the finances of the publication. Later they passed to Lieut. John Towner, who remained the treasurer and business manager until the termination of *The Watchdog's* official life.

A circular to the various organizations on the line of the regiment advised them of the impending issue of a regimental newspaper and called for a roster of the men of their commands who made up the original First Provisional Regiment. Each company commander was asked to designate a correspondent to represent his unit, or to act in that capacity himself, with the former condition preferred. It was the determination of Colonel Rose to make it a paper of, for and by the men, and so it was determined that the men should name it.

Copy for the first issue was received at Croton Lake from practically every camp along the line, and was there edited and put in shape for the linotype. Practically a week and a half was required to get ready for the first issue. Type faces had to be selected and head styles decided on. The general form of make-up was to be determined, and since the pages were to be full newspaper size, the make-up had to conform to the generally accepted standards of journalism.

At 11.10 o'clock on the morning of the 22nd of September, 1917, a low grumble of machinery arose in the basement of the *Daily News* building in Main Street, Yonkers, and then the steady, bass "Sdung! Sdang!" of a bed-press in motion told that the first issue of the nameless paper was on its way.

Shortly after 12 o'clock two cars laden with papers headed out of Yonkers, one to New York City to deliver the first issue to the armories of troops that had been on the line but had returned to home station, and the other northward along the line, delivering the bundles at the camps and arriving at Regimental Headquarters about 3.30 o'clock on a sunny, windy afternoon. There the paper-car met Col. J. Weston Myers, the First Provisional's very good friend, and he was among the first to say kind things about the regiment's newest child.

Battery C, at Nelsonville, was reached at 7.30 o'clock, and the paper-car crossed the ferry at Beacon, stopped at Newburgh for mess, and then pushed on up the line with warm greetings from

F of the 10th at Vail's Gate, from the "Bedouin Light" at Camp Alaska at the intersection of the Aqueduct and the Walden trolley line, and then at Battalion Headquarters, where Lieut. Bechtol was routed out to act as guide.

What with a quarter-mile chase of a jack-rabbit on a mountain road near the Troop B camp, and sleepy though hearty welcome at the Peak and Atwood, it was a merry run. Lieut. Richards and Lieut. Snowden greeted the paper at the top of the line just as a rosy Sunday morning broke over the eastern mountain peaks in gorgeous sunrise.

The reception of that first issue by the men on the line proved the wisdom of Colonel Rose in the establishment of the regimental newspaper. It also proved that the composition was about what would appeal to the men. The first number contained a story of the regiment's beginnings and introduction of the paper itself on the front page, together with a serious cartoon by Chase, entitled, "A Man's Job," which is elsewhere reproduced. With a roster of the original regiment, stories from the line, a column of more or less humorous chit-chat, entitled, "Column of Squads," and very little editorial, the first issue made an original impression of merit. It was in no way comparable to some of those that followed it. As a matter of fact, it steadily improved in tone and contents up to the time of its discontinuation, 36 weeks later.

Its mission was described on its first page in this fashion:

"Approximately six weeks from the date on which the First Provisional Regiment assumed responsibility for the water supply of the City of New York, the regimental newspaper makes its initial bow, without apology or fear, and certain of its mission and welcome.

"Its mission has been outlined by Colonel Rose in his announcement of its forthcoming—'a paper for the man on the post.' It is to link together the northernmost and southernmost ends of the line, to act as a medium of expression for the men of the First Provisional, and to bring to them each week something worth while from the regiment and the outside world.

"It is a paper for the enlisted man * * * Its object is to bring help and happiness to the men of the First Provisional, to bring them the things they want and to give them a place where they can give expression to their ideas.

"It will not be a funny sheet.

"It will not be a tract.

"It will not dabble in politics.

"It will carry no advertising.

"It will have little editorial.

"It will be open to the men of the First Provisional Regiment from Ashokan Dam to Hillview, and only the contributions from the rank and file will assure the success of this weekly.

"Its mission is serious, but not solemn; sober, but not sad."

This gives briefly the policy of the paper. From the first it had been determined that any touch of commercialism would impair its usefulness, and for that reason advertising was omitted. That was a mistake, although it could not be seen at that time. The immutable law of the print world, that it takes a box-office to keep a newspaper going, cannot be disregarded by even a soldiers' paper. On the face of the figures then available, the paper would just clear itself. It never did. But of its financial struggle more will be told later.

The second issue of the paper marked the end of Sergeant Murray's services as assistant editor, when he was compelled to return to home station because of illness. Second Lieut. Avery E. Lord, of Utica, a former newspaper associate of the editor, was made assistant editor of *The Watchdog*, and from the first was largely responsible for the success of the paper.

Suggested names for the publication poured in on each mail from the men on the line and from civilians who had read in the daily papers that a prize of \$25 was offered for a name for the nameless organ. But when the contest board, composed of a delegate from each unit on the line, met at Regimental Headquarters on the afternoon and evening of Friday, Oct. 12th, to select a name and make award, none of the names was found suitable. Such titles as "The Guard" and "The Sentinel" met with favor, but were without the individual character the board wanted.

Perhaps the most humorous name submitted was, "The New York Guard Dam News." No one appreciated just how good it was until it was read aloud before the board. But, as Colonel Rose pointed out in his address to the board at the conclusion of its first deliberations, the paper was not a funny sheet and a humorous name would not do. So the board adjourned until Oct. 30th, calling on the regiment for more names.

The contest board, elected by each unit, consisted of the following: Chairman, Corp. C. M. Hynes, of the Sanitary Squad, Co. A, 69th Inf., stationed at Van Cortlandtville; Secretary, 1st Sergt. Mark Rosenthal, of Co. F, 10th Inf., stationed at Vail's Gate; Private Peter Boyle, of Co. A, 12th Inf., stationed at Millwood; Private Ray Osterhout, of Battery C, 1st Field Artillery, stationed at Cold Spring; Sergt. Bruce Miller, of Co. F, 1st Inf., stationed at Elmsford; Corp. Joseph W. Greinger, Jr., of Battery A, 1st Field Artillery, stationed at Kensico dam; Sergt. Melville Johnson, of Co. G, 1st Inf., stationed at Regimental Headquarters; 1st Sergt. Andrew B. Suttle, of Co. H, 1st Inf., stationed at Stone Ridge; 1st Sergt. Earl Richards, of Co. A, 1st Inf., stationed at Atwood; Sergt. Allan P. Carpenter, of Troop G,

1st Cavalry, stationed at St. Elmo; Sergt. Patrick J. Bradley, of Co. B, 69th Inf., stationed at Pleasantville; 1st Sergt. Paul Poveromo of the 4th Co., 9th Coast Artillery, stationed at Camp Byrne, near Peekskill; Corp. H. W. Haines, of Co. I, 1st Inf., stationed at Gardiner; Private Jeremiah Whalen, of Co. B, 1st Inf., stationed at Davis Corners; Corp. Charles T. Terry, of Troop B, 1st Cavalry, stationed at New Paltz; 1st Sergt. John A. Coulter, of Battery B, 1st Field Artillery, stationed at Tuckahoe road and the Aqueduct; Corp. Charles H. Smith, of Battery D, 1st Field Artillery, stationed at Ardsley.

When the contest board again assembled at Regimental Headquarters on the 30th, however, no names had been submitted which met with its full approval, and using its prerogative, the board decided on *The Watchdog* as the most suitable name for the nameless paper. An extract from the written report of the contest board, signed by its various members, reads as follows:

“ * * * at a meeting of the Board, held Oct. 30th, the following name was unanimously selected by the Board as the most appropriate name for the Regimental Paper

The Watchdog

“Motion made that the name of the paper being the suggestion of the Contest Board, the prize of \$25.00 be donated to the Regimental Paper by the members of the Contest Board. Carried.”

How well the name suited the paper and the spirit of the regiment it represented was described by the leading editorial of the succeeding issue, which said in part:

“Our jaws are wide and strong, our teeth are long; our tail is stubby and our strong legs bow away from the enormous chest that falls away beneath the undershot jaw, pendulous lip and wrinkled face. We are afraid of nothing. We will tackle anything. When the odds are against us we just hang on and chew, chew, chew, ever a little deeper and a little deeper, until we hit something vital.”

This was prophecy pure and simple, although the writer did not know it. It told of what actually happened to the regiment in later days when all the odds were against it, and when only the bulldog tenacity of the Commanding Officer took it through to victory.

The first page of that first issue under the new name carried a cartoon by Chase of an enormous bulldog poised in mid-jump before the door of his kennel, which bore the legend, "First Provisional Regiment," and the entire cartoon bore the caption, "Well! Here We Are!"

From this time the way of *The Watchdog* was that of the average paper of armed forces in the field. It expanded its field to the Second Provisional, and Major George J. Winslow, who later commanded that organization, was made associate editor. Later the Adjutant-General of the State ordered copies of the paper sent to each of the armories in New York City weekly for the purpose of interesting men at home station in the work on the Aqueduct.

The Watchdog carried stated departments which altered very little from the time of its organization until the date on which it ceased publication. The first page was devoted to leading news stories of the week, affecting the Guard generally or the troops in the field particularly, with generally a good photograph illustrative of the work or news, and a column, which in tabloid form gave to the men of the isolated outposts the news of the world's events under the caption "The Week in the World." Later the activities of the American troops abroad were chronicled in a similar column, entitled, "With the Boys in France."

The second page was devoted to editorials on current topics, the Column of Squads, which was open to every one, and where much of the regimental verse of the better sort appeared, a question-and-answer department on drill regulations, conducted by Major W. L. Hodges, and an official section containing extracts from the various A. G. orders affecting the First and Second Provisional Regiments, General A. G. Orders not too long to print, and the Special and General Orders and circulars of the regiment.

With a correspondent in every camp on the line the third page and a portion of the fourth were devoted to the week's news from the camps, under the general heading, "Along the Line." This feature grew to large proportions after a while and often threatened the composition of the paper. Photographs, verses, and wit from the men, in addition to the general news, were encouraged.

On the fourth page there was run serially in the early days an illustrated description of the Aqueduct and its structure, that the men on the work might know something of the why of the structure that they were guarding. This was followed by an illustrated serial on the construction and use of the Barge Canal, for the benefit of the men in the Second Provisional. The fourth page was reserved for feature stories, and, when those were not available, was

used for general topics and for the "run-over" from the third page, which after a while became inevitable as the camp correspondence grew.

Since the bulk of the editors' work had to be done after hours, there was much night labor attached to the preparation of *The Watchdog* copy each week. The first batch of copy went to the printer on Tuesday or Wednesday, and on Thursday or Friday one of the editors went down to Yonkers to read proof, head up the copy and prepare for make-up. At various times the paper was printed on Friday night or on Saturday, according to the disposition of other work at the plant of the *Daily News*.

Special-feature editions were published at Thanksgiving, New-Year's, and on the anniversary of the occupation of the Aqueduct by armed forces in February, 1917. A special number was also printed for New York Guard Day, in the Liberty Loan Drive, and throughout its history *The Watchdog* printed as special features many things that prepared the minds of the men on the line for new jobs to be undertaken or new conditions to be met.

For instance, the men on the line were interested in the forthcoming winter barracks by an entire page of description and illustration, which secured their attention and prepared their minds for the erection of the sectional houses. The workings of the Guard Cards system and the telephone system were explained to the regiment through the medium of *The Watchdog* and popularized to such an extent that when the innovations came the men knew exactly how to handle them. The same was true of the Check-roll Call. And *The Watchdog*, from the first, sustained, while there was hope, the idea that sooner or later federalization might come to the regiment.

Always working from the point of view of the man on the line, the editors endeavored to answer humorously or seriously the scores of introspective questions which might occur to the man on post who had so much time to think and ponder in his long tours of guard duty. This had a decided effect in checking restlessness. By the publication of the battalion ratings and editorial comment on the winners of each month's efficiency contest, the paper inspired the men of the regiment to greater endeavor.

The Watchdog fostered *esprit de corps*, and through the long winter months helped to hold together the regimental consciousness so necessary to a proper performance of duty. And ever it preached the importance of the work in which the First Provisional Regiment was engaged.

How valuable the Commanding Officer considered it as a regimental asset may be gathered from the fact that when financial

difficulties began to press the paper in January, 1918, he laid the matter before the Red Cross of Westchester County, and in a letter to Robert E. Willis pointed out the value of the publication to the organization.

When the publication date of January 19th had been reached, the editors determined that *The Watchdog* must stand or fall on a radical move. The financial situation was serious and only immediate help from the regiment and the outside world could warrant continuance of publication. So in the issue of the 19th column rules were turned and the paper appeared in heavy mourning. "The Last Growl," three columns wide and in big type on the first page, told the story in this fashion:

"With teeth bared, fighting every inch of the way, THE WATCHDOG has been forced down and down for the last few weeks, until to-day we turn our column rules in mourning, for this may be the last growl.

"This paper is in debt—not badly, but still in debt, and running under a weekly deficit. When the books are balanced we will be able to just about pay what we owe, but we will be unable to refund.

"There is to be no passing the hat. When THE WATCHDOG was started it was with the belief that the men of the New York Guard on service in the field would support it, and this belief has been sustained up to a certain point.

"But it is on that certain point that we stick. The support has not been sufficiently wide-spread to turn the trick.

"Early in the game we told our needs—1,000 subscriptions at \$5 apiece outside the line would help us make good. We have less than 150 such.

"Still we have plugged on, hoping that sooner or later the value of our little four-page paper would make itself apparent, and that the relief would come.

FROM THE FIRST

"It was a fair day when we made our first appearance, a beautiful, sunshiny fall day, with all the landscape gold and scarlet, air keen and clean, and from 'Shokan to Hillview a line of 1,200 men waiting for the first number of the regimental paper that was nameless.

"To-day the skies are gray, and from 'Shokan to Hillview the snow lies deep, shutting in from the outside world the men who are standing guard over the vitals of a great city.

"Now they need the binding influence of THE WATCHDOG more than ever—now the atmosphere throughout the State, thick with rumors and alarms, needs the steadying semi-official influence more than ever before. BUT—

"They tell us that every dog has his day.

"What have we done in our day?

"We have tried to make men happy; to bring the men of the Guard

closer together, and closer to the men of the National Army and the Federalized National Guard through our exchanges.

"We have tried to explain the work of the man who must stay on 'the job of no renown,' because there is no one else who will do it.

"It has been our effort to visualize for the people of the State of New York the life of the men of the First and the Second Provisional Regiments, their work, their play, their joys and their sorrows; to tell the story of one big phase of this war of wars that does not come to the ready notice of the man who reads as he runs.

HELPS THE MEN

"Our effort has been to stimulate interest in the New York Guard and its work, and to make all men feel that they have some niche, no matter how small it may be, in the winning of this war.

"We have preached the gospel of a State Militant and a State Vigilant, from the beginning.

"Perhaps there is no further need for this rough, aggressive, vigilant WATCHDOG. Perhaps its work is finished. If so, this is the last growl.

"Take note that it is not a grumble. If it is the last growl, it is the same grunty gurgle that rises in the throat of the Fighting Beast before the life goes out with a kick and a shudder. We are fighting to a finish, friends of ours.

"In the week that is to come our fate will be settled, and you, helping, or watching from the side-lines as the case may be, will know the result only when we emerge from the mêlée—or fail to emerge.

"Our jaws are strong, and our teeth are long, but we are lean—very lean and very gaunt. This may be the last growl."

Came an immediate protest from the men on the line against suspension and an order from the Commanding Officer to continue for another two weeks, while the Red Cross agencies busied themselves in an effort to ascertain what could be done.

The issue of January 26th carried a cartoon by Chase representing a lean, broken-down bulldog propped against the door of his kennel, one eye swollen, shut, and covered with scars, with the caption, "When a Feller Needs a Friend." And underneath the picture the lines:

"Behold the Watchdog.

"Not the doughty dancing animal of old, but the Watchdog as he is to-day, hungry, lean and hard hit.

"Gentlemen, he needs food. He needs lots of it in a hurry, or in the words of our childhood, 'there ain't going to be no Watchdog.'"

To *The Watchdog* in its hour of need rallied the men and officers of the 3rd Battalion with a comfortable donation that helped tide things over until the Red Cross could do something. The sub-

scription was headed by Captain Harte, the battalion commander, for the officers, and by Sergeant-Major Boulee of the 3d Battalion headquarters, for the enlisted men. And so *The Watchdog* dragged on for a few weeks more, depending on the efforts of the Red Cross.

Mr. Willis had aroused the interest of Mrs. Roberts Walker, of Scarsdale, in *The Watchdog* situation, and she, with the permission of the National Organization, went about the matter of securing subscriptions for the paper through the various Red Cross units in Westchester County. But this only succeeded partially and it finally became apparent that the only way to insure the continued life of the paper was to capitalize it. With advertising budgets of all the big advertising concerns to which she had access closed for the fiscal year, it was impossible to secure paid advertising, and so she turned her attention to getting out-and-out donations for the work.

What a hard struggle it was for her to handle this matter single-handed only she could tell. Because of their official position the officers of the regiment could do nothing to help. On her efforts alone and the sympathy and appreciation of those to whom she appealed depended the outcome.

It was a battle, but in early June she had secured approximately \$1,500 and more pledged. *The Watchdog* was an assured fact.

Colonel Rose had been taken ill in May, and under the almost direct control of the Commanding General many regimental policies had been altered in the First Provisional. On June 7th *The Watchdog* was verbally ordered discontinued by General Kemp in a conversation with the Acting Lieutenant-Colonel and the Adjutant at Millwood.

The paper, which had at that time issued 37 numbers, was never revived. Plans for continuance of its publication were being formed by Colonel Rose at the time when the signing of the armistice told the impending end of the regiment's services. All its bills were eventually paid.

With cuts and mailing costs under a second-class permit the weekly cost of the publication was approximately \$85, although special numbers ran to a larger figure. From the first it maintained the size and general style of make-up that it assumed at the beginning of its career. Its extermination came at a time when the regiment needed it most and was unfortunate for the men of the regiment, inasmuch as it was used as a medium for teaching the many new men entering the field the traditions of the line and the standards of the organization of which they were a part. The ostensible reason given for its discontinuation was that

its publication required too much of the time of the officers on its editorial staff and interfered with their duties.

Two other publications appeared on the line of the First Provisional during the regiment's service in the field, the first being *The Waterwagon*, published by the V. C. A., which has hitherto been referred to, and the last, *The Reveille*, a one-page type-written effort by the men of Company I, which was issued daily during May and June at the Company I post, and which contained camp witticisms and verses.

Now turn to the actual literary product of the regiment, made possible and stimulated by these various mediums:

VERSE

The first verse of the line emanated from the men of the V. C. A. and was printed in *The Waterwagon*, and, later, some of the best of it in a bound volume entitled, *Versified Adventures of the V. C. A.*, which was written by Earl H. Emmons, of the 6th Battery, and published by Ralph S. Dunne, of 11 East 36th Street, New York City, with a foreword by Major W. L. Hodges, of the First Provisional. It is with the permission of the author and publisher that some of the verses are herewith reproduced:

The first, entitled, "The Minute Men of To-Day," tells the story of the V. C. A.

"They mustered at eight in the morning,
The men of the Veteran Corps,
And upheld the fame
Of their ancestors' name,
The brave Minute Men of yore.

"The doctor relinquished his practice;
The lawyer stopped short on his case;
The scribe dropped his pen;
The stage gave its men;
The artist stepped up into place.

"The preacher came down from his pulpit;
The banker came forth from his bank;
While each craft and mart
Gave a generous part
Of its best to the file and the rank.

"And so they went into the service,
The men of the V. C. of A.,
Upholding the Corps
As their sires did before—
They're the Minute Men of To-day!"

General Orders of a sentry, versified, is another worth reading:

"Go take thy post and everything in view
And mark thou dost not stub thy clumsy toe,
But walk twelve hours, if need be, like John Drew,
And note each moving leaf and cockroach crow.

"Repeat each word thy brother sentry speaks,
E'en tho he says the sergeant is a bum;
And if relief come not for seven weeks,
Thou must not leave until thy relief hast come.

"Take not an order from a living man,
Except some scores of non-coms and C. O.'s;
But guard thy talk, as does the cautious clam,
And sound alarm each time a fire-fly glows.

"Allow no one within thy range of sight
To spit or otherwise offend thy beat;
And call the corporal each hour of night,
For his remarks to thee will be so sweet.

"Allow not even Time or Tide pass thee
Without authority, for that's thy rule.
If thou dost all of this then thou wilt be
A sentry, and what's more, a blasted fool."

And here, in verse, is the story of an incident repeated on the Aqueduct many times in the course of the First Provisional's career:

"The night was black as a ten-foot stack
Of cats of the darkest hue;
The sentry stood in a Stygian wood
At Outpost Number Two.

"A sound quite near struck on his ear;
He turned in quick alarm,
And, 'Halt! Who's there?' rang on the air
As the sentry ported arm.

"Then, as a breeze blew thru the trees,
The guard's brave spirit sunk;
As to his nose the odor rose
Of essence à la skunk.

"He took a chance and called, 'Advance,
Sir Skunk, you're recognized';
The puzzled cat stopped short at that
And showed he was surprised.

"Then on he went and the night was rent
With smells and howls of grief;
Till hellity bent from his khaki tent
Came the Corporal with relief.

"Now a sentry grieves in a suit of leaves
And swears till the air is blue;
While beneath the sod where the daisies nod
Lie his clothes at Outpost Two."

The difficulties of the conscientious soldier in New York City at any time during the great war are told in Emmons' "Love's Labor Lost."

"Up at Kensico a rookie got a furlough for a day
And he caught the train to Gotham to parade along Broadway;
Now the town was full of captains from a recent Plattsburg class,
And the rook saluted faithfully each one he chanced to pass,
For his sergeant was particular to pound this lesson in:
That he must salute all officers to show his discipline.
So the rook was doing noble, tho his arm was somewhat taxed,
Till he came to Thirty-fourth Street, when he stopped dead in his tracks,
For a figure so resplendent came before his startled gaze
That his eyes stuck out like onions and he stood in great amaze.
Then this kingly one came near him and his heart turned cold as ice,
But he knew he must do something, so the rook saluted twice;
Then he swore and hit a bulldog and he kicked a rubbish-can,
For he found that he'd saluted Macy's elevator man."

And the attitude of the average rank and file toward the Plattsburg graduate in those early days is told merrily, but without sting, in:

"You can always tell a barber
By the way he combs his hair;
You can tell a taxi-driver
When you hear him start to swear.

"You can always tell a baker
When he speaks of coin as 'dough,'
And a hundred others you can tell
By little traits you know.

"You can tell a plumber by his pipes,
A cobbler 's always 'last,'
While doctors, lawyers, merchants,
You can pick them quick and fast.

"You can even tell a grafter
By his à la modish touch;
You can tell a danged Plattsburger—but
You cannot tell him much."

The verses that from time to time appeared in *The Watchdog*, largely in the Column of Squads, reflected almost every phase of regimental life. The spirit of the allied arms of infantry, cavalry, coast and light artillery all forming the composite regiment, was best told by some verses that appeared in the early part of *The Watchdog's* history under the caption:

"FACTS

"Seems like years and years ago
When we joined the Battery,
We had visions of our guns
Talking to The Brute at sea.

*"We had hopes of mighty deeds
In the battles overseas.
Now we're over water, but
Over Croton, if you please.*

"Maybe 'tis an age or so
Since we joined that dashing troop
That has never had a horse,
Never learned a Uhlan coup.

*"Once we dreamed of charge and shock
In the crazy hell of fight.
Now we're charged with this here thing:
'Guard that siphon-house to-night!"*

"Possibly an æon's lapsed
Since we took the Springfield oath.
Now we've learned to use a 'Krag,'
Or a 'Flint,' or maybe both.

*"Horse and foot and guns we melt
To the service, day and night.
Nothing goes but I. D. R.
We're provisional, all right."*



Upper—Sergt. Joseph C. Chase, who painted the Peace Conference for the United States government, sketching Captain Westcott for *The Warhdog*. Lower—Debut of the regimental song, "The Good Old N. Y. G.," in the officers' mess-hall, Croton Lake headquarters.

Dedicated to the 1st Provisional Regiment N. Y. G.

THE GOOD OLD N. Y. G.

Tempo di Marcia

Words and Music

by Lieutenant CHAS. A. CLINTON, V.C.A.

2 (Augles)

Voice

Piano

We're New York boys and we make some noise As
When the war is done and the cause is won With
ev - ry - bod - y, knows; On the job we'll stay both
hon - ors we'll be ripe, But we'll heave a sigh when we
night and day, right be - hind our Colo - nel Rose. We know what wait - er
say "good - bye" To that hund - red miles of pipe. Then all New York of our
looks like for That's all that we can get, And we
work will talk And a darn'd good rea - son why, For the

Copyright MCMXVII by Lieutenant, CHAS. A. CLINTON V. C. A.

THE FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT MARCH



Upper—Tents of the vintage of '98 doing duty in the snow of the early 1917 winter. *Left center*—One of the "Valley Forge" overcoats. *Right*—Winter equipment (1918), with First Provisional Regiment Cap. *Lower*—Getting ready for inspection.

With a characteristic touch of the satirical, Capt. Theodore T. Lane, in the early days, wrote some "Instructions to Sentries," which reflect indirectly the troubles of the green man on the line:

I

"When you talk to officers
Hold your gun at port;
When you talk to non-coms.
Say, 'Hello, old Sport!'

II

"If a cow attacks you
Don't let on you're green;
Throw your rifle at it
And hit it on the bean.

III

"If you're bored on duty,
Don't know what to do,
Call the Sergeant of the Guard,
He will talk to you.

IV

"If a stranger hails you,
Stops awhile and chats;
Jab your bay'net forward
And jab him in the slats.

V

"If a bush alarms you
In the moonlight fair,
Don't waste ammunition,
Run away from there.

VI

"If your captain's haughty,
Won't play cards with you,
Call upon the Colonel
And see what he will do."

The heavy schedule of calisthenics developed by Colonel Rose from adaptations of the exercises of the French and British schools brought forth from Sergeant-Major Ralph L. Rodney:

"THE MORNING AFTER THE NIGHT BEFORE!

"Awake with the sounds of the bugle and drum, with not the desire to dress,
 Sprang the man from his cot. Only habit and haste could conquer
 his grievous distress.
 At five in the morning he laid him to sleep; at six in the morning he rose
 To swear at the bugle, to swear at the drum, and to swear as he pulled
 on his clothes.

"Quite different this from the days long gone by, when no need of a
 physical drill
 At reveille's sound brought him out with a bound, feeling miserable,
 groggy and chill.
 His sore, stiffened arms and his sore, stiffened legs and his utterly worn,
 wearied brain
 Could hardly respond to the cutting command, 'Arms—Raise! Arms
 —Down! Once again!'

"And his back! Oh, that back! When he bent to the ground, with his
 fingers just touching his toes;
 And his legs! Oh, those legs! When he slipped in the mud and lit
 on the end of his nose.
 Ye gods! what a fool. For a slip of a girl, with a smile that was vague
 and *passé*;
 But fools will be fools to the end of the world, and another is born every
 day!"

During the greater part of 1917 and a portion of 1918 the Post
 Road through Tarrytown was in course of repair, to the constant
 detriment of regimental transportation obliged to go over it.
 This resulted in:

"TARRY? YEP!

(Respectfully dedicated to the busted springs in the Transportation Department of the First Provisional Regiment, N. Y. G.)

"When Rip Van Winkle went to sleep
 Upon the mountain-side,
 There flourished then a hamlet where
 The Hudson River's wide;
 The Dutchmen called it Tarwe-Town,
 Because its crop was wheat;
 But now they call it Tarrytown,
 Because of one long street.

Cho:

"Now Tarrytown is Tarrytown
From Ossining 'way through
To old Dobbs Ferry. If you speed
You will break yourself in two.
You may try to haste in Hastings,
Or cut through at Getty Square,
But tarry ye in Tarrytown;
They're building highway there.

"When Ichabod of flapping arms
Rode down the Graveyard Hill
And beat the Hessian by a length
Across the Spookum Kill,
He must have busted up the road
From there to where he quit,
The other side of Tarrytown,
And now they're fixing it."

Cho:

Clad in line jargon, idiom and slang, but going straight to the heart of the men by its very language, "The Job" was one of the most telling things ever published in *The Watchdog* from the standpoint of influence on the man on the post. It represented the viewpoint of the rookie, with all its unreasonable selfishness, and the reply of the veteran, with all of the allusions and references of other days dear to the hearts of the men that had served since the beginning. It is herewith reproduced in full as one of the best of the serious things with a serious mission well camouflaged:

"THE JOB

The Rookie Speaks

"Now it's half-past one on a frosty night,
And it's cold as cold can be;
Stars overhead, and the moon is bright,
But what do they mean to me?

"For they've dumped me down on a blooming post,
Where it's dark and lone and drear;
It's nice in camp where the sergeant is,
But it's damn poor stuff out here.

"Now my girl she's home and it's warm there, too,
And it's nice as nice can be;
But she may be talking to Billy or Hugh
And not think a thing of me.

“For they’ve put me into a uniform,
And it’s fine all right, all right;
I’m strong for the life of a soldier, sure;
But I’m sick of it to-night.

“And I want to go where the bright lights are,
Where there’s fun and grub and noise;
But I’m stuck to a blooming siphon-house
Instead of out with the boys.

“For the sergeant he up and put me here,
And he says, “Now hold that down”;
But I don’t want to stay, and I’m going away;
Come on, and we’ll go to town.’

The Veteran Speaks

“You make me sick with your yell and kick,
You’re a hell of a man, you are;
You’re a good-for-nothing sniveling kid,
You just made a damn fine speech, you did;
You’ve fixed yourself for a juicy skid,
You’ve just went too darned far.

“You talk of cold; well, wait till you hold
Your gun in an ice-caked mitt;
The job’s all right if your mind is set
And your toes turn out; but you can bet
They’ll be turned right up in the slush and wet
If you even whisper, “quit.”

“You’re tired out! Well, I gotta shout
At the talk of the likes of you.
You’ve got a cot; you get grub that’s hot;
And you may believe it, and maybe not,
But it’s gospel truth, Kid, you bet you got
Lot’s more than some folks I knew.

“You never ate from a wash-bowl plate,
Nor slept on a Junior cot;
You never done with one blanket—one!
We did, my boy, and we called it fun,
And I’ll kick the first darned son-of-a-gun
That hollers he don’t know what.

“You wash your face— You’re a plum disgrace,
Your kind— You a soldier? You?
Some time next year when the pears is ripe
You’ll be something more than a slab of tripe;
You spoil our record, you little snipe,
And I’ll lam you, P. D. Q.

“You cut and run for a bunch of fun—
And maybe— My God! you pup!
You’d shoot the work of a thousand men
For a dame and dance and some eats, and then—
If you ever open your head again
Be damned, but I’ll eatcha up!”

So much for the verses that reflected the work of the line. Fragments of others may be found, as various chapter headings or quoted here and there throughout this work. There were also one or two things of general nature that were produced by men of the First Provisional Regiment and that are worth reproduction as samples of real literary worth and the result of deep thought.

The first is by Ray Yngstrom, of Company C of the 23rd Infantry, attached first to Company E and later to Regimental Headquarters. Yngstrom wrote his “Canvas” during the winter of 1917. Later he revised it and it appears as revised:

“THE CANVAS

“If all our thoughts were painted on a canvas,
And hung where every one could plainly see,
Would we be proud to show them to the stranger?
No. What a horrid picture it would be.
Would there be thoughts to help our weaker brother
Who draws a losing hand in life’s sad game?
Would there be thoughts that break the heart of mother?
Would there be thoughts that bring disgrace and shame?
Would there be thoughts to help the little children
Who grind and toil for us through all the years?
And do our thoughts go back to their poor mothers,
Whose eyes are often red from bitter tears?
Would there be thoughts of greed and measly gaming?
And thoughts to push all others to one side,
And plans to better self by crooked scheming?
Would there be thoughts that we would rather hide?

Would there be thoughts, straight, pure, and on the level?
 Would there be thoughts all red with stains of sin?
 Would there be thoughts to serve but one, the Devil?
 (Or does a guilty conscience work within?)
 Would there be thoughts that bring us nearer Heaven?
 And thoughts that bring us nearer to our God?
 And thoughts that we would like to leave to others
 When we are laid at rest beneath the sod?"

It was one of the most remarkable contributions to the written sum total of the First Provisional's literary effort, speaking of deep introspection, self-searching, and withal a wonderful spirit. Yngstrom wrote others, including, "Whiskey," a soliloquy by John Barleycorn, but though all were virile and convincing, none approached "The Canvas" for finish and originality.

Early in the summer of 1918 there appeared in *The Watchdog* some verses that attracted considerable attention outside the line. Written by one of the members of the Adjutant's office, they bespoke the doctrine of the regiment:

"FULL TILT

"How do you live?
 Do you live like a worm?
 Just an occasional wiggle and squirm?
 Better be dead, man, if that's how you're built!
 Live every minute, and live at full tilt!

"How do you work?
 Do you work for the gain?
 Or for the job, and an end to attain?
 In the broad stream of success or the silt
 Left by the river—Work—Work at full tilt!

"How do you fight?
 Do you fight in the dark?
 Craftily, crookedly? Man, leave your mark!
 Fight like the devil! The knife to the hilt!
 Life is a battle. Go to it—full tilt!"

SONG

There was but one song of the First Provisional Regiment, aside from the parodies which from time to time appeared, that was ever set to music. This was the "Regimental March" by Lieut.

(now Major) Charles A. Clinton, of the 9th C. A. C., who served with the First Provisional Regiment, first as medical officer of the 2nd Battalion, and later in charge of Field Hospital No. 2, at Ossining, during the influenza epidemic. Major Clinton, who has written several light operas, composed the music of his march first and then the words. To the swinging march the words of "The Good Old N. Y. G." run:

"We're New York boys, and we make some noise,
As everybody knows;
On the job we'll stay, both night and day,
Right behind our Colonel Rose.
We know what water looks like, for
That is all that we can get.
And we use it to drink; that is brave, I think,
And to bathe in 'cause it's wet.

Cho:

"Oh, the tramp! tramp! tramp! of the marching feet
Is a sound of which we're fond,
And we hope Bill Kaiser will hear us, too,
In his home across the pond;
We will take good care of the Aqueduct,
Twelve hundred strong are we,
In the First Provisional Regiment
Of the good old N. Y. G.

"When the war is done and the cause is won,
With honors we'll be ripe,
But we'll heave a sigh when we say good-by
To that hundred miles of pipe.
Then all New York of our work will talk,
And a dam' good reason why;
For the water, you know, we kept running, so
The old town would not go dry."

Cho:

This song was published by Jerome Remick, and several hundred copies of it were distributed throughout the regiment. It was sung by the men of the line from Ashokan to Hillview and was another means of developing regimental spirit. Its official debut was made at Regimental Headquarters, when Colonel Rose and his staff officers sang it first to the music of a melodeon on the evening of Oct. 22nd, 1917.

PROSE

Of prose but two specimens are offered, the first being a typical news-letter to *The Watchdog* from its correspondent, Leslie Du Vernoy, at the Breakneck outpost. Du Vernoy wrote a classic once on pulp-made underwear, but that is neither here nor there. His snapshots of life on the line were true to type, and a couple of incidents taken from a news-letter sent in during the spring of 1918 will give an idea of line humor:

The other day, Cootie Pete Vaow, Dirty-face Dan Decker and Southpaw Bill Spangenburg started on a fishing trip to a pond around here. It seems that these fellows were not getting enough eats out of this camp to cause J. P. Morgan to gnash his teeth, but there's one thing about our job—it's steady. Anyway, the day they went fishing will be remembered by all in Breakneck. We were eating dinner when Cootie Pete, who's a good scout, even if he can't fish, took his face out of his dish of goulash long enough to cast an eye at the sky and said, "Let's go fishin'."

When they were all dolled up in their fatigue clothes ready to go, we wished them all kinds of luck and were sorry we could not send 'em off with their pockets full of horse-shoes and wreaths of four-leaf clovers.

From the latest returns, we now find out that it was Dirty Dan who lamped a queer object floating in the water. His shout brings Southpaw to his side, while on the opposite shore Cootie ambles up and risks one eye on the curiosity. He saw right away that it was a sea-going ukulele which had escaped from a Newburgh jazz band and was seeking some quiet boiler factory to rest up in.

We anticipated a fish supper, but if the bunch waited for them to get the eats we sure would starve. When the cook handed out the authorized rations we were glad to grab our share and dig in.

We are glad to welcome Corporal Sprage with us again, who blew into this camp to-day. He will be remembered by the boys of Company C, especially the last time he was at Breakneck, that it was he who accepted that \$1,000 maltese cat from the mistress of Storm King. He liked this cat so much that one

day he made her a present of a granite laval-lière weighing about five tons. She had a fat chance to swim with a young N. Y. Central station wrapped around her neck. We wanted to shoot it and give it a decent burial, but he pointed out to us that bullets cost money and nobody would dig a grave, let alone chip in for flowers and a tombstone.

From the first the editors of *The Watchdog* made it a point not to try to reconstruct the correspondence from the line, for as soon as this was done the correspondence lost its line flavor. As will be noted from these extracts, line colloquialisms and even allowable personalities were not barred. And the men liked the writing the better for it.

Turning to serious prose, an editorial in *The Watchdog* on the attitude of Americans generally toward the war overseas is herewith reproduced. There was just enough of these really serious things to maintain the standards of sacrifice and service that were the regiment's from the beginning, and this is a fair example of this particular class of editorial which from time to time spoke to the men on the line:

WHAT IS THE PRICE?

Over the towers of Jerusalem, the Holy City, fly the flags of the Allied nations. After centuries the City of the King is again a portion of the Christian world. The manger of Bethlehem is shielded on this coming Christmas night by the Cross of St. George. This is the bright side of the great war picture.

But the darker side is more insistent as it thrusts itself upon us. True, Russia is in the throes of a counter-revolution that bids fair to be successful, but Russia is beaten to her knees on the Eastern front, Italy is thrown back by the German hordes from the passes, and on the Western front the din of battle, arising as this is written, tells of a mighty Teutonic smash to be delivered before winter lays its final icy grip upon the combatants of the world.

And thus it is that as the books are balanced at the end of this fiscal year of war, the debit side seems heavier than its mate; the issue still hangs in the balance, and of all achievements only the capture of Jerusalem stands out with dramatic hope and promise of the ultimate.

For Jerusalem, the despair of the Crusaders, for which rivers of blood ran upon the sands of mediæval Europe, has fallen at last. And it is an omen of the certain and sure success that will come though the war be long and though the price may be past all counting.

And that price?

It is measured and is still to be measured in thousands of acres of shell-scarred, battle-torn, blood-soaked soil. It is accounted in devastated homes, ravished women, murdered children and the ultimate sacrilege. It is marked off by hate, by fear, by death, and by frenzy. Its boundaries are heaven and hell. It is the greatest price, save one, that the world has ever paid—it may be the price of you, and you, and you—the price that barter a lump of shrapnel-battered flesh for a living man.

Is the price too great?

The answer is, "No!"

"No," were it ten times what it may be; though it were the price of every one who may read this written work; "No," though it drenched our own fair land in hot red. It is the price of all the world—the world's debt left us in legacy by the martyrs and prophets, by all those who have been scourged and burned and tortured and slain for right. Ours—OURS to pay. Our right, our opportunity, our destiny.

HEALTH

FROM first to last in the eighteen months of field service the First Provisional Regiment maintained an average sick percentage of 3.32. At no time, even at the height of the influenza epidemic, was the percentage over 12, and in 14 months of the 18 of service not higher than 6. The influenza epidemic spoiled what would have stood as the lowest figure on record for troops serving 18 months under field conditions. As it is, with the influenza epidemic figures of 500-odd cases included, the record of healthiness established by the First Provisional is unique.

Immediately the question occurs, "Why was this organization thus favored?" "Why was it immune from fevers and, with two exceptions, from epidemics of any kind?" "Why, in view of the personnel, the scanty equipment, and the very nature of the duty itself, was there so little sickness?"

The answer is found in the fatherly care of the Commanding Officer of the regiment for the men of his command; in the ceaseless efforts made by him to secure for them the best possible in housing, in clothing, in food, and in medical attention, and in the methods of physical check used on the line of the First Provisional. The answer is found in St. Luke's Hospital, Newburgh, where one of the country's greatest surgeons goes his ways in these times of peace, after having been of the greatest service to his State and his nation as chief medical officer of the First Provisional Regiment. Not without reason did the Federal Government representatives inform Major Charles E. Townsend that he must stay on the Aqueduct with the men of the First Provisional. Although the U. S. A. Medical Corps was crying for surgeons such as he, his grasp of the needs of the line, his strict methods and his knowledge of human nature, made him indispensable to the Aqueduct work which the Department of the East considered so vital.

And the same was true of Capt. E. C. Waterbury, who, with a Federal commission in his hand, was still kept on the Aqueduct to meet the great scourge that struck the line in the late days of September and which threatened the very life of the regiment itself until checked.

The answer is found in the faithful labors of Major Charles A. Clinton, who, as medical officer of the 2nd Battalion in the regiment's early days, as acting chief medical officer in the absence of Major Townsend in the summer of 1918, as 3rd Battalion medical officer serving with captain's pay for the sake of the regiment, and as officer in charge of Field Hospital No. 2 in the dark days of the epidemic, meant so much to the health of the regiment.

It is found in the efforts of Kingsbury, Aaronowitz, Horgan, Kinney and Benson, all medical officers with the First Provisional; in the insistence of the tireless battalion inspectors on camp sanitation and personal hygiene; it is found in the honest, day-long effort of the officers and the non-commissioned officers of the regiment, who instilled into the minds of their men the principles of sanitation and hygiene and sent them into the Federal army or back to civil life better citizens for the knowledge they had gained in the ranks of the First Provisional.

After all, the question of army health is one in which personnel is the factor of prime importance. A company trained in the principles of sanitation and hygiene, and schooled in the care of camp and body, will remain healthy in a swamp, while the unschooled unit will develop disease in the fresh airs of the mountain-side.

History is full of the lesson that the congregation of men in camps means sickness. With that premise, the answer must be found in the personnel, its make-up, treatment and its response to this treatment. Consider the case of the First Provisional Regiment:

Imprimus. The season of its entry into the field was most favorable to the acclimation of the troops. The great heat of the summer of 1917 had nearly passed; the clear, tonic days of the autumn came on soon, and before the rainy season and the heavy winter of 1917-18 set in the units brought into the field in August were seasoned to life in the open.

And the men who comprised it originally were, for the greater part, accustomed to outdoor life. With the departure of the V. C. A. there were left on the line 11 up-State units and 5 city units. Not that the men from up-State were without spot or blemish. As a matter of fact, the detachment of old Company C of the First carried the highest percentage of sickness per capita of any unit on the line at the time. But, generally speaking, the men from up-State were hardy, with a liberal sprinkling of farmers, truck-drivers, freight-handlers, automobile men, and others who had led outdoor lives.

The weeding-out process of the weaklings in the early days consumed some time, but when it was finished the regiment was strong and sound, as a whole. The very nature of the work itself, the intense, long hours of duty, the long hours of actual hard manual labor, and the nervous tension, automatically eliminated in the final analysis the unfit or made them over into the fit. It was in a sense an application of the oldest law of nature, the survival of the fittest. Men without physical, mental and moral stamina could not stand such a strain as the men of the First Provisional were subjected to in the days of mobilization and organization. And so it was that with the coming of the first snows, and the coming of the first big replacements, the line was set from the physical standpoint.

Now it should be borne in mind that there were few men in the ranks of the First Provisional Regiment, in the beginning, who were there from original choice. Almost every man who came into the field had been rejected from one and in some cases all branches of the United States army service for physical disability of one kind or another. At first glimpse this would seem to militate against the health of the organization as a whole. On the contrary, it demonstrated in hundreds of instances that physical disabilities may be overcome by field training and field life.

Perhaps the most striking instance of this was the case of a boy from Utica who had been rejected by every recruiting station to which he had made application. He entered the field with one of the units of the First Provisional, a weak, white-faced, narrow-chested chap, with a splendid determination but an anemic body.

In five months of ceaseless duty on the line and in camp he developed into a husky, broad-shouldered, round-faced youngster, full of virility and animal spirits, straight-backed, full-chested, erect, lithe and snappy in every movement. In the summer of 1918 he was accepted by that most exacting branch of the service, the United States Marines. His training on the Aqueduct gave him chevrons within a month. With good fortune dodging his every step, he entered an overseas detachment, went to France, and when Civilization stood at Armageddon-on-the-Marne, went through Château Thierry unscathed, on the crest of the wave that finally beat against the farther banks of the Rhine.

His case was that of many, who, though they were not privileged to participate in the crux of the struggle, developed from weaklings to strong men, went overseas, and were saved to the armies of the United States. They would otherwise have been waste material had there been no such training-ground as the First Provisional to remake them.

How the service made over men was again demonstrated at demobilization time, when the men returned to home station. Some of them were obliged to wear their uniforms for two or three weeks until they could buy new "cits." They had outgrown their old ones at almost every point. As a reclamation unit alone the First Provisional justified its existence.

And now to retrace to the original premise: Since it was inevitable that a greater portion of the men who were to make up the First Provisional would be below the standards required by the United States army's physical examination, it was important that only men should be brought into the field who could be made to measure up to the physical requirements of the job. And so it was that replacement furnished one of the real health problems of the regiment.

So long as the Commanding Officer was permitted to inspect and select from the units offered for service by home organizations, the proper balance could be preserved, and this was done faithfully. Remembering that the orders which prescribe the functions of the New York Guard were predicated on the idea of emergency service, primarily, it will be seen how enlistments at home station for service in time of emergency only allowed the enlistment of many men who could not possibly live up to the requirements of the Aqueduct work.

When in the spring of 1918 the privilege of medical examination, inspection and rejection was denied Colonel Rose, the difficulties with which the regiment was obliged to cope increased materially. There was no possible method of catching physical defectives before they reached the line, and once they had arrived on the line their commanding officers, because of the shortness of man power, were reluctant to let them go, quite naturally attempting to conceal defects from the eye of the medical officer for fear of losing their men.

At the best, with all of the physical inspections, selection and rejection originally allowed, there was a marked upward turn of the sick percentage line on the regimental charts immediately following the entry of new troops into the field, as will be shown by the various examples cited in notations on the charts themselves. For instance, there was never a more carefully inspected unit than that of the 71st Infantry, which entered the field in November of 1917, but there was an immediate upward movement of the sick line following the entry. This was in all cases of new troops, of course, partially due to reaction from inoculation for typhoid and paratyphoid, but more largely due to the inevitable colds and allied sicknesses which accompanied the period of ac-

climation. It is not fair to expect that a man can be taken from his desk this day and to-morrow put out in the wind and rain of the cut and cover without developing in him some physical ailments that would be foreign to the acclimated soldier.

The charts themselves are the best proof of the big advantage that the regiment lost when it lost the right of physical examination at home station under the orders of the Brigade Commander. Lack of physical examinations resulted in the entry into the field of a large number of hernia cases that were easily operative, but which would have cost the State more than the worth of the man's service had the operations performed by Major Townsend been paid affairs, or at another hospital than the one where he was chief surgeon. How many thousands of dollars Major Townsend's position as chief medical officer of the regiment saved the State may be gathered from the reports of operative cases in the history of the regiment's service.

With the man once in the field, even under the most favorable conditions to the regiment—that is, with physical examinations before entry—a mighty task faced the officers responsible for him.

Since 90 per cent. of the men of the regiment were without previous field service, they knew nothing of the fundamentals which are a part of the very life of the old soldier. Inoculations were a source of dread in the beginning, and much of the reaction resulting was due to the men not following along the lines that would have been observed by old soldiers. For instance, instead of keeping the arm in vigorous motion following inoculation, the inclination was to nurse it, with resulting stiffness and soreness. The nature of the guard duty did not permit of time off for the newly inoculated men, and in some cases the men were not careful of themselves while on post following inoculation.

Inoculations over, there was still the instillation of personal hygiene into the new man. He must be taught that a clean body is the first law of the soldier, and while most men are naturally given to the liberal use of water, there is nearly always at least one dirty man in every outfit, who is a menace to his comrades.

Now it is a difficult matter to impress a man with the necessity for frequent baths when there are no bathing facilities provided for him at camp or near by. Shower-baths were few and far between on the line of the First Provisional, and it was not until the summer of the regiment's second year in the field that any active motion in the matter could be secured. This was made possible by the Citizens' Committee.

Most company commanders met this difficulty by bath details sent regularly to Y. M. C. A. buildings, armories, hotels, or even

private homes, in the near-by towns. But since the movement of men involved transportation, and since transportation was always at low ebb on the line of the regiment, this plan had its fundamental difficulties. The real solution of the problem would have been what the Commanding Officer advocated when the regiment entered the field—a shower-bath at every company headquarters.

The following report, submitted July 9th, 1918, shows the condition of the regiment with relation to baths in the summer of 1918, and summer was the time of year that gave the regiment its most favorable bath conditions:

First Battalion

Co. A, Millwood, N. Y.:

Remarks. Have one shower at Millwood Hdqrs. Men hire taxicab at cost per round trip to Ossining, or walk, which is a distance of about 6 miles. Reason given for not using shower at Millwood, on account of not having hot water.

Co. B, Van Cortlandtville:

Remarks. Members of this command walk to Peekskill and bathe at Peekskill Police Station, a distance of about 3 miles. No cost for bath, men carry their own towels and soap. No local bathing facilities in vicinity.

Co. C, Nelsonville, N. Y.:

Remarks. Men go to Newburgh from Cold Spring by rail at a cost of about \$20 weekly. Baths are furnished at Newburgh Y. M. C. A. Charge of 5 cents for towels and soap. No local bathing facilities, but men at the outposts at Breakneck are bathing in the Hudson River.

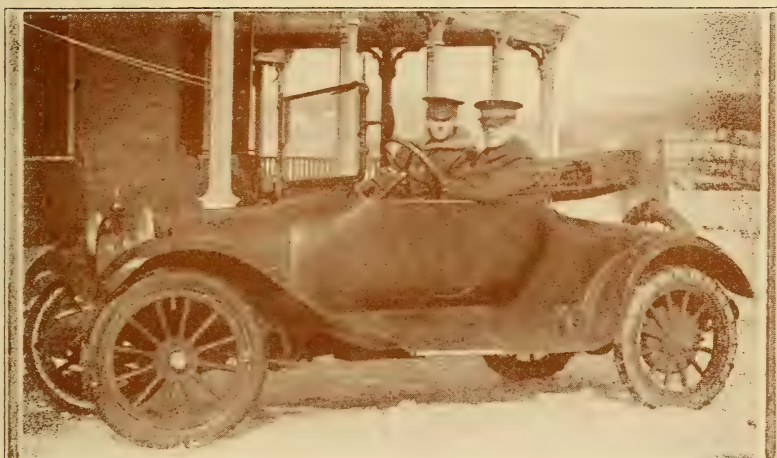
Co. D, Peekskill, N. Y.:

Remarks. Men go by trolley for 10 cents a round trip, or walk to Peekskill. Bathing facilities at Peekskill Police Station without cost. Men carry their own towels and soap.

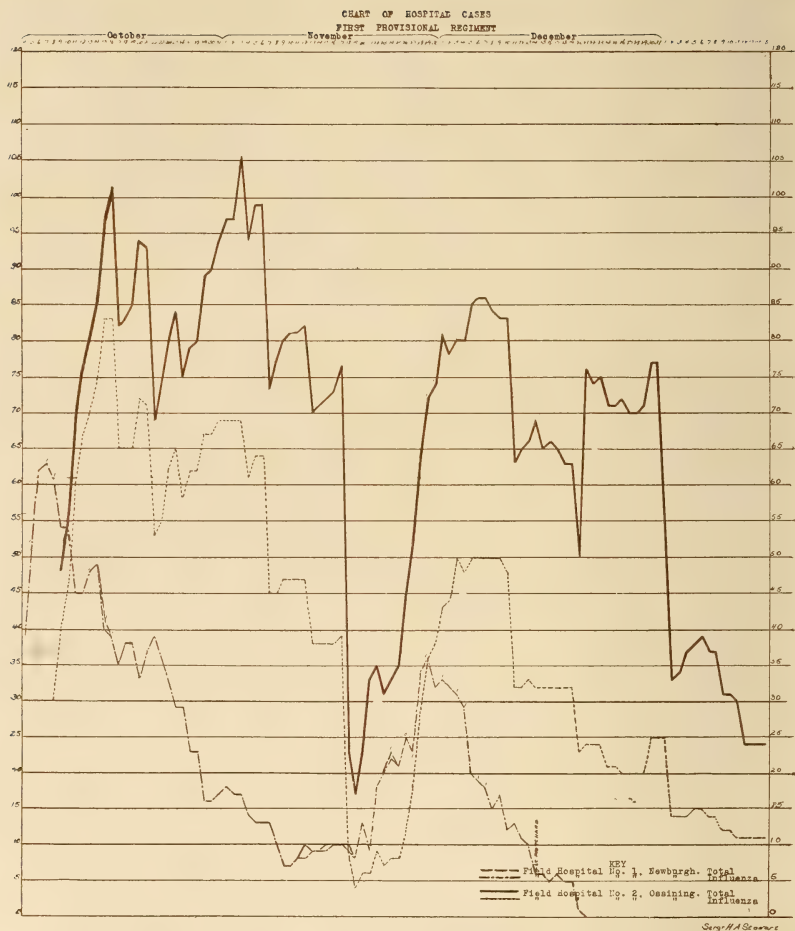
Second Battalion

Co. E, Olive Bridge:

Remarks. No bathing facilities. Thirteen miles from Olive Bridge to Kingston. Men go by automobile at cost of \$5 each way for a party of 4 men. Paid by men them-



Upper—Capt. E. C. Waterbury and Sergeant Roth at winter headquarters, Pines Bridge, 1917. *Lower left*—Major Charles E. Townsend, chief medical officer of the regiment. *Right*—"The First Shot." A training detachment getting typhoid inoculation at headquarters. Captain Blume, extreme left.



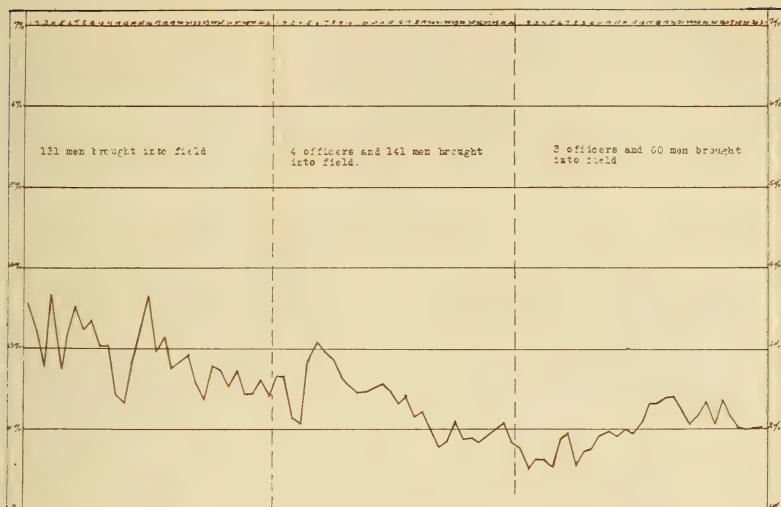
SHOWING THE RISE AND FALL OF THE INFLUENZA EPIDEMIC IN ITS
FIRST AND RECURRENT WAVES

SICK-CHARTS, 1918

March

April

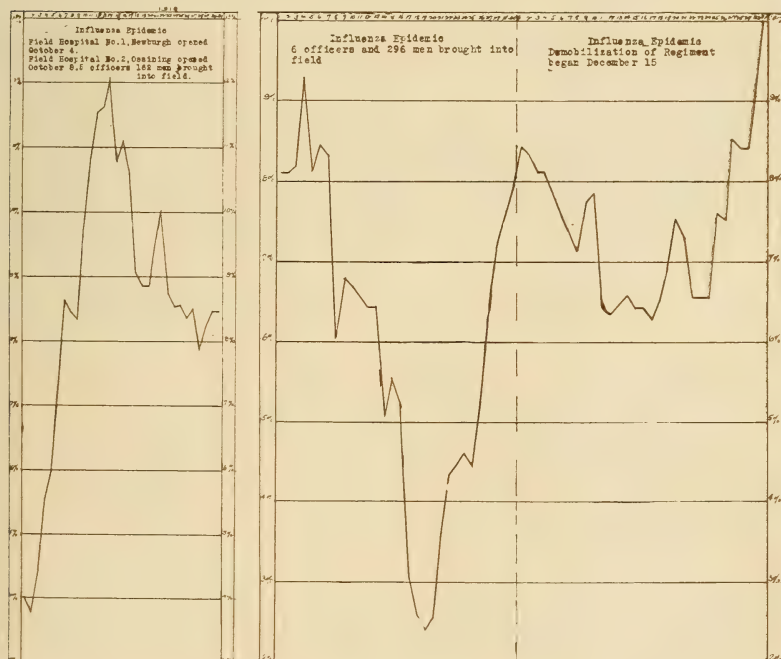
May



October

November

December





Company F barracks. Capt. Hayden J. Bates, Major J. A. Blair. Company A's unfinished barracks, winter of 1917. Major Hodges and his transit. Early housing facilities. Olive Bridge barracks, winter of 1917. Company M barracks. How the conicals were made to serve. Barracks conference at headquarters, fall of 1917.

selves. Baths free at Y. M. C. A., except charge of 5 cents for soap and towel.

Co. E, Atwood:

Remarks. No bathing facilities. Twenty miles to Kingston. Men go by truck or car at cost of \$5 each way for a party of 4 men. Paid by men themselves. Baths free at Y. M. C. A., except for charge of 5 cents for soap and towel.

Co. H, Stone Ridge:

Remarks. Shower-bath in barracks. Shower in poor condition, owing to defective shower-head.

Co. F, New Paltz:

Remarks. No bathing facilities. Men go by city-owned trucks to New Paltz, from New Paltz to Poughkeepsie, at cost of 50 cents a round trip, to Y. M. C. A. Charge of 5 cents for soap and towel. Expenses paid by men.

Co. G, Gardiner:

Remarks. Main camp at Gardiner, Camp Culvert 76. No bathing facilities. Men go to Gardiner by city-owned truck. Cost of bath, 25 cents, paid by City of New York.

Co. G, Shafts 3 and 6:

Remarks. As above.

Co. G, Sherwood Corners:

Remarks. Men walk $1\frac{1}{2}$ miles to trolley. Ten cents a round trip to Newburgh. Bath at Y. M. C. A. at cost of 5 cents. Paid by men.

Co. G, St. Andrews, Walden:

Remarks. To Walden by trolley at cost of 10 cents a round trip. Bath at Y. M. C. A. at cost of 5 cents. Expenses paid by men.

M. G. Co., Cohecton Turnpike and Little Britain Turnpike and Vail's Gate:

Remarks. Men go to Newburgh by city-owned truck. Bath at Y. M. C. A. at cost of 5 cents. Paid by men.

Third Battalion

Battalion Hdqrs: Bath-tub.

Company M:

Outpost No. 1, Harlem Railroad siphon: To Jewish Home, 3 miles away. Walk. Outpost No. 2: To Jewish Home, 1 mile away. Walk. Headquarters: Walk $\frac{1}{2}$ mile to Jewish Home. Installing outside showers. Have requisitioned for fittings from Supply Officer, but have not received them. Outpost No. 4: Walk to Jewish home, 4 miles away. Sector S-7: Headquarters tub, but insufficient water supply. Go to White Plains by railroad, fare 12 cents each way.

Post No. 4-A. One-and-a-half miles walk to Valhalla. Can take train to White Plains.

Post 4-C. Same as No. 4-A.

Posts 5 and 6: Ry's 15 cents to White Plains.

Company I:

Headquarters: Shower. Authority needed to drain water before showers can be used.

North Tarrytown and Glenville Outposts: Walk to Tarrytown, 2 miles. All other outposts: Walk to White Plains, 2 to $3\frac{1}{2}$ miles.

Company L:

Shower at headquarters. In need of repair. Outpost No. 2: Go to Yonkers or Walker's house, $\frac{1}{2}$ to 2 miles. Pay own transportation.

Underhill Road: Swimming-hole built by men.

Ardsley Outpost: Go to Yonkers. Bath-tub works sometimes.

Company K:

Headquarters: Has shower-bath.

Outposts 1 and 2: Walk 3 miles to headquarters.

Outposts 4 and 5. Go to Yonkers by trolley—distance 2 miles; pay own fare.

The new man must receive special instruction in the care of his feet, especially in work such as that of the First Provisional.

Long hours of walking post in slush and mud or in boiling sun do not make for healthy feet unless special care and attention are given to the pedal extremities. This is another thing that old soldiers would have known. The square cutting of toe nails, the treatment of blisters, and all of the other primary things regarding the treatment of the feet were new to most of these men.

And in the care of the other extremity, the mouth, which means so much in health or sickness, there must also be special instruction. The number of men entering the field without tooth-brushes was startling. Even one of the training classes, made up from picked privates of each company and sent to Regimental Headquarters for instruction, the usual questions asked on the night of the first lecture on personal hygiene, showed that 11 of the 26 men were without tooth-brushes or tooth-paste! There was one instance on the line where three men used the same tooth-brush until discovered.

How much the care of the teeth meant to the digestion, the importance of mouth-police, and all of the reasons therefor, had to be taken up in detail. The condition of the men's teeth was such that from the time of his entry into the field early in the winter of 1917-18, Lieut. Edgar V. Friend, D. C., was continuously engaged in the relief of critical cases alone.

With a portable chair, dental engine and kit, he traveled the length of the line, serving first with one company and then another, and saving huge dental bills that would have been necessary for outside treatment. A sample of one of his reports is herewith given to show the nature and amount of work required to keep the regiment's teeth even in average condition:

The following is a report of work done by me during the month ending March 15th:

Headquarters Company

| | |
|--------------------------------|----------------------|
| Sergeant Walsh | 1 cleaning |
| | 1 treatment |
| Sergeant-Major Dixon | 1 cleaning |
| Bugler Stapleton | 1 cleaning |
| | 1 amalgam filling |
| | 1 treatment |
| Private Davis | 7 treatments |
| | 2 temporary fillings |
| Private Cook | 1 treatment |
| Private Couse | 3 amalgam fillings |

Company A

| | |
|-------------------------------|------------------|
| Private Gerstenberg | 1 treatment |
| | 1 cement filling |
| Private C. Bright | 3 extractions |

Company C, First Prov. Regt.

| | |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------|
| Private Nutter | 1 devitalization |
| | 3 treatments |
| | 1 root-canal filling |
| | 1 cement stop |
| | 1 amalgam filling |
| Private L. Van Patten | 1 devitalization |
| | 3 root-canal fillings |
| | 1 cement stop |
| | 1 amalgam filling |
| Private Farrell | 2 amalgam fillings |
| Private Francois | 2 extractions |
| | 1 amalgam filling |
| Private Twining | 7 amalgam fillings |
| Private Weston | 3 amalgam fillings |
| | 1 cement filling |
| | 1 treatment |
| Private Scudder | 1 devitalization |
| | 3 root-canals filled |
| | 2 treatments |
| | 3 amalgam fillings |
| | 2 cement stops |
| Private Robinson | 2 amalgam fillings |
| | 1 cleaning |
| Cook Loveland | 2 treatments |
| | 2 temporary fillings |
| | 1 devitalization |
| | 2 root-canals filled |
| | 1 cement stop |
| | 2 amalgam fillings |
| First-Sergeant Landon | 2 amalgam fillings |
| | 1 cleaning |
| Sergeant Vergason | 1 cleaning |
| Sergeant Wamby | 1 cleaning |
| Sergeant Whitmarsh | 1 treatment |
| | 5 amalgam fillings |

EDGAR V. FRIEND,
1st Lieutenant, Dental Corps.

And the army's biggest enemy, venereal disease, had to be met by the instruction of the men, careful explanation of the dangers of promiscuous intercourse, and the percentage of disease resulting from it. It was the prompt action of the medical officers and the commanding officers of the various units shortly after the entry of the regiment into the field that was responsible for the very low percentage of venereal infection in the ranks.

For several months the territory covered by the regiment had been under armed control, and wherever there are bodies of soldiers prostitution moves into the neighborhood. Vigorous and prompt action, with hearty co-operation from the police and health authorities of the various communities in the vicinity of the line, resulted in stamping this out. In one instance a battalion medical officer, the company commander whose sector was affected, and one of the staff officers from Regimental Headquarters spent an entire day interviewing and warning the keepers of disorderly houses and sitting-rooms in the vicinity of the line of the drastic action that would follow the entertainment of soldiers at their places. It was not regular, but it was effective. Securing a constable or a justice of the peace from the vicinity in which the places were located, the officers went to the persons responsible for the existence of the danger centers and talked frankly to them.

In one case only was there any inclination to take issue with the military dictate.

"If soldiers come here, I can't stop them," said one woman, sullenly.

"And it's nobody's business if they do," chimed in one of the men of the "joint."

"Then I'll give you fair warning at this point," was the rejoinder from the Commanding Officer's representative. "If you even put your nose over the line we've given you, we'll push you off the map!"

It was no idle threat. Colonel Rose had determined that venereal troubles were to be eliminated from consideration, and headquarters was ready to go to any limit in the matter. There was no trouble with that particular place from that time on.

In so far as the men themselves were concerned, they were warned of the immediate punishment that would follow failure to report to their company commanders after being out. The results spoke for themselves. The First Provisional, with its total of 8,000 men at one time and another, was probably more free of the dread diseases than any other organization of its kind in military history.

Hand in hand with the instruction of the new man in personal

hygiene goes camp sanitation and its importance. Your recruit cannot understand how greasy dish-water spilled on the ground can affect his health, until the way of the fly has been impressed on his mind. He looks on the incinerator as a dirty job and fit only for a prisoner, until he is imbued with the idea that any one can make garbage, but it takes a good man to dispose of it. The wash-basin and bucket at the latrine are ordinary nuisances in his initial conception of them, and he will insist on sleeping with his head under his blanket, and with his windows down in cold weather, if he is allowed.

This chapter would be unduly extended were methods of camp sanitation to be discussed in detail, but for the benefit of those who may in later years find themselves meeting the same conditions, a word about incinerators, latrines and quarters:

Incineration of garbage and refuse was made a more difficult matter than ordinarily because of the great number of outposts for each company. Where non-commissioned officers were in charge of outposts, supervision of incineration needs must be left to them, and this was not always satisfactory. Shortage of man power made it almost impossible to have incineration details consistent at many times, and only the incessant watchfulness of battalion inspectors and company commanders secured the results. Most camps disposed of their solid garbage, if possible, to near-by farmers as a part of the conservation plan, and this left only odd kitchen wastes, liquids and rubbish, to incinerate. At headquarters and many of the company posts the plan of detailing special men to incineration, with a prisoner to aid them, was adopted, and the incinerator savings plan was made possible by this.

Police details ordinarily pick up everything loose and throw it into a common receptacle. If the entire contents of that receptacle are thrown onto the incinerator by the detail, destruction or loss of small quartermaster property occurs daily. Incinerator men were impressed with the idea that nothing must be thrown onto their fires by any one besides themselves, and police rubbish was sorted for spoons, cups, tent-pegs, rope, tent-guys and other small articles that often amounted to as much as a dollar a day in total value saved from the fire.

All styles of incinerators were used, from the common stone-lined pit to the saucer-shaped with center chimney. Manure was incinerated in pits daily, and picket-line burned off, as were incinerator surroundings.

Latrines were in the beginning equipped with spring covers, but the cross-piece that made the open cover impossible was found

to be the more practicable and lasting. Field-service regulations regarding the size of latrines and movement at necessary periods were, of course, strictly complied with. The hardest standard to maintain was the wash-basin at the latrine.

Quarters were for the most part kept in the best condition and the battalion ratings helped to increase the efficiency of the various units in this respect. One of the biggest difficulties was in teaching the city man to combat with the open-air sleeping conditions. The common habit was to either close windows or else sleep with heads underneath blankets, a very unhealthy procedure and one which kept officers and non-commissioned officers busy in its correction.

In addition to the general oversight of personal hygiene and camp sanitation which would ordinarily fall to the lot of the medical officer, the battalion M. O.'s of the First Provisional had other problems, not the least of which was the one afforded by the everlasting entrance of the geographical factor of the service. Normally there was a medical officer for each battalion, but at one time Captain Waterbury covered the 1st and 3rd Battalion lines, a distance of more than 60 miles. The 2nd Battalion line, more than 40 miles long, with its mountain outposts, offered a big problem to the medical officers responsible for it. Since the value of the medical officer depended solely on the transportation available to cover his line, the transportation question, elsewhere considered, was a vital one to him. In the case of Captain Waterbury, who shelved his own car in the service of the State, there would have been little help for the 1st and 3rd Battalion lines had not the Motor Corps of the National League for Women's Service placed a car at his disposal daily. There was for some months no other transportation for him than that furnished by Lieut. Turner of Chappaqua and the women of her corps.

Sick calls, in addition to daily visitations and inspections, crowded the waking, and sometimes the sleeping, hours of the line medical officers to the utmost. As was to be expected, a certain percentage of the emergency calls sent in by outposts were not emergency calls at all, and could have been easily handled on the following day's visitation. Let it not be understood that daily visits to all camps were possible. The geography of the work settled that in the beginning, although the medical officers did their best.

No attempt is made here to go into the problems of medical practice that were met and mastered by these valiant warriors of Æsculapius on the line of the Aqueduct. But there were one or two diseases familiar to every army man—morning sickness, or

reveille inertia, and homesickness, that helped to swell the problems of the medicos.

The symptoms of morning sickness are generally accepted as standard. They begin at first call with violent pains in the stomach, or back or head, a "dizzy feelin'" and an inability to rise and dress for reveille roll-call. The remedy is a C. C. pill repeated, and some castor-oil for good measure. The results are worse than the sickness and the cure is usually a lasting one—until next time.

And then there is homesickness—a real condition; there are some boys who are actually sick with it and it has to be met just the same as any other mental disturbance. Men lose interest in their work and their food, and get into such a state that they are subject to actual physical ills. The younger the men the more prevalent it is, and when it is considered that the average age of the men entering the field was 19, although the average age of those on continuous duty was higher, it will appear that the amount of this queer malady on the line must have been above normal.

To carry on the work of coaching in camp sanitation and personal hygiene, as well as to represent the medical officer in treatment of men sick in quarters, and to administer first aid in cases of necessity, the medical officers picked men in each main camp, men who through knowledge or adaptability were best fitted for the work. The special orders which called the regiment into the field provided for a sanitary detachment of 10 enlisted men, but this detachment never operated as a separate unit. Due to the constant release and replacement of men, it was hard to keep good medical orderlies in the camps along the line, and the medical officers met with a constantly shifting problem in this connection.

Another difficulty faced by the medical officers was lack of sufficient simple remedies to distribute at the posts and outposts for the use of the men under direction of the officers. There is no doubt that the health percentage of the regiment could have been kept even higher had there been authority for the purchase of medicines, or had there been no dispute over the bills when once contracted. While the authority of the medical officer was theoretically supreme in the matter of medical necessities, the actuality was quite different.

In the winter of 1917-18 a short epidemic of mumps broke out in the Troop B barracks on the Company F line. This was promptly met by Major Townsend, the men were isolated, authority was secured for a hospital and nurse at New Paltz, and the thing was checked at its beginnings. The regiment, all

things considered, continued in very good health up to October of 1918, when it met with its worst enemy.

This was the so-called Spanish influenza epidemic, which, beginning on the Company G line, swept practically the entire regiment and made necessary the establishment of two field hospitals and the bending of every regimental energy to check it.

Spanish influenza had been raging in the National Army camps for some time before it laid its finger on the First Provisional. With the foresight that characterized his entire administration of the regiment's affairs, the Commanding Officer, looking at the National Army camp figures in early September, came to the conclusion that some appearance of the disease on the line was inevitable. And it was this conclusion which prompted the verbal orders to each unit commander for the selection of two of his best privates from the company to be sent into regimental headquarters for a period of instruction and training. Appreciating that trained help would be hard to secure in the event of an epidemic, Colonel Rose desired to form a unit of men inspired with regimental ideals and fundamentally sound and enthusiastic, schooled in hygiene and sanitation, and awake to their responsibilities.

How well he calculated the history of the epidemic shows. On Sept. 26th, Major Townsend, in a communication to Colonel Rose, sounded warning against the probable inroads of influenza on the line and asked that orders issue for immediate action by commanding officers in the case of men complaining with the usual symptoms of ordinary grippe.

Company commanders were immediately advised by telephone that in case of sickness resembling ordinary grippe-cold among their men the men were to be sent to the nearest hospital, and until actual transfer kept warm and comfortable.

On the same day that Major Townsend sounded his warning Corp. Clarence Miller, Provisional Company G, was taken to St. Luke's Hospital, Newburgh, with high temperature and the general symptoms of Spanish influenza. This was the first case of the hundreds. Miller died on Oct. 10th.

The appearance of the influenza in Captain Johnson's command is not a matter of mystery. Two men had been home on leave to Binghamton. At that time influenza was being carried by passengers on trains and cars and by pedestrians in the street. And so it was a leave of absence that brought the scourge to the First Provisional. It was certain to have come in one way or another. The air was too full of it for the regiment to escape.

Colonel Rose advised Major Townsend to watch the situation

closely, and when nine cases were found in Captain Johnson's command on the 29th day of September, the chief medical officer reported it immediately, with the recommendation of a quarantine on the entire line. This was about six o'clock in the evening. At 8 P. M. telephonic orders issued from headquarters to all battalion commanders and company commanders directed suspending all passes and furloughs, recalling all men from leave, and forbidding all contact by men of the regiment with outsiders. The Supply Officer was directed to proceed to St. Luke's Hospital, Newburgh, with tentage, stoves, cots, blankets and mess equipment for the establishment of open-air wards on the grounds of St. Luke's.

On the following morning the Adjutant-General of the Provisional Brigade was advised of the condition on the line, and Colonel Rose 'phoned to Lieut.-Col. Edward J. Westcott, the acting Adjutant-General of the State, a story of the conditions direct, receiving necessary authority for the purchase of supplies and the establishment of a field hospital at Newburgh.

Written orders confirming the telephonic orders of the previous day as to the suspension of passes, etc., were issued on the 30th, Major Townsend was directed to proceed to Albany for a conference with the Adjutant-General and the State Health authorities, and Capt. E. C. Waterbury was assigned to duty with the 2nd Battalion.

Immediately upon Major Townsend's return from Albany, where he had secured blanket authority for necessary action to meet the emergency, general orders were issued from headquarters declaring a quarantine on the line of the regiment to prevent the spread of influenza. There were 14 cases of influenza in St. Luke's on the evening of the 29th. On the following day there were 21. On the 1st there were 26; on the 2nd, 30; and on the 3rd, 34, with the greater portion of these, as shown by the appended table, occurring in the 2nd Battalion. A large storage tent and a hospital tent were erected on the grounds of St. Luke's, floored, sided, and heated, but it immediately became apparent that this would not meet the demands of the epidemic.

In the mean time contact had been established with Arnold Wood, director of military relief for the Atlantic Division, American Red Cross, and following telephonic communication with him by Captain Baldwin, Colonel Rose addressed a communication to the Atlantic Division, asking action in the establishment of two field hospitals, one on each side of the river. Hospital equipment and nurses were also asked for. At that time the chief medical officer's estimate was for 100 cases, but this was greatly exceeded later.

On the 2nd of October, upon the direction of the Commanding Officer, Major Townsend concluded arrangements with the Newburgh Board of Education for the use of the large brick building adjacent to St. Luke's Hospital, in Newburgh, as a field hospital. On the same date there was received from Major Smiley of the American Red Cross the offer of the Burnham homestead in Beacon for the same purpose, but it was deemed inadvisable to establish two hospitals which would be available to practically the same section of the line.

Mr. Wood, of the American Red Cross, advised the Commanding Officer on the 3rd that he was in a position to supply cots, bedding, pajamas, bath-robos, slippers and a few nurses. This offer was immediately accepted and the Red Cross advised that at least 100 pairs of pajamas, 50 bath-robos, 100 pairs of socks and 50 pairs of slippers should be furnished immediately to Major Townsend at Newburgh.

It was at this point, again, that Colonel Rose's appreciation of human psychology was of immense advantage to the regiment. Certain of the mental condition sure to predominate in the camps where the disease was striking down men at the rate of four and five a day, he went to the northern end of the 2nd Battalion's line, accompanied by the Adjutant, on Oct. 3rd, inspecting the proposed field hospital at Newburgh and visiting the sick men in the contagion ward at St. Luke's en route. At that time the nature of the disease was not thoroughly understood except that the contagion danger was large, and as a result both officers were obliged to don surgical gowns before entering the wards where the sick men were. This was the first of many visits paid by Colonel Rose to the stricken men of the 2nd Battalion as they fought their battles with the grim destroyer on the hospital cots. Most of the men in the ward were in good spirits, but three cases of pneumonia had developed. The shortage of nurses was such that one, Miss Helen Mattler, a student nurse, had become exhausted and taken to her quarters with the disease. At the time Colonel Rose visited the hospital Miss McElroy had been on duty for 24 hours continuously, and she was subsequently on duty at one time for 48 hours without sleep and with very little food. She was taken with influenza and narrowly escaped death.

Rigid inspection of the post, outposts and line of Provisional Company E on the night of the 3rd and the morning of the 4th convinced Colonel Rose that conditions were normal there. On the morning of the 4th he personally conducted setting-up exercises, first at Olive Bridge and then at Brown's Station outpost, proceeding to Company H at the Peak, where setting-up exercises

were given in the afternoon and guard-mount at night. The line of Company H showed the same conditions as those of Company E and there were no signs of outbreak. On the morning of the 5th Colonel Rose went southward to the Company F barracks on the Lake Mohonk road. There were six cases from Company F in the hospital, and while Colonel Rose was there another developed with a temperature of 104. This enabled the Commanding Officer to see the symptoms at close range. The man had been on post the previous tour of duty, and upon going to bed complained of headache and a chilly feeling. When he reported to Captain Decker about midnight he had a high temperature and was immediately sent to Newburgh in the Commanding Officer's car.

And this was the man who voiced the spirit of the line as he was being taken to the hospital—not complaint about his own condition, but regret that he would be unable to take his post on the thin line at Bonticou at his regular time. "It's the first time since I've been out here that I haven't taken my trick, Sergeant; you know that," he grumbled on the way to the hospital.

Field Hospital No. 1 was opened on the 4th, and that night 35 patients were moved from St. Luke's to the brick building that had been secured for the field establishment. It was on the 4th that the regiment lost its first man to Spanish influenza, Private John Green, of the Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, attached to Provisional Company G.

In the mean time, Spanish influenza had spread among the sailors stationed at Peekskill State Camp, where the Supply Company's headquarters was located, and nine cases had developed in the Supply Company. The need of a field hospital on the east side of the Hudson was becoming more and more urgent, and when Colonel Rose met Capt. G. E. Lindsey of the American Red Cross at Brown's Station on the morning of the 4th, he requested him to proceed at once to Newburgh, giving such aid to Major Townsend as possible, and to make an endeavor to have the Red Cross establish a field hospital on the eastern side of the river. Major Townsend was directed to secure necessary authority for the hire of a sufficient number of nurses to meet the emergency.

Captain Baldwin had been active in the matter of a second field hospital and had secured from Mr. V. Everit Macy permission to use the premises formerly occupied by the Holbrook Military Academy on the heights above Ossining and overlooking the Hudson River. The Red Cross agreed to equip this building.

When Colonel Rose arrived at Newburgh on the 6th, after an inspection of the infected camps of Company G and the Provisional Machine Gun Company, he found the new field hospital

running smoothly, but greatly overcrowded, and in need of trained orderlies. By this time the disease had developed to an alarming extent on the line of the 2nd Battalion.

Immediately upon his return to Regimental Headquarters, Colonel Rose, in company with the Adjutant, visited the premises offered by Mr. Macy and inspected them under the guidance of Mr. Vincent Phelps, superintendent of the Macy estate, who at that time and subsequently was of the greatest assistance to the officers of the regiment at Field Hospital No. 2 and the new headquarters.

The buildings fitted the needs of the situation exactly, and Colonel Rose formally accepted the offer at that time.

That night the men of the training company were assembled in the darkness of the company street and were told by the Adjutant of the crisis that had arisen in the regiment. "You, because of your especial training and knowledge, and because you have learned what true service means, are to form the steel point of the flying wedge from the fifteen hundred enlisted men of this command to battle against this disease," said the Adjutant, in telling of the call that had come for volunteer orderlies. "You are going into extreme danger when you volunteer for this service. You will need to remember all that has been taught you; all that you have learned here, and especially that you are soldiers. How many will volunteer?"

The company volunteered as one man and from the ranks there were selected eight men to stand in the breach at Newburgh. These were:

Private Willard La Due..Provisional Machine Gun Co.

| | | | | |
|------------------|---|-----|---|---|
| Edward Perkins.. | " | " | " | " |
| Matthew Keegan. | " | Co. | " | E |
| Irving Decker... | " | " | " | F |
| Joseph Lucsak... | " | " | " | F |
| Fred Durfee..... | " | " | " | G |
| Harold Saxton... | " | " | " | H |
| Leland Lewis.... | " | " | " | H |

With their blanket-rolls on their shoulders and their packs in their hands, these men went down Headquarters Hill into the rainy darkness to the cars that awaited to carry them to their greatest battle-ground. While all of these men were at one time and another stricken with the influenza as they went about their duties as orderlies at the hospital, none succumbed. Saxton had

the hardest fight, and for some time his life was despaired of, but he pulled through.

Services that night in the headquarters mess-hall were gloomed by the danger that threatened the regiment, but afterward there was a big sing-song and the boys went to their cots in a happier frame of mind than when they entered the hall.

The next morning the Adjutant, with a detail of 17 volunteers drawn from the training detachment and the Headquarters Company, established a post at the old Holbrook Academy in Ossining and began cleaning and preparation there for the opening of the hospital. Captain Lindsey of the Red Cross co-operated fully. The men of the detachment were fed at noon on the first day by a volunteer detail from the Red Cross canteen at Ossining, and all day and all night truck-loads of bedding and hospital supplies rolled in from the Red Cross units of the vicinity that had been called upon by Mr. Lindsey.

Mrs. J. J. Campbell, of White Plains, was the first nurse to arrive from the Red Cross, followed shortly afterward by Mrs. Emma Goodwin, of White Plains. By midnight there were 40 cots ready to receive the patients and the hospital equipment was coming in. Members of the Red Cross Motor Corps brought in ambulance-loads of material until long after midnight, and shortly before noon the next day the patients began to arrive. Major Charles A. Clinton was transferred from medical work with the 3rd Battalion to take charge of the hospital under Major Townsend's general direction, and Mr. Lindsey represented the Red Cross. The detail of enlisted men was assigned to quarters on the third floor of the west wing (later the administration building) and Lieut. Clarence Higgs was transferred from the line to take charge of the personnel work at the new hospital.

Both Col. J. Weston Myers, Chief Quartermaster of the State, and Major Townsend visited the new hospital on the 8th, and at that time Colonel Myers made arrangements which resulted in properly equipping the hospitals on both sides of the river. When Lieut.-Col. Edward J. Westcott, the acting Adjutant-General, visited the line of the regiment a few days later and inspected the hospitals at both Newburgh and Ossining, he found that everything was running smoothly. Authority was given for the installation of necessary additional plumbing at both points, and for the heating, lighting and maintenance of the buildings. Colonel Myers purchased electric ranges for both hospitals, and authority was given by the Adjutant-General for the hire of civilian cooks and helpers. These were secured from

the 15th (colored) Battalion, Major Tandy commanding, and served until the end of the epidemic.

The spread of the influenza epidemic in the first three weeks is shown by the following table:

INFLUENZA TABLE
FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT

| | SEPT. | | | | | | | OCTOBER | | | | | | | | | |
|-----------------|-------|----|----|----|----|----|----|---------|----|----|----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| | 29 | 30 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 | 10 | 11 | 12 | 13 | 14 | 15 |
| Reg. Hq..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 5 | 5 | 6 | 6 | 5 | 5 |
| Supply Co..... | 2 | 2 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 9 | 9 | 22 | 22 | 22 | 24 | 24 | 24 | 24 | 27 | 27 | 27 |
| 1st Bn. Hq..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| Co. A..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 3 | 3 | 3 | 3 | 3 | 2 |
| Co. B..... | 0 | 3 | 3 | 3 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 |
| Co. C..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| Co. D..... | 3 | 4 | 4 | 5 | 4 | 4 | 3 | 3 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 6 |
| 2nd Bn. Hq..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 2 | 3 | 1 | 4 |
| Co. E..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 5 | 5 | 7 | 4 |
| Co. F..... | 2 | 2 | 3 | 3 | 3 | 5 | 6 | 6 | 6 | 4 | 4 | 6 | 7 | 7 | 7 | 11 | 18 |
| Co. G..... | 4 | 7 | 13 | 16 | 20 | 23 | 35 | 36 | 40 | 39 | 39 | 44 | 49 | 51 | 48 | 47 | 46 |
| Co. H..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 2 |
| M. G. Co..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 10 | 10 | 12 | 13 | 13 | 13 |
| 3rd Bn. Hq..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 1 |
| Co. I..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 4 | 4 | 4 | 4 | 4 |
| Co. K..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| Co. L..... | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 1 |
| Co. M..... | 3 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 |
| Total..... | 14 | 21 | 26 | 30 | 34 | 44 | 57 | 73 | 80 | 76 | 81 | 101 | 116 | 123 | 128 | 130 | 135 |

To meet the crisis in the matter of extra transportation brought about by the transfer of patients to and between hospitals, Governor Whitman ordered the Poughkeepsie unit of the Woman's Ambulance Corps, Home Defense Reserve, into active service, without charge to the State, and these women, under command of Lieut. Spalding of Poughkeepsie, relieved what would have been a serious condition had the regiment been obliged to depend on regimental and Red Cross transportation solely. The motor-corps drivers were quartered with the nurses, first in the administration building and later on the third floor of the hospital wing.

While the Commanding Officer was on the northern end of the line, Captain Baldwin had been busy in New York in an effort to secure serum for the vaccination of the troops untouched by the malady. This was finally secured through the Rockefeller Foundation, and Captain Horgan, medical officer of the 3rd Battalion, inoculated most of the men on the east side of the river.

While there was little of definite nature to work on as to the preventive effects of the serum, it certainly did the men no harm and probably a great deal of good. In the case of the Headquarters Company, which was inoculated thoroughly, there were no losses whatsoever from Spanish influenza, although Sergt. Garland, then stationed at headquarters, later fell victim to the disease.

The Red Cross equipped the hospitals with cots and beds, bed-linen, towels, pajamas, dressing-gowns and bed-socks, bed-jackets, influenza masks, sputum-cups and hospital paraphernalia generally.

Now for something about the arrangement of the hospital buildings.

The building at Newburgh was not as well equipped for the work in the matter of space and arrangement as was No. 2 at Ossining, but Major Townsend, Captain Waterbury and the nurses worked wonders there. The lower floor was used for administration purposes as well as for wards. The two upper floors were devoted entirely to wards. The hospital was generally overcrowded, and to prevent the dreaded recurrence of the disease in men returning to duty too soon, Colonel Rose directed that convalescents be sent to No. 2 for observation and recuperation until entirely cured.

At No. 2 the main study-room on the ground floor of the brick wing was used as the general ward, while acute cases were cared for in the smaller recitation-rooms at the front of the building. For a while the office of the head nurse was in one of the recitation-rooms off the main hall, but this was converted into a nurses' dining-room when the hospital kitchen was installed in the room next to it, and the office, diet-kitchen and dispensary were moved to one of the recitation-rooms off the main ward.

Convalescents were quartered in the old dormitories on the second floor, and orderlies were also quartered in the hospital building.

In the beginning, the hospital, officers' and nurses' mess was cooked on the ranges in the basement of the administration building, but this was changed with the installation of the electric ranges on the hospital side. The early days of the establishment were full of difficulties for everybody, but the enthusiasm of the workers carried things through.

On Oct. 15th there were 49 patients in Field Hospital No. 1, with 28 orderlies and 5 cases of pneumonia. On the same date there were 88 enlisted patients at No. 2, most of them convalescents, and 2 officers. There were 4 cases of pneumonia, and 29 men as orderlies and attendants.

Captain Waterbury himself was down with the influenza for a



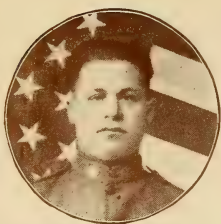
COMPANY M POSTS AND OUTPOSTS

Right center—Capt. Reginald Vanderwater, commanding Company M.



Left column, top to bottom—Officers and their wives gather for farewell to Capt. E. Madden Decker (extreme right), at Ossining headquarters; Company H in winter; Olive Bridge, Millwood. Right column, top to bottom—Fischer; Unloading lumber at Burnham's mill for barracks construction; What Capt. Ted Lane had to do with a hoodless tent at Tuckahoe.

IN MEMORIAM



Left, top to bottom—Sergt. Leroy W. Levitt, Private Frank Poole. Miss Mae Craig, Nurse, F. H. No. 1.—*Middle*—Private Samuel Hallett, Corp. Clarence B. Miller, Private Carl Baley. *Right*—Sergt. Chas. Garland, Private Halsey Conway, Private Malcolm A. Northrip, Private Frank Baker.



ILLUSTRATING THE COURSE OF THE FIRST PROVISIONAL'S MEMORIAL BOULDER FROM ITS ORIGINAL RESTING-PLACE ON THE SHOULDER OF BONTICOU CRAG IN THE CATSKILLS TO SLEEPY HOLLOW CEMETERY

few days and pulled away from every indication of a long sickness by sheer will power.

Reference to the accompanying chart shows better than could mere words the rise and fall of the influenza epidemic in its first stage. At one time there were over 60 patients at Newburgh, but the number fell almost steadily, as all men able to move were fed into No. 2, where the influenza total reached 83 at one time about the middle of October, and the total number of all cases well over 100. It will be observed that the only death at Ossining hospital in the initial epidemic was a general case—typhoid. This typhoid case was isolated, but for a time its occurrence gave the medical officers cause for worry.

All of the deaths in the initial stage of the epidemic occurred at No. 1—11 in all. The crest of the disease was passed shortly after the 1st of November, and the Newburgh unit fed its convalescents rapidly into the Ossining hospital. Low ebb was reached on the 19th day of November, when there were less than 20 patients, all told, at No. 2 and less than 10 at No. 1.

But the importation of more than 200 new men from the 4th Infantry had brought the disease back to the line in fresh and recurrent form. The Red Cross, satisfied that the trouble was over, had withdrawn its representative, Capt. Charles Carlock, who had succeeded Major Lindsey, and preparations were being made to discontinue the No. 1 hospital when, with a bound, the indicator line of the epidemic ran up and up. From both sides of the river the men poured into the hospitals, and again the sinister, brief reports of the passing of the men began to come over the wires to Regimental Headquarters office from both hospitals. The first wave had taken Green, Barton, Peebles, Miller, Adamy, Hallett, Waldron, Pernice, Bennett, Baley, and Northrip. The second took Stephens, Tate, Nourse, Conway, Howell, Baker, Higgins, Gee, Poole, Fuller, Hellenack, Lynch, Garland, De Costa, Avery, and Lieut. Gomer Pritchard of Company G, and then, as it waned, Roberts and Neville.

Throughout the influenza epidemic the Commanding Officer continued his detailed inspections of the line, keeping close watch on the conditions at barracks, with especial view to outposts. His theory of "follow up" was well demonstrated when, in one instance, he found at an outpost a half-dozen men, sick and running temperatures, who had not been reported for hospital attention. The men were sent into the hospital in the Commanding Officer's car, and two of them barely pulled through as it was. Another 12 hours in the loft of the outpost building would have meant death for the weaker.

And in the hospitals, by the bedsides of the stricken men, Colonel Rose was an inspiration to those who with laboring lungs and wheezing, gasping breath, fought for life beneath the oxygen cones. There was one boy in the Newburgh hospital who had apparently given up and was starting the long, long slide that meant oblivion. When the case was called to Colonel Rose's attention he had a heart-to-heart talk with the boy.

"You aren't going to give up," he said. "This is a fighting-man's job. You keep on fighting. I don't want to think that there is any one of my boys who wouldn't see anything through to a finish. Keep on fighting. That's an order."

A few days later, as the Colonel stood by a boy whose life was slipping away fast, despite all that oxygen and liquid stimulant could do, he felt a hand plucking at him from the next cot. Believing it to be the aimless clutch that tells of approaching death, he turned to see the boy to whom he had given the order to keep on fighting.

"Do you know me?" asked the Colonel.

"Yes." The lips barely moved. "I wanted to tell you. I'm fighting!"

"That's the stuff. Keep it up. You'll be out of here in no time."

And the boy did. While men died on either side of him, he carried out orders and pulled through.

The recurrent wave reached its peak in the first days of December and then gradually fell away, taking its heaviest toll of deaths in the last struggle of its existence. And it was in the closing days of the epidemic that the First Provisional lost its first officer by death in the field, Lieut. Gomer Pritchard of the Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, who had entered the field with his unit as an enlisted man and who had won his promotion and commission on the line.

Field Hospital No. 1 closed on the 20th day of December, and shortly thereafter, as the line melted down from the north, the medical officers went, one by one: Clinton, Horgan, Waterbury, and Benson, until only Major Townsend remained, with Miss Margaret S. Jamieson, of New Haven, Conn., Miss Agnes Gibbs, of Endicott, and Mrs. Martin R. F. Genet, of Ossining, as nurses.

And now, for the first time in this history, there appears a name that is so dear to the heart of America. By its strange fate the First Provisional was bound closer than ever to the drama of the great war in having as one of its most loyal friends the "Little Mother" of Edmond Genet, first American ace of the Lafayette Escadrille to meet death in the cause of liberty above the battle-

lines of France. The letters of Edmond Genet are a part of the heart history of the great war, and the "Little Mother" to whom he wrote formed a part, and a very big and vital part, of the regiment's later-day work. She had given all that most women could give to the cause of America, but that was not enough. And when it became known that there was a need for nurses at the 2nd Field Hospital, "Mother" Genet took up her duties at the bedsides of the boys she loved so well. It was she who understood the ways of a sick boy better than almost any one else in the building; she, ever smiling, with quaint little sayings and withal a sturdy determination to secure the best for the lads she cared for; she who found a very warm spot in the hearts of the officers, the men, the doctors and the nurses of the 2nd Field Hospital and the headquarters establishment, a place that conferred upon her the endearing "Mother."

No mere printed words can express the appreciation of the regiment to those women who toiled by beds of fever, labored breath, pain and death in the long days and the longer nights of the last four months of the regiment's service. There is no reward that could repay that debt, unless it is the satisfaction of the scores and scores of boys who, because of tender nursing and good care, pulled through the Valley of the Shadow and came out on the bright slope to go to the world again, their hearts full of gratitude to those women who wore the red cross.

And those who went through the Valley, and, with magnificent faith, over the top to the greater brightness of that other day, carried with them the joy that comes from the knowledge that in all love and beautiful service brave women have done their most for a man, right up to the gates of death.

And that there be no doubt who these women were and of what they did for the officers and men of the First Provisional, read here the roster of service:

FIELD HOSPITAL NO. I

Miss Catherine MacAree,
Miss Madeline Collins,
Miss Mina Benoit,
Miss Ethel McKay,
Miss Anna Marsh,
Miss Vern Morgan,
Mrs. Josephine Phipps,

Miss Mae Craig,
Mrs. Brundage,
Miss Agnes Gibbs,
Miss Hazel Hurlburt,
Miss Marian Wynne,
Miss Bertha Chalopuka,
Miss Georgiana Schmer,

Miss Emma Hamill.

FIELD HOSPITAL NO. 2

- Miss Agnes Gibbs, graduate nurse, 9 Cleveland Ave., Endicott.
 Mrs. Emma Goodwin, nurse's aid, 233 N. Y. Post Road, White Plains.
 Miss Jessie Long, nurse's aid, 31 N. Broadway, White Plains.
 Mrs. Blanche Jenkins, nurse's aid, 23 Highland Ave., Ossining.
 Mrs. Martha R. F. Genet, nurse's aid, 23 Highland Ave., Ossining.
 Mrs. Martha Turner, nurse's aid, Chappaqua.
 Mrs. J. J. Campbell, graduate nurse, Lawrence Park, Bronxville.
 Miss Julia La Beau, nurse's aid, Hillside Place, Tarrytown.
 Miss Prudence Cobb, nurse's aid, Hillside Place, Tarrytown.
 Miss Hazel L. Hurlbut, graduate nurse, 101 New York Ave., Endicott.
 Mrs. Pauline Gunn, nurse's aid, 15 Walsorth Ave., Hartsdale.
 Miss Rose McHugh, graduate nurse, Glendorn Club, New York City.
 Miss Amanda Engle, graduate nurse, Glendorn Club, New York City.
 Miss Elizabeth Dobbins, graduate nurse, Glendorn Club, New York City.
 Miss Margaret S. Jamieson, graduate nurse, 764 George St., New Haven, Conn.
 Mrs. Elizabeth Moore, nurse's aid, White Plains.

Throughout the entire epidemic the greatest of co-operation was given the Commanding Officer by Lieut.-Col. Edward J. Westcott, the Acting Adjutant-General, by Colonel J. Weston Myers, the Chief Quartermaster of the State, and by Col. Edward E. Powell, commanding the 4th Infantry, all of whom spent much time on the line, regardless of personal safety.

While in the beginning officers and nurses generally wore the influenza-masks, constant contact with the disease made it lose some of its threatening aspect, and during the second wave of it there were few masks worn by any connected with the hospitals or the headquarters.

It would not do to close this chapter without reference to the orderlies at both hospitals and their work during the crises of the epidemic. These boys, knowing, as they carried out one unfortunate victim after another, that their turn might come soon, never faltered in the face of the constant danger that beset them. Most of them, because of the constant inhalation of the germ-laden air of the wards, were intermittently feverish or suffering from sore throats almost throughout their entire period of service, but the

fact that none of them were lost speaks well for the care they were given by those who had supervision over them.

The 2nd Field Hospital continued until the 15th of February, with one or two pneumonia cases and one typhoid, almost up to the close of the doors. Christmas was the occasion of real festivities, with a big decorated and lighted tree on the platform in the main corridor, a Santa Claus who arrived in a specimen of First Provisional transportation drawn by six prancing mules instead of reindeer, and by gifts for every man of the hospital furnished by the Red Cross and by friends in the regiment and at home station. There were presents for the orderlies, for the nurses and for the doctors, and some joke presents for the hospital staff that made that afternoon a merry one. And through it all there was the half-light of the Christmas season, the healing smell of evergreens, and the joy of a real Christmas dinner set on long tables down the center of the ward for those who could move about.

So ends the story of the regiment's greatest campaign, a campaign against death that walked with rapid stride through the thin ranks of the far-flung line, and that was checked only by the foresight and the executive ability of the Commanding Officer, the efficiency of the medical staff he had gathered about him, and the faithful, enthusiastic and untiring work of the many friends who brought up the reserves of relief in the hour of the organization's greatest need.

AVERAGE SICK PERCENTAGE OF FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT

| | |
|---------------------------------|------|
| Month of September, 1917..... | 2.01 |
| Month of October..... | 1.86 |
| Month of November..... | 1.72 |
| Month of December..... | 2.20 |
| Month of January, 1918..... | 4.40 |
| Month of February..... | 4.32 |
| Month of March..... | 2.86 |
| Month of April..... | 2.32 |
| Month of May..... | 1.99 |
| Month of June..... | 1.97 |
| Month of July..... | 1.70 |
| Month of August..... | 1.95 |
| Month of September..... | 1.87 |
| Month of October..... | 8.64 |
| Month of November..... | 5.99 |
| Month of December..... | 7.31 |
| Average for sixteen months..... | 3.32 |

DEMOBILIZATION

THE reader who has followed the fortunes of the First Provisional Regiment through the pages that have preceded cannot have failed to be impressed with at least one fact—the tense, absorbing and almost monomaniacal interest of the regiment in its work.

It was this single interest and this single effort which at the termination of actual hostilities and the post-armistice days of late November and early December enabled the Commanding Officer to submit without fear of question the work of the regiment to review by Major Livingstone, Adjutant-General of the Department of the East, in whose charge had been placed the demobilization of the troops guarding public utilities in this country. At the same time Colonel Rose submitted his plan for demobilization.

From first to last the regiment had been without recognition, save of the most casual sort. The big temptation was to take advantage of the way that had been made smooth by the Aqueduct Citizens' Committee for a grand final parade and review in New York of the bronzed veterans with their wagon companies, motor-truck train, and patrol dogs.

But Bolshevism and anarchy were rearing twin heads in the industrial centers, in the Philadelphia explosions, and in riotous street meetings of the great cities. There was nothing to guarantee safety to the Aqueduct should the entire force guarding it be withdrawn in one movement and with all of the public clamor attendant upon such a withdrawal. The great parade and review would have been the picturesque way. Colonel Rose's method was the tactical way; the military way. And it met with the approval of Major Livingstone.

It should be remembered that since the first days of its construction the Aqueduct had never been without an armed force of some sort in charge of it. During the construction period the well-organized and well-mounted B. W. S. police had maintained careful supervision, and the Aqueduct had not been fully completed until 1916. Between that time and Feb. 3rd, 1917, there had been a force of B. W. S. police on duty, and the general public supposed

that they were strung along the entire line. From Feb. 3rd, 1917, bayonets had bristled along the entire length of the Aqueduct. To think of precipitately withdrawing the entire guard at this most critical time, internally, was, in the belief of those who had guarded it, sheer folly—invitation to the evil-doer.

History has proven that the hour of peace is the hour of the fanatic's opportunity. The hour of victory is the time of greatest hatred in the mind of the supporter of a lost cause. He may have hoped against hope that the thing he has stood for either in secret or openly would eventually triumph; but with the realization that it is doomed there springs in the mind of the crank the belief that he is chosen to avenge his cause. No proof of this is needed, for the story of Lincoln and McKinley is too plainly written to admit of doubt that in the period when war clouds are sweeping back lies a nation's greatest peril.

It was with these things in mind that Colonel Rose, on Dec. 9th, wrote to Mayor John F. Hylan of the City of New York on the subject of withdrawal of troops, as follows:

OSSINING, N. Y.,
December 9th, 1918.

From: The Commanding Officer, First Provisional Regt.,
N. Y. G.

To: Hon. John F. Hylan, Mayor of the City of New
York.

Subject: Withdrawal of Troops.

I. The responsibility for the adequate protection of the water-supply system of the City of New York rests upon the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment; that responsibility cannot be delegated.

II. During the past sixteen months not a scratch has marred the record of the First Provisional Regiment. Not only have the questions of administration and the problems of adequate protection been answered and solved, but a searching investigation of the activities of aggressive enemy aliens in the region through which the Aqueduct runs has been concluded. The Commanding Officer from time to time has sought and obtained the co-operation of Municipal, State, and Military Police; the assistance of Secret Service and Intelligence Departments, and the help of sheriffs and district attorneys in the counties along the line of the regiment, together with the advice of Fed-

eral authorities, both at Washington and the Department of the East at Governors Island. Officials of the City of New York have responded to the call of the Commanding Officer in every instance.

III. At this time there remains, therefore, but the duty of the withdrawal of troops and the demobilization of the regiment in such a manner and at such a time as will best secure to the City of New York a continuity of policy which has made possible these results, and which in the future will furnish that measure of protection which those charged with the responsibility must guarantee to the City of New York. With the question of responsibility and policy after the withdrawal of the troops now guarding the Aqueduct, the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment has nothing to do, and will therefore not discuss. But the question and manner of demobilization of the First Provisional Regiment will be frankly discussed.

IV. The vulnerability of the Aqueduct, due to the fact that in the master minds of those who planned this great system, as well as in the minds of the people as a whole, there never flashed the thought that war would enter into the question of protection, is too well known to need further discussion.

V. The activities of anarchistic reds, enemy aliens, cranks, and enraged actives is another matter. With the signing of the armistice the country must, as speedily as is consistent with good judgment, regain its normal; civil and not military authorities must shortly assume control, but in the period of transition there must be no relaxation of vigilance and no overt act which will relieve the military before the civil authority can acquaint itself with the task and make its position secure.

VI. Plans, complete in detail, have been mapped and during the past weeks the situation has been freely discussed with Federal authorities.

VII. Specifically, as a quarantine, due to the existence of Spanish influenza on the line of the First Provisional Regiment, was placed on the line of the regiment, at the request of the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment, Col. J. Weston Myers, Assistant to the Adjutant-General of the State of New York, personally called upon Federal authorities in Washington and secured permission for an officer stationed at Governors Island,

Department of the East, within whose jurisdiction the Aqueduct lies, to visit the line of this regiment. This officer had the control of the troops guarding public utilities, shipyards, and munition plants, and the responsibility for the determination of the time when troops can be safely withdrawn. After a description of the task assigned to the regiment had been presented to him, and an examination of maps indicating the vulnerable points and locations where disturbances had occurred, an inspection of part of the line was made.

VIII. The Federal officer then requested the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment to explain in detail the plan for demobilization and withdrawal of troops. After presentation, this plan was approved and permission granted to quote that approval.

No announcement to the public for discussion by employees of the city as to the method or time of the withdrawal of troops.

The necessity not only for the protection of the Aqueduct, but the preservation of property and accomplished transfer of the same to civil authorities co-equal. With this thought in mind and the care of the health of the men given due consideration, it is proposed to begin demobilization at once and make such a withdrawal as will give full measure of protection to Aqueduct and preservation of property of the City of New York.

To begin such demobilization on or about December 15th and gradually reduce the forces as speedily as conditions along the line and further developments will permit.

JOHN B. ROSE, Colonel.

With Colonel Rose's letter before him, Mayor Hylan, on the 11th of December, communicated with Governor Whitman on the subject of troop withdrawal from the Aqueduct in the following letter:

CITY OF NEW YORK
OFFICE OF THE MAYOR

December 11, 1918.

HON. CHARLES S. WHITMAN, Governor,
Executive Chamber, Albany, N. Y.

DEAR SIR:

In view of the fact that since the signing of the armistice and the suspension of hostilities in the great World War

there have been—so far as I know—no attempts to damage or destroy public works, I believe that the time has arrived when it will be proper to withdraw the detail of the New York State Guard from the duty of protecting the New York City watershed.

It was at the request of Mayor Mitchel that this patrol and guard was established, and the First Provisional Regiment, Infantry, New York Guard, was assigned to the work. The expense incidental to such protection has been cast on the taxpayers of New York City, and is over and above the ordinary expenses of care, protection and maintenance of the watershed.

I believe that the time has arrived for the withdrawal of this military guard, and, therefore, respectfully ask you herewith to give necessary order for the withdrawal and removal of this military force under arrangements that can properly be made between the State officers and officials of the City of New York. The City has furnished and maintained buildings, vehicles and equipment for the military guard, using, I am advised, a battery of automobiles for transportation of men and materials along the line, and has also installed a telephone system, a lighting system, and has made other outlays for the comfort and convenience of the military force. The daily cost of the guard has been approximately \$5,000 and the protection under State jurisdiction has absorbed the man power of about 1,500 men.

In relieving this force, it should be arranged that the establishment created and maintained at City expense should pass into the possession and control of the proper city authorities designated to take over the policing of the watershed. The City government has arranged for the assumption of police jurisdiction over the watershed and water supply system and will be pleased to carry out the transfer at the earliest moment.

Very truly yours,

JOHN F. HYLAN, Mayor.

By telephone, Governor Whitman advised Colonel Rose through the acting Adjutant-General, Lieut.-Col. Edward J. Westcott, of the action of the Mayor, directing him to confer with the city, and leaving the matter of demobilization in his hands. On the 15th, 100 men of the 4th Infantry were relieved from duty and returned to home station from Company E.

On the 16th, Governor Whitman replied to Mayor Hylan as follows:

December 16th, 1918.

HON. JOHN F. HYLAN,
Mayor,
New York City.

DEAR SIR:

I have your letter of the 11th inst., in which you say that you believe that the time has arrived for the withdrawal of the First Provisional Regiment, New York Guard, from duty guarding the New York City Aqueduct, which regiment was placed on that duty in August, 1917, by my orders upon the request of the then Mayor of New York City, made in accordance with the provisions of Section 115 of the Military Law, and in which you request that I issue the necessary order for such withdrawal.

In reply thereto you are advised that I have this day directed that Colonel John B. Rose, Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment, be instructed to confer at once with the proper officials of New York City with a view to the prompt relief of his command from active duty under such arrangements as may properly be made between himself and those officials. He will also be instructed to turn over to the police authorities of New York City the establishment created and maintained at City expense for the use of the First Provisional Regiment.

Yours very truly,

CHARLES S. WHITMAN,
Governor.

Briefly, the Commanding Officer's plan of demobilization was to melt down the line from the north, relieving first-block detachments from the east side of the river and extending unit lines so as to cover especially vulnerable structures on the sectors stripped by such block released. On the 17th, 2 officers and 60 enlisted men of Company G were returned to home station, and the following day 35 enlisted men of Company C and 25 men from Headquarters Company were relieved from duty. On the 19th a transfer of 16 enlisted men from Company B was made to the Supply Company and 15 to the Headquarters Company, all former members of Captain Muller's command. This was followed on the same day by the release of 30 men from Company M.

On the 20th, Captain Johnson, Lieut. Therkildsen, and 100 enlisted men of Company G moved to the Company C sector, and 58 enlisted men of Company C and 30 enlisted men of D were returned to home station. Capt. J. J. Roche, with his lieutenants and 64 enlisted men of Company B, were returned to home station on the 22nd.

So it was that on the 23rd Colonel Rose wrote the following letter to Mayor Hylan:

OSSINING, N. Y.,
December 23rd, 1918.

From: The Commanding Officer, First Provisional Regiment, N. Y. G.

To: The HON. JOHN F. HYLAN, Mayor of the City of New York.

Subject: Withdrawal of Command from Active Service.

I. The entire responsibility for the withdrawal of troops guarding New York City's water-supply system has been laid upon the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment by direction of His Excellency, the Hon. Charles S. Whitman, Governor of the State of New York.

II. Under a plan previously adopted, report of which was mailed to the Hon. John F. Hylan, Mayor of the City of New York, on December 9th, the withdrawal of troops is already under way, and at this date, between four and five hundred men have been returned to their home stations. Additional troops will be relieved as speedily as conditions along the line and further developments will permit.

III. The Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment is working in full accord with representatives of the Comptroller's Office and of the Commission of Water, Gas and Electricity, in the protection of the water-supply system and the care of the property of the City of New York, and he respectfully requests that a representative of the Police Department of the City of New York be directed to confer with the Commanding Officer, First Provisional Regiment, looking to the complete demobilization which must shortly take place.

[Signed] JOHN B. ROSE,
Colonel.

The remainder of the demobilization up to and including final withdrawal from actual guard duty on the line of the New York water supply is told best and quickest in the following chart which chronologically shows the disposal of the troops and the way in which the lower and most important end of the line was guarded up to the last moment. By following the transfers and releases, with reference to the sectional maps, the reader may trace this tactical withdrawal, which was made so quietly and so carefully that the thinning of the line was scarcely noticeable to the casual observer.

TRANSFERS

Dec. 15.—Lt. C. W. Higgs transferred from Co. C to Supply Co. S. O. 217.

Dec. 17.—

Dec. 18.—

Dec. 19.—16 enlisted men of Co. B transferred to Supply Co., and 15 enlisted men of Co. B to Hdqrs. Co. S. O. 218.

Dec. 20.—Capt. J. W. Johnson, Lt. Therkildsen and 100 enlisted men of Co. G transferred to Co. C. S. O. 218. Capt. E. C. Gibbs relieved from duty as C. O. of Co. C and assigned as Inspecting Officer, 1st Battn. S. O. 219.

Dec. 22.—

Dec. 24.—

RELEASES

Lts. J. C. Moshier, V. Bergen, W. B. Klinger, J. R. Page and 100 enlisted men of Co. E returned to home station. S. O. 217.

Lts. Whritenour, Eaton and 60 enlisted men of Co. G returned to home station. S. O. 218.

35 enlisted men of Co. C and 25 enlisted men of Hdqrs. Co. returned to home station. S. O. 218.

30 enlisted men of Co. M returned to home station. S. O. 218.

Lt. Girdner and 58 enlisted men of Co. C returned to home station. S. O. 218. 30 enlisted men of Co. D returned to home station. S. O. 219.

Capt. J. J. Roche, Lt. E. M. Kirkpatrick, Lt. R. V. O'Grady and 64 enlisted men of Co. B returned to home station. S. O. 218.

Lt. C. P. Servatius, of Supply Co., returned to home station. S. O. 220.

TRANSFERS

Dec. 25.—

Dec. 26.—

Dec. 27.—Capt. Hinman and 30 enlisted men of Co. H transferred to Co. D. S. O. 222.

Dec. 28.—

Dec. 29.—Lt. Suttle and 31 enlisted men of Co. H transferred to Co. D. S. O. 222. Capt. Hinman takes command of Co. D. S. O. 222. Capt. A. N. Keener, of Co. D, transferred to Supply Co. S. O. 222.

Dec. 30.—

Dec. 31.—Capt. Murray, Lts. Polhemus, Lankau, Bowman and 80 enlisted men of Mach. Gun Co. transferred to Co. I. S. O. 222. Capt. Benson, M. C., transferred from 2nd Battn. Hdqrs. to Reg'tal Hdqrs. S. O. 222.

RELEASES

Lt. May, 3rd Battn. Hdqrs., released. S. O. 281, A.-G. O. Lt. Weed, Supply Co., released. S. O. 256, A.-G. O.

30 enlisted men of Co. D returned to home station. S. O. 221. 30 enlisted men of Co. L returned to home station. S. O. 221.

30 enlisted men of Co. I returned to home station. S. O. 222. Lt. F. W. Simons and 30 enlisted men of Co. A returned to home station. S. O. 222. Lt. S. L. Richards, of Co. F, returned to home station. S. O. 222.

Lt. R. C. Launt, of Co. F, returned to home station. S. O. 222.

Lt. J. Le Doux and 24 enlisted men of Co. D returned to home station. S. O. 222.

Capt. S. Winters and 50 enlisted men of Co. E returned to home station. S. O. 222.

Capt. J. J. Horgan, M. C., returned to home station. S. O. 220. Lt. H. F. Hofer, of Co. K, returned to home station. S. O. 222. Capt. Young and 49 enlisted men of Co. I returned to home station. S. O. 222. Major Clinton, M. C., returned to home station. S. O. 222. Capt. Pierce, Lts. Reynolds, Smith and 40 enlisted men of Co. L returned to home station. S. O. 222.

TRANSFERS

RELEASES

Jan. 1, 1919.—Capt. A. H. Westcott relieved from duty as C. O. of Co. F and transferred to Supply Co. S. O. 2.

Jan. 2.—Capt. Decker and 70 enlisted men of Co. F transferred to Co. M.

Capt. R. L. Vandewater, Lt. Wisner and 56 enlisted men of Co. M returned to home station. S. O. 223. Capt. G. B. Snowden, 2nd Battn. Inspecting Officer, returned to home station. S. O. 223. Non-com. Staff, 2nd Battn. returned to home station. S. O. 223.

Jan. 6.—

30 enlisted men of Co. A returned to home station. S. O. 3.

Jan. 7.—Capt. Murray relieved from duty as C. O., Co. I, and transferred to Supply Co. S. O. 3. 14 enlisted men of Co. M transferred to Co. D. S. O. 3. 12 enlisted men of Co. I transferred to line of Co. G. S. O. 3.

Lt. A. B. Suttle and 30 enlisted men of Co. D returned to home station. S. O. 3. 30 enlisted men of Co. K returned to home station. S. O. 3.

Jan. 8.—Capt. E. C. Gibbs relieved from duty as Inspecting Officer, 1st Battn., and assigned to C. O., Co. I. S. O. 3.

Major C. J. Lamb and Lt. Bechtol, 2nd Battn. Hdqrs., returned to home station. S. O. 3. Capt. A. H. Westcott, Supply Co., returned to home station. S. O. 8.

Jan. 9.—

Capt. D. J. Kiernan and 42 enlisted men of Co. K returned to home station. S. O. 3.

Jan. 10.—74 enlisted men of Hdqrs. Co. transferred to Supply Co. S. O. 3.

Jan. 11.—

Capt. J. W. Johnson and 85 enlisted men of Co. C returned to home station. S. O. 3.

TRANSFERS

Jan. 12.—

Jan. 13.—Lt. T. W. Therkildsen transferred from Co. C to Supply Co. S. O. 5.

Jan. 15.—

Jan. 16.—The detachment of men of the First Prov. Regt., left on the Aqueduct at the request of the City of New York, are consolidated and hereafter will be known as Provisional Co. Q. Capt. Howland Pell, Disbursing Officer, is, in addition to his other duties, assigned as C. O. Co. Q. Lt. T. W. Therkildsen, Supply Co., transferred to Co. Q. Capt. E. M. Decker, of Co. M, transferred to Co. Q, in charge of property from Hillview reservoir to Harlem River siphon. Capt. T. T. Lane, relieved from duty as C. O. 1st Battn., assigned to Co. Q, in charge of property from Millwood Tunnel to Storm King. Capt. I. J. Usicker, of Co. A, transferred to Co. Q. Capt. C. H. Hinman, of Co. D, transferred to Co. Q, both to assist Capt. Pell. Capt.

RELEASES

Capt. W. E. White, 3rd Battn. Hdqrs.; Capt. A. N. Keener, Supply Co.; Lt. W. J. Bowman, Co. I; Lt. G. M. Rehm, Co. K; Lt. E. J. Lankau, Co. I; all returned to home station. S. O. 3. Capt. E. C. Waterbury, M. C., returned to home station.

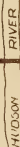
Major F. L. Kuehnle, 3rd Battn. Hdqrs., returned to home station. S. O. 4. Capt. E. C. Gibbs, Co. I, returned to home station. S. O. 4. Sergt.-Major Hawkins, 3rd Battn. Hdqrs., returned to home station. S. O. 4.



UNVEILING OF THE FIRST PROVISIONAL MEMORIAL BOULDER, MARCH 24, 1919, ON THE ROCKEFELLER
PLOT, SLEEPY HOLLOW CEMETERY



AT THE GRIDIRON DINNER, REGIMENTAL REUNION, HEADQUARTERS, OSSINING





OFFICERS AT THE REUNION OF THE STAFF AND LINE, OSINING, MARCH, 1919

TRANSFERS

A. S. Murray, Supply Co., responsible for property along line of 2nd Battn., will take charge of men of Co. Q assigned to 2nd Battn. Total officers in Co. Q, 6; enlisted men, 191. S. O. 4. Lt. C. Cass, Co. A, transferred to Supply Co. S. O. 5. Lt. R. F. Polhemus, Co. I, transferred to Supply Co. S. O. 5.

RELEASES

Jan. 21.—10 enlisted men of Co. Q transferred to Prov. Supply Co.

Capt. Edward G. Benson, M. C., returned to home station, effective Jan. 21, 1919. S. O. 7. Lt. C. W. Cass returned to home station, effective Jan. 22, 1919. S. O. 7.

Jan. 22.—

74 enlisted men of Co. Q returned to home station. S. O. 7.

Jan. 23.—

12 enlisted men of Co. Q returned to home station. S. O. 7.

Jan. 24.—

Capt. A. H. Westcott, Supply Co., returned to home station, effective Jan. 7, 1919. S. O. 8. The C. O., Prov. Co. Q, will return to home station on Jan. 24; all enlisted men of the 12th Inf. in his command relieved Jan. 25, 1919. S. O. 8.

Jan. 25.—

Capt. Ussicker of Co. Q returned to home station. S. O. 7. 27 enlisted men of Co. Q returned to home station. S. O. 8.

Jan. 31.—Sergt. Ham and Corps. Thornton and Weston transferred from special duty with
27

Capt. Chas. Hinman and men of Co. Q under his command returned to home station. S. O. 9.

TRANSFERS

2nd Battn. to duty with Prov.
Supply Co., at Ossining, N. Y.
S. O. 9.

RELEASES

Capt. A. S. Murray and men of
Co. Q under his command re-
turned to home station. S. O. 9.
Capt. Elmer H. Miller and men
of Prov. Supply Co., on duty at
2nd Battn., returned to home
station, with exception of Sergt.
Ham and Corps. Thornton and
Weston. S. O. 9. Major C. E.
Townsend, Capt. T. T. Lane,
Capt. Chas. W. Baldwin, Lt.
Clarence W. Higgs, relieved from
duty with 1st Prov. Regt. S. O.
10.

Feb. 1.—Capt. Howland Pell,
Capt. E. Madden Decker, Lt. T.
W. Therkildsen, all of Co. Q, trans-
ferred to Field Staff, 1st Prov.
Regt. S. O. 11.

* * * * *

And thus it was that on the night of Feb. 1st, 1919, after two years of armed occupation, the long line of the cut and cover, dipping siphons, and isolated shaft-houses on the mountain shoulders, ran silent and dark from Ashokan to Hillview.

No measured tread of the sentry, no hoarse challenge in the darkness, no movement nor life on the 110 miles of the great artery that had stood between the Heart of the World and chaos. Only the looming bulks of deserted barracks, the bulge of the telephone-boxes above the culverts, and the

* * * beaten path from 'Shokan
To the lights of New York town,
That the men of the Guard had pounded hard
On the job of no renown.

* * * * *

Came busy days at Ossining, the funnel through which the equipment of the dismantled line poured into the State Arsenal at New York City. And to the Supply Officer, Capt. Nicholas W. Muller, there fell the usual final task of the Quartermaster Corps, the picking up of all the loose ends.

The magnitude of this work may be gathered from the bare

consideration of the fact that 8,000 men had at one time and another in the regiment's history been responsible for equipment, and that more than 150 officers and detachments from 21 organizations of the New York Guard had participated in the property situation. The Board of Survey, serving in the last days of the regiment, handled 162,000 pieces of Q. M. property. The service had been of such a nature that it admitted of no delays in movement or in transfer of troops or releases of men. It had been subject to all field campaign conditions save actual shot and shell, and the results in the Quartermaster Department were of such a nature as to make the work of property accounting and checking huge, although inevitable. And so it was that a large staff of clerks and junior officers was necessary in the work of the Quartermaster Department alone.

To conclude the business of the regiment and to complete its records there remained on the administrative staff other than the Supply Department, Colonel Rose, Lieut.-Colonel Burnett, Captain Pell, Captain Hutton, Captain Towner, and Captain Lord.

By the middle of March the heavy clean-up work was about finished. Captain Hutton and Captain Lord had been relieved from duty, leaving Lieut. Therkildsen with the promotion to captain in the position of Regimental Adjutant. And at this time let something be said of Captain Therkildsen and his advance through the ranks of the regiment. Entering the line as a private in August of 1917, he served through guard duty, and the paperwork of the Adjutant's office, with such ability and proven worth that he was an invaluable asset to the organization from first to last. This tribute from one who knew him better than any one else in the First Provisional.

Since midwinter, Colonel Rose had been planning a reunion of the officers of the regiment at the conclusion of the organization's work, and March 23, 24 and 25 were set aside for the big affair. Invitations were sent out not only to all officers who had actually served on the line, but to those like Colonel Myers, Colonel Westcott, Captain Mull of the Adjutant-General's office, and Captain Bogardis of the Chief Quartermaster's staff, who had meant so much to the regiment in its days of need, to meet at Ossining headquarters, then maintained by a detail.

Some of the delegates arrived Saturday night, most of them Sunday morning, and the remainder as the time went by. Sunday noon was marked by the first big get-together dinner in the old main ward on the first floor of the hospital wing. This room as well as the entire interior of headquarters had been transformed

with flags, bunting, and flowers sent from the Macy estate by Superintendent Phelps.

And it was at the first dinner that Colonel Rose heard from the officers of the regiment the final word of praise—final, because it came from men who had worked with him and under him in the best and worst days of the regiment's life.

Immediately after the dinner the officers were conveyed by cars from the Motor Corps of America at Tarrytown to Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, where, in the presence of a large crowd of civilians as well as many relatives of those whose names appear on the bronze tablet, the First Provisional's Memorial Boulder was unveiled and dedicated by Capt. Charles Baldwin, the chaplain.

Sunday afternoon the Veteran Officers' Association of the First Provisional Regiment was formed, and committees appointed to effect permanent organization. These committees reported the following morning, and officers were elected for the coming year, as follows:

President, John B. Rose.
First Vice-President, Lieut.-Col. William L. Burnett.
Second Vice-President, Capt. John J. Roche.
Secretary, Capt. T. R. Hutton.
Treasurer, Capt. Howland Pell.
Chaplain, Capt. Charles W. Baldwin.
Sergeant-at-Arms, Capt. Charles B. Cleary.
Historian, Capt. D. J. Young.

Monday afternoon was given up to athletics and general fun combined with business on the matter of unpaid vouchers. Monday night was marked by the Grid Iron Dinner, when the officers of the regiment and those not of the regiment were roasted and toasted without regard to rank.

Early Tuesday morning the entire body left for New York by Motor Corps transportation, where porches on Fifth Avenue had been reserved by the regiment's ever-present friend, Inspector Underhill of the New York Police Department, from which the officers might view the parade of the recently returned 27th Division. It was altogether fitting and proper that this should terminate the reunion—this participation in the triumph of the division that had begun the work carried on to a finish by the First Provisional.

Former members of the non-commissioned staff held a reunion of their own in connection with the officers' reunion and partici-

pated in all events of the big affair at Ossining as well as witnessing the parade in New York.

Let the curtain fall as the officers and men of the First Provisional stand above the surging crowd masses in the bright sunshine of that March morning, with the airplanes droning overhead, and wave upon wave of helmets and bayonets beating up Fifth Avenue beneath the Arch of Jewels. It was the triumph of a State Militant in which those who looked on had also a part.

IN MEMORIAM

I N Ward 3 of Field Hospital No. 2 a boy lay dying. Does that convey the picture of a peaceful passing, the death of slowly closing eyes, quietly diminishing breath, as the tired traveler nears the journey's end? If so, it is not a true picture, for this was the hard, fighting, struggling kind of dying, wherein all force of will and all the desire of the ego for existence cry out against the remorseless enemy that, bit by bit, chokes out life-giving air, and with it life itself.

Have you ever watched a candle-flame struggle for existence in a compartment from which all oxygen has been exhausted? If so, you will remember the way of that flame in its last flickering moments as it leaped, died down, reached and leaped again for life, and so, struggling, went out in a little white curl of smoke from the blackened wick.

Such was death by double lobar pneumonia resulting from the Spanish influenza that swept the world in late 1918 and early 1919. Influenza of itself caused no deaths, but it was this influenza that developed the virulent, violent, so-called double pneumonia, more deadly to the armies of the United States than the German machine-guns; that turned huge hospitals and cities into pestilence centers.

It was Spanish influenza, in its initial and resurgent phases, that took from the ranks of the First Provisional such heavy toll and precipitated the struggle for existence that is told elsewhere. And it was Spanish influenza that pinned Private Frank De Costa, of the 69th Infantry, attached to Provisional Company B, to his death-bed in Ward No. 3 of Field Hospital No. 2 on this third day of December.

He had been dying since early morning. The day before, Major Townsend had said there was hardly a chance; that the dread disease was piling up terrific odds. For more than twenty-four hours De Costa had been fighting a losing battle. But he was not fighting it alone.

Watching the critical cases in the hospital building on his many trips from the headquarters administration wing daily,

Colonel Rose had taken an absorbing interest in the fight between life and death in Ward 3. He remembered De Costa from an incident on the line the night that the acting Adjutant-General of the State had been taken prisoner, and he was spending all of his spare time by De Costa's bed. The boy's mother, Mrs. Tousch, had been sent for and now stood at the foot of the bed, her eyes red with weeping, hair disheveled, hands clasped in a sense of impotence, watching the labors of Major Charles A. Clinton and Mrs. Emma Goodwin, the Red Cross nurse, who worked on either side of the bed.

Earlier in the morning, before the mother arrived, De Costa had looked up into the face of the Commanding Officer and, after a terrific effort, he had framed his lips to form the word, "Carrie."

"You want to see Carrie?" Colonel Rose asked.

"Sister—Carrie," came the answer in a stertorous whisper as the racked lungs fiercely protested against the loss of breath necessary to form the words. "Long—Branch."

"Who does she live with?"

"Long—Branch—Beach."

"Long Beach?" queried the Colonel, who believed that in the half-delirium of death the boy was confusing things.

"No, Dr.—Beach—second column—telephone-book. Hurry!"

Colonel Rose found the address and 'phoned for the sister. When he returned, with the word that the sister was leaving for the hospital, De Costa asked, "How—long?"

"Four hours," said the Colonel.

"I—can—wait," came the slow answer, in a husky, half-strangled whisper.

And now De Costa was fighting against time.

Through the wide-open window that filled the room with sweet, cold air the sufferer on his bed could see through slowly filming eyes the glory of the washed-blue heavens, sunlit and clear, with a beckoning promise against all pain and suffering. The room had been cleared of other patients against the death struggle. One had been removed by death itself.

For a long time the silence of the room was unbroken save for the terrible wheezing of the laboring lungs, the bubble of oxygen; the suck of the blue lips and nostrils beneath the oxygen cone. The boy's fingers, that since morning had been turning a dark, purplish hue, held tightly the hands of the nurse. His face was getting darker and darker; only his eyes burned with the desire and the will to live beneath the half-glaze that was beginning to cloud them.

Now and again a hypodermic; now and again a sip of whisky

and water; ever the agony of breath, each gasp a warning that death was not to be denied.

So the fight went on, the Commanding Officer of the regiment coming and going as his duties permitted.

Frank De Costa was dying as he had lived. By the force of necessity an orphanage child throughout his early years, the charge of a boy-conservation unit in his late boyhood and early youth, he had found the State service early in the great war and had served long and well. Now he was repaying with the greatest gift in his power his debt to the public that had raised him and fathered him, the price of life itself in the public service.

Early afternoon. The boy was dying fast. A few minutes at the best remained, when an urgent call from another ward took nurse and doctor to another bedside, leaving Colonel Rose and Orderly Neff to fight the battle in its last desperate rally. For more than an hour it went on, and then—

Twenty minutes later his sister arrived. Frank De Costa had made good on his promise to live, but the sister had missed a train.

But the Commanding Officer of the First Provisional Regiment had seen in the face of that dying boy in the last hour of terrific struggle for existence the symbol of the service itself; the epitomization of the enlisted man heroic; the typification of the regiment, struggling as it always did against terrific odds; the spirit of those other fighting-men of the line who had placed their all on the altar of supreme sacrifice—not the blazing altar in the great cathedral of nations, but in the tiny chapel of the unknown martyrs, where no choirs sing, where no laurel wreaths are placed, and where the legend above the cross speaks of “The Father Who Seeth in Secret.”

And so it was that when the stricken mother turned in her grief with the question, “Where shall I bury him? I have no home—no money,” Colonel Rose answered for the regiment. For he had reached a conclusion. De Costa, typifying the enlisted man of the regiment, should be honored as such. The indication of Providence was unmistakable.

Throughout the service of the regiment, in a score of instances, the preordination of its course had been emphasized with unmistakable force. With those close to the Commanding Officer it had come to be considered as certain that all things were set and ordered. And so with De Costa, as the events of the next twenty-four hours showed.

* * * * *

For within that twenty-four hours a regimental funeral had been ordered, the officers of the regiment had taken the boy's mother under the regimental wing and had furnished her with a home until the conclusion of the service; William Rockefeller had presented the organization with a plot in historic Sleepy Hollow Cemetery on the shore of Tappan Zee for its homeless dead, and a memorial had been decided upon.

By a vote of the regimental mess, ratified by the line, it was determined that the resting-place of Frank De Costa should be the resting-place of all other men of the regiment dying without home or friends; and that from the heights of Bonticou Crag, on the Company F line in the Shawangunk Mountains, the regiment would take a boulder that should stand as a monument to all of the men of the organization who had died in the service.

To no mere private in military history has there been accorded such a burial ceremony as to Frank De Costa, who typified in that regimental burial of Dec. 5th the regiment's enlisted dead. It was shortly after nine o'clock on that bright morning of sunshine and blue sky when the wail of the dead-march announced to the citizens of Ossining that the funeral procession was beginning to move. And then:

With a slow, cadenced step, band, field music, firing-squad, staff, non-commissioned staff, Headquarters Company, Supply Company and two skeleton battalions, flag-draped casket and mourners, wound slowly down the historic post road.

On it moved to that little gray stone church that stands between the gates of the Sleepy Hollow Country Club—Saint Mary's, Scarborough. It was the march of the present in the past, along the highways of the armies of Washington, to the country of Washington Irving, to the little stone church whose ivy mantle sprang from the shoots brought by the great American author from the home of Sir Walter Scott. The morning sunlight flashed silver on the shining instruments of the band; golden on the field music behind, on the long lines of glinting rifle-barrels above the snaky column of olive drab.

The columns broke and swung to regimental front on the post road opposite the church, and down the long line held at rigid "present" moved all that was left of the man who had died in Ward 3. Then the half-light of the church interior, the solemn purples of the Advent hangings, the sob and swell of the great organ beneath the touch of Private Lacey, of headquarters, and the voice of the chaplain receiving the flag-covered casket at the church door:

"I am the resurrection and the life, saith the Lord."

It was the Commanding Officer of the regiment who supported the black-veiled form of the mother, and closely following in the slow march up the church aisle came staff officers with the sister, the grandmother and the aunt.

The church filled to overflowing and the Episcopal rites for the burial of the dead went on. Never was there greater meaning in those last solemn words of the service at the church than on that morning, speaking, as they did, of these men who had died without glory, "Forasmuch as ye know that your labor is not in vain in the Lord."

Then rank after rank of solemn faces lifted to the chaplain as he gave his brief, strong message, the symbolization of all the regiment's dead in the dead who lay beneath the flowers of his comrades before the chancel steps.

The triumphal strains of the "*Marseillaise*," the recessional, and the reformation of the line—the procession moved on down the shore of the Hudson to that cemetery which, of all others, is in its very essence American. It was fitting that the way should lead through the stone arch beneath the first Croton Aqueduct, where the line said farewell to its own. On, and so into the cemetery, past the long lines again at the "present," down to the edge of the newly opened grave, and then the last words as the casket was lowered into the earth; sharp, low-voiced commands and three volleys rang out.

Then clear and sweet, with all the sadness of the hour, bespeaking the farewell of the service to all those who had passed on and were still to pass, the bugle that had sounded "Taps" at the tomb of the victor of Appomattox, swelled in the hush of noon. And as the last notes died there sounded from the distant wooded hillside a sweet, faint, lingering, silver echo.

To the cadenced clash of arms the columns formed and swung away. No quick-step here; nothing but the stolid tramp—tramp of the marching feet, speaking of the tread that had never lost its measure from one end of the great waterway to the other since the August of 1917 on the line that had demanded and had received its sacrifice of human bodies that it might remain unbroken. And the brown columns turned back to the line.

From this line there came in the days that followed the word that the men of the regiment had pledged themselves to the erection of the memorial to their dead. With a spirit that needed not urge, but curb, they gave their scanty service pay, and the officers of the regiment responded.

* * * * *

Shouldering down from the domain of the Catskill sovereigns, a rugged, time-beaten range of mountains, still bearing their aboriginal title, the Shawangunks, swing southward to final foothold in Orange County, a great outworks to the mighty fortresses of the ages that tower in the north.

And where the Catskill Aqueduct, rising from its swing through the Rondout Valley, emerges on the southern side of the Shawangunks, the broken face of Bonticou Crag lifts its head, white and shattered in part by the blast of the tunnel men, in the great niche of the range. Each year a Mecca for those who seek health and rest in the historic peace-conference home by Lake Mohonk above the clouds, Bonticou, like its neighbor, Sky Top, has from the beginning stood outpost of the greater mountain peaks to the north.

On its summit only the stunted pines and the rock moss flourish, and the winds of all the heavens cut keen and clear. Along its shoulders, in the little valleys, lies the debris of the ages, huge fragments of gneiss conglomerate shaken from the weather-worn escarpment in earth tremors that were before seismograph was made, or split free in hundred-ton chunks by the frosts of a thousand winters. If it be true that the green lichenous coruscations that mottle the boulder flows of the mountain edges grow as slowly as those who dwell among the mountains say, then it is a thousand and more years since the last huge monolith roared from the rocky battlements to the great piles below. Man has wrought havoc on the face of the mountain, where gaunt skeletons of weather-beaten cribbing, frame-work and trestling, overgrown tie-ribbed grades, and fast-settling shanty roofs tell of the great camp that flourished there when the Aqueduct was built; of the great boring-machines, the excavators, and the concrete-mixers that flourished on the mountain-side above the waste-dumps of the valley. But a scant half-mile up from the Aqueduct itself, where the last post of the First Provisional is still marked by the hard-packed earth of the cut and cover, back and up along the west shoulder of the mountain, on the Smiley estate, the peace of the ages lies on those gigantic mounds of titanic rubbish.

And it was here, on Friday the 13th, that Lieut. Robert F. Polhemus, of the 1st Infantry, chosen for the task because of his knowledge and ability as an engineer, began his work of bringing to the valley, hundreds of feet below, the rock from the Mountains of Peace that was to mark the peace of those who had given their all on the altar of war.

Balanced on the summit of a huge mass of æonic erosions, some thirty feet above the dry bed of a mountain brook and close

to the frowning wall of the crag itself, Lieut. Polhemus found what he sought—a great arrow-headed fragment of Paleozoic cataclysm shaken from its parent ledge in some shudder of the earth, so nicely poised that it tottered and teetered incongruously to the action of a pry in the hands of a single man.

It was this rock, covered with the age-long growth which told of a thousand years of separation from the mountain wall, that had since the beginning of all time been destined to tell for all time to come of those who had given their lives on the line below, where glory was not.

Standing by the side of the monolith and looking down the narrow valley across the boulder rubble to the distant plain of the Walkill, Lieut. Polhemus faced his task. Less than two miles away on the line of the crow's flight was the nearest railroad siding. But between him and that siding were seven miles of travel at best, the first half-mile through the forest and along slippery grades and slopes, where only man and the sure-footed mule might find foothold. To topple this rock into the little valley at his feet was but the beginning. Immediately there rose before him the sharp bank of the valley leading to the ridge on which the rock must begin its downward journey. From its base to its tip the fragment was something over fourteen feet in length. Across the base the great arrow-head was more than eight feet and it was more than three feet through. Calculated on granite computations, it could not weigh less than a dozen tons, probably much more. And at his service were no donkey-engines, no steam-hoists, no tramways—nothing but the crudest of material, block, tackles, skids, mules and man power.

The ignorant enthusiast would have broken himself, his men and his equipment in the first few days. The average experienced engineer would have demanded modern machinery; the veteran without motive of service would have abandoned the task as an impracticable one. Lieut. Polhemus did none of these. Accepting battle with the inanimate, in full knowledge of its odds, he quietly selected such crude weapons as were available.

Think of some calmly conservative man you know. Thin his hair a bit on top, endow him with a pair of keen, blue, fun-loving eyes, a pair of gold-mounted spectacles, and long, vigorous jaws and deep sense of humor, and you have visualized in part this man who was to undertake an Augeanism typically First Provisional.

Lieut. Polhemus lived in Poughkeepsie, and that meant that he had friends in the Hudson Valley. From Edgar V. Anderson and from the Cannon Trucking Company in Poughkeepsie, from the U. S. Shipyard at Newburgh, and from his many other friends he

borrowed, hired at nominal cost, or bought for low prices from the memorial fund, the things that he needed—a 400-foot inch-line and block, a 200 foot-line, two 20-foot chains of half-inch links, 120 feet of vari-sized cable, two 15-ton racks, 120 feet of eight-by-eight spruce skids, and of smaller lumber a half wagon-load.

It was two miles to the post of Company F, and arrangements must be made for the serving of the noonday meal on the mountain. Even then the men must go up and down steep, breath-taking grades four times daily. It was to be no small task, even with picked volunteer detachments. These men were uninitiated, unskilled in this sort of work. Most of them had been with the line since its beginnings and they were obsessed by its spirit and spunk, but they must learn the technique of this new work.

And it was not as though all winter remained in which to move the rock to its final resting-place in the Sleepy Hollow Cemetery on the shore of Tappan Zee. At any time the mobilization might begin which would within a few weeks strip this sector of men and make the service of the volunteers on the mountain-side impossible. Not only must Lieut. Polhemus struggle with crude implements, huge inanimate bulk and unskilled labor; he must battle with time.

* * * * *

And, like all the struggles of the regiment, that battle culminated in success, although at what cost of heart-breaking toil, and with what handicaps, disappointments and difficulties, only the men of Lieut. Polhemus' detail, who dubbed themselves the "Hard-Boileds," alone know. A month of incessant battle with the dogged inertia of the huge bulk and struggle in the mountain storms and fogs had passed into the log-book of time before the monolith had moved the first half-mile of its journey that brought it through the slippery trails and passes into the open country below. Half-inch chains snapped under the terrific pressures that uprooted trees eight and ten inches in diameter as the big wedge moved along the shoulders of the mountain on its skids; equipment gave and broke; men and mules floundered in the easily thawing top-soil of the woods, as day after day of rains and gray enveloping mist converted the deep forests through which the men fought their way by brute strength, into a gray land of shadows and ghostly shapes. Once the big load broke free of all control and lunged down the mountain-side, smashing its heavy cradle as it crashed through saplings three and four inches thick. And day after day came difficulties, mishaps and delays, with the big rock sometimes moving as little as eight feet in an entire day.

But at last it was brought to the Aqueduct and the big stone-truck that awaited it. When six teams of mules failed to start it, horses were secured and it was hauled across the cut and cover to the Mohonk road.

Then sliding, skidding, often swaying perilously, burying the wheels of the truck hub-deep in the rain-softened mountain road, it went down into the valley of the Walkill, every yard a struggle wherein the law of gravitation and the law of frictional resistance fought battles royal with the "Hard-Boileds," lending their forces now to one and now to the other.

To the shout of drivers, the lunge and struggle of now five, now ten teams, the creak of straining leather and the rumble of the heavy-laden truck, the memorial boulder moved down and across the flats of the Walkill along the Springtown road, and so to the Walkill Valley railroad crossing.

There, on Thursday, the 23rd of January, it was met by the New York Central's wrecking-crew from Kingston, and the mighty wedge and its wooden cradle were, after two hours of toil, lifted free from the truck and placed on a Grand Trunk flat.

It was a great moment for the "Hard-Boileds." As one of the sergeants watched the swing of the great fragment to the flat car, a pleased grin overspreading his features, one of the officers who looked on said:

"Looks pretty good, doesn't it, Sergeant?"

"You're damn whoop—" began the sergeant in enthusiastic relief, and then, as he turned in an agony of embarrassment, "I mean yes, sir. It does."

And at this point it may be well to speak of those men who met and overcame all obstacles, and who with sheer drive and push sent the rock through its hard places to its ultimate destination. Not without reason had they dubbed themselves the "Hard-Boileds." In the heart-breaking struggle of the mountains they had come to a pride in battling with this huge weight, and it was at their request that they saw it finally settled. These are the men who saw it through: Sergeant Lown, Binghamton; Corp. LeRoy Kent, Binghamton; Corp. James W. Barnes, Johnson City; Privates H. Robinson, Binghamton; Ellsworth Smith, Johnson City; Harold E. Potter, Binghamton; Laverne Gill, Deposit; M. E. Harrington, Greene; Joseph Crooker, Trumansburg; Vernon Hess, Binghamton; Robert Oltz, Ithaca; and James W. Perry, Deposit.

The rock detail moved southward and into headquarters at Ossining, meeting the big boulder on the Tarrytown siding after it had made a record-breaking journey from the Walkill *via* Kingston, Weehawken float and the Hudson division. Dinkel

& Jewell, of Tarrytown, volunteered for the movement of the boulder the two miles to the Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, where a massive concrete footing had been prepared, their big motor-tractor and stone-truck and furnished men to assist in the movement. On the morning of Tuesday, the 28th, it moved out from the Tarrytown freight-yards and through the lower village to the historic post road.

Turning into Phillipse Manor, the load sought the easier grades, and just after noon the First Provisional's memorial boulder was halted on the post road opposite the grave of Private Frank De Costa.

Since the First Provisional's lot was at the front of the cemetery and nearest the road, the truck was backed as far into the embankment as possible, a track was built to the stone wall, and the boulder moved by winch and tackle to the edge of the footing in the course of the next day. On the night of the 31st, when the last of the men of the First Provisional were leaving the line of the Aqueduct, the huge gray wedge stood firmly on its concrete foundations, lifting its ragged head some ten feet above the ground and towering over the smaller headstones of the vicinity against the forest background. The big task was over.

It was on March 23rd when, in the presence of the officers of the regiment gathered for the reunion at Ossining headquarters, the First Provisional's Memorial Boulder and its great bronze tablet were unveiled in Sleepy Hollow Cemetery. The inscription on the tablet is as follows:

THIS ROCK

**SYMBOLIZING THE REGIMENT WHICH RAISES IT
HEWN FROM BONTICOU CRAG ON THE LINE OF
THE CATSKILL AQUEDUCT BY THE STORMS OF AGES
WAS ERECTED HERE MARKING THE SPOT WHERE ONE OF
ITS FATHERLESS BOYS WAS BURIED BY THE REGIMENT
AT THE REQUEST OF HIS MOTHER, A HELPLESS WIDOW
AND**

**AS A MEMORIAL TO THOSE WHO MADE THE SUPREME
SACRIFICE FOR THEIR STATE IN SERVICE WITH THE**

FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT

**GUARDING THE 100 MILES OF THE WATER
SUPPLY OF THE CITY OF
NEW YORK FROM ASHOKAN TO HILLVIEW DURING**

THE GREAT WAR

1917

1918

1919

Then follow the name of Frank De Costa and the names and ranks of the other men of the regiment who died in the great work.

What of those men whose names stand imperishable on that great bronze tablet which, after a thousand years shall have passed, will still glow dusky red in the last rays of the setting sun across the ripples of the Tappan Zee? What of their lives and deaths? It is the task of the chronicler to answer in the remaining pages of this chapter.

Be it understood that there is no pretension of a full and complete record of the life of each man. After months of correspondence with home station and nearest surviving relatives the results seem meager enough. But there is one epitaph which applies to all and beside which personal history fades into insignificance. "He gave all that he had," is the ultimate tribute.

Of those who died or were killed in Aqueduct service, thirty were the victims of pneumonia resulting from Spanish influenza in the late fall and early winter of 1918. And of these one was a commissioned officer. So far as is possible the life history of these men before their entry into service is given. In some cases these obituaries are from their comrades, and are so indicated.

Lieut. Gomer J. Pritchard was stricken with influenza on the 4th of December, when the recurrent wave of the malady was raging on the line of the First Provisional, and died just ten days later in St. Luke's Hospital, Newburgh.

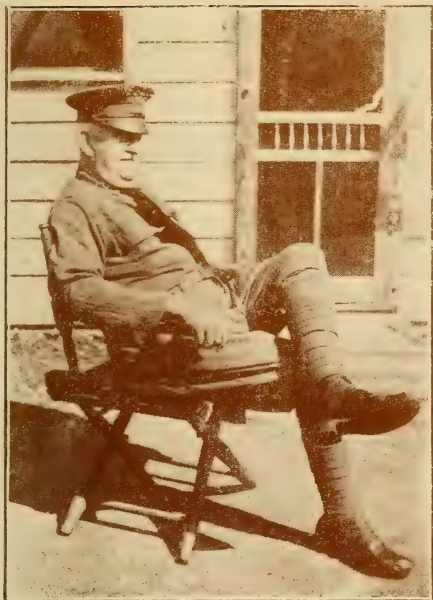
Lieut. Pritchard was born at South Gibson, Pa., May 6th, 1895. In 1912 he enlisted in the United States Navy and served for over three years. On Aug. 8th, 1917, he enlisted in the New York Guard and was detailed immediately for duty with the First Provisional Regiment.

After having served for over a year as sergeant in the company commanded by Capt. John W. Johnson, he was commissioned Lieutenant of the Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, and continued on active duty with the First Provisional Regiment until the time of his death.

Lieut. Pritchard is survived by his wife, who was Miss Lucile Lindsay, of Factoryville, Pa., his parents and four sisters and three brothers.

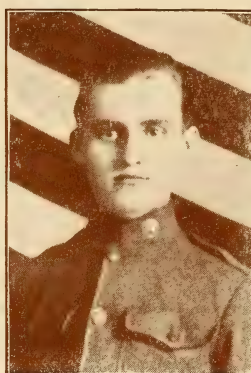
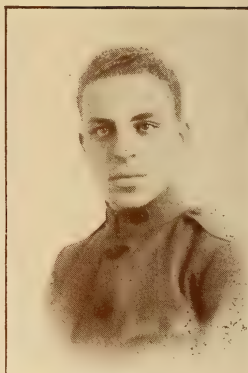
Lieut. Pritchard was the only commissioned officer of the First Provisional Regiment to answer the call of the Grim Reaper, and his loss was keenly felt, especially by the men with whom he had served so long and well.

IN MEMORIAM



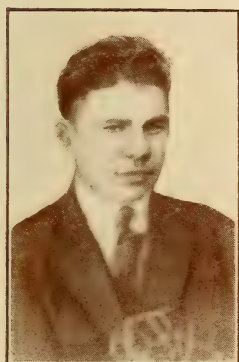
Upper left—Sergt. Lemuel Landpheir. Right—Corp. Antonio Pernice. Center—Private James F. Burke. Lower, left to right—Harry W. Reynolds, Percy J. Howell, Clayton Neville.

IN MEMORIAM



Top, left to right—George Nourse, Sgt. Charles T. Peebles, Benvenido Fajardo. Center—Melville Harrington, John B. Green. Lower—John L. Barton, Sgt. L. Owen Adamy, Chester Bennett.

IN MEMORIAM



Left column, top to bottom—George Albert Tate, Arthur Rourke, Harry Stephens. Center column—Raymond Gee, Thomas A. Stokes, Fred T. Higgins. Right column—Howell Roberts, James M. Waldron, Martin Ryan.



Left column, top to bottom—Private Leslie C. Fuller, Private Aloysius Kelly. Center column—Private Leslie Hellenock. Right column—Private Earl Wier, Private Frank De Costa.

Private Merville Harrington, Company H, 4th Infantry, attached to Provisional Supply Company, died in Field Hospital No. 2, Feb. 28th, 1919, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Harrington was born at Smithville, N. Y., January 6th, 1901, oldest son of Mr. and Mrs. Byron Harrington. He is survived by his mother, one sister and two brothers, his father having died during the time Private Harrington served with the First Provisional Regiment.

When Regimental Headquarters asked for volunteers to bring the Memorial Boulder from Bonticou Crag to Sleepy Hollow, Private Harrington was one of the first to answer. He worked with the rock gang until they had accomplished their purpose and the big boulder had found its last resting-place on the plot of the First Provisional Regiment in Sleepy Hollow Cemetery.

Private Harrington was one of a detail from the Supply Company sent to Peekskill to do some clean-up work there, when influenza, in one of its characteristic jumps, found this isolated group and sent them all into Field Hospital No. 2 and finally added Private Harrington's name to the long list already on the big Memorial Boulder.

Sergt. Lemuel Landphier, Company I, 1st Infantry, attached to Provisional Supply Company, died in Field Hospital No. 2 March 8th, 1919, of pneumonia following influenza.

"The General," as he was known to the men and officers of the First Provisional Regiment, was the oldest member of the New York Guard on active duty and was the last man to answer the final roll-call while in service with the First Provisional Regiment.

Sergt. Landphier was probably better known than any other non-commissioned officer on the line, and his death, coming at the close of the long period of service of the regiment, cast a deep gloom over Headquarters.

He first enlisted in Company E, 1st Regiment, Infantry, N. G., N. Y., May 28th, 1883, and served almost continuously until the time of his death. He came on the line of the First Provisional Sept. 8th, 1917, and served as company clerk of Provisional Company F, commanded by Capt. E. Madden Decker, until that company was returned to home station, Jan. 24th, 1919, when he was transferred to Regimental Headquarters to assist the regimental non-commissioned staff in the final disposition of regimental paper-work.

Sergeant Landphier is survived by one daughter, Miss Mabel L. Landphier, of Middletown, N. Y., his wife having died in July,

1918, while Sergeant Landphier was in service. Born Jan. 2nd, 1852, at Rhinebeck, New York, he served his State long and well, and his wish, so often expressed during his last days of service, that he might answer his last order from his Great Commander while engaged in active duty, was fulfilled when he heard "Taps" sound the evening of March 8th, 1919.

Private John D. Greene, Company L, 4th Infantry, of Elmira, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company G, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Oct. 5th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Greene was born in Savona, N. Y., in November, 1900. He made his home with Mr. and Mrs. Henry Smith, of 359 Division Street, Elmira, as his father died when he was four years old.

He graduated from grammar-school and spent two years in high school, after which he went to work for Roemmelt Brothers' Meat Market, where he remained until he was detailed for special duty on the New York Aqueduct, Sept. 3rd, 1918. He is survived by his mother and stepfather, Mr. and Mrs. Bert Rhinehart, and one sister, Miss Margaret Greene, all of Savona.

The remains were sent to Elmira, where Captain Sharf of Company I took charge. He was buried at Savona with full military honors. The deceased was a member of St. Luke's Congregational Church of Elmira, N. Y.

Private John L. Barton, Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, of Endicott, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company G, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Oct. 7th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Barton was born in the town of Union in 1898. He was formerly employed by the Endicott-Johnson Co., and was always found a willing worker.

He was a member of the Sons of Veterans at the time they were called into service. He enlisted with the rest of the company on Aug. 8th, 1917. During his enlistment I had the pleasure of being with him most of the time. He was a hard worker for the good of the company, always paying strict attention to his duties, whatever they were. He was well liked by his comrades and willing to do whatever he could for their good.

During the cold nights of last winter, when he was called for his turn of duty, he would respond with the same eagerness that made him the good soldier that he was. He became ill with Spanish influenza and was taken to St. Luke's Hospital, Newburgh,

on Sept. 30th. He was transferred to Base Hospital No. 1, where he died Oct. 6th. His body was taken to Endicott and buried with the highest honors that a soldier can be given, a military funeral.

Sergt. Charles T. Peebles, Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, of Binghamton, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company G, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, on Oct. 8th, 1918, of pneumonia following Spanish influenza.

Sergeant Peebles was born in Marathon in 1894. In his early life his people moved to Johnson City, where they resided at the time of his death. Sergeant Peebles first enlisted in F. A. Johnson Camp, Sons of Veterans Reserve, in Johnson City, and on the eighth day of August, 1917, enlisted in Battery C with the other members of the company and was placed on active service guarding New York City's water supply.

He was first stationed at headquarters camp at Nelsonville. While stationed there he won a promotion to corporal. So faithfully did he perform his duties that, after moving from Yonkers to Walkill, he was promoted to sergeant on Sept. 1st.

Previous to his enlistment he was employed by the Endicott-Johnson Company, shoe manufacturers of Johnson City, N. Y. By the death of Sergeant Peebles the company has lost one of its best comrades. He was faithful to his duties and ready to help his fellow-men. He is survived by his parents, four sisters and two brothers.

Corp. Clarence B. Miller, Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, of Binghamton, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company G, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Oct. 10th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Corporal Miller was thirty-two years old, having been born at Nichols, N. Y., in 1886. By trade he was a felt-maker and prior to his enlistment was employed by the Felter's Company, of Johnson City. He was sworn into service on the 8th of August, 1917, and during eleven months' tour of duty was located at Garrison and Indian Brook outposts of the Nelsonville Sector, where he proved faithful to all duties imposed during the long and severe winter. Corporal Miller was also at Yonkers, and upon the removal of the company to Walkill was given the responsibilities of a corporal, in which capacity he served until the time of his fatal illness.

For more than fourteen months Corporal Miller had faithfully performed the duties of a soldier in the service of his State and country. He was held in high esteem by his comrades, having proven himself a man of high ideals, gentlemanly habits, and of a quiet, unassuming nature which drew him close to the hearts of all who came into personal contact with him. His success as a soldier should be an encouragement and an inspiration to the comrades who remain to carry on the work in which he proved faithful until after a period of patient suffering he was called to his reward.

By SERGT. R. L. OUSTERHOUT

Sergt. L. Owen Adamy, Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, of Johnson City, detailed to Provisional Company G, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, on Oct. 12th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Sergeant Adamy was born May 4th, 1898, at Sayre, Pa., where he resided until ten years of age, when he moved with his family to Wilkes-Barre, Pa.

Having undergone a serious operation, he was obliged to lose a year's schooling, but this was no hindrance to his active mind, as in one year he made up the year's schooling and took up the advanced subjects with his class. It was here that he spent his boyhood and youth, surrounded by a happy family and pleasant companions. Upon entering high school he at once took the leadership in all public speaking and school dramas and was very popular with his schoolmates. It was at this time that he took up the study of music, at which he showed marked ability.

He graduated from Dorranceton high school at the age of seventeen. In 1916 the family moved to Union, N. Y., where he took a course in business at the Union-Endicott High School. He afterward entered the employ of the Endicott Forging Company. Having a desire to study law, he entered the office of Attorney Baxter, of Endicott, where he attended to the clerical work.

He earnestly wished to be in the military service at the beginning of the war, but on account of his physical condition knew that he would be fit only for limited service, so he joined Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, guarding New York's water supply, of which his brother Howard was a member. He was soon promoted to corporal, as company clerk, and after only nine months'

service was promoted to sergeant, in which he did his work faithfully.

The members of Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, mourn the loss of a comrade and brother very greatly. He leaves to mourn his loss, besides his father and mother, five brothers: Basil, at home; Ralf, of South Bethlehem; Harry, of Wilkes-Barre; Howard, a sergeant of Machine Gun Co., 4th Infantry; and Clifford, of the battle-ship *Illinois*. His body was laid to rest with full military honors in Riverside Cemetery, Endicott, N. Y.

Private Samuel Hallett, Troop G, 1st Cavalry, of Clark Mills, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Supply Company, died in the Peekskill Hospital, Oct. 13, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza. His nearest surviving relative is Hallet Hallett, a Syrian, of Clark Mills, N. Y.

Private James Waldron, Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, of Burlington, Pa., detailed to Provisional Company G, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Oct. 15th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Waldron was born at Towanda, Pa., in 1898. He was a great lover of outdoor life and spent his earlier days on a farm with his parents, of whom he was very fond.

He came to Endicott, N. Y., in 1915, and obtained employment with the Endicott-Johnson Co. and remained in their employ until Aug. 8th, 1917, when he enlisted as a member of our company. He was one of the most ambitious boys in the company, and when there was any extra work or anything out of the ordinary to do he was always one of the first to respond.

While stationed at Garrison he made the acquaintance of Miss Gladys Huffman, who later became his wife. It was only a short time after we came to our present camp that he, with several others, became ill and was taken to the hospital at Newburgh, where he died. His death was a great shock to all the company, as he was considered one of the most rugged members, but we know that he is now resting peacefully, as his life was like that little poem by Bryant:

"So live that when thy summons comes to join that innumerable caravan that moves to the pale realms of shade, where each shall take his chamber in the silent halls of death. Thou go not like the quarry-slave at night, scourged to his dungeon, but, sustained and soothed by an unfalter-

ing trust, approach thy grave as one who wraps the drapery of his couch about him and lies down to pleasant dreams."

Corp. Antonio Pernice, Machine Gun Company, 71st Infantry, of 224 East 118th Street, New York, detailed to Provisional Company D, died in Peekskill Hospital, Oct. 15th, 1918, of pneumonia following Spanish influenza.

Private Carl Baley, Company K, 4th Infantry, of Hornell, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company G, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Oct. 16th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Baley was born in Cansaraga, N. Y., in 1898. In his early life his parents moved to Eldred, Pa., where he passed his first school years. After completing his education he went to Hornell, N. Y., where he made his home with his sister. There he took up the carpenter's trade, of which he made a good success. Private Baley enlisted in Company K, 4th Infantry, on June 28th, 1918, after trying to enter Federal service and being rejected. He had an excellent record in the home company as well as after entering active service.

He was employed by the Elgar Manufacturing Co., of Hornell, N. Y., making cabins for ships. Private Baley left a host of friends in the service as well as at home. He is survived by his father, of Eldred, Pa., and one sister, of Hornell, N. Y.

Private Chester Bennett, Company A, 4th Infantry, of Swains, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company G, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Oct. 16th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Chester Bennett was born at Swains, N. Y., in the month of July, 1897. I made his acquaintance when he came, at the age of thirteen, to live with his aunt in Angelica and to study in the public school there.

He immediately became the center of an ever-widening circle of friends among the young people, and when he left school to become associated with his uncle in his dry-goods store, the people with whom he came in contact in business recognized his ability in buying and selling, and his patrons grew to appreciate his ready smile and his prevailing good-nature. After his uncle's death he assisted his aunt to carry on the business successfully and became an important member of the firm, of whom his loss is deeply felt.

When the organization of the Home Defense Company was undertaken in our town, he became interested and enlisted as a

charter member; later, when the company was mustered into the New York Guard as Company A of the 4th Infantry, he became one of the most efficient and reliable men of our unit. To the call for volunteers for active service, which was issued in the 4th Regiment the last week in August, he responded, although it required sacrifices for himself and those associated with him. During his two months' service with Company G he never failed in his duty in any respect, and was at all times found ready to obey all orders uncomplainingly and to the very best of his ability. His friends and comrades will cherish his memory as that of one of the truest of friends and finest of soldiers.

Private Malcolm A. Northrip, Company H, 1st Infantry, of Milton, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Machine Gun Company, died at Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Oct. 31st, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Northrip was the youngest son of Charles S. and Josephine Ludlow Northrip, born Oct. 29th, 1898, at Milton-on-the-Hudson. He graduated from Marlborough High School in 1916, and, having won a scholarship, entered Syracuse University in the fall of 1916, after having taken a summer course at Oneonta Normal School.

Early in 1917 he took an examination for entrance to West Point, but was unsuccessful.

While in Syracuse University, Private Northrip was a member of the University Chorus of three hundred voices. Later, he continued his musical studies in the Damrosch Institute of Musical Arts, where he was leading baritone soloist. While at the Damrosch Institute he learned to sing in Spanish, French, Italian and German.

As a member of Company H, Private Northrip volunteered for thirty days' service on the Aqueduct, and on Oct. 22nd was taken to Field Hospital No. 1 suffering from influenza.

Private Northrip was a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, where he gave his talented voice many times. He is survived by his wife, who was Miss Carola de Leon, of Cuba and New York.

Funeral services were held by his pastor, the Rev. Hart S. Fuller and the Rev. George Allen, friend of the family and former pastor, for whom he was named. Internment was made in the family plot in Cedar Hill Cemetery, with military honors.

Private Harry Lee Stephens, Company K, 4th Infantry, of Canisteo, N. Y., R. F. D. No. 1, detailed to Provisional Company

E, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, of pneumonia following influenza, on Nov. 24th, 1918. Private Stephens had been with the First Provisional only about ten days.

Private George Albert Tate, Company K, 4th Infantry, of Canisteo, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company E, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Nov. 26th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Tate was an orphan, and Company K, 4th Infantry, took charge of his body and gave him a military funeral, interment being made in a plot owned by that company in the cemetery at Hornell.

Private George Nourse, Company D, 4th Infantry, of Trumansburg, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company E, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Nov. 26th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Nourse was a son of Mr. and Mrs. A. W. Nourse, of Trumansburg, N. Y., R. F. D. 31. He was too young for Federal service and had been on Aqueduct duty only a short time when called upon to answer his Last Call of Duty.

Private Halsey Conway, Company C, 4th Infantry, of 126 Baker Street, Corning, detailed to Provisional Company E, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Nov. 26th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Percy J. Howell, Company K, 4th Infantry, of North Lansing, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company E, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Nov. 27th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Howell was a member of the detachment of 4th Infantry which came into the field Nov. 19th, and was the fourth member of Company K, 4th Infantry, to die while in the service with the First Provisional. He is survived by his parents, Mr. and Mrs. Louis J. Howell, of North Lansing, and two sisters.

Private Frank Baker, Company C, 4th Infantry, of 148 East Market Street, Corning, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company G, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Nov. 29th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Fred Higgins, Company D, 4th Infantry, of Groton, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Supply Company, died in Field Hospital No. 2, Ossining, Nov. 29th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Higgins was the first member of the First Provisional to die of influenza at Field Hospital No. 2.

Private Raymond Gee, Company D, 4th Infantry, of Trumansburg, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Supply Company, died at Field Hospital No. 2, Ossining, Nov. 30th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Frank Poole, Company B, 4th Infantry, of Friendship, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company E, died at Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Dec. 1st, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Leslie C. Fuller, Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, of Groton, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Supply Company, died at Field Hospital No. 2, Ossining, Dec. 2nd, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Fuller was born in Groton, January 27, 1900, and was the second son of Mr. and Mrs. Irving C. Fuller. Nearly his entire life was spent on the farm of his parents, three miles east of Groton. Private Fuller was president of the Senior Class of Groton High School at the time he volunteered for active service with the First Provisional Regiment, and was an active member of the First Congregational Church of Groton during the last two years of his life. He is survived by his mother and one brother, Sergt. H. V. Fuller.

Private Leslie Hellenack, Company M, 10th Infantry, of 227 Dewey Avenue, Herkimer, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company F, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Dec. 3rd, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

The following is taken from the *Evening Telegram* of Herkimer:

"It is a sad and stunning blow that has fallen upon Mr. and Mrs. Frank Hellenack, of Dewey Avenue, to-day in the notification that their son, Leslie, is dead. Even the fact of his illness was unknown to them, making it all the greater a shock when they were informed by telegraph

this morning, that after a week's illness with influenza the young guardsman had succumbed last night at Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh. He would have been twenty-one years of age next April. It had been his patriotic ambition to serve with the national forces of Uncle Sam, but his efforts to enlist in the regular army during the war were frustrated by failure to pass the eye test. He then joined the State Guard a year ago October 14th last and had been stationed in the vicinity of New York City to aid in the protection of public works.

"Besides his afflicted parents, he is survived by one brother, Roy. Leslie was a native Herkimer boy and previous to his enlistment had been employed by the Wagner Furniture Company. He was a member of St. Francis de Sales Church, and in the two brief years of his career he had proved himself well in worth and manhood. Consistent in his faith, loyal to every duty, whether of civil or military life, and with the heart of a fine young American inspiring him to do what lay in his power, he was of those that credit their family and community. A host of friends share in the sorrow of his demise and their earnest sympathy is with those bereaved in his passing."

Private John Lynch, Company B, 69th Infantry, of 2582 Eighth Avenue, New York, detailed to Provisional Company B, died in Peekskill Hospital, Dec. 3rd, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Frank De Costa, Company A, 69th Infantry, of 17 Beekman Place, New York, detailed to Provisional Company B, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Ossining, Dec. 3rd, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private De Costa was born in Providence, R. I., September 29, 1900. His first school-days were spent in the Sterling School, New York, but his father died during his childhood and his mother was compelled to place him in an orphanage. Later, the field secretary of the Charleston School at Ballston Lake, N. Y., became interested in Private De Costa and secured a membership in that school for him. He remained in this school until a short time before he enlisted in the New York Guard. Private De Costa served for nearly six months on the line with the First Provisional Regiment.

He is survived by his mother, and one sister, Miss Carrie De Costa, of West Long Branch, New Jersey.

Sergt. Charles Garland, Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, of 25 Lyon Street, Binghamton, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company G, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Dec. 4th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Sergt. Frank Avery, Machine Gun Company, 4th Infantry, of Vestal Center, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company G, died in Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Dec. 6th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Earl Weir, Company A, 4th Infantry, of Birdsall, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company E, died at Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh, Dec. 6th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Howell Roberts, Company F, 4th Infantry, of Warren Center, Pa., detailed to Provisional Company E, died in Ossining Hospital, Ossining, Dec. 28th, 1918, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Roberts was born at Warren Center, Pa., on Jan. 30th, 1902. He spent his boyhood here and was a member of the Senior Class of Warren Center High School at the time he enlisted in the New York Guard. While in school, Private Roberts developed an unusual ability in elocution, which always delighted his friends and audience.

He enlisted in the New York Guard at Owego, N. Y., on Nov. 12th, 1918, but as he was a resident of Pennsylvania, the consent of his parents was necessary. This they at first refused to give, but, seeing his whole heart set on going, they at last consented and helped him to go.

Funeral services were held at Neath Church, which he had always attended, his pastor, Rev. James Williams, officiating.

With his casket draped by the flag he loved, carried to his grave by loving schoolmates, and followed by sorrowing relatives and friends, he was buried at Neath, Pa., among his Welsh ancestors, having given his young life for his country and made the "supreme sacrifice" as truly as any who fell "over there."

Private Clayton Neville, Company G, 1st Infantry, of Pine Plains, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Machine Gun Company, died in Field Hospital No. 2, Ossining, Jan. 11th, 1919, of pneumonia following influenza.

Private Thomas A. Stokes, Company A, 69th Infantry, of 228 West 16th Street, New York, detailed to Provisional Company B, died in Peekskill Hospital, Peekskill, Jan. 2nd, 1918, as a result of being shot.

Private Stokes had been detailed to special duty with the prison detachment at Peekskill State Camp, and it was the accidental discharge of a rifle in the hands of another prison guard which caused his death. His was the first death in the First Provisional Regiment.

Private Aloysius Kelly, Company B, 69th Infantry, of 351 West 52nd Street, New York, detailed to Provisional Company M, died as a result of being struck by a New York Central train at Pleasantville, N. Y., March 9, 1918.

Private James Burke, Company G, 14th Infantry, of 118 William Street, Jamaica, Long Island, detailed to Provisional Company K, died March 11, 1918, of pneumonia.

Sergt. Bienvenido Fajardo, of the 8th Coast Artillery Corps, whose home was at 60 St. Nicholas Avenue, New York City, detailed to Provisional Company C, died in St. Luke's Hospital, Newburgh, Sept. 9th, 1918, as the result of a self-inflicted wound.

Private Arthur Rourke, Company H, 14th Infantry, of 666 Sixth Avenue, Brooklyn, detailed to Provisional Company M, died Oct. 5th, 1918, as the result of being shot.

Private Harry Reynolds, Company G, 1st Infantry, of Pine Plains, N. Y., detailed to Provisional Company H, died in Field Hospital No. 2, Ossining, Oct. 26th, 1918, of typhoid fever. Private Reynolds was taken sick while on the line of Provisional Company H and was removed to Field Hospital No. 1, Newburgh.

No. 1 was then overflowing with influenza patients and Private Reynolds was taken to Field Hospital No. 2, and was the first man to die in No. 2.

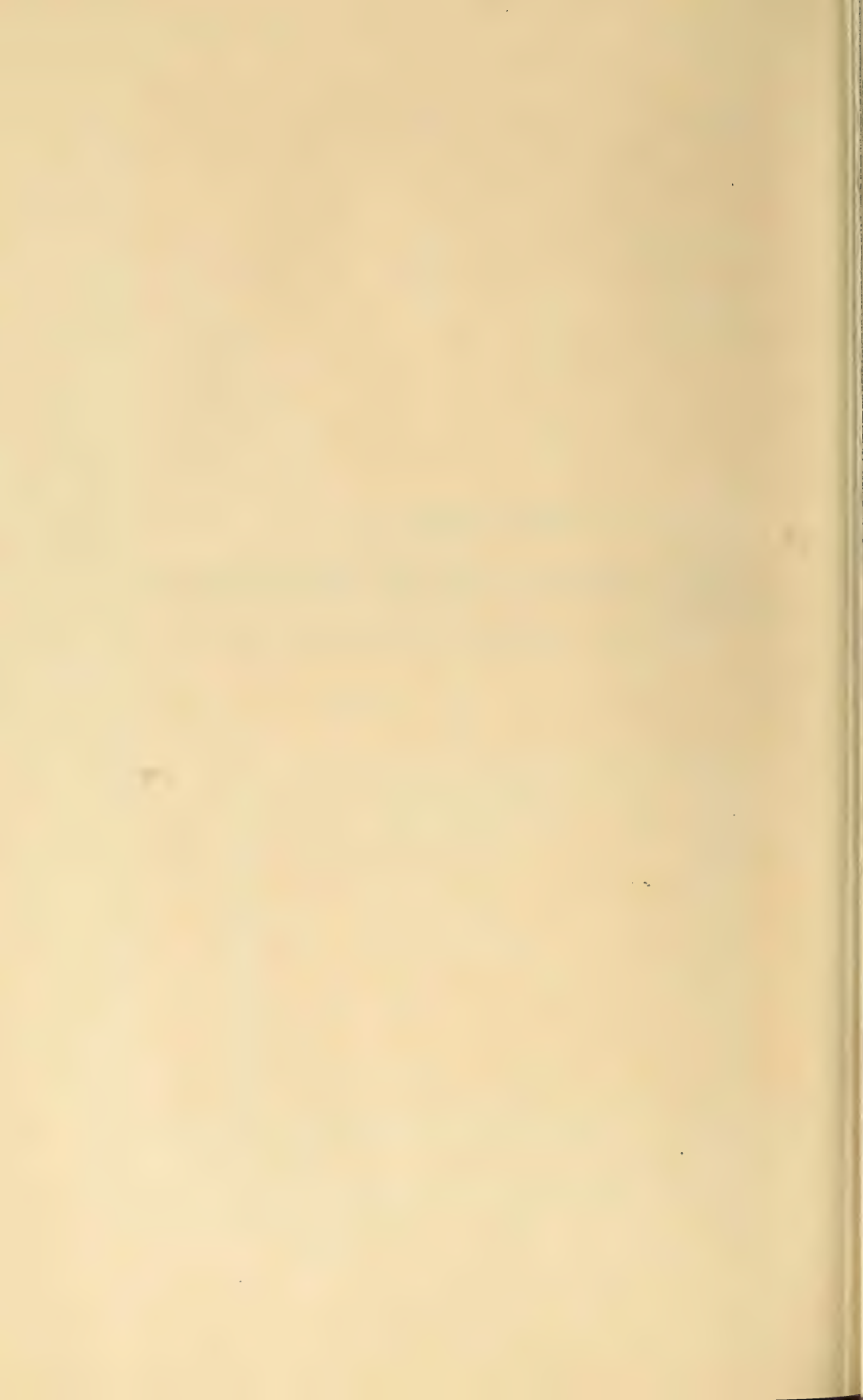
Sergt. Leroy W. Livett, 7th Company, 13th Coast Artillery Corps, of Ozone Park, Long Island, detailed to Provisional Company I, died Nov. 22nd, 1918, as the result of being shot.

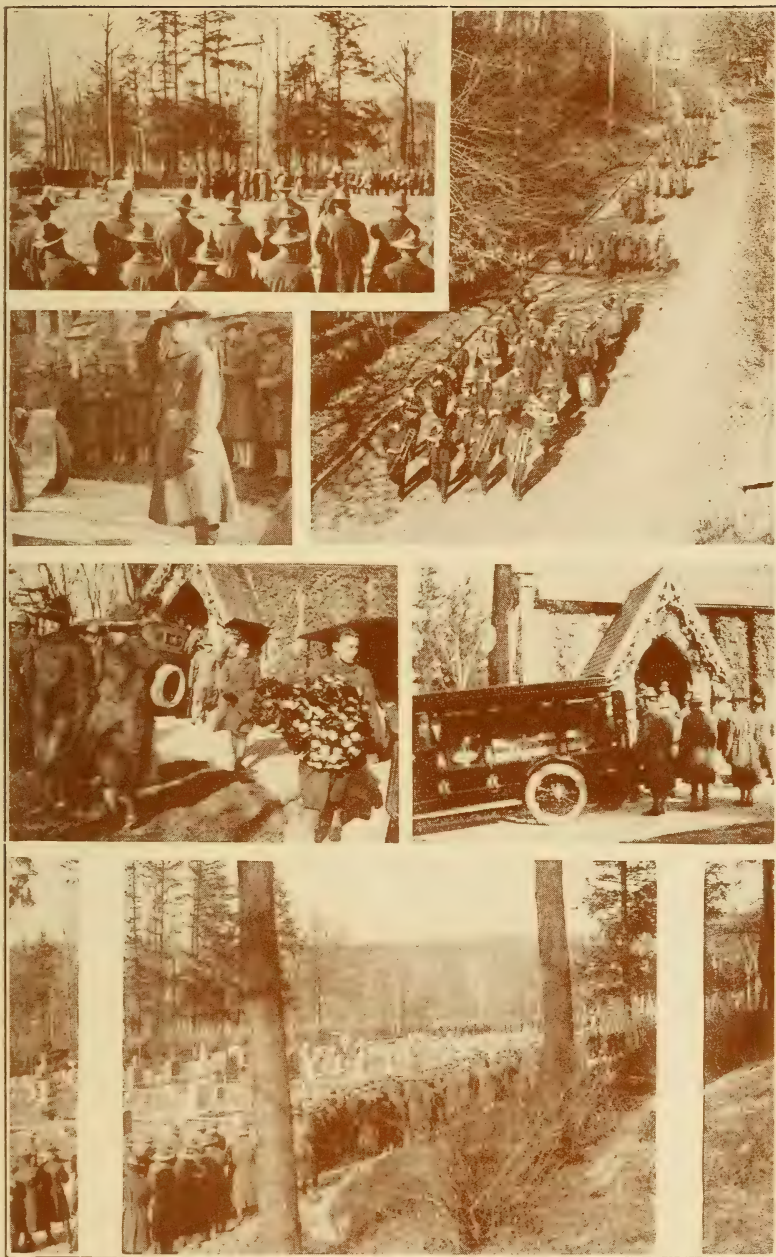
Cook Martin Ryan, Company E, 14th Infantry, of 1438 Fulton Street, Brooklyn, detailed to Provisional Company K, died May 16, 1918, as a result of Bright's disease.

APPENDIX I

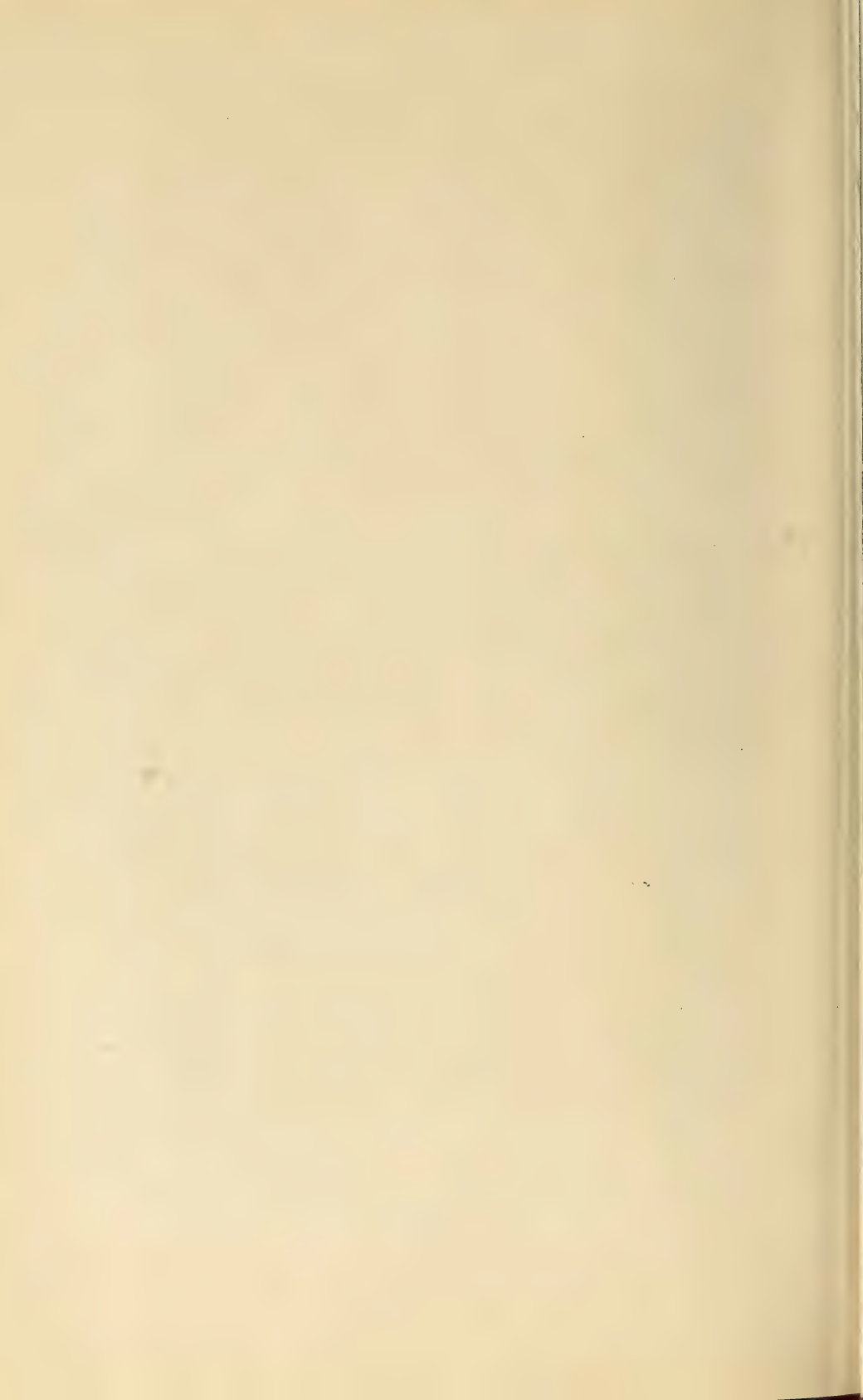
(1) Orders and Communications Showing Original and Subsequent Distribution of National Guard Troops on Aqueduct Prior to Taking Over by First Provisional Regiment.

(2) Table Showing the Sizes and Eras of the Great Aqueducts of Antiquity.





WHEN THE FIRST PROVISIONAL REGIMENT BURIED ITS DEAD IN PEACEFUL SLEEPY HOLLOW CEMETERY



COPY OF WESTERN UNION TELEGRAM

NEW YORK, February 3, 1917.

COMMANDING OFFICER, 1ST NEW YORK INFANTRY,
Binghamton, New York.

Your regiment, less Companies C, D and K, is assigned to secure that part of New York City water supply between Breakneck on east bank of Hudson, two miles north of Cold Spring, to Influent Chamber, Kensico, six miles west of Tarrytown. Your headquarters will be at Peekskill. One battalion of five companies, with headquarters in vicinity of Cortlandtville, two miles north of Peekskill village, will secure the sector Breakneck aforesaid to South Chamber, Turkey Mountain Siphon, length eighteen miles. Points requiring special attention: Drainage Chamber Hudson River Siphon at Storm King Station, Gauging Chamber, Breakneck; South Chamber, Foundry Brook Siphon; North Chamber, Indian Brook Siphon; South Chamber, Indian Brook Siphon; North Chamber, Sprout Brook Siphon; North Chamber, Peekskill Siphon; South Chamber, Peekskill Siphon; North Chamber, Hunter's Brook Siphon; South Chamber, Hunter's Brook Siphon; North Chamber, Turkey Mountain Siphon; South Chamber, Turkey Mountain Siphon. One Battalion headquarters near Pleasantville will secure the sector, Turkey Mountain Siphon exclusive, to Influent Chamber, Kensico inclusive. Points requiring special attention: Downtake Chamber, Croton Lake; Gauging Chamber, Croton Lake; North Chamber, Harlem Railway Siphon; South Chamber, Harlem Railway Siphon; Influent Chamber, Kensico. Service will require many small detached posts, making it necessary to billet details at convenient houses, which can probably be done at expense authorized. Hire of Ford car for regimental commander authorized at expense not to exceed ten dollars per day. You may draw on Camp Quartermaster, Peekskill, for not exceeding twelve mules, harness and three wagons. Confer with Sergeant Donovan, Aqueduct Police, at Valhalla, regarding details affecting sector. Make own disposition in accordance with above and move your companies by rail accordingly. Report by 'phone and in writing number and compositions of detached posts. Rigid discipline will be enforced at all times. It is thought that Aqueduct Police will be able to supply officers' mounts. Enlisted men not properly clothed for this service will remain at home station until suitably provided. References to Geological Survey Map West Point and Tarrytown quadrangles. Send officer or intelligent non-commissioned officer here in morning to copy map of Aqueduct route. Companies should move with at least two days' haversack rations, one of which should be kept in reserve.

REAGAN, Division Adjutant.

TELEGRAM

NEW YORK, February 3, 1917.

COMMANDING OFFICER, 10TH INFANTRY,
Albany, N. Y.

Your regiment is assigned to secure that part of the New York City water supply, as follows, reference to Geological Survey Map, one battalion with headquarters

near intersection of Aqueduct and New York, Ontario and Western Railroad west of High Falls, securing the sector from the Head Works at Olive Bridge, inclusive, to the Walkill Siphon, inclusive, length twenty-four miles. Points requiring special attention: Head Works at Olive Bridge and North Chamber, Esopus Siphon; South Chamber, Esopus Siphon; North Chamber, Tongore Siphon; South Chamber, Tongore Siphon; Gauging Chamber, Peak Tunnel; and Drainage Chamber, Rondout. One battalion with headquarters near Saint Elmo, four miles northeast of Walden, to secure the sector, Walkill Siphon, exclusive, to Storm King, inclusive, length twenty-two miles. Points requiring special attention: Gauging Chamber, Walkill; Blow-off Chamber, Walkill; North Chamber, Washington Square Siphon; South Chamber, Washington Square Siphon; and Storm King. One battalion, less Company I, with headquarters White Plains Armory, to secure the sector, Upper Effluent Chamber, Kensico, to the Harlem River at High Bridge. Points requiring special attention: Upper Effluent Chamber, Kensico; Lower Effluent Chamber, Kensico; Screen Chamber, Kensico; North Chamber, Kensico Siphon; South Chamber, Kensico Siphon; North Chamber, Elmsford Siphon; South Chamber, Elmsford Siphon; North Chamber, Fort Hill Siphon; South Chamber, Fort Hill Siphon; North Chamber, Bryn Mawr Siphon; Uptake Chamber, Hill View Siphon; Downtake Chamber, Hill View Siphon; Dunwoodie By-pass near Midland and Yonkers Avenues; Gate House, Jerome Park Reservoir; Pumping Station, Jerome Avenue and Mosholu Parkway. Company I and Machine Gun Company, headquarters, Flushing Armory or Rockville Centre, to secure the sector, Ridgewood Reservoir to Influent Pumping Station, Massapequa, inclusive. Pumping Station in this sector to have special attention. Service will require numerous small detached posts, making it necessary to billet details at convenient houses, which can probably be done at subsistence expense authorized. Hire of Ford car for regimental commander authorized at expense not to exceed ten dollars per day. Confer with Sergeant Fitzgerald, at Brown Station at Ashokan Reservoir, and Sergeant Harrel, at Yonkers Aqueduct Police, regarding details affecting your sector. Make your own dispositions of your companies in accordance with above and move them promptly by rail accordingly. Report by 'phone and in writing, number, location and composition of detached posts. Rigid discipline will be enforced at all times. Enlisted men not properly clothed for this service will remain at home station until suitably provided. Send officer or intelligent non-commissioned officer here to copy map of Aqueduct route. Companies should move with two days' haversack rations, one of which to be kept in reserve. Message, until Monday morning, to First Field Artillery, Armory. Acknowledge. Instructions have been wired direct to Glover and Dooley.

REAGAN, Division Adjutant.

COPY OF WESTERN UNION TELEGRAM

NEW YORK CITY, February 3, 1917.

MAJOR RALPH M. GLOVER, 10TH INFANTRY,
White Plains, N. Y.

You will be assigned, with three companies, to secure that part of the New York City water supply Catskill Aqueduct, in the sector Upper Effluent Chamber, Kensico, to the Harlem River and High Bridge. Points requiring special attention: Upper Effluent Chamber, Kensico; Lower Effluent Chamber, Kensico; Screen Chamber, Kensico; North Chamber, Kensico Siphon; South Chamber, Kensico Siphon; North Chamber, Elmsford Siphon; South Chamber, Elmsford

Siphon; North Chamber, Fort Hill Siphon; South Chamber, Fort Hill Siphon; North Chamber, Bryn Mawr Siphon; Uptake Chamber, Hillview Siphon; Down-take Chamber, Hillview Siphon; Dunwoodie By-pass, near Midland and Yonkers Avenues; Gate House, Jerome Park Reservoir; Pumping Station, Jerome Avenue and Mosholu Parkway. Service will require numerous small detached posts, making it necessary to billet details at convenient houses, which can probably be done at subsistence expense authorized regimental commander. Confer with Sergeant Harrel, Aqueduct Police at Yonkers, regarding details affecting your sector. Report by wire and in writing, number, location and composition of detached posts. Enlisted men not properly clothed for this service will remain at home station until suitably provided. Send officer or intelligent non-com. here to copy map. Companies should move with two days' haversack rations, one of which to be kept in reserve. Advise regimental headquarters of dispositions made. Acknowledge.

REAGAN, Adjutant.

COPY OF WESTERN UNION TELEGRAM

NEW YORK, February 3, 1917.

CAPTAIN T. J. DOOLEY, 10TH INFANTRY,
Flushing, N. Y.

Your company, with Machine Gun Company, is assigned to secure that part of New York City water supply in sector Ridgewood Reservoir to Infiltration Pumping Station, Massapequa, inclusive. All pumping stations in this sector to have special attention. Service will require numerous small detached posts, making it necessary to billet details at convenient houses, which can probably be done at subsistence authorized regimental commander. Make your own dispositions in accordance with above and move promptly. Report by wire and in writing, location and composition of detached posts. Enlisted men not properly clothed for this service will remain at home station until suitably provided. Companies should move with two days' haversack rations, one of which to be kept in reserve. Acknowledge.

REAGAN, Division Adjutant.

COPY OF WESTERN UNION TELEGRAM

February 15th, 1917.

COMMANDING OFFICER, 1ST NEW YORK INFANTRY,
Peekskill, N. Y.

Detach at once two companies of your command to report to Commanding Officer, 10th Infantry, for duty on sector Olive Bridge-Storm King. Report immediately by wire to Commanding Officer, 10th Infantry, New Paltz. Companies to be detached in accordance herewith. Commanding Officer 10th Infantry will advise destination, etc. Make necessary dispositions to cover sectors vacated by detached companies and report to these headquarters. Report time of departure and designations of companies. Acknowledge.

REAGAN, Major, Adjutant.

COPY OF WESTERN UNION TELEGRAM

February 15th, 1917.

COMMANDING OFFICER, 10TH NEW YORK INFANTRY,
New Paltz, N. Y.

You will detach, without delay, one company of your regiment, to proceed to Poughkeepsie, and two companies to proceed to Albany, for the purpose of providing adequate protection to Hudson River bridges at those points. The officers in command of these detachments will confer with the mayors of the cities named as to the measures to be taken. The movements and dispositions will be made with the greatest possible secrecy. Suggest that two companies of the 1st Battalion be sent to Albany and Company K to Poughkeepsie, but choice of companies left to your judgment. Make temporary disposition of remaining troops to cover gaps until arrival of other companies, and report final disposition made of such companies. The companies detached in accordance with the foregoing will close tour of service in aid of civil authorities of the City of New York, and separate pay-rolls and items of subsequent expense will be kept for the duty herein ordered. Morning reports hereafter will show special duty of detached companies. Orders now in force with regard to subsistence, etc., will apply so far as applicable. Commanding Officer, 1st Infantry, and Commanding Officer, 3rd Battalion, your regiment will report to you for instructions as to destination, etc., of companies to replace those withdrawn. These companies will be adequately clothed and equipped with fleece-lined great-coats for twenty per cent. of strength. Advise time of departure and the strength of companies detached in accordance with the foregoing, and the Commanding Officers of these detachments will report by telegram to you and to these headquarters time of arrival. Acknowledge.

REAGAN, Major, Adjutant.

April 25th, 1917.

From: The Assistant to the Adjutant-General.
To: Commanding General, Eastern Department.
Subject: Detachments of State Troops on Duty.

1. By the direction of the Adjutant-General I have to inform you that detachments of the 1st and 10th Regiments, N. Y. Infantry, N. G., are now on duty as follows:

First Infantry:

Det. Co. A.....At Utica and Trenton Falls Electric Power Plant.
Dets. Cos. A and B.....At Salmon River Power Plant, Altman, Oswego Co., N. Y.
Det. Co. B.....At State Fair Grounds, Syracuse, N. Y., guarding grounds
and Solway Power Plant and sub-stations.
Co. C.....At Watertown, N. Y., guarding railway bridges and
munitions factories.
Co. E.On duty with 10th Infantry, western sector New York
water supply system.
Det. Co. L.....Western approaches to U. S. Naval Station at Iona
Island.
Det. Co. M.....At Oswego, N. Y., guarding power dam.

Tenth Infantry:

Hdqrts. Co. }
 Supply Co. } On western sector, New York water supply system.
 Cos. A, C, D, E and H }
 Det. Co. B. Capitol and Education Building, Albany, N. Y.
 Co. I and M. G. Co. Rockville Center, L. I., water supply.

2. These detachments are all guarding important public utilities; and this information is given for reference in case these organizations should be called into Federal service.

C. H. HITCHCOCK, Colonel,
 Assistant to the Adjutant-General.

HEADQUARTERS
 TWENTY-THIRD REGIMENT, N. Y. INF., N. G.
 BROOKLYN, N. Y.

May 5, 1917.

SPECIAL ORDERS
 No. 48

1. The Commanding Officer, 1st Battalion, 23rd New York Infantry, N. G., is directed to reassign his troops, covering Pleasantville sector, New York City water supply, as follows:

BATTALION HEADQUARTERS AT PLEASANTVILLE, N. Y.

Company B, with headquarters at Section No. 2, office near Croton Lake, Downtake Chamber, covering:

CUT AND COVER

Hunter's Brook Tunnel to Turkey Mountain Siphon (1.1 miles)

| | | | |
|-------------|--|------------------|--------------|
| Four Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pvts.</i> |
| | One Connection Chamber } Three Free-draining Culverts } | 3 | 16 |

Turkey Mountain Siphon

| | | | |
|--------------|--|---|----|
| Three Posts: | | | |
| | North Siphon Chamber } Blow-off Chamber } | 2 | 10 |
| | South Siphon Chamber } | | |

Turkey Mountain Tunnel to Croton Lake

| | | | |
|------------|---|---|---|
| Two Posts: | | | |
| | Blow-off to Croton Lake } Downtake Chamber } | 2 | 9 |

Troop B, 1st Squadron, 1st New York Cavalry, N. G., with headquarters one and one-half miles west of Kitchawan Station, near Aqueduct, covering:

CUT AND COVER

Uptake Shaft Croton Lake Siphon to Croton Tunnel

| | | | |
|--------------|--|------------------|--------------|
| Three Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pvts.</i> |
| | Uptake Shaft } Boat-hole } One Free-draining Culvert } | 2 | 11 |
| | Gauging Chamber and Culvert } | | |

Croton Tunnel to Chadeayne Tunnel

| | | | |
|-----------|--------------------------------|------------------|-------------|
| One Post: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | One Free-draining Culvert..... | 1 | 4 |

Company C, with headquarters in barn at Millwood Road and Aqueduct covering:

CUT AND COVER

Chadeayne Tunnel to Putnam Siphon

| | | | |
|--------------|-----------------------------------|------------------|-------------|
| Eight Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | Eight Free-draining Culverts..... | 4 | 32 |

Company D, with headquarters at Mud Hill Road in engineer's house on Aqueduct property, covering:

PUTNAM SIPHON

| | | | |
|--------------|---|------------------|-------------|
| Three Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | Northerly Boat-hole } One Manhole } Southerly Boat-hole } | 2 | 10 |

CUT AND COVER

Between Putnam Siphon and Millwood Tunnel

| | | | |
|------------|--|------------------|-------------|
| Two Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | Two Free-draining Culverts (.8 of a mile)..... | 2 | 7 |

CUT AND COVER

Between Millwood Tunnel and Scarles Tunnel

| | | | |
|-----------|--------------------------------|------------------|-------------|
| One Post: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | One Free-draining Culvert..... | 1 | 6 |

Company A, with headquarters in engineer's office at Pleasantville, N. Y., near Aqueduct, covering:

HARLEM RAILROAD SIPHON

| | | | |
|--------------|--|------------------|-------------|
| Three Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | North Siphon-house } Two Culverts } South Siphon-house } | 2 | 9 |

CUT AND COVER

Between Harlem R. R. Tunnel and Pleasantville Tunnel

| | | | |
|-----------|--|------------------|-------------|
| One Post: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | One Siphon (and Manhole to be covered by patrolling) | 1 | 4 |

Pleasantville Tunnel to Reynolds Hill Tunnel (one and one-half miles long, consisting of three free-draining culverts, one measuring chamber and coagulating plant):

| | | | |
|--------------|---|------------------|-------------|
| Three Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | One Free-draining Culvert and Coagulating Plant. | 1 | 4 |
| | Two Southerly Culverts (One including measuring chamber)..... | 2 | 8 |

CUT AND COVER

Kensico Lake to Reynolds Hill Tunnel

| | | | |
|-----------|---|------------------|-------------|
| One Post: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | Kensico Influent Chamber | } | 5 |
| | One Manhole south of Reynolds Hill Tunnel to be covered by patrolling | | |

The following fixed posts on New Croton Aqueduct will be covered as follows:

| | | |
|--|---|---|
| By Company C, 23rd N. Y. Inf., N. G.—Shaft No. 2. | 1 | 6 |
| By Troop B, 1st Squadron, 1st New York Cav., N. G. | | |

| | | | |
|-------------|-----------------------------------|------------------|-------------|
| Four Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | Shaft No. 1..... | 1 | 5 |
| | Each End of Dam..... | 2 | 9 |
| | New Croton Lake Screen-house..... | 1 | 3 |

Each of the above-named siphon-houses, culverts and blow-offs will be protected by individual fixed posts, the strengths of posts given being the minimum protection agreed upon by the Board of Water Supply, New York City, as being necessary. In addition to the posts mentioned, there is a considerable number of manholes and other entrances into the Aqueduct in addition to the siphon culverts. These are not so important, but will be covered by patrolling.

In all cases the detachments will be camped at the posts named and you are directed to conform to the figures given as nearly as possible. When the companies are strengthened by accession of recruits, strict conformity will be required.

By order of COLONEL NORTON:

Captain, Acting Adjutant.

2. The Commanding Officer, 2nd Battalion, 23rd New York Infantry, N. G., will reassign his troops as follows:

BATTALION HEADQUARTERS AT PEEKSKILL DIVISION OFFICE,
CORTLANDTVILLE, N. Y.

Machine Gun Company, with headquarters at house, foot of Breakneck Valley, Hudson River Division, covering:

Hudson River to Breakneck Tunnel

| | | | |
|------------|----------------------------|------------------|-------------|
| Two Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | East Shaft at Hudson River | } | 10 |
| | Uptake Shaft on the Hill | | |

Company F, with headquarters on the Aqueduct, near North Chamber Foundry Brook Siphon, covering:

CUT AND COVER

Breakneck Tunnel to Bullhill Tunnel (2,500 feet)

| | | | |
|------------|---------------------------------|------------------|-------------|
| Two Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| | Two Free-draining Culverts..... | 2 | 8 |

CUT AND COVER

Between Bullhill Tunnel and Foundry Brook Siphon (600 feet). Covered by patrolling.

FOUNDRY BROOK SIPHON

| Five Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pvts.</i> |
|-----------------------|---------|------------------|--------------|
| North Siphon Chamber | } | 5 | 20 |
| Free-draining Culvert | | | |
| Drainage-pipe Culvert | | | |
| Brook Crossing | | | |
| South Siphon Chamber | } | | |

CUT AND COVER

Foundry Brook Siphon to Mekeel Tunnel (1 mile)

| Three Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pvts.</i> |
|-----------------------------------|--|------------------|--------------|
| Three Free-draining Culverts..... | | 3 | 12 |

Company E, with headquarters at Office, north end of Garrison Tunnel, covering:

CUT AND COVER

Mekeel Tunnel to Indian Brook Siphon (4,000 feet)

| Two Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pvts.</i> |
|---------------------------------|--|------------------|--------------|
| Two Free-draining Culverts..... | | 2 | 8 |
| Indian Brook Siphon (600 feet) | | | |

| Three Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pvts.</i> |
|-----------------------------|---------|------------------|--------------|
| North Siphon Chamber | } | 2 | 10 |
| Brook Crossing (vulnerable) | | | |
| South Siphon Chamber | | | |

CUT AND COVER

Indian Brook Siphon to Garrison Tunnel (2½ miles)

| Three Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pvts.</i> |
|-----------------------------------|--|------------------|--------------|
| Three Free-draining Culverts..... | | 3 | 12 |

Company H, with headquarters at Peekskill Division Office, Cortlandtville, N. Y., covering:

CUT AND COVER

Garrison Tunnel to Sprout Brook Siphon (3,300 feet)

One manhole to be covered by patrolling.

Sprout Brook Siphon (2,200 feet)

| Three Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pvts.</i> |
|----------------------|---------|------------------|--------------|
| North Siphon Chamber | } | 2 | 10 |
| Blow-off Chamber | | | |
| South Siphon Chamber | | | |

CUT AND COVER

Cathill Siphon to Peekskill Siphon (¾ mile)

| Four Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pvts.</i> |
|----------------------------------|--|------------------|--------------|
| Four Free-draining Culverts..... | | 4 | 16 |

PEEKSKILL SIPHON

(About 1¼ miles)

| Four Posts: | | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pvts.</i> |
|--|---------|------------------|--------------|
| North Siphon Chamber | } | 4 | 16 |
| Blow-off Chamber at Peekskill Creek | | | |
| Air-valve and Blow-off Chamber (near Peekskill Division House) | | | |
| South Siphon Chamber | | | |

Troop D, 1st Squadron, 1st New York Cavalry, N. G., with headquarters near cross-roads at Jacob's Hill, covering:

CUT AND COVER

Peekskill Siphon to Hunter's Brook Siphon (5 miles—16 Free-draining Culverts)
Six Posts: *Non-coms. Pts.*

| | | |
|--|---|----|
| Six Northerly Culverts..... | 4 | 24 |
| (Remaining ten culverts covered by Co. G.) | | |

Company G, with headquarters at Section No. 1, office on Peekskill Cut and Cover, covering:

CUT AND COVER

Peekskill Siphon to Hunter's Brook Siphon (5 miles—16 Free-draining Culverts)

| | | |
|--|------------------|-------------|
| Ten Posts: | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| Ten Southerly Culverts..... | 5 | 40 |
| (Six northerly culverts covered by Troop D, 1st Squadron, 1st New York Cavalry, N. G.) | | |

Hunter's Brook Siphon

| | | |
|----------------------------------|------------------|-------------|
| Three Posts: | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pts.</i> |
| North Siphon Chamber | | |
| One Blow-off Chamber and Manhole | 2 | 10 |
| South Siphon Chamber | | |

In addition to the fixed posts assigned to Troop D, 1st Squadron, 1st New York Cavalry, N. G., the Cut and Cover, Peekskill Siphon to Hunter's Brook Siphon (5 miles) will be covered by mounted patrols at one-half hour intervals during daylight hours.

Each of the above-named siphon-houses, culverts and blow-offs will be protected by individual fixed posts, the strengths of posts given being the minimum protection agreed upon by the Board of Water Supply, New York City, as being necessary. In addition to the posts mentioned, there is a considerable number of manholes and other entrances into the Aqueduct in addition to the siphon culverts. These are not so important, but will be covered by patrolling.

In all cases the detachments will be camped at the posts named and you are directed to conform to the figures given as nearly as possible. When the companies are strengthened by accession of recruits, strict conformity will be required.

By Order of COLONEL NORTON:

Captain, Adjutant.

5. The Commanding Officer, 3rd Battalion, 23rd New York Infantry, N. G., is directed to reassign his troops covering Kensico Sector, New York City water supply, as follows:

BATTALION HEADQUARTERS AT TARRYTOWN ROAD AND ELMSFORD SIPHON,
ELMSFORD, N. Y.

Company K, with headquarters at Kensico Dam, covering:

KENSICO DAM

| | | |
|--------------------------------|-----------------|-----------------------|
| Seven Posts: | <i>Officers</i> | <i>Non-coms. Pts.</i> |
| Weir (Spillway)..... | | 3 |
| Waste Conduit (Upper End)..... | | 3 |
| Waste Conduit (Lower End)..... | | 3 |

Seven Posts:—*Continued**Officers Non-coms. Pts.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|---|---|----|
| Lower Gate Chamber..... | | | 3 |
| East End of Dam..... | | | 6 |
| West End of Dam..... | | | 6 |
| Middle of Dam..... | | | 3 |
| Reserve..... | | | 9 |
| Total..... | 1 | 4 | 36 |

Four Posts:

Kensico Upper Effluent
 Kensico Lower Effluent
 Screen Chamber
 Measuring Chamber
 Manhole
 Boat-hole

Three Posts:

Non-coms. Pts.

| | | | | |
|------------------------------|---|-------|---|----|
| North Kensico Siphon Chamber | } | | 2 | 10 |
| Manhole | | | | |
| South Kensico Siphon Chamber | | | | |

Company L, with headquarters at Elmsford Siphon, covering:

CUT AND COVER

East View Tunnel to Elmsford Siphon

Seven Posts:

Non-coms. Pts.

| | | |
|-----------------------------------|---|----|
| Seven Free-draining Culverts..... | 3 | 27 |
|-----------------------------------|---|----|

Four Posts:

Non-coms. Pts.

| | | | | |
|-------------------------------|---|-------|---|---|
| North Elmsford Siphon Chamber | } | | 2 | 8 |
| Manhole | | | | |
| Culvert | | | | |
| South Elmsford Siphon Chamber | | | | |

CUT AND COVER

Between North Elmsford Tunnel and South Elmsford Tunnel

One Post:

Non-coms. Pts.

| | | |
|------------------|---|---|
| One Culvert..... | 1 | 6 |
|------------------|---|---|

Troop C, 1st New York Cavalry, with headquarters near Aqueduct on Hart's Corner, Ardsley Road, covering:

ARDSLEY CUT AND COVER

Elmsford Tunnel and Platt Avenue Siphon (3 miles long)

Ten Posts:

Non-coms. Pts.

| | | |
|---------------------------------|---|----|
| Ten Free-draining Culverts..... | 4 | 36 |
|---------------------------------|---|----|

Company I, with headquarters at Ashford Hill, Ardsley, N. Y., covering:

PLATT AVENUE SIPHON

Two Posts, including:

Non-coms. Pts.

| | | | | |
|-----------|---|-------|---|---|
| Culvert | } | | 2 | 6 |
| Boat-hole | | | | |
| Manhole | | | | |

ARDSLEY CUT AND COVER

Between Platt Avenue Siphon and Fort Hill Siphon (1 mile long)

| | | | |
|-----------|--------------------------------|------------------------|---|
| One Post: | | <i>Non-coms. Pmts.</i> | |
| | One Free-draining Culvert..... | 1 | 3 |

FORT HILL SIPHON

| | | | |
|--------------|-----------------------------|------------------------|----|
| Three Posts: | | <i>Non-coms. Pmts.</i> | |
| | Two Siphon-houses } | 2 | 10 |
| | One Free-draining Culvert } | | |

GRASSY SPRAIN CUT AND COVER

From Fort Hill to Bryn Mawr (2 miles long)
(Consisting of Seven Free-draining Culverts)

| | | | |
|------------|--------------------------------|------------------------|---|
| Two Posts: | | <i>Non-coms. Pmts.</i> | |
| | Two Northerly Culverts..... | 1 | 7 |
| | (Remaining 5 covered by Co. M) | | |

Company M, with headquarters at Bryn Mawr, on Aqueduct property near Yonkers, Tuckahoe Road, covering:

GRASSY SPRAIN CUT AND COVER

From Fort Hill to Bryn Mawr (2 miles long)
(Consisting of Seven Free-draining Culverts)

| | | | |
|-------------|---------------------------------|------------------------|----|
| Five Posts: | | <i>Non-coms. Pmts.</i> | |
| | Five Southerly Culverts..... | 2 | 20 |
| | (Two Culverts covered by Co. I) | | |

NORTH BRYN MAWR SIPHON
(1 mile)

| | | | |
|-------------|--------------------------------------|------------------------|----|
| Five Posts: | | <i>Non-coms. Pmts.</i> | |
| | North Bryn Mawr Siphon-house } | 3 | 17 |
| | South Bryn Mawr Siphon-house } | | |
| | Two Culverts } | | |
| | Blow-off } | | |

HILLVIEW RESERVOIR
Uptake and Downtake

| | | | |
|---|------------------------|---|----|
| Two Posts and roadway patrolling..... | <i>Non-coms. Pmts.</i> | 2 | 12 |
| The following fixed posts on Croton Aqueduct will be covered, as follows: | | | |

By Troop C, 1st New York Cavalry

| | | | |
|-----------|--|------------------------|---|
| One Post: | | <i>Non-coms. Pmts.</i> | |
| | Pocantico Hills Blow-off (Aqueduct No. 9)..... | 1 | 3 |

By Company I, 23rd New York Infantry, N. G.

| | | | |
|-----------|--|------------------------|---|
| One Post: | | <i>Non-coms. Pmts.</i> | |
| | Ardsley Shaft-house and Blow-off on Cut and Cover at Sawmill River Road (Aqueduct No. 14).... | 1 | 6 |

By Company M, 23rd New York Infantry, N. G.

| | | | |
|-----------|--|--|--|
| One Post: | Dunwoodie Chlorinating Plant (Aqueduct No. 18) | | |
|-----------|--|--|--|

It is contemplated that each of the above-mentioned siphon-houses, culverts and blow-offs will be protected by individual fixed posts, the figures given embracing the totals in different sections.

The strengths of the posts as given in this order are those agreed upon by the Board of Water Supply as being the minimum protection necessary, and you are directed to conform thereto as nearly as possible. When companies are strengthened by accession of recruits, strict conformity will be required.

By Order of COLONEL NORTON:
Captain, Acting Adjutant.

SPECIAL ORDERS, No. 49, 23RD INFANTRY, N. Y. N. G. May 6th, 1917.

1. The Commanding Officer, 2nd Battalion, 47th New York Infantry, N. G., is directed to reassign his troops, as follows:

BATTALION HEADQUARTERS AT ST. ELMO, NEW YORK

Company H, with headquarters at Section 5, office Walkill Division, covering:

SECTION OF CUT AND COVER

Washington Square Siphon—Walkill Pressure Tunnel

| Five Posts: | | Non-coms. | Pvts. |
|--|---|-----------|-------|
| Shaft No. 6 and Boat-hole at South End Walkill Pressure Tunnel..... | 1 | | 5 |
| Gauging Chamber at Ireland's Corner—Modena Road-crossing..... | 1 | | 4 |
| Walkill Blow-off (1½ miles long) | | | |
| At Aqueduct Entrance..... | 1 | | 5 |
| At River Entrance..... | 1 | | 5 |
| (Manholes to be covered by patrolling) (No importance attached to culverts) | | | |
| Free-draining Culvert No. 72..... | 1 | | 4 |

Company G, with headquarters at St. Elmo Brook Culvert No. 81, covering:

SECTION OF CUT AND COVER

Washington Square Siphon—Walkill Pressure Tunnel

| Four Posts: | | Non-coms. | Pvts. |
|--------------------------------|---|-----------|-------|
| No. 75 at Woolsey's Brook..... | 1 | | 4 |
| No. 81 at St. Elmo Brook..... | 1 | | 5 |
| No. 87 at Beattie's Brook..... | 1 | | 5 |
| No. 90 at Stony Brook..... | 2 | | 6 |

Company F, with headquarters at Gillick's Brook Culvert No. 102, covering:

SECTION OF CUT AND COVER

Washington Square Siphon—Walkill Pressure Tunnel

| Five Posts. | Four Free-draining Culverts: | | Non-coms. | Pvts. |
|-------------|---------------------------------|--|-----------|-------|
| | No. 101..... | | 1 | 6 |
| | No. 102 at Gillick's Brook..... | | 2 | 6 |
| | No. 104..... | | 1 | 5 |
| | No. 108 at Miller's Brook..... | | 1 | 5 |

Company E, with headquarters near South Chamber, Washington Square Siphon, covering:

Washington Square Siphon

| Two Posts: | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pnts.</i> |
|---------------------------|------------------|--------------|
| Blow-off No. 107..... | 1 | 6 |
| South Siphon Chamber..... | 1 | 5 |

CUT AND COVER

Moodna Tunnel to Washington Square Siphon

| Two Posts: | <i>Non-coms.</i> | <i>Pnts.</i> |
|---|------------------|--------------|
| Downtake (Shaft No. 1) and Boat-hole | 2 | 10 |
| Free-draining Culvert No. 109 and Manhole | | |
| (Explanatory: 100 feet from Post No. 1 to | | |
| Post No. 2; 6,400 feet from Post No. 2 to | | |
| Washington Square Siphon) | | |

Detachment of Company E, 47th New York Infantry, N. G., now at access shaft, west bank of Hudson River, will be relieved by detachment Machine Gun Company, 23rd Infantry, N. Y. N. G.

Troop A, 1st Squadron, 1st New York Cavalry, N. G., with headquarters at St. Elmo, N. Y., camped on Aqueduct, will establish a post of two non-commissioned officers and fourteen privates on Aqueduct just south of Washington Square-Little Britain Road.

The Cavalry will patrol the Aqueduct from Shaft No. 1, Moodna Tunnel, to South Chamber, Washington Square Siphon, and from North Chamber, Washington Square Siphon, to Shaft No. 6, Walkill Pressure Tunnel, at one-half hour intervals from 6 A.M. to 7 P.M.

Each of the above-mentioned siphon-houses, culverts and blow-offs will be protected by individual fixed posts, the strength of posts given being the minimum protection agreed upon by the Board of Water Supply, City of New York, as being necessary. In addition to the posts mentioned, there is a considerable number of manholes and other entrances into the Aqueduct in addition to the siphon culverts. These are not so important, but will be covered by patrolling, as previously indicated, during the daylight hours. At night small infantry patrols will cover them.

In all cases the detachments will camp at the posts named and you are directed to conform to the figures given as nearly as possible. When the companies are strengthened by accession of recruits, strict conformity will be required.

By Order of COLONEL NORTON:

Captain, Adjutant.

NATIONAL GUARD ORGANIZATIONS NOT IN FEDERAL SERVICE, BUT ON DUTY
GUARDING PROPERTY

July 10, 1917.

| <i>Organization</i> | <i>Station</i> |
|----------------------------|-------------------------|
| Hdqtrs. 10th Infantry..... | New Paltz |
| Hdqtrs. Co..... | New Paltz |
| Supply Co..... | New Paltz |
| Machine Gun Co..... | Rockville Center, L. I. |
| Co. A..... | Brown's Station |
| Co. C..... | High Falls |
| Co. D..... | Atwood |
| Co. I..... | Rockville Center, L. I. |

First Infantry

Co. E.....Not stated

NOTE.—Other companies of the 1st and 10th Regiments on duty guarding the New York City Aqueduct were relieved from that duty and returned to their home stations when troops in U. S. service were placed on duty by the Commanding General, Eastern Department, in April and May, 1917.

COPY OF LETTER

Sept. 21, 1917.

From: The Adjutant-General.

To: Commanding Officer, 1st Provisional Regiment.

Subject: Troops Formerly Guarding Aqueduct.

1. For your information, the following units were guarding the Aqueduct, New York water supply, previous to this duty's being taken over by the First Provisional Regiment, New York Guard:

1st Cavalry

Troops: A, B, C, D.

23rd Infantry

Companies: A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, K, L, M, Machine Gun Co.

47th Infantry

Companies: E, F, G, H.

10th Infantry

Headquarters Co., Supply Co., and Companies A, C, D.

The Adjutant-General,

By: JAMES A. BLAIR, Jr.

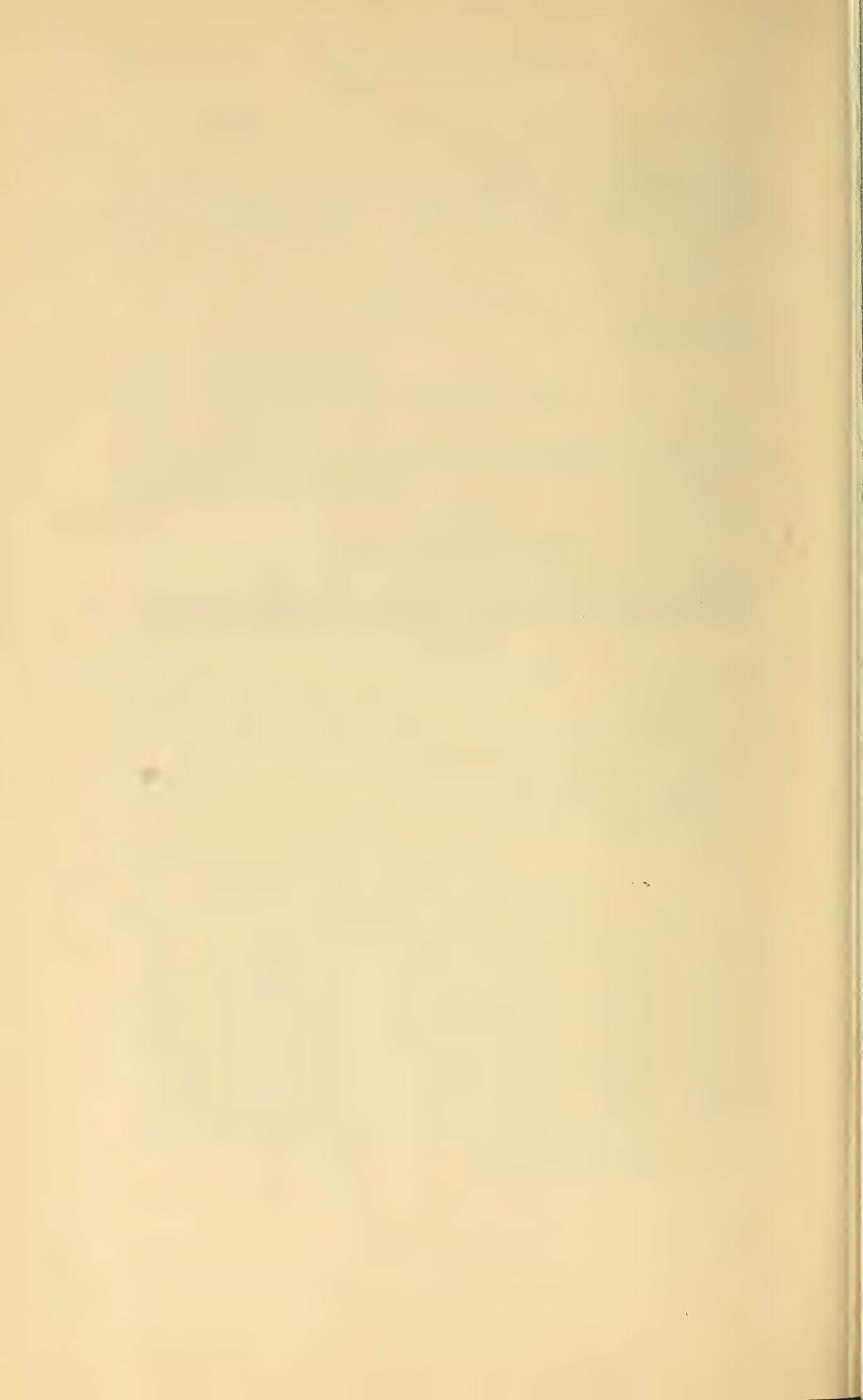
Major, I. G. D.

AQUEDUCTS OF ANTIQUITY

| <i>Name</i> | <i>Era</i> | <i>Length</i> | <i>Cubic Feet</i> | <i>Gallons</i> |
|----------------------------|------------|---------------|-------------------|----------------|
| 1. Appian Aqueduct..... | B. C. 312 | 103,250 | 3,706,575 | 27,724,181 |
| 2. Old Anio Aqueduct..... | " 273 | 366,775 | 8,932,338 | 66,813,887 |
| 3. Marcian Aqueduct..... | " 146 | 569,417 | 9,525,390 | 71,249,917 |
| 4. Tepulan Aqueduct..... | " 127 | | 903,795 | 6,760,386 |
| 5. Julian Aqueduct..... | " 35 | 142,341 | 2,449,386 | 18,321,407 |
| 6. Virgin Aqueduct..... | " 22 | 143,116 | 5,085,624 | 38,040,467 |
| 7. Alsietina Aqueduct..... | " 14 | 204,526 | 796,152 | 5,656,016 |
| 8. Claudian Aqueduct..... | " 49 | 421,989 | 9,356,817 | 96,988,991 |
| 9. New Anio Aqueduct..... | " 90 | 541,644 | 9,622,878 | 71,979,127 |
| | | 2,493,058 | 50,378,955 | 376,834,379 |

APPENDIX II

Original Roster of Men of First Provisional Regiment at the Time of the Organization's Entry Into the Field. The Companies Are Listed from North to South.



REGIMENTAL HEADQUARTERS

Pines Bridge, Croton Lake

John B. Rose, Colonel, 1st Inf.
William L. Burnett, Lieut.-Colonel, 10th Inf.
Howland Pell, Captain, Disbursing Officer, 12th Inf.
Leon Brooks De Garmo, Captain, Supply Officer, 14th Inf.
Jerome Kingsbury, Captain, Medical Officer, V. C. A.
T. R. Hutton, Captain, Adjutant, 1st Inf.
Harry P. Williams, 2nd Lieut., Transportation Officer, V. C. A.
John Towner, 2nd Lieut.

FIRST BATTALION HEADQUARTERS

Pines Bridge, Croton Lake

William L. Hodges, Major, V. C. A.
Frank L. Davidson, 1st Lieut., V. C. A.
Theodore T. Lane, 1st Lieut., Adjutant, V. C. A.

REGIMENTAL HEADQUARTERS NON-COM. STAFF

Stationed at Croton Lake

Battalion Sergeant-Major Thomas W. Therkildsen

Sergeants

| | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| James A. Murray, Q. M. C. | Julian B. Jackson, Co. G, 1st Inf. |
| Thomas F. O'Connor, Q. M. C. | Edward J. O'Brien, Troop G, Utica |
| | Charles J. Blizzard, Co. G, 1st Inf. |

FIRST BATTALION NON-COM. STAFF

Sergeant-Major George A. Drake

Sergeants

| | |
|---------------|-----------------|
| J. Hart Welsh | Edmond J. Dixon |
|---------------|-----------------|

REGIMENTAL HEADQUARTERS

COMPANY G, 1st INF., N. Y. G.

Acting First Sergeant

John James Crotty

Acting Supply Sergeant

Louis Munson Baker

Sergeants

| | |
|-----------------------|--------------------------|
| Roy James Briggs | Charles Harold Shaddock |
| George Raymond Bugbee | Herman Adelbert Pearsall |

Corporal

Melville Dewely Johnson

Cooks

Frank J. McFee

Charles William Sigsbee

William Henry Yates

Privates

Leon Maurice Cook

Harry Frederick Knifer

Frank Wendell Couse

Earl William Merrill

Herman Rose Church

Clarence Edwin Roth

Hewitt Hendricks

Edwin George Wadin

Arnold Edwin Hopkins

Ernest Sylvester Walker

Acting Bugler

Russell Lee Stapleton

SECOND BATTALION HEADQUARTERS**New Paltz**

Charles J. Lamb, Major, 1st Inf.

Maurice S. Damon, Captain, Court Officer, 1st Cavalry

Clarence M. Bechtol, 1st Lieut., Adjutant, 1st Inf.

Charles A. Clinton, 1st Lieut., Asst. Medical Officer, V. C. A.

Elmer H. Miller, 2nd Lieut., Supply Officer, Q. M. C.

SECOND BATTALION**Company B, 1st Inf., N. Y. G., Utica. Stationed at Davies Corners**

First-Lieut. Stewart W. Richards

Acting-Sergt. Heby H. Kelsey

First-Sergt. Thomas P. McGuiness

Acting-Sergt. Charles B. Hornung

Supply-Sergt. Louis A. Welch

Acting-Sergt. William J. Brockert

Mess.-Sergt. Albert Dyer

Corp. Thomas W. Lawson

Sergt. Selbach

Acting Corp. Herbert P. Brayman

Cook Francis T. Golden

Privates

S. N. Abounder

L. S. Snyder

I. W. Ashley

J. Soltys

L. W. Baltzell

L. Soltys

C. J. Bellinger

S. Soltys

E. D. Carpenter

H. Steber

L. O. Carpenter

R. J. Stocker

F. A. Coss

F. D. Sweeney

E. J. Dillon

S. W. Taylor

J. L. Evans

Clyde Tew

C. H. Evansperger

C. Truesdale

J. H. Fay

R. C. Volmer

C. J. Fitch

Ernest Van Hosen

W. T. Griffith

Clarence Waters

W. O. Hughes

Theo. A. Waters

I. E. Jones

G. C. Weipe

H. F. Karl

J. Whalen

F. J. Loftus

Claude C. Whimple

S. J. Pugh

Whitcomb

J. A. Sears

Harold Williams

H. O. Seufert

W. Yost

A. T. Sheppard

G. P. Zipp

COMPANY A, 1st INF., N. Y. 'G.
Utica

Stationed at Atwood

| | |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Capt. Alfred Broadbent | Mess-Sergt. Philip O'Toole |
| First-Lieut. C. B. Cleary | Supply-Sergt. Wm. A. Rivers |
| First-Sergt. Earle T. Richards | Sergt. Geo. H. Field |

Sergeants

| | |
|---------------------|---------------|
| Thomas N. Pritchard | Wm. F. Wirth |
| Edward W. Winslow | Guy I. Barger |

Corporals

| | |
|--------------------|-------------------|
| Chas. E. Myer | Wallace M. Hughes |
| Orson M. Buck | Claude J. Midlam |
| Louis E. Rothstein | Walter W. Heath |

Cooks

| | |
|---------------|------------------|
| Wm. J. Graves | Chas. M. Manning |
|---------------|------------------|

Buglers

| | |
|-----------------|----------------|
| Louis Furtunate | Lester R. Pugh |
|-----------------|----------------|

Mechanic

Chas. S. King

Privates, First Class

| | |
|------------------|---------------------|
| Jay V. Barnard | Joseph A. Hasenauer |
| Leroy H. Brucker | John M. Jones |
| Stanley S. Ehle | Leo G. Kane |
| | John F. Pacius |

Privates

| | |
|--------------------|--------------------|
| Edward J. Barton | John F. Kristner |
| Oscar L. Bratz | Frank Marron |
| Carl V. Brower | Chas. A. Maxwell |
| Jarry A. Devereux | Claude E. Mercer |
| Wm. A. Dillon | Chester A. Mather |
| Chas. E. Eiseman | August Pacius |
| Delos M. Guillaume | Reese Phillips |
| Louis F. Heath | Wm. M. Phillips |
| Carl R. Heath | Leslie G. Platler |
| Fred D. Ingraham | Chas. A. Plumb |
| Wm. E. Keitch | Thomas P. Rosinski |
| | Wm. Rothenburg |

COMPANY H, 1st INF., N. Y. 'G.
Binghamton

Stationed at "The Peak," near High Falls

| | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Capt. J. Roy Wilbur | First-Sergt. Andrew B. Suttle |
| First-Lieut. Chas. H. Hinman | Supply-Sergt. Arthur E. Potter |
| | Mess-Sergt. Arthur A. Smith |

Sergeants

Chas. D. Tyler
Henry Thomas

George F. Doty
LeRoy R. Barnes
Fred H. Lown

Corporals

Merritt E. Hull
Leland N. Cornelius

Perry W. Griffith
Frank H. Montrose
Leroy W. Hutslander

Cooks

George L. Young

Lynne H. Arend

Buglers

Clayton H. Parsons

Roy T. Hutchins

Privates

Harold M. Anderson
Herbert L. Alexander
Leonard R. Bouton
Merrill D. Beam
Chas. H. Brown
J. Walter Barnes
Geo. W. H. Calyer
Edward P. Calyer
Walter E. Cheeseman
Halbert M. Cinnamon
Homer J. Clinton
Frederick H. Corbin
Patrick T. Coulter
Byron Geo. Delaney
Ralph D. Depugh
Frank C. Diffenderfer
Earl J. Edwards
Harry Farrar
George H. Grau
Schuyler E. Gray
Grant M. Harding
Leo D. Heath
Leroy S. Kent
Howard Kinsman
Floyd Nelson Kipp
Geo. Henry Kishpaugh

Delbert Lent
Leland C. Lewis
Herbert N. Livermore
Edward M. Lyons
John D. Manning
Edwin J. McEwan
Harry J. Matoon
Wilford E. McKown
Earl B. McLand
Elmer L. McLand
Stewart L. Newing
Paul B. Parce
Elihue Payne
William Horace Payne
Howard E. Potter
Roy E. Ransome
John A. Reardon
Harold Harry Saxton
Geo. M. Shandar
Harry C. Stewart
Stanley D. Terwilliger
Orvell F. Travis
Gerald J. Troy
Carl Weston
Clarence E. Whitman
Harry W. Winson

TROOP B, 1st CAVALRY, N. Y. G.**Stationed near New Paltz**

First-Lieut. Frank M. VanNouhuys
Second-Lieut. Edgar B. Clerk
Mess-Sergt. Harold E. Parkman

First-Sergt. John J. Burke
Supply-Sergt. Chas. E. Kelly

Sergeants

Thomas R. Burke
Frank A. McCullough
John O'C. Fish

John J. Connors
Emerson C. Gray
Frank E. Hills

Corporals

| | |
|--------------------|---------------------|
| Thomas A. O'Malley | Charles T. Terry |
| Garrett R. Forster | Frederick E. Gillen |
| Eugene J. Malone | Walter S. Gillen |
| Robert B. Convery | Douglas S. Williams |
| John R. McCormack | Chester J. Atkinson |

Felix Cantamessner

Privates

| | |
|----------------------|----------------------|
| John W. Alberts | William J. Mahar |
| John W. Brasure | Thomas McCarthy |
| John S. Bantham | Dayton B. Mochrie |
| Frederick L. Bennett | John E. Marshall |
| James H. Clancy | John J. O'Reilly |
| Harry F. Campbell | Michael J. O'Henry |
| J. Fred Clarke | Miles Paley |
| Henry G. Cowan | John J. Patterson |
| John Cregan | Kenneth F. Rossman |
| William H. Cameron | Willard G. Ruff |
| Hildreth P. Drew | Erwin J. Sanders |
| Clarence De Forest | William K. Spatz |
| Charles E. Davenpeck | Tremaine A. Thayer |
| George D. Earll | Peter C. Todd |
| Donald R. Ferris | Frank J. Taafe |
| John V. Fischer | Milton J. Van Bergen |
| Ambrose G. Gleason | Arnold G. Van Laer |
| James J. Gallagher | Lewis N. Van Alstyne |
| Charles H. Humer | Harold R. White |
| Joseph M. Hughes | James J. Wagner |
| Ralph L. Happel | Adrean E. Young |
| Edgar Jacobs | Raymond D. Zeilman |
| Arthur S. Lewis | Elmer G. Wallace |
| Willard B. Lewis | Charles Effler |
| Howard F. Lewis | Albert Notovagi |
| Algernon S. Laelor | Walter K. Scim. |

COMPANY C, 1st INF., N. Y. G.

Stationed at Camp Ball, Gardiner

| | |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Capt. T. M. H. Jackson | First-Duty-Sergt. John W. Maloney |
| First-Lieut. William J. Rivers | Second-Duty-Sergt. Claude Jones |
| Second-Lieut. Bion Leroy Greene | Third-Duty-Sergt. George Genter |
| First-Sergt. John J. Gaffner | Provost-Sergt. Frank F. Grenier |
| Mess-Sergt. Charles E. Smith | Senior-Corp. John J. O'Brien |

Corporals

| | |
|--------------------|------------------|
| William Carscallen | Charles Sweeney |
| Lloyd J. Steele | Leo A. Draper |
| Edward G. Visscher | Clarence W. Daly |

Cooks

| | |
|------------------|-------------|
| John J. McDonald | Carl Morris |
|------------------|-------------|

Mechanic

Charles E. Clark

Company Clerk

Gardiner E. Vincent

Privates

James Allen Arthur
 Clyde E. Berkman
 William Sidney Brown
 Orville A. Brown
 John Brown
 William Brown
 Ernest E. Boynton
 Walter R. Cuppernell
 George Edward Coulter
 John Lawrence Chase
 Clarence Wesley Dailey
 Roy Dempster
 Lawrence Denio
 James T. Duchane
 Clarence Wilfred Daly
 Floyd Leonard Daly
 John Daws
 Benjamin Edward Ellis
 Joseph Evans
 Frank Frederick
 Percy Collins Farmer
 Joseph Edward Fitzpatrick
 Owen Francis Gregory
 Houghton Mann Grieb
 Clifford Thomas Halwig
 Everett B. Hunt
 Joseph Lewis Houlihan
 William Henry Huntley
 Marvin Edward Huntley
 Charles Ellsworth Jones

Samuel Adolf Jareo
 Alfred Joseph Knight
 Leo Peter Lacombe
 Albert Joseph Laffner
 Thomas Lane
 Albert Luden
 Francis Roderick McGinnis
 Fred McKnight
 Charles Carl Mullen
 Davis Wallace Mullen
 Lyle M. Morris
 Daniel O'Connell
 Arthur Patchin
 John A. Parker
 Leonard A. Pfister
 Hiram Post
 Howard Herbert Provonga
 Edwin Harold Provonga
 Frederick Blain Pooler
 Edward Albert Roshia
 Robert Warner Simmons
 Oliver Wilber Sabray
 John Edward Sharp
 Glen Schofield
 Frederick Charles Thompson
 Robert Frederick Wood
 Andrew Jackson Wilcox
 Robert Waldron
 Emery Bellenger
 William Robinson

COMPANY K, 10th INF., N. Y. G.

 Stationed at Camp '76, Gardiner

Senior-Corp. Francis McCoy

Corporals

Frank Hall
 H. Gildersleeve

Irving Gunn
 James Morton

Privates

Claude Adams
 Homer Baker
 Wallace Becker
 William Brenner
 William Comisky
 Harold Cady
 Silas Dewitt

Raymond Duncan
 Edward Dean
 Elmer Dressler
 John Elderkin
 Feri Feorvinti
 Charles Giddings
 Joseph Meehan

Privates—Continued

| | |
|-------------------|--------------------|
| James Miller | Kenneth Rosenburgh |
| Francis Mackey | Jerome Simmons |
| Charles Near | Emery Rogers |
| John Osterhouse | Roy Temper |
| Charles Peluse | Elmer Vance |
| Parrotti | James Valinao |
| Maynard E. Parker | Herbert Woodin |
| Peter Quirk | Ralph Woodin |
| | Lucias Smith |

TROOP G, 1st CAVALRY, N. Y. G.**Stationed at Camp Alaska, Walden**

| | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Capt. Addison H. Westcott | First-Sergt. A. L. Rego |
| First-Lieut. A. C. Gilbert | Mess-Sergt. James Jabbour |
| Second-Lieut. Clifford P. Servatius | Supply-Sergt. A. P. Carpenter |

Sergeants

| | |
|------------|---------------|
| Leon Todd | Edris Wynne |
| Carl Blust | A. G. Kallasy |

Corporals

| | |
|--------------------|--------------|
| Robert Smith | Clare Rhodes |
| Ivor Jones | Nemer Ferris |
| Ray Gschwind | A. Joseph |
| Victor G. Salladin | Donald Mills |

Trumpeter

Harry Zady

Mechanic

Roy Noyes

Cooks

| | |
|----------------|----------------|
| J. F. McDonald | Nellis Gaffney |
|----------------|----------------|

Privates

| | |
|-----------------------|------------------------------|
| Joseph Antoun | Herschell Pugh |
| Robert Burns | A. Perry |
| Shalaep Ballanah | M. Roche |
| Alexander Cossessetti | Dewey Rudd |
| Paur Coury | J. Rogers |
| M. Costanzo | George Shamon |
| Denniston | Charles Shamon |
| Everett Evans | Moses Shamon |
| J. O. Evans | C. D. Smart |
| L. Ferris | Lyle Smith |
| Samuel Hallett | William Thayer |
| Moses Haddad | Penwarden |
| Milad Hobica | G. Joseph |
| S. Karam | H. Hobica |
| B. L. Kassing | Berges Joseph |
| M. Kader | Albert Joseph |
| A. Kline | W. R. Jones |
| L. Leone | E. J. O'Brien (special duty) |
| James George | William J. Phalon |

TROOP H, 1st CAVALRY

Formerly stationed near Walden

| | |
|--------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| First-Lieut. Howard Coverse | Supply-Sergt. Freeman C. Allen |
| Second-Lieut. William C. Barry | Mess-Sergt. E. Frank Brewster, Jr. |
| First-Sergt. Atkinson Allen | Stable-Sergt. Stalham S. Baker |

Sergeants.

| | |
|---------------------|-------------------|
| Julius H. White | Augustus H. Smith |
| Mortimer R. Anstice | |

Corporals

| | |
|--------------------|--------------------|
| E. Clinton Wolcott | Embry MacDowell |
| Charles H. Chapin | Wilmot V. Castle |
| | Kenneth C. Townson |

Privates

| | |
|------------------------|-----------------------|
| Arthur E. Bates | Sheldon MacCartney |
| Francis R. Bellamy | Leander M. McCord |
| Clarence K. Carlson | R. Evershed Myers |
| Floyd E. Carson | Martin B. Potter |
| John W. Castle | Arthur G. Seitz |
| Howard M. Cook | Lu F. Sherman |
| Frederick S. Cookesley | Louis R. Smith |
| L. Philip Fahy | L. Walton Smith |
| George C. Fichter | Herbert W. Spears |
| Jerry B. Foster | Joseph F. Taylor |
| Richard M. Harris | W. Herbert Wall |
| George H. Hawks | De Witt C. Ward |
| Alexander Hough | Ernest L. White |
| Howard S. Kellogg | Henry C. White |
| William H. McCann | Chauncey C. Woodworth |
| | John Francis Weller |

COMPANY F, 10th INF.

Stationed at Vail's Gate Junction

| | |
|------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Capt. Benedict Gifford | Supply-Sergt. Arthur M. Pultz |
| First-Lieut. Edward L. Harder | First-Sergt. Mark Rosenthal |
| Second-Lieut. A. Tremain McKinstry | Mess-Sergt. Everett V. Kline |

Sergeants

| | |
|---------------------|--------------------|
| Harry Propst | Martin H. Propst |
| George H. Armstrong | Harry V. Coons |
| | David C. Patterson |

Corporals

| | |
|--------------------------|----------------------|
| William Oxbrough | Edward Lewis Dorland |
| Cornelius V. Van de Carr | Floyd Lasher |
| George D. Sitler | Frank Van Valkenburg |
| Harry Sutherland | Justin C. Wood |
| G. Foster Buckman | Andrew Mackin |

Cook

Walter Roe

Buglers

James Shea

Earl Kraft

Privates, First Class

Morris Brady
 William B. Caswell, Jr.
 Raymond Dallas
 Thomas Kilmer
 Frank Maisenbacher
 Augustus C. F. Obermeyer, Jr.

James Ritchie
 Max Rosenfeld
 Jeremiah Rundell
 Harry J. Sagendorph
 Lawrence Staples
 Alfred Teator

Privates

Barton T. Aken
 Floyd Baker
 Thomas Baldwin
 George Bartholomew
 Leo Bernockie
 George R. Boody
 Thomas Bratton
 Edgar Brennan
 James Lyle Brown
 Rensselaer D. Bush
 Cameron Carroll
 Clayton Coons
 Lloyd G. Coons
 Herbert G. Dallas
 Homer L. Decker
 Harry A. Decker
 Joseph Leo Delaney
 Joseph Donohue
 Charles E. Durnham
 Joseph Durnak
 Frederick Eaton
 Arthur Finch
 Joseph E. Ford
 George Glover
 Guy Glover
 John H. Halloran
 Ellsworth Ham
 George Harder, Jr.
 Maurice Harlow
 Dennis Hayes
 Andrew F. Hoose
 Thomas Vincent Howe
 Edward E. Hughes
 Stuart A. Hunter
 Henry Jackwitz
 Fred Jones
 James J. Kennedy
 George Kirkham
 Henry Langlois
 Ellsworth Laurange

Otto Matheis
 John F. McConnell
 James J. McEvoy
 Earl Meguirt
 Arland J. Miller
 Clarence Miller
 Herschell H. Miller
 William Montague
 Cyrus Myers, Jr.
 Edward Nonamaker
 Gerald O'Connell
 Vernon Palen
 Irving Pearsall
 Frank Phillips
 Walter W. Plater
 Chester Randolph
 Harry M. Reynolds
 William Robertson
 Arthur Roraback
 Lawrence Rockefeller
 James Rogers
 Richard A. Rossman
 Arthur Rote
 Raymond Shea
 Anson Sheffer
 Leroy Sheffer
 Jacob Sheldon
 Julius Simonson
 Charles C. Smith
 Richard A. Storm
 Robert Teator
 George Van Etten
 Luther Van Etten, Jr.
 Robert Van Tassel
 Lester E. Van Vleck
 Edward Vaughn
 Henry Walch
 John Warren
 Harold G. Waters
 Samuel Wright

William B. Wrigley

FIRST BATTALION
BATTERY C, 1st F. A., N. Y. G.

Stationed at Breakneck

Capt. John W. Johnson
 First-Lieut. Otis D. Eaton

Second-Lieut. Carl Robinson
 First-Sergt. Leroy Melvin Landon

Sergeants

James Mercall Blair
 Gomer James Pritchard

Henry Fayette Landon
 William Patt Vincent
 Charles Olin Johnson

Corporals

Harry Francis Whitmarsh
 Ivan Eaton
 Linneans Barton
 Wm. Darwin McCann

Robert Frailey
 Clesson Mace
 Frank Butts
 L. B. Lambert

Privates

Howard Adamy
 Edward Park Agnew
 Emerson Ralph Agnew
 Edward Leon Allen
 Fred Ward Allen
 Roy Avery
 Frank Avery
 John Lewis Barton
 Jesse Ray Barrows
 Burt Barrows
 Clyde Wakeford Bowers
 Burtt Henry Albion
 Wallace Jay Buck
 Roy Arthur Cole
 Harry B. Chrysler
 Leonard Judson Colony
 Joseph Samuel Densmore
 Fred Judson Durfee
 Daniel Demock Devine
 Charles David Eckert
 Marvin Ernest Focht
 Charles Henry Fedora
 Benjamine Franklin Ferguson
 Walter Gee
 Edward Leland Green
 Howard William Gibbs
 Nathan Mesline Gilbert
 James Arthur Green
 Charles Francis Griswold
 Robert Wesley Harvey
 Wm. Frank Husted
 John Malatis Hotchkiss
 Earl Howard
 Floyd Barton Hinchman

Elmer Niles Hesse
 Ralph Warren Hilsinger
 Harry Saymore Jennings
 Daniel Harold Lynch
 Harvey Latourette
 Harold Lad Mack
 Clarence B. Miller
 Ernest Wm. Mathewson
 Louis Morse Major
 Roy Henry Matson
 Arthur John Nutter
 Leon Joseph Osborne
 Raymond Leo Osterhout
 John Paul Putnam
 Charles Trafford Peebles
 E. Earl Rodgers
 Wm. Charles Robinson
 Clifford Lewis Robinson
 Wm. Gordon Robinson
 Ralph Berdette Standish
 Ward Douglas Snow
 Louis Begley Stack
 George Walton Stone
 Leonard Alfred Smith
 Arthur John Standish
 Stephen Mack Smith
 Andy Oscar Smith
 Trevette Smith
 Floyd Elisha Sprague
 Charles Henry Scudder
 Lawrence Trenton Smith
 Clarence James Terwilliger
 Henry Albert Tuckerman
 Charles J. Twinning

Privates—Continued

| | |
|--------------------------|-------------------------|
| Gilbert Benson Tybring | Wm. Car Weingardner |
| Frederick Lines Vergason | Walter James Whitman |
| Leroy Van Patten | Truman Gardner Westcott |
| Clyde Lewis Vaow | Louis Perry Whitmarsh |
| Losey Annand Whitcomb | George Conklin Wilber |
| Lewis Addison Wright | Floyd Leroy Wright |
| James Markes Waldron | Harold Horace Wilson |
| | Carl Lynn Whitmarsh |

FOURTH COMPANY, 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G.**Stationed at Peekskill**

| | |
|------------------------|---------------------------|
| Capt. John M. Thompson | First-Lieut. H. B. Welsh |
| | Second-Lieut. David Liken |

Sergeants

| | |
|----------------------|----------------------|
| Paul Poveromo | Thomas A. Frawley |
| James J. Kiernan | John J. O'Malley |
| William L. C. Stiles | Winfield H. Demooddy |
| William F. DeVieneri | Alexander Clinton |
| | Charles Rubine |

Corporals

| | |
|-------------------|-------------------|
| Walter C. Meagher | Harris Commer |
| George McAllister | George Cornell |
| George W. Marsh | Anthony Salimbebe |
| Charles Palladino | Fred W. Cordes |

Musicians

| | |
|-------------------|-----------------|
| Angus J. Thompson | William Margraf |
|-------------------|-----------------|

Mechanic

| |
|----------------|
| John T. Noonan |
|----------------|

Cooks

| | |
|------------------|---------------|
| James C. Griffin | James Easillg |
|------------------|---------------|

Privates

| | |
|--------------------|---------------------|
| Tracey Karpf | Humbert Morizzi |
| John J. Kennedy | Elias A. Nathan |
| David J. Kurtz | Cornelius T. Nelson |
| John J. Larkin | Paul Ponzarelli |
| Max Lechner | Joseph J. Pape |
| Joseph Leddie | Richard Pica |
| John M. Lupo | Sam Pollock |
| James Lynch | William Polombo |
| Frank Marino | James Raleigh |
| Charles Mauro | William R. Reid |
| Frank A. Mazzao | Joseph Ronan |
| Michael Meinsinger | Frank Rooney |
| Sidney Meltzer | William Rooney |
| Thomas Molloy | Millan Rosenblum |

Privates—Continued

| | |
|-------------------|------------------|
| Dominick Rubino | John J. Synan |
| John Ryan | Frank Tortelli |
| Edward Samuels | Nicholas Froise |
| Harry Schlinicoff | John Tully |
| Walter E. Scott | George Uchlein |
| Joseph Sherman | George Van Nest |
| David Silver | Samuel Weisberg |
| Michael J. Smith | Joseph F. Whalen |
| Alfred Spirito | Jerome Wingers |
| Alfred Sponza | Harry Witt |
| John Sullivan | Richard Lynch |

BATTERY A, 1st F. A., N. Y. G.

Stationed at Valhalla

| | |
|----------------------------------|------------------------------|
| Capt. Leo C. Harte | First-Sergt. James H. Hayes |
| First-Lieut. Grover C. Weed | Supply-Sergt. James E. Hayes |
| Second-Lieut. Frederick L. Stone | Mess-Sergt. Edward T. Towne |

Sergeants

| | |
|----------------|------------------|
| Harold P. Land | Gregory M. Dixon |
| Wells Wise | Ottimer Boullee |

Corporals

| | |
|-----------------|-----------------|
| Ralph Edic | Joseph H. Luton |
| Joseph Grenier | Robert F. Scott |
| John P. Hoffman | Sidney Wolfe |

Mechanics

| | |
|--------|-----|
| Sharpe | Lee |
|--------|-----|

Cooks

| | |
|--------|---------|
| Joslyn | Maloney |
|--------|---------|

Musicians

| | |
|------|--------|
| Hack | Parlin |
|------|--------|

Privates

| | |
|--------------|------------|
| Battalle | Lyman |
| Brown | MacMasters |
| Butler | McCabe |
| Busch | Meyers |
| Coon Crosby | Murdoch |
| Davis | McElhaney |
| De Perrior | Rubinstein |
| De Bello | Simpson |
| Eichelberger | Stangland |
| Gee | Walters |
| Guenthner | H. Watson |
| Hackbarth | R. Watson |
| Harrington | Wilson |
| Jennings | Whalen |
| Johnson | Yorman |

COMPANY B, 12th INF., N. Y. G.

Stationed at Millwood

| | |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Capt. Ernest T. Van Zandt | First-Lieut. Edward Strauss |
| First-Lieut. Irving J. Ussiker | Second-Lieut. Edward J. Murphy |
| Second-Lieut. Arthur Wynne | |

First Sergeants

| | |
|---------------------|-------------------|
| Thomas A. Dougherty | Thomas Abe Macray |
|---------------------|-------------------|

Supply Sergeants

| | |
|------------------|-----------------|
| Thomas J. Carney | William Anthony |
|------------------|-----------------|

Mess Sergeants

| | |
|----------------|-------------|
| William Corrie | John Naylor |
|----------------|-------------|

Sergeants

| | |
|------------------|---------------------|
| Joseph Brady | Eric Hoffing |
| James J. Corbett | Charles Dunleavy |
| Samuel Frank | Thomas A. Caulfield |
| Samuel C. Allen | |

Corporals

| | |
|------------------|-------------------|
| Harry O. Smith | Charles Bright |
| Frederick Ernst | Howard Griffen |
| William E. Marsh | Abraham Levine |
| James Quirk | Joseph Citron |
| Leonard H. Niles | Douglass Esterly |
| Herbert Jungeman | William T. Duke |
| George Liebman | John J. O'Neill |
| William Erdman | George H. Healy |
| Arthur McNally | James E. Reynolds |
| Vincent Saldano | Victor C. Lewis |

Musician

| |
|----------------|
| George Maschke |
|----------------|

Mechanic

| |
|------------------|
| Willard Van Tine |
|------------------|

Privates

| | |
|------------------|------------------|
| Samuel Aaron | Thomas Butler |
| Raphael Attansio | Alfred Brown |
| William Becker | Max Burnstein |
| Frank Becker | Eugene Brown |
| Seth Beale | Peter Boyle |
| Herbert Brogan | Ralph Bencivingo |
| Joseph Blewitt | Edward Brady |
| Edward Brooks | Harry Ball |
| Morris Berenberg | Robert Creevy |
| William Burns | Stephen Chapman |

Privates—Continued

| | |
|----------------------|--------------------|
| Chauncey Cass | James Moylan |
| Frank Calvello | Neil Murphy |
| Edward Carroll | Eugene Murphy |
| Patrick Conlon | John McKee |
| Michael Carmody | Eugene McCloskey |
| John Carroll | William McDonald |
| William Condon | John McMahon |
| Anthony De Stefano | John McGowan |
| James Dundon | Thomas T. McSherry |
| Louis Deutsch | Joseph Nicolleli |
| Peter Dugan | James T. Ovens |
| James Duffy | William O'Neil |
| John Delaney | Michael O'Keefe |
| George Degnan | John A. Palmer |
| Andrew Dunn | Louis Papelsky |
| Henry Englander | William Pittman |
| James Esterbrook | Carmine Pisonelli |
| Eugene Engle | Harry Piper |
| Peter Foley | James Pearsall |
| Harry Feigenbaum | Walter Paul |
| Donald Furlong | John F. Quirk |
| John Fribance | Herman Rothstein |
| Isadore Furman | Morris Robinson |
| William Falkner | Milton Ross |
| Salvatore Gerardi | Victor Rossi |
| Anthony Greco | John Russo |
| Jacob Greene | John Rappel |
| Cornelius Gleason | August Ruppert |
| John Gebhardt | William Roauer |
| William Gilchrist | Mario Saraci |
| Stanley Glogoczewski | Frank Shade |
| Thomas Hudson | Edward J. Schultz |
| Ralph Howard | George Schadt |
| Edward Hirsch | James Swindell |
| Gabriel Hadspidida | Joseph Schiff |
| William Hughes | William Simon |
| Jacob A. Henkin | Dennis Sullivan |
| William Harrison | George Story |
| Walter Harrison | Thomas Sheridan |
| Walter Harris | John Sheehan |
| Lewis Jouver | Michael Spiridi |
| Chester R. Jones | Max Tworoger |
| Jerome Kelner | Gustave Thomas |
| John J. Kelly | Bruno Veltri |
| Albert Kopsky | Phillip Viesohn |
| John J. Keating | Albert Welte |
| Alfred Kohn | William Webster |
| Edward Laird | Philip Warren |
| Frank Letto | Bernard Wynne |
| Howard Magee | Chester Walker |
| William Morris | William Whitfield |
| Arthur Manley | Stewart Welsh |

Julius Wasserman

COMPANY C, DEPOT BATTALION
7th INFANTRY, N. Y. G.

Stationed at Pleasantville

| | |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Capt. James R. Stewart | First-Sergt. Frost M. Wheeler |
| First-Lieut. Francis D. Clark | Supply-Sergt. Chas. T. Leonard |
| Second-Lieut. Edwin M. Leask | Mess-Sergt. Irving Sands |

Sergeants

| | |
|------------------------|----------------------|
| Hamline Q. French, Jr. | Lodivicus H. Sanford |
| Robert S. Pollock | Joseph Hudson |

Corporals

| | |
|------------------------|-----------------------|
| Silas B. Bostwick, Jr. | Charles B. Kent |
| Thomas Watson Ball | Alexander L. Anderson |
| Roland R. Carter | Merritt Crawford |
| Frank G. Doran | Albert Bardes |
| Louis F. Eggers | Eugene Nelson Ehrhart |
| | Charles F. Burg |

Privates

| | |
|-------------------------|----------------------|
| Daniel Adams | George P. Jackson |
| Charles H. Arnold | Richard F. Kennellie |
| Richard H. Arnold | James F. Levens |
| William F. H. Armstrong | William F. Loss |
| Gilbert H. Bagot | Frank G. McDougall |
| Charles L. Ball | Leslie W. May |
| Thomas R. Ball | William Nagle |
| James F. Casey | Thomas Oakes |
| Charles S. Clark, Jr. | George H. Richards |
| George H. Clay | Joseph A. Schaefer |
| Walter S. Goldsmith | Lawrence C. Sagona |
| George V. Gustus | George A. Sherwood |
| Frank Hale | George R. Spies |
| Harold C. Hansen | George W. Spurgeon |
| Henry J. Harding, Jr. | Frederick C. Terry |
| William V. Heenan | Frank S. Ulbig |
| Howard S. Holt | Edward Wanty |
| John C. Hutchinson | George S. Watkinson |

COMPANY D, 71st INF., N. Y. G.

Stationed at East Pleasantville

| | |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------|
| Capt. William B. Miles | First-Sergt. Owen Coogan |
| First-Lieut. A. B. Smith | Mess-Sergt. C. A. Benedict |
| Second-Lieut. Richard H. Smith | Supply-Sergt. C. S. Martin |

Sergeants

| | |
|----------------|--------------|
| G. F. Hawkins | C. L. Bell |
| W. A. Deverall | J. W. Dutton |
| M. S. Parker | J. J. Regan |

Corporals

J. R. Brandon
M. S. Hebert
C. L. Rossiter, Jr.
P. L. Clarke

C. L. Taylor
L. F. R. Conklin
H. B. Ludlum
J. T. McGovern

F. W. Ingalls

Privates

R. Berry
R. A. Bonner
J. J. Bulleid
H. C. Cromwell
C. Dout
L. B. Ellert
J. J. Finnell
H. J. Foster
N. W. Gage
J. B. Haviland
C. Hyde
O. S. Hebert
M. Hatheway
W. L. Hoff
W. H. Journeay
E. F. Lafn
J. J. Linherr
C. S. Lowther
L. E. Linser

R. J. Lewis
C. R. Logan
C. E. Mitchell
C. C. Musgrave
H. L. Miller
R. O'Byrne
F. M. Pederson
A. C. Plummer
G. L. Robinson
J. P. Rogers
J. A. Schaefer
J. P. Skelly
E. J. Simpson
J. J. Sandford
C. H. Stoneback
J. Stafford
E. Vyborne
E. E. Vidaud
A. Wintraechen

P. C. Whipp

PROVISIONAL BATTERIES A AND B, V. C. A.

At Kensico Dam, Elmsford, Ardsley, Fort Hill Road and Tuckahoe Road

First-Lieut. Frank E. Davidson, Adj. Second-Lieut. H. Pushae Williams,
Surg. Jerome Kingsbury, Asst. Surg. Supply Duty
Sergt.-Maj. Lloyd R. Stark

Provisional Battery A

Capt. S. Edson Gage First-Sergt. Francis L. Woodburn
First-Lieut. Theodore T. Lane Supply-Sergt. Norman F. Cushman
First-Lieut. Raymond L. Taft Mess-Sergt. Raymond N. Hyde

Sergeants and Acting Sergeants

John T. Harrison Winfred F. Mack
William Douglas Owens Sterling P. Story
Francis J. Hopson William H. Smith
Walter R. Jones Edgar Day Knap

Corporals and Acting Corporals

Ethelbert L. Low John T. Moffett
Alfred J. Chatillon William W. Knowles
Orlando P. Metcalf Frank H. Rossiter
Harold V. Story Morris Willetz
Howard K. Coolidge C. B. Struthers
Archibald Douglas Clarence H. Young
Frederick G. Clapp Reginald C. Knickerbocker

Privates

| | |
|-----------------------|-----------------------|
| Howard Otis Adams | Harry Leonard |
| Harry S. Bandler | Alfred L. Lane |
| Ira H. Brainard | Charles A. Lewis |
| John W. Brannan, M.D. | Herbert R. Lawrence |
| Wilbur Brundage | Floyd M. Lord |
| Charles B. Bradbury | Walter L. Mann |
| George T. Brokaw | Sigourney Mellor |
| William H. Blecker | Herbert C. MacKenzie |
| Jarvis P. Carter | Henry E. Nason |
| D. B. R. Chapman | Charles A. Nasmith |
| Robert S. Chapin | Frederick W. Nicholas |
| J. Bruce Chittenden | Robert L. Pierrepont |
| Clarence F. Cavanaugh | Stephen A. Powell |
| Thomas Clark | Frank W. Richardson |
| Charles Mayer Coryell | T. J. O. Rhinelander |
| Frederick S. Crofts | Charles C. Roberts |
| George L. Darte | Lewis D. Root |
| Pierpont Davis | Harold E. Richards |
| Norman S. De Forrest | H. Crag Severance |
| D. Parker Doremus | William H. Smith |
| William C. Dornin | George H. Stegman |
| Walter F. Dyett | H. Bordman Spalding |
| Thomas L. Elder | John R. Strong |
| Arthur E. Eldridge | William L. Somerville |
| Arthur F. Elliot | Loudon Swinton |
| Earl H. Emmons | Walter C. Sampson |
| William E. Evans | A. Parker Smith |
| H. Palmer Gallagher | Archibald D. Tappan |
| E. Curtis Gillespie | Henry E. Tobey |
| Charles F. Gould | Frederick K. Trask |
| Bishop S. Harrold | Lathrop Thatcher |
| Schuyler Hamilton | J. H. Walkley |
| Edwin J. Hodges | John H. Welch |
| Artemus Holmes | William L. Wimple |
| Mark G. Holstein | Howard F. Whistler |
| Harry Howard | J. Davenport Willis |
| Ernest A. Howe | Melvin L. White |
| Richard Fenley Hunter | William P. Wainwright |
| Charles L. Jones | Remsen T. Williams |
| Charles W. Knight | Ernest F. M. Wye |
| Eugene J. Koop | Percy A. Yalden |
| Redmond Keresey, Jr. | Clarence H. Young |
| L. U. La Cour | George A. Zabriskie |

Provisional Battery B

| | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Capt. Adam T. Shurick | Second-Lieut. Ellectus T. Backus |
| First-Lieut. John M. Perry | First-Sergt. Albert H. Hastorf |
| Supply-Sergt. Arista M. Ferguson | |

Sergeants and Acting Sergeants

| | |
|-------------------------|-------------------|
| Gabe F. Cazell | James H. Pinckney |
| Willoughby J. Kingsbury | Guy N. Lamont |
| William G. Lowther | Edward D. Moir |
| T. O'Connor Sloan | James G. Purdy |

Corporals and Acting Corporals

William F. Howard
Henry D. Brandyce
Hugh C. Guiler

Raymond H. Mandeville
Walter H. Wright
George R. Hotaling

Privates

A. K. Alford
F. A. Annette
John D. Armstrong
Frank J. Allen
James C. Ayer
Kingsley Ballor
Werner Boecklin
L. Millens Burt
Roland G. Brown
H. H. Baukhage
S. P. Beebe
Robert A. Bright
Bernard Callingham
Charles A. Clinton
Frederick F. Crofts
Edward K. Crook
Gene Carr
Richard T. Childs
Safford A. Crummey
Harold N. Cox
William H. Davis
Edward T. Dempsey
John A. Dimond
J. T. L. Doughty
Griswold T. Daggett
R. W. B. Elliott
George H. Ford
Bentley Gardiner
Carl H. Gronbeck
O. W. Graves
Edward B. Gregory
William L. Harriss
Herbert Henshaw
Frank H. Hill
Spencer B. Hopping
Alvin M. Higgins
George W. Johnson
W. Irving Kent
Karl W. Kirchway
Edward A. Kane
James E. Kooser
John Larkin
Francis G. Loyd
James S. Laing

Howard C. Lambert
John F. Mason
Oliver W. Mallaby
Charles H. Moore
Lewis F. Mohr
D. Percy Morgan
Thomas Riley Murray
Robert E. Pearson
J. Loyd Price
Gomer H. Reese
William T. Richmond
Harry A. L. Sand
Charles A. Sherman
Charles B. Smith
George C. Smith, Jr.
J. Beford Shope
James A. Sweet
Thomas Strong
Henry W. Thomas
Edward Van Wagenen
Ernest G. Victor
Robert Wylie, Jr.
Louis B. Wilson
Edwin Irvine Haines
George E. Cruse
R. Nast
Arthur V. Lyall
William B. Timlin
Eugene R. Verdin
Patrick O'Reilly
Frederick Cauchois
J. W. Goodwin
John Leahey
S. F. Floyd
George Schwab
D. N. Sarkisian
W. W. Bruce
H. B. Zeron
A. E. Corkett
Charles A. Van Rennselaer
Kingsland Ballou
J. C. Tressler
Earl H. Emmons
R. Carr

John Ward Dunsmore

COMPANY F, 1st INF., N. Y. G.**Stationed at Elmsford**

| | |
|----------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Capt. Arthur E. Connor | First-Sergt. Marshall T. Guild |
| Second-Lieut. Rae C. Launt | Mess-Sergt. William P. Bruce |
| | Supply-Sergt. Harold L. Newkerk |

Sergeants

| | |
|-----------------|------------------|
| Bruce D. Miller | Fred D. Lynch |
| | Arthur E. Ostrom |

Cook

Francis C. Webster

Mechanic

William H. Edmister

Corporals

| | |
|-----------------|----------------|
| Frank S. Green | Arthur Gray |
| Harold W. Paine | Frank E. Brown |
| | Fred C. Houck |

Privates

| | |
|-----------------------|--------------------|
| Floyd T. Allen | Charles A. Knowles |
| George E. Bonney | Floyd W. Lee |
| Charles Brower | George H. Lee |
| Patrick P. J. Ciale | John P. Lake, Jr. |
| George S. Closs | Nathan E. Marks |
| Atwood Crook | Donald B. Moore |
| John Comfort | John R. Oliver |
| George A. Drake | Victor A. Reynolds |
| Frederick W. Freyberg | Roy O. Schlay |
| Gustave C. Heckroth | Guy A. Snyder |
| Leon E. Houck | Ernest A. Thomas |
| Earl A. Hoyt | Henry A. Trylone |
| Harrison T. Hulbert | Edgar Tuttle |
| John B. Hume | Ward A. Wheeler |

BATTERIES B AND D, 1st F. A.**Stationed at Fort Hill Road and Tuckahoe****Southern Sector**

| | |
|-------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| First-Lieut. Edward P. Smaney | Supply-Sergt. Lubitz |
| First-Sergt. Podewell | Supply-Sergt. Wm. C. McDonald |
| Mess-Sergt. Bialal | Supply-Sergt. Morgan |
| | Acting-Supply-Sergt. Crawford |

Cook

Lacaze

Assistant Cook

Brannigan

Bugler

Burns

Sergeant Mechanic

Deacon

Corporals

George Price
Small
Albert C. Coleman
Berliner
Fienny

Charles E. Smith
Samuel Fletcher
Theodore Lamanna
Seiden
John Rickard

Acting Corporal

Kendell

Privates

Anthony Averitt
Robert Burkhardt
Robert Burns
Bowles
Cohn
Carlson
Carlisle
Thomas Deacon
Frank Dunleavy
Harry B. Emery
Wilbur Finehout
Grant
Edward Foy

Monahan
John Murray
Howard Norton
Shaub
Smith
Niel Thompson
Tracey
Moeller
Frank Dorry
Timothy
Gilmartin
Gallagher
Lynch

Northern Sector

First-Lieut. Charles E. Cartwright

Mess-Sergt. Anthony A. Lynch

First-Sergt. Robert Leet

Supply-Sergt. William Bloomer

Supply-Sergt. Edward J. Phillips

Corporals

Thomas Cappock
Henbach

Carl Kirkander
Arthur McKeon

John Monaco

Sergeants

Marks

Hanah

Behken

Privates

Frank Aufrecht
Birch
Richard Clemens
William Cronin
Aubrey Collins
Commons
Jack De Veris
Dorrey
Hymans
William Johnson
Henry Ketcht
John Lersner
Patrick Murphy
Moran
Meinecke

Mannion
Monroe
McLaren
McCollough
Kelly
McGarrity
Wolfe
Robert Newman
Raymond Fuchs
James A. Thornton
Thomas Taylor
Slyman
Milton Seymour
Frank Regan
Thomas O'Connor

William Wilson

APPENDIX III

Report Showing Posts and Disposition of Troops of the First Provisional Regiment, N. Y. G., on the New York Aqueduct

FIRST BATTALION

HUDSON RIVER TO HILLVIEW RESERVOIR AS OF AUGUST 24, 1917

SECTOR SOUTH-1

From: East intake shaft to Hudson River.

To: North end of Garrison River.

Commander: Capt. John W. Johnson.

Organization: Battery C, 1st Field Artillery, N. Y. G.

P. O. Address: Nelsonville, N. Y.

Telephone No: None at Headquarters. Most convenient 'phone, 134 J Cold-spring.

Headquarters camp, one-half mile northwest of Nelsonville, on lot commonly known as Gallows Field.

Outpost No. 1 camp, between N. Y. C. R.R. and public road opposite B. W. S. building at Breakneck.

Outpost No. 2 camp, on Aqueduct at Indian Brook crossing.

Outpost No. 3 B. W. S. building, on Aqueduct at north end of Garrison tunnel.

First-Lieut. Eaton commands the outposts.

Second-Lieut. Robinson commands Headquarters Sector.

OUTPOST No. 1

The first group of posts east of the Hudson River is made up of three posts day, the same number at night, covered as follows:

Day Duty

Present

Post

No.

| | | <i>Men</i> |
|---|--|------------|
| 1 | Pole 1885; east shaft at Hudson River; on river just north of Breakneck tunnel, N. Y. C. R.R.; 2 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 2 | Pole 1895; uptake shaft from hill, 700 feet above post No. 1; 14 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 3 | Pole 19B, 3 free-drainage culverts Nos. 110, 111, 112, between Breakneck tunnel and Bull Hill tunnel; three-quarters mile from camp..... | 2 |

Night Duty

| | | |
|---|--|---|
| 1 | Pole 1885; E shaft at Hudson River; on river just north of Breakneck tunnel, N. Y. C. R.R.; 2 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 2 | Pole 1895; uptake shaft from hill 700 feet above post No. 1; 14 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 3 | Pole 19B; 3 free-drainage culverts Nos. 110, 111, 112, between | |

Night Duty

*Present
Post
No.*

Men

| | |
|---|----|
| Breakneck tunnel and Bull Hill tunnel; three-quarters mile east of post camp..... | 4 |
| The above supervised by two non-commissioned officers; 2 men in camp. | |
| Total number of men at Outpost No. 1..... | 18 |

The second group of posts comprises the Headquarters section of Battery C, and is covered as follows:

Day Duty

| | | |
|----|---|---|
| 4 | Pole 1900; free-drainage culvert 113; north chamber Foundry Brook siphon; 150 feet south of Bull Hill tunnel; 5 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 5 | (Patrol); Pole 1911; free-drainage culvert 114, free-drainage pipe culvert No. 115, free-drainage culvert No. 116, and manholes; 3 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 6 | Pole 1920; Foundry Brook crossing No. 117; 50 feet south of public highway; 6 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 7 | Pole 1932; overhead crossing at No. 118; south chamber of Foundry Brook siphon; 200 feet public highway; 5 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 8 | Pole 1948; free-drainage culvert No. 119; 600 feet south of private road; 5 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 9 | Pole 1955; free-drainage culvert No. 120; 600 feet south of private road; 5 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 10 | Pole 1965; free-drainage culvert No. 121; 5 minutes from relief... | 1 |

Night Duty

| | | |
|----|--|---|
| 4 | Pole 1900; free-drainage culvert No. 113; north chamber Foundry Brook siphon; 150 feet south of Bull Hill tunnel; 5 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| 5 | (Patrol) Pole 1911; free-drainage culvert No. 114, free-drainage pipe culvert No. 115, free-drainage culvert No. 116, and manholes; 3 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| 6 | Pole 1920; Foundry Brook crossing No. 117; 50 feet south of public highway; 6 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| 7 | Pole 1932; overhead crossing at No. 118; south chamber Foundry Brook siphon; 200 feet public highway; 5 minutes from relief.... | 4 |
| 8 | Pole 1948; free drainage culvert No. 119; 600 feet south of private road; 6 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| 9 | Pole 1965; free-drainage culvert No. 120; 600 feet south of private road; 5 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| 10 | Pole 1965; free-drainage culvert No. 121; 5 minutes from relief... | 4 |

| | |
|--|----|
| Total number on guard, Headquarters Section..... | 35 |
| Supervised by 3 non-coms..... | 3 |
| On duty in camp, cooks, etc..... | 5 |
| Non-coms..... | 3 |

| | |
|--|----|
| Total number men Headquarters Section..... | 40 |
| Non-coms..... | 6 |

OUTPOST No. 11

Day Duty

| <i>Present Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
|---------------------------------|--|------------|
| 11 | Pole 1990; free drainage culvert No. 122; 100 feet south of McKeel tunnel; 15 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 12 | Pole 2015; free-drainage culvert No. 123; 275 feet south of Indian Brook road; north chamber Indian Brook siphon; 75 feet north of Indian Brook road; 2 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 13 | Pole 2026; Indian Brook crossing No. 124; 50 feet south of Indian Brook road; south chamber Indian Brook siphon; 150 feet south of crossing; 2 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| | Supervised by one non-commissioned officer. | |

Night Duty

| | | |
|----|---|----|
| 11 | Pole 1990; free-drainage culvert No. 122; 100 feet south of McKeel tunnel; 15 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| 12 | Pole 2015; free-drainage culvert No. 123; 275 feet north of Indian Brook road; 2 minutes from relief; north chamber Indian Brook siphon; 75 feet north of Indian Brook road; 2 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| 13 | Pole 2026; Indian Brook crossing No. 124; 50 feet south of Indian Brook road; south chamber Indian Brook siphon; 150 feet south of crossing; 2 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| | Supervised by one non-commissioned officer. | |
| | Total on guard for day and night..... | 15 |
| | Non-coms..... | 2 |
| | Cook..... | 1 |

Total at Outpost.....

OUTPOST No. 3

Comprising 3 day and 3 night posts, the latter capable of subdivision into 5 night posts.

Day Duty

| | | |
|----|--|---|
| 14 | Poles 2033-2043; free-drainage culvert No. 125; 75 feet south of public road; No. 126, 200 feet south of first; 3 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 15 | Pole 2054; free-drainage culvert No. 127; 15 minutes from relief.. | 1 |
| 16 | Poles 2085-2089; free-drainage culvert No. 128; 100 feet north of public road crossing; culvert No. 129; 20 feet north of public road crossing; 3 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| | Supervised by non-commissioned officer | |

Night Duty

| | | |
|----|---|---|
| 14 | Patrol Poles 2033-2043; 2 free-drainage culverts, Nos. 125, 126; 75 feet south of public road; 2nd 200 feet south of 1st; 15 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
|----|---|---|

*Night Duty**Present**Post**No.**Men*

| | | |
|----|---|---|
| 15 | Pole 2054; free-drainage culvert No. 127; 15 minutes from relief | 4 |
| 16 | Patrol Poles 2085-2089; 2 free-drainage culverts, Nos. 128, 129; 100 feet north of public road crossing; culvert No. 129, about 20 feet north of public road crossing; 3 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| | Supervised by 1 non-commissioned officer. | |
| | On duty in camp (cook)..... | 1 |
| | Non-coms..... | 2 |

Total number of men at Outpost No. 3..... 18

Men N.C.O.

| | | |
|---|----|---|
| Total number of men at Outpost No. 1..... | 16 | 2 |
| " " " " " Headquarters Camp..... | 40 | 6 |
| " " " " " Outpost No. 2..... | 16 | 2 |
| " " " " " Outpost No. 3..... | 16 | 2 |

Total number of men in Battery C..... 88 12

SECTOR SOUTH-2

From: South end of Garrison tunnel.

To: South Peekskill siphon chamber.

Commander: Captain John J. Roche.

Organization: Sixty-ninth Depot Unit.

P. O. Address: Peekskill, N. Y.

Telephone No: 955 Peekskill.

Headquarters, Cortlandtville, N. Y., at Peekskill Hollow Road; B. W. S. building; 3-story frame house, partly occupied by city employees; (Peekskill Division House), Peekskill Hollow road.

*Day Duty**Post**No.**Men*

| | | |
|------|--|---|
| 8 | Patrol Poles 2095-2126; 1 manhole and 1 open drain from south end of Garrison tunnel to north siphon chamber; 25 minutes from relief | 1 |
| 18 7 | Poles 2127-2134; north siphon chamber; 20 minutes from relief | 1 |
| 19 6 | Poles 2135-2149; south siphon chamber; 1 blow-off chamber, 2 manholes covered by observation; from right of way No. 555 to north end of Cat Hill tunnel; 15 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 20 5 | Patrol Poles 2173-2186; free-draining culvert; from south end of Cat Hill tunnel between right of way No. 563; 35 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 21 4 | Poles 2187-2197; 2 free-draining culverts; between right of way No. 564 and north siphon chamber; 30 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 22 3 | Poles 2198-2207; north siphon chamber, Cat Hill; 30 minutes from relief; 15 by auto..... | |

Day Duty

| <i>Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
|---------------------|---|------------|
| 23 | 2 Patrol Poles 2208-2209; 4 manholes and blow-off chamber at Peekskill Creek; from Peekskill Hollow road to south siphon chamber; 2 minutes from relief. | I |
| 24 | 1 Patrol Poles 2230-2258; 2 culverts, 1 air-valve and blow-out chamber near Peekskill Division house and 4 manholes; from Peekskill Hollow road to south siphon chamber; 1 minute from relief. | I |

Night Duty (Outposts)

| | | |
|----|--|---|
| 17 | Patrol Poles 2095-2109; 1 manhole and open drain; from south end of Garrison tunnel to right of way No. 546; 25 minutes from relief. | 2 |
| 18 | Patrol Poles 2110-2124; right of way No. 546 to north siphon covers line for 1800 feet; 20 minutes from relief. | 2 |
| 19 | Poles 2125-2127; north end of siphon chamber; north siphon chamber; 20 minutes from relief. | 2 |
| 20 | Poles 2128-2134; south side of north siphon chamber; north siphon chamber; 20 minutes from relief. | 2 |
| 21 | Patrol Poles 2135-2147; 1 manhole; 1 blow-off chamber from right of way No. 555 to right of way No. 556; 15 minutes from relief. ... | 2 |
| 22 | Poles 2148-2149; south siphon chamber; 1 manhole covered by observation; 50 feet north of north end of Cat Hill tunnel; 15 minutes from relief. | 2 |

Night Duty (Line Posts)

| | | |
|--|---|---|
| 23 | From 2173-2177; 1 free-draining culvert and manhole; 200 feet south of Cat Hill tunnel; 35 minutes from relief. | 2 |
| 24 | From 2178-2186; 1 free-draining culvert 380 feet north of right of way No. 563; 35 minutes from relief; 15 by auto. | 2 |
| 25 | Poles 2187-2196; 1 free-draining culvert between right of way No. 555 and No. 554; 30 minutes from relief; 15 by auto. | 2 |
| 26 | Poles 2192-2197; 1 free-draining culvert about 400 feet from north siphon chamber; 30 minutes from relief; 15 by auto. | 2 |
| 27 | Poles 2198-2199; north side of north siphon chamber, Cat Hill; 30 minutes from relief; 15 by auto. | 2 |
| 28 | Poles 2200-2207; south side of north siphon chamber, Cat Hill; 30 minutes from relief. | 2 |
| 29 | Patrol Poles 2208-2219; 2 manholes; 1 blow-off chamber at Peekskill Creek; from Peekskill Creek to top of cut; 5 minutes from relief | 2 |
| 30 | Patrol Poles 2220-2229; 2 manholes from top of cut to Peekskill Hollow road; 2 minutes from relief. | 2 |
| 31 | Patrol Poles 2230-2239; 1 culvert; 1 airhole; 1 manhole; 1 blow-off chamber; from Peekskill Hollow road to right of way No. 576; 1 minute from relief. | 2 |
| 32 | Patrol Poles 2239-2258; from south siphon chamber to right of way No. 577; 2 minutes from relief. | 2 |
| Three non-commissioned officers supervise the line of posts. | | |
| One non-commissioned officer supervises the outposts. | | |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|---|----|
| Total number of non-coms. and men on duty per 24 hours..... | 44 |
| Total number of non-coms. and men in camp for other duty..... | 5 |
| Absent without leave..... | 2 |
| Total number of non-coms. and men..... | 51 |
| Officers..... | 2 |
| Total..... | 53 |

SECTOR SOUTH-3

From: South Peekskill siphon.

To: North chamber Hunter's Brook siphon.

Commander: Captain John M. Thompson.

Organization: Fourth Co. 9th Coast Artillery.

P. O. Address: Peekskill, N. Y.

Telephone No: 956 Peekskill.

Headquarters, Todd Farm, Compound road and Locust Avenue. B. W. S. building, 1; private building, 1; loaned by Mr. Harding (outpost).

Day Duty (Line Post)

| | <i>Present</i> | | | <i>Men</i> |
|----|----------------|---|--|------------|
| | <i>Post</i> | | | |
| | <i>No.</i> | | | |
| 25 | 1 | Poles 2258-2266; siphon house; 1 culvert No. 139; 1 manhole; roadway 200 yards south of siphon; 25 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| 26 | 2 | Poles 2274-2277; culvert No. 140; manhole No. 85; 40 yards south of roadway and shack; 20 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| 27 | 3 | Poles 2284-2288; culverts Nos. 141, 142; 60 yards from Hotel Owen on hillside; 15 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| 28 | 5 | Poles 2323-2325; culvert No. 143; 150 yards north of school-house on roadway; 5 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| 29 | 6 | Poles 2330-2332; 2 culverts, Nos. 144, 145; 300 yards south of Todd Farm; 2 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| 30 | 7 | Poles 2337-2339; culvert No. 146; manhole No. 86; 150 yards south of shack; 5 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| 31 | 8 | Poles 2353-2360; 1 culvert, No. 147; 450 feet south of crossway leading from Compound road 100 feet southwest of two-story frame building; 10 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| 32 | 9 | Poles 2366-2374; culvert No. 148; 300 feet northwest of red barn; culvert No. 149 and manhole 200 yards west of old stone-crusher; 13 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| 33 | 10 | Poles 2383-2393; culvert No. 150; 1,000 yards east of two-story frame house on Compound road; culvert No. 151 runs under about 10 feet south of pole 2393, about 300 yards southeast of two-story slate-colored building; 18 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| 34 | 11 | Pole 2400; culvert No. 152; under road to farm on western end of culvert is 10 feet south of slate-colored barn; 22 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| 35 | 12 | Poles 2407-2419; culvert No. 152; 150 yards east of Compound road; culvert No. 154, 1000 yards east of 2 red barns on cross-road; 24 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| 36 | 13 | Pole 2430; culvert No. 155; 24 yards south of tel. pole 2430; 28 minutes from relief..... | | 1 |
| | | Supervised by 1 sergeant and 2 corporals. | | |

Day Duty (Outposts)
Also Night Duty

| <i>Present Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
|---------------------------------|---|------------|
| 37 | 1 No tel. pole; Hunter's Brook siphon house; 2 manholes, Nos. 89, 90, and 1 culvert; located state road at crossing of county road; white farm-house and barn; 96 minutes from headquarters, and 1 siphon chamber is 3 minutes from relief. Supervised by 1 sergeant. | 6 |
| 33 | 1 Pole 2258; siphon house; 25 minutes from relief. | 2 |
| 34 | 1A Pole 2266; culvert and manhole; roadway 200 yards south of siphon; 25 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 35 | 2 Poles 2274-2277; culvert No. 140; manhole No. 85; 40 yards south of roadway and shack; 20 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 36 | 3 Poles 2284-2288; culvert No. 141; 15 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 37 | 4 Poles 2284-2288; culvert No. 142; 15 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 38 | 5 Poles 2323-2325; culvert No. 143; 150 yards north of school-house on roadway; 5 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 39 | 6 Poles 2330-2332; culvert No. 144; 300 yards south of Todd Farm; 2 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 40 | 7 Poles 2330-2332; culvert No. 145; 300 yards south of Todd Farm; 2 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 41 | 8 Poles 2337-2339; culvert No. 146; manhole No. 86; 150 yards south of shack; 5 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 42 | 9 Poles 2353-2360; culvert No. 147; 450 feet south of crossway leading from Compound road; 10 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 43 | 10 Poles 2366-2374; culverts Nos. 147-149; No. 148 is 300 feet north of red frame barn; No. 149 is 200 yards west of old stone crusher; 13 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 44 | 11 Poles 2383-2393; culvert No. 150; 1000 yards east of two-story frame house on Compound road; culvert No. 151 runs under camp about 10 feet south of pole 2393, about 300 yards southeast of two-story frame slate-colored building. | 1 |
| 45 | 12 Pole 2400; culvert No. 152; under road to farm on west; western end of culvert is 10 feet south of slate-colored barn; 22 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 46 | 12A Poles 2407-2419; culvert No. 153, 150 yards east of Compound road; 24 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 47 | 13 Poles 2407-2419; culvert No. 154, 100 yards east of red barn on cross road; 24 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 48 | 14 Pole 2430; culvert No. 155; 24 yards south of pole 2430; 28 minutes from relief. These posts are supervised by 1 sergeant and 2 corporals. | 1 |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|--|----|
| Total non-coms. and men on duty for 24 hours. | 42 |
| Total non-coms. and men in camp for other duty. | 18 |
| | — |
| Total non-coms. and men. | 60 |
| Officers. | 3 |
| | — |
| Total. | 63 |

SECTOR SOUTH-4

From: Scribner's Farm.

To: North shore of Croton Lake.

Commander: Captain Arthur E. Connor.

Organization: Co. F, 1st Regiment, N. Y. G.

P. O. Address: Scribner's Farm, Yorktown Heights, N. Y., Westchester County.

Telephone No.: Yorktown, 12-F-11.

Headquarters: Scribner's Farm, Yorktown Heights.

B. W. S. building, Engineer's house.

Camp near Headquarters at Scribner's Farm.

Day Duty (Line Posts)

| <i>Present Post No.</i> | | | <i>Men</i> |
|-------------------------|---|---|------------|
| 42 | 1 | Pole 2593; downtake shaft to Croton Lake; pressure siphon; north shore of Croton Lake; 100 feet north of north lake road.. This outpost is on duty for 24 hours. Supervised by 1 corporal. Men cook for themselves. | 3 |

Night Duty (Line Posts)

| | | | |
|----|---|--|---|
| 49 | 1 | Poles 2515-2526; culvert No. 157; manhole No. 93; 270 yards north of Headquarters; 3 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 50 | 2 | Pole 2544; culvert No. 158; manhole No. 94; 270 yards south of Headquarters; 3 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 51 | 3 | Pole 2551; culvert No. 159; 200 yards north of Croton Lake and Yorktown Heights road; 7½ minutes from relief..... Above posts supervised by 2 sergeants and 3 corporals. | 2 |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|---|----|
| Number of men and non-coms. on duty for 24 hours..... | 25 |
| On duty in camp: 1 first sergeant, 1 supply sergeant, 1 mess sergeant, 1 cook, 1 mechanic, 2 kitchen police, 1 clerk, 2 special duty, 5 sick and on pass..... | 15 |
| Officers..... | 1 |
| Total..... | 41 |

SECTOR SOUTH-5

From: South siphon Croton Lake.

To: Washburn Farm-house—base at north side Sherrill Hill.

Commander: Captain Ernest T. Van Zandt.

Organization: Co. B, 12th Infantry, N. Y. G.

P. O. Address: Millwood, N. Y.

Telephone: Chappaqua, 98 R.

Southern limit, 'phone Briarcliff 135-F-14.

Headquarters: Camp Dyer.

B. W. S. buildings, Camp Bolton.

*Present
Post
No.*

Men

| | | |
|----|--|----|
| 43 | Croton Dam. Outpost. This covers two gates open during the day and closed at night. Each gate guarded during the day by one man; at night one additional post established in center of dam. Local subsistence. | |
| | Day guard..... | 2 |
| | Night guard—two shifts..... | 6 |
| | 2 non-coms, 1 cook, 1 supernumerary attached to this outpost | 44 |
| 44 | Outpost. Uptake for New Croton Aqueduct. Five points are covered by this outpost screen chamber for 24 hours..... | 3 |
| | Yellow house and boat-hole 24 hours..... | 3 |
| | Shaft24 hours..... | 2 |
| | Culvert.....24 hours..... | 3 |
| | Cut and cover.....24 hours..... | 2 |
| | | 14 |
| | One non-com.; 1 cook. Local subsistence..... | 2 |

Day Posts

| | | |
|----|--|----|
| 45 | Manhole south of Croton tunnel, No. 2696; 12 minutes from relief..... | I |
| 46 | Manhole; Ossining to Kitchawan Station; poles Nos. 2717-2719; 3 minutes from relief..... | I |
| 47 | Culvert and cut and cover, tel. poles Nos. 2729-2730; 25 minutes from relief..... | I |
| 48 | Culvert and manhole, tel. poles Nos. 2738-2739; 25 minutes from relief..... | I |
| 49 | Culvert; tel. poles Nos. 2741-2742; 22 minutes from relief..... | I |
| 50 | Culvert; tel. poles Nos. 2744-2745; 20 minutes from relief..... | I |
| 51 | Culvert; tel. pole No. 2754; 12 minutes from relief..... | I |
| 52 | Culvert and manhole; 5 minutes from relief..... | I |
| 53 | Culvert No. 2772; 2 minutes from relief..... | I |
| | One non-commissioned officer supervising..... | I |
| | Total..... | 10 |

Night Posts

| | | |
|----|--|---|
| 52 | Manhole; tel. poles Nos. 2692-2696; 12 minutes from relief.... | 2 |
| 53 | Cut and cover; Nos. 2716-2706; 2 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 54 | Manhole; tel. poles Nos. 2717-2719; 3 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 55 | Cut and cover; Nos. 2728-2721; 40 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 56 | Manhole, culvert; tel. poles Nos. 2729-2730; 35 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 57 | Cut and cover; poles Nos. 2727-2731; 30 minutes from relief.... | 2 |
| 58 | Culvert and manhole; poles Nos. 2738-2739; 25 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 59 | Culvert; poles Nos. 2741-2742; 22 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 60 | Culvert; poles Nos. 2744-2745; 20 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 61 | Cut and cover; poles Nos. 2753-2746; 17 minutes from relief.... | 2 |
| 62 | Culvert; tel. pole No. 2754; 12 minutes from relief..... | 2 |

Night Posts

*Present
Post
No.*

Men

| | | |
|----|--|---|
| 63 | Cut and cover; tel. poles Nos. 2758-2763; 10 minutes from relief | 2 |
| 64 | Culvert and manhole; tel. pole No. 2765; 5 minutes from relief. | 2 |
| 65 | Culvert; tel. pole No. 2772; 2 minutes from relief. | 2 |
| 66 | Commissary Depot—Millwood, N. Y.—1 minute from relief.... | 2 |
| | Supervised by 1 non-commissioned officer..... | 1 |

Total..... 31
Southern Sector running south from Headquarters in Millwood.

Day Posts

| | | |
|----|---|---|
| 54 | Manhole in Millwood and culvert; tel. poles Nos. 2782-2783; 15 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 55 | Two manholes and boat-hole; railroad crossing siphon; tel. poles Nos. 3011-2791; 5 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 56 | Boat hole south of siphon; tel. poles Nos. 2796-2797; 2 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 57 | Manhole and culvert; tel. poles Nos. 2810-2811; 6 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 58 | Culvert; tel. poles Nos. 2819-2820; 9 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 59 | Manhole; tel. pole No. 2827; 14 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| | One non-com. supervising..... | 1 |
| | Total..... | 7 |

Night Posts

| | | |
|----|--|----|
| 67 | Tel. poles Nos. 2782-2783; manhole and culvert; 15 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 68 | Tel. poles Nos. 2786-2787; culvert; 10 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 69 | Tel. pole No. 2791; manhole and boat-hole; railroad crossing; 5 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 70 | Tel. pole No. 3011; manhole south of railroad crossing; 2 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 71 | Tel. poles Nos. 2796-2797; boat-hole south of siphon; 2 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 72 | Tel. poles Nos. 2796-2809; boat-holes, cut and cover; 2 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 73 | Tel. poles. Nos. 2810-2811; manhole and culvert; 8 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 74 | Tel. poles Nos. 2809-2819; culvert; 9 minutes from relief..... | 2 |
| 75 | Tel. poles Nos. 2821-2826; cut and cover; 10 minutes from relief... | 2 |
| 76 | Tel. poles Nos. 2826-2827; manhole; 14 minutes from relief.... | 2 |
| | One non-com. supervising..... | 1 |
| | Total..... | 21 |
| 60 | Outpost at Halsted's Farm; shaft No. 1; 1 minute from relief; in 24 hours..... | 3 |
| | One non-com.; 1 cook; 1 super..... | 3 |
| | Total..... | 6 |
| | Local subsistence..... | |

Night Posts

| <i>Present Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
|---------------------------------|---|------------|
| 61 | Outpost at Stills Farm; shaft No. 2; old Croton Dam; 1 minute from relief; in 24 hours..... | 3 |
| | One non-com.; 1 cook; 1 super..... | 3 |
| | Total..... | 6 |
| | Local subsistence..... | |
| 62 | Outpost south of road; cut and cover; in 24 hours..... | 9 |
| | One non-com.; 1 cook..... | 2 |
| | Total..... | 11 |
| | Local subsistence..... | |
| 63 | Outpost, Pocantico blow-out; in 24 hours..... | 3 |
| | One non-com..... | 1 |
| | Total..... | 4 |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|---|-----|
| Number of non-coms. and men on guard in 24 hours..... | 123 |
| In camp..... | 23 |
| On leave..... | 12 |
| Officers..... | 3 |
| Total..... | 161 |

SECTOR SOUTH-6

From: Harlem R.R. siphon at Sarles Hill.
 To: Kensico influent.
 Commander: Captain J. R. Stewart.
 Organization: Co. C, 7th Infantry, N. Y. G.
 P. O. Address: East Pleasantville, N. Y.
 Telephone No.: Pleasantville, 217.
 B. W. S. buildings, 1; Bedford road near Broadway.
 Camp on Aqueduct 200 yards south of B. W. S. building.

Day and Night Duty (Outposts)

| <i>Present Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
|---------------------------------|--|------------|
| 64 | 7 and 8 Pole No. 2832; high-power poles Nos. 236 and 237; Harlem R.R. siphon at side of railroad tracks between siphon houses; 7, 2 minutes from relief; 8, 3 minutes from relief..... | 8 |
| | Supervised by non-coms..... | 3 |
| | Cooks on detail..... | 1 |

Day Duty (Line Posts)

| | | |
|----|---|---|
| 65 | 5 Pole No. 2862; high-power pole No. 228; coagulating chamber; on Broadway east of Pleasantville, 200 yards south of Broadway | 1 |
|----|---|---|

Day Duty (Line Posts)

| <i>Present Post No.</i> | | | <i>Men</i> |
|-------------------------|---|--|------------|
| 66 | 4 | Pole No. 2874; high-power pole No. 224; Pleasantville meter; boat-hole No. 117; manhole No. 118; Pleasantville meter No. 119; free-drainage culvert, No. 184; manhole No. 120; boat-hole No. 121; 470 feet south of Pleasantville meter; 1 minute from relief. | 1 |
| 67 | 3 | Pole No. 2583; high-power pole No. 221; patrol covering west end of tunnel; free-draining culvert; 100 feet from water supply hospital; one-half minute from relief. | 1 |
| | | Supervised by non-coms. | 3 |

Day and Night (Outposts)

| | | | |
|----|---|---|---|
| 68 | 1 | Pole, none; influent chamber head of Kensico Dam; 1 minute from relief. | 4 |
| | | Non-coms. | 3 |
| | | Cooks. | 1 |
| | | Independent cooking establishment. | |

Night Duty (Line Posts)

| | | | |
|----|---|---|---|
| 77 | 5 | Pole No. 2862; high-power pole No. 228; coagulating chamber; on Broadway east of Pleasantville, 200 yards south of Broadway | 3 |
| 78 | 4 | Pole No. 2874; high-power pole No. 224; Pleasantville meter; boat-hole No. 117; manhole No. 118; Pleasantville meter No. 119; free-draining culvert No. 184; manhole No. 120; boat-hole No. 121; 470 feet south of Pleasantville meter; 1 minute from relief. | 3 |
| 79 | 3 | Pole No. 2883; high-power pole No. 221; patrol covering north end of tunnel; free-draining culvert; 100 feet from water-supply hospital; one-half minute from relief. | 3 |
| | | Supervised by non-coms. | 3 |
| | | One first sergeant; 1 mess sergeant; 1 supply sergeant; 2 patrolling sergeants, attached to Headquarters; 2 cooks; 1 kitchen police; 1 clerk; 1 sanitary detail; 3 supernumeraries; 1 corporal; on special duty in camp. | |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|--|----|
| Number privates and non-coms. on guard per 24 hours. | 36 |
| Number on duty at Headquarters. | 14 |
| Cooks at outposts. | 2 |
| Absent with leave. | 2 |
| <hr/> | |
| Total, privates and non-coms. | 54 |
| Officers. | 3 |
| <hr/> | |
| Total number in command. | 57 |

SECTOR SOUTH-7

From: Upper effluent chamber, Kensico Dam.
 To: Siphon house in Pleasantville.
 Commander: Captain A. T. Surick.
 Organization: Battery B, V. C. A.
 P. O. Address: Valhalla, N. Y.
 Telephone No.: 2243, White Plains.
 Headquarters at Valhalla, N. Y., western end of Kensico Dam.
 Camp, western end of Kensico Dam.

Day and Night Duty (Outposts)

Each of the following is a separate outpost.
 Subsistence furnished by auto 48 hours ahead.

| | <i>Present Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
|----|---------------------------------|--|--------------|
| 69 | 6 | Pole No. 3065; effluent chamber; 2 minutes from relief..... | 3 |
| | | Supervised by non-coms..... | 3 |
| 70 | 7 | Pole No. 3075; lower effluent; aeration station under construction; south of effluent station on lake..... | V.C.A. 2 |
| | | | 9th C.A.C. 2 |
| 71 | 8 | Pole No. 3083; chlorination station; on Lake road; 3 minutes from relief..... | V.C.A. 2 |
| | | | 9th C.A.C. 1 |
| 72 | 9 | Pole No. 4143; Kensico siphon; close to Putnam R.R.; one-third to one-half mile west on Kensico road; 1 minute from relief. Supplied by auto from Headquarters. | 4 |
| 73 | 10 | Pole No. 3164; south chamber siphon of Kensico Dam; 500 yards north of Kensico Cemetery tunnel; 1 minute from relief. Supplied by auto; independent cooking. | 4 |
| 74 | 11 | Pole No. 3177; entrance of Kensico Cemetery tunnel; in natural gully at entrance of tunnel; 1 mile north of outer post of Elmsford detachment; 1 minute from relief..... | 4 |

Day Duty (Line Posts)

| | | | |
|----|---|--|---|
| 75 | 1 | Pole none; intersection of road and dam at Headquarters..... | 2 |
| 76 | 3 | Pole none; east approach of dam; Lake drive road under construction; not approachable by auto; 1 minute from relief..... | 2 |
| 77 | 5 | Pole none; base of dam..... | 2 |

Night Duty (Line Posts)

| | | | |
|----|---|--|---|
| 80 | 1 | Pole none; west approach to dam..... | 2 |
| 81 | 2 | Pole none; top center of dam; 5 minutes from relief..... | 3 |
| 82 | 3 | No pole; east approach to dam; road under construction; impossible for auto to approach..... | 2 |
| 83 | 4 | Lower center of dam..... | 2 |
| | | Above post supervised by 3 non-coms. | |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|--|----|
| Number of men and non-coms. on guard in 24 hours | 43 |
| In camp for other duty..... | 11 |
| Total number of men and non-coms. | 54 |
| Officers..... | 2 |
| Total..... | 56 |

SECTOR SOUTH-8

From: Kensico Cemetery tunnel.
 To: Elmsford south siphon chamber.
 Commander: Lieut. J. M. Perry.
 Organization: Co. B, V. C. A.
 P. O. Address: Elmsford, N. Y.
 Telephone No.: Elmsford, 873.
 Headquarters: Elmsford, N. Y.
 B. W. S. buildings.

Day and Night Duty (Outposts)

| | | |
|----|---|---|
| 79 | Tel. pole No. 3230; manhole and filter chamber south of lower cross-road..... | 3 |
| 80 | Tel. poles Nos. 3240-3250; overflow culverts and manhole south limit; pole No. 3259..... | 6 |
| 81 | Tel. poles Nos. 3260-3265; 2 culverts; manhole; 750 feet apart; 185 feet north of pole No. 3269..... | 3 |
| 82 | Tel. pole No. 3278; culvert; 280 feet north of country road adjacent to two dwellings, Fox estate..... | 3 |
| 83 | Tel. poles Nos. 3284-3288A; 2 culverts and manhole; 750 feet apart; crossing of country road..... | 6 |
| 84 | Tel. pole No. 3298; culvert; 510 feet north of north siphon chamber; 400 feet south of Millwood road..... | 3 |
| 85 | Tel. pole No. 3304; siphon chamber at north Elmsford siphon chamber..... | 3 |
| 86 | Tel. poles Nos. 3307-3312; culvert; 3 manholes; limit of patrol 150 feet White Plains and Tarrytown road..... | 3 |
| 87 | Tel. pole No. 3316; south Elmsford siphon chamber..... | 3 |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|---|----|
| Supervised by 2 sergeants. | |
| Number of privates and non-coms. for 24 hours..... | 35 |
| Six privates, 1 mess sergeant, 1 first sergeant on duty in camp.... | 8 |
| Total privates and non-coms..... | 43 |
| Officers..... | 1 |
| Total..... | 44 |
| Sergeants cover posts 1 to 5 and 6 to 9; 9 men and 1 corporal from Coast Artillery; balance from V. C. A. | |

SECTOR SOUTH-9

From: Pole No. 3343, north of Dobbs Ferry road.

To: New York City line.

Commander: Captain Louis J. Praeger.

Organization: V. C. A.

P. O. Address: White Plains, N. Y., R. F. D.

Telephone: White Plains, 1882.

Headquarters: Dobbs Ferry and Aqueduct, pole No. 3365.

B. W. S. buildings (4 used), 1 at Dobbs Ferry and Aqueduct; 1 at Jackson Ave. and Aqueduct, Scarsdale; 1 at Tuckahoe road and Aqueduct, Tuckahoe; 1 at Hillview Reservoir.

UPPER SECTION

Headquarters, Dobbs Ferry and Aqueduct

| | | <i>Day Duty</i> | |
|----|-------------------------|--|------------|
| | <i>Present Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
| 88 | 1 | Poles Nos. 3343-3360; 2 culverts; 2 manholes; from tunnel north of pole No. 3343 to tunnel at No. 3363 north of Dobbs Ferry road; 4½ minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 89 | 2 | Poles Nos. 3376-3408; 2 culverts; 2 manholes; from tunnel at pole No. 3363 to 200 feet above farm road at pole No. 3411; 5 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 90 | 3 | Poles Nos. 3408-3448; 5 culverts, 2 manholes; from 200 feet above farm road at pole No. 3411 to 300 feet below culvert at No. 3445; 5 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 91 | 4 | Poles Nos. 3448-3463; 2 culverts; from 300 feet below culvert at No. 3445 to culvert at No. 3463; 4 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| 92 | 5 | Poles 3463-3493; 4 culverts; from culvert at No. 3463 to 400 feet below road at No. 3490; 4 minutes from relief..... | 1 |

Night Duty

| | | | |
|----|---|---|---|
| 84 | 1 | Poles Nos. 3343-3360; 2 culverts; 2 manholes; from tunnel north of pole No. 3343 to tunnel at No. 3363 north of Dobbs Ferry Road; 4½ minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| 85 | 2 | Poles 3376-3408; 2 culverts; 2 manholes; from tunnel at pole No. 3363 to 200 feet above farm road at pole No. 3411; 5 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| 86 | 3 | Poles Nos. 3408-3448; 5 culverts; 2 manholes; extreme northerly culvert near No. 3408; fixed post at night, and culvert at No. 3448 fixed post at night; patrol between two shifts..... | 6 |
| 87 | 4 | Poles Nos. 3448-3463; 2 culverts; from 300 feet south of culvert at No. 3445 to culvert at No. 3463; 4 minutes from relief..... | 4 |
| 88 | 5 | Poles Nos. 3463-3494; 4 culverts; from culvert No. 3463 to culvert below road at No. 3490; 4 minutes from relief..... | 4 |

These posts are supervised during the 24 hours by 7 non-commissioned officers.

MIDDLE SECTION

| <i>Present</i> | | <i>Day Duty</i> | | |
|---|---|--|--|------------|
| <i>Post</i> | | | | |
| <i>No.</i> | | | | <i>Men</i> |
| 93 | 4 | Headquarters Lieut. Taft, at siphon house at pole No. 3543. and 5 Poles Nos. 3494-3532; 2 culverts; 2 boat-holes; 1 manhole; from 300 feet above Platt Avenue to 300 feet below farm road; 7 minutes from relief. | | 1 |
| 94 | 3 | Poles Nos. 3502-3533; 2 culverts; 1 manhole; 1 siphon house; 5 minutes from relief. | | 1 |
| 95 | 2 | Poles Nos. 3546-3553; 2 culverts; 1 manhole; 1 siphon house (observation covers vulnerable points other than siphon house on this post); 5 minutes from relief. | | 2 |
| 96 | 1 | Poles Nos. 3553-3585; 2 culverts; 2 manholes; 1 meter house; from culvert at No. 3553 to 100 feet below culvert at No. 3584; 3 minutes from relief. | | 1 |
| <i>Night Duty</i> | | | | |
| 89 | 4 | and 5 Poles Nos. 3493-3532; 2 culverts; 2 boat-holes; 1 manhole; 300 feet above Platt Avenue to 50 feet below farm road; 7 minutes from relief. | | 4 |
| 90 | 3 | Poles Nos. 3502-3533; 2 culverts; 1 manhole; 1 siphon house; from 50 feet below farm-house at No. 3503 to siphon house at No. 3533; 5 minutes from relief. | | 4 |
| 91 | 2 | Poles Nos. 3546-3553; 2 culverts; 1 manhole; 1 siphon house; 5 minutes from relief. | | 4 |
| 92 | 1 | Poles Nos. 3553-3585; 2 culverts; 2 manholes; 1 meter house; 3 minutes from relief. | | 3 |
| These posts are supervised during 24 hours by 5 non-commissioned officers. | | | | |
| NOTE: From this point southward the Aqueduct and its vulnerable points are covered by outposts; at present greatly unmanned, and because of that fact necessarily indicated for day and night duty at once; for instance, it is apparent that to show in any intelligent fashion the method by which six men can patrol the outlet and inlet houses at Hillview together with a patrol of 1½ miles around the reservoir during 24 hours, would require several paragraphs of justification; the fact remains that it is being done. The outpost at Ardsley is properly a part of the middle section, covering as follows: | | | | |
| 97 | 6 | Two boat-holes at gate house; 1 overflow; Sawmill River road near Ashford Avenue; 3 minutes from relief; 1 fixed post at gate house and overflow, day and night. | | 4 |
| 98 | 5 | Outpost poles Nos. 3585-3620; 2 culverts; 3 manholes; meter house; 4 fixed posts; covered during 24 hours by 6 men, 1 non-com., 1 cook (both non-coms. and cook do guard duty; local subsistence) | | |
| 99 | 4 | Outpost poles Nos. 3620-3657; 2 culverts; 1 siphon house; 4 manholes; from 100 feet below farm road at No. 3619 to Tuckahoe road; 5 minutes from relief. | | 5 |
| Non-com. | | | | |

Night Duty

| <i>Present Post No.</i> | | | <i>Men</i> |
|-------------------------|---|--|------------|
| | | Cook..... | 1 |
| | | Headquarters | |
| 100 | | Post at junction Tuckahoe road and Aqueduct pole No. 3637; 3 men guard the stores at this point; with one of them also acting as orderly, these three men covering the period of 24 hours. | |
| 101 | 3 | Poles Nos. 3665-3681; 1 culvert; 6 manholes; 1 gate house; 1 blowout; 1 drain cover; from Tuckahoe road to culvert at No. 3682; all subsist at Headquarters..... | 9 |
| 102 | 2 | Outpost at Dunwoodie; 1 chlorinating plant and gate house.... | 4 |
| | | Non-com..... | 1 |
| | | Cook..... | 1 |
| 103 | 1 | Outlet and inlet houses at Hillview Reservoir patrol of 1½ miles. | 6 |
| | | Non-coms..... | 2 |
| | | Cook..... | 1 |

Because of the frequent change of the personnel of the V. C. A., it is impossible to give a summary or recapitulation at this point showing the number in camp not on guard duty. The above figures indicate the number on actual guard duty for 24 hours, in the case of outposts, with the duty subdivided into day and night, where the operation of the posts permits.

SECOND BATTALION

SECTOR NORTH-1

From: South Tongore siphon chamber.

To: Tongore road.

Commander: Captain Alfred Broadbent.

Organization: Cos. A and B, 1st Infantry.

Post Office: Atwood, N. Y.

Telephone Nos.: Atwood. New Paltz 27 F 21.

Davis Corners, 27 F 4.

Headquarters: B. W. S. buildings.

DAVIS CORNERS SECTION

Post No.

4 bicycle patrols in daytime.

Day Posts

| | | | |
|---|--|---|---------|
| 1 | South Tongore siphon to pole No. 105..... | 1 | manhole |
| | 3 culverts at tel. poles Nos. 92, 100 and 105. | | |
| | 3 minutes from relief; cut and cover. | | |
| 2 | 3 culverts at poles Nos. 114, 120 and 125..... | 1 | " |
| | 2 minutes from relief; cut and cover. | | |
| 3 | 3 culverts at poles Nos. 126, 135 and 138..... | 1 | " |
| | 1 minute from relief; cut and cover. | | |

*Day Posts**Post No.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---------|
| 4 | 3 culverts at poles Nos. 145, 149 and 153; 5 minutes from relief..... | 1 | manhole |
| | Supervised by 2 non-coms. on bicycles..... | 2 | " |
| | Cut and cover. | | |

Night Posts

At night 12 fixed posts, as follows, 2 shifts each:

| <i>Post No.</i> | | | <i>Men</i> |
|-----------------|--|--|------------|
| 1 | Culvert at pole No. 92..... | | 2 |
| 2 | " " 100..... | | 2 |
| 3 | " " 105..... | | 2 |
| 4 | " " 114..... | | 2 |
| 5 | " " 120..... | | 2 |
| 6 | " " 125..... | | 2 |
| 7 | " " 126..... | | 2 |
| 8 | " " 135..... | | 2 |
| 9 | " " 138..... | | 2 |
| 10 | " " 145..... | | 2 |
| 11 | " " 149..... | | 2 |
| 12 | " " 153..... | | 2 |
| | Supervised by 4 non-coms..... | | 4 |
| | Number of non-coms. on guard duty..... | | 6 |
| | Number of non-coms. in camp..... | | 16 |
| | One commissioned officer..... | | 1 |
| | Total..... | | 51 |

COMPANIES A AND B CONSOLIDATED

ATWOOD SECTION

Day Posts

From Tongore road to the Peak.

Four walking patrols during the day.

In this sector the present system of day duty is 4 A.M. to 12 noon and 12 noon to 8 P.M.

| <i>Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
|-----------------|---|------------|
| 5 | Poles Nos. 157 to 190; 4 culverts at poles Nos. 170, 175, 184 and 188; 7 to 17 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 2 |
| 6 | Tel. poles Nos. 190 to 227; 6 culverts at poles Nos. 198, 207, 215, 220, 225 and 228; 7 to 13 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 2 |
| 7 | Tel. poles Nos. 227 to 266; 4 culverts at poles Nos. 237, 252, 261, and 266; 15 to 30 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 2 |
| 8 | Tel. poles Nos. 266 to 283; Peak gaging chamber, 2 culverts, Nos. 276 and 283; 1 downtake Rondout pressure tunnel; 38 to 39 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 2 |
| | Supervised by 4 non-coms. on bicycles..... | 4 |
| | | 12 |

Night Posts (Sixteen Fixed Posts)

At this section—night duty covers from 8 P.M. to 4 A.M. This will be adjusted to conform with the Davis Corners Section, and will then require 16 more men.

| | | 2 Shifts Each | | | |
|--|---|---------------|--|---|------------|
| <i>Post No.</i> | | | | | <i>Men</i> |
| 13 | Culvert at pole No. 170; cut and cover..... | | | I | |
| 14 | " " 175 " " | | | I | |
| 15 | " " 184 " " | | | I | |
| 16 | " " 188 " " | | | I | |
| 17 | " " 198 " " | | | I | |
| 18 | " " 207 " " | | | I | |
| 19 | " " 215 " " | | | I | |
| 20 | " " 220 " " | | | I | |
| 21 | " " 225 " " | | | I | |
| 22 | " " 237 " " | | | I | |
| 23 | " " 228 " " | | | I | |
| 24 | " " 252 " " | | | I | |
| 25 | " " 261 " " | | | I | |
| 26 | " " 266 " " | | | I | |
| 27 | Peak and gaging chamber " " | | | I | |
| 28 | Culvert No. 276; cut and cover..... | | | I | |
| 29 | " 283 " " | | | I | |
| 30 | Downtake Rondout pressure tunnel..... | | | I | |
| | Supervised by 4 non-coms..... | | | 4 | 22 |
| | | | | | — |
| Number of non-coms. and men on guard duty..... | | | | | 34 |
| In camp..... | | | | | 9 |
| | | | | | — |
| Officers..... | | | | | 43 |
| | | | | | 2 |
| | | | | | — |
| Total..... | | | | | 45 |
| Davis Corners Section, officers and men..... | | | | | 51 |
| Atwood Section, officers and men..... | | | | | 45 |
| | | | | | — |
| Total..... | | | | | 96 |

SECTOR NORTH-2

From: Peak tunnel.

To: Bonticou tunnel.

Commander: Captain J. Roy Wilbur.

Organization: Co. H, 1st Infantry.

Post Office: High Falls.

Telephone No.: High Falls 22.

Headquarters: B. W. S. buildings at the Peak.

Day Duty

Post No.

4 patrols on bicycles.

9 Tel. poles Nos. 317-324; culvert No. 317; manhole No. 318; culverts

| <i>Day Duty</i> | | |
|-----------------|---|------------|
| <i>Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
| | 324 to shaft house at pole No. 325; 5 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 10 | Tel. poles Nos. 325-339; including shaft house at pole No. 325; culverts Nos. 329, 335 and 339; gaging chamber; 2 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 11 | Tel. pole No. 342 to include culvert No. 353; culverts Nos. 342, 347 and 353; 10 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 12 | Tel. poles Nos. 360 to 374; culverts Nos. 360, 368, and 374; 15 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| | Supervised by 1 non-com. on bicycle..... | 1 |

Night Duty (All Fixed Posts)

Locations shown on Day Post Sheet preceding

| | | |
|------------|--|----|
| 31 | Culvert No. 317; manhole No. 318..... | 2 |
| 32 | " 324..... | 2 |
| 33 | Shaft-house..... | 2 |
| 34 | Culvert No. 329..... | 2 |
| 35 | " 335..... | 2 |
| 36 | " 339..... | 2 |
| 37 | " 342..... | 2 |
| 38 | " 347..... | 2 |
| 39 | " 353..... | 2 |
| 40 | " 360..... | 2 |
| 41 | " 368..... | 2 |
| 42 | " 374..... | 2 |
| | Supervised by 4 non-coms. on foot..... | 4 |
| Total..... | | 28 |

Outposts

| | | |
|------------|---|----|
| 13 | Downtake Rondout pressure tunnel; shaft No. 1; in 24 hours..... | 4 |
| | Non-coms..... | 1 |
| | Local subsistence..... | |
| 14 | Drainage Chamber Rondout pressure tunnel, shaft No. 5..... | 4 |
| | Non-coms..... | 2 |
| | Local subsistence..... | |
| 15 | Uptake Rondout pressure tunnel; shaft No. 8..... | 4 |
| | Non-coms..... | 2 |
| | Local subsistence..... | |
| | 3 cooks for above outposts..... | 3 |
| Total..... | | 20 |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|---|----|
| Number of non-coms. and men on guard..... | 53 |
| With Supply Company—Highland..... | 2 |
| On duty in camp..... | 9 |
| <hr/> | |
| | 64 |

| | <i>Men</i> |
|----------------------------|------------|
| On reserve..... | 5 |
| Commissioned officers..... | 2 |
| <hr/> | |
| Total aggregate..... | 71 |

SECTOR NORTH-3

From: Bonticou tunnel.

To: Downtake chamber Walkill pressure tunnel.

Commander: First-Lieut. Frank Van Nouhuys.

Organization: Troop B, 1st Cavalry.

Post Office: New Paltz, N. Y.

Telephone: New Paltz 59-F-3.

Headquarters: Camp on side of mountain.

| <i>Post No.</i> | <i>Day Posts</i> | <i>Men</i> |
|-----------------|--|------------|
| 16 | Foot patrol; tel. poles Nos. 596-617; 3 culverts, Nos. 596, 611 and 617; 1 manhole, No. 598; 45 minutes from relief; cut and cover.... | 1 |
| 17 | Foot patrol; tel. poles Nos. 638-650; 3 culverts and 1 manhole; 20 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 18 | Foot patrol; tel. poles Nos. 658-665; 2 culverts; 1 manhole and New Paltz main; 5 to 15 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 19 | Foot patrol; tel. poles Nos. 671-694; 2 culverts; 2 to 5 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| | Above supervised by 1 non-com..... | 1 |
| 20 | Foot patrol; tel. poles Nos. 702-716; 3 culverts and 1 manhole; 2 to 5 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 21 | Foot patrol; tel. poles Nos. 736-750; 3 culverts and 2 manholes; 15 to 25 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 22 | Foot patrol; tel. poles Nos. 750-760; 1 culvert; 25 minutes from relief; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 23 | Foot patrol; tel. poles Nos. 760-770; 1 boat-hole; 1 shaft; 1 gage; 1 B. W. S. 'phone box; 35 minutes from relief..... | 1 |
| | Above supervised by 1 non-com..... | 1 |
| | Two above groups supervised by 1 non-com..... | 1 |
| | | <hr/> |
| | | 11 |

Night Posts

| | | |
|----|--|---|
| 43 | Tel. poles Nos. 596-599; 1 culvert, No. 45, and 1 manhole..... | 2 |
| 44 | Tel. poles Nos. 612-617; 2 culverts, Nos. 47 and 46..... | 2 |
| 45 | Tel. poles Nos. 637-650; 3 culverts, Nos. 50, 49 and 48, and 1 manhole | 2 |
| 46 | Tel. poles Nos. 654-658; 1 culvert, No. 51; fixed post..... | 2 |
| | Above supervised by 2 non-coms..... | 2 |
| 47 | Tel. poles Nos. 665-671; 2 culverts, Nos. 52 and 53, and 1 manhole.... | 2 |
| 48 | Tel. pole No. 680; 1 culvert, No. 54; fixed post..... | 2 |
| 49 | Tel. pole No. 693; 1 culvert, No. 55; fixed post..... | 2 |
| | Above supervised by 2 non-coms..... | 2 |
| | Both above groups supervised by 1 sergeant..... | 1 |
| 50 | Tel. poles Nos. 702-703; 1 culvert, No. 56, and 1 manhole..... | 2 |
| 51 | Tel. poles Nos. 710-716; 2 culverts, Nos. 57 and 58..... | 2 |
| 52 | Tel. poles Nos. 736-738; 1 culvert, No. 59; 2 manholes..... | 2 |

H-A-L-TT !—WHA-ZAA ?

| <i>Night Posts</i> | | |
|--------------------|---|------------|
| <i>Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
| 53 | Tel. poles Nos. 742-750; 2 culverts, Nos. 60 and 61..... | 2 |
| | Above supervised by 1 non-com..... | 2 |
| 54 | Tel. poles Nos. 759-768; 1 culvert, No. 62..... | 2 |
| 55 | Tel. poles Nos. 768-775; 1 boat-hole; 1 shaft; 1 gage; 1 'phone box | 2 |
| | Above supervised by 2 non-coms..... | 2 |
| | Both above groups supervised by 1 sergeant..... | 1 |
| | | <hr/> 36 |

| <i>Outpost</i> | | |
|----------------|---|---|
| 56 | Guarded at night only, as workmen are employed there during the day | |
| | Drainage chamber—Walkill pressure tunnel. | |
| | 1 man and 1 non-com..... | 2 |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|--|----------|
| Total number non-coms. and men on guard..... | 49 |
| On duty in camp..... | 9 |
| Sick, furlough, A. W. L..... | 7 |
| In reserve for guard..... | 5 |
| | <hr/> 70 |
| Officers..... | 2 |
| Inspectors..... | 1 |
| | <hr/> 73 |
| Aggregate..... | 73 |

SECTOR NORTH-4

From: Uptake Walkill pressure tunnel.

To: Culvert No. 86—below St. Elmo.

Commander: First Lieut. F. M. H. Jackson.

Organization: Detachments of Cos. C, 1st Infantry, Co. K, 10th Infantry.

Post Office: Gardiner, N. Y.

Telephone: Newburgh 7-F-23.

Headquarters: B. W. S. buildings south of Ireland Corners, Camp Ball.

| <i>Day Posts</i> | | |
|------------------|--|------------|
| <i>Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
| 24 | Uptake Walkill pressure tunnel..... | 1 |
| 25 | Tel. pole No. 964; culvert No. 67, and gaging chamber Walkill | |
| | pressure tunnel; patrol..... | 1 |
| 26 | Tel. pole No. 986; culvert No. 68; fixed post; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 27 | Valve house leading to outlet blowoff Walkill pressure tunnel; fixed | |
| | post..... | 1 |
| 28 | Overflow Walkill pressure tunnel; 3 culverts; patrol..... | 1 |
| 29 | Outlet; 2 culverts, Nos. 68 and 69; patrol; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 30 | Pole No. 1014; first post below blowoff chamber..... | 1 |
| 31 | 2 culverts, Nos. 70 and 71; patrol; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 32 | Tel. poles Nos. 1053 and 1054; 1 manhole; 1 culvert, No. 72; cut and | |
| | cover..... | 1 |

Day Posts

| <i>Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
|-----------------|--|------------|
| 33 | 2 culverts, Nos. 73 and 74; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| | Above supervised by 2 non-coms..... | 2 |
| 34 | 1 culvert No. 78; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 35 | 2 culverts, Nos. 79 and 80; patrol; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 36 | Culvert No. 81; patrol; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 37 | Culvert 82; patrol; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 38 | Culverts Nos. 83 and 84; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 39 | Culverts Nos. 85 and 86; 1 boat-hole; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| | Above supervised by 2 non-coms..... | 2 |
| | | <hr/> |
| | | 20 |

Outposts

| | | |
|----|---|-------|
| 40 | Poles Nos. 1099-1100; culvert No. 75 } cut and cover..... | 1 |
| | Poles Nos. 1113-1114; culvert No. 76 } | |
| 41 | Poles Nos. 1131-1132; culvert No. 77; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| | Supervised by 1 non-com..... | 1 |
| | | <hr/> |
| | | 3 |

Local subsistence.

In B. W. S. buildings.

Night Posts (Fixed Posts)

| | | |
|----|--|---|
| 57 | Uptake Walkill pressure tunnel | 2 |
| 58 | Culvert No. 67..... | 2 |
| 59 | Gaging chamber, Walkill pressure tunnel..... | 2 |
| 60 | Culvert No. 68..... | 2 |
| 61 | Valve-house blowoff..... | 2 |
| 62 | Overflow Walkill pressure tunnel | 2 |
| 63 | 3 culverts..... | 2 |
| 64 | Outlet..... | 2 |
| 65 | Culvert No. 68..... | 2 |
| 66 | Culvert No. 69..... | 2 |
| 67 | Culvert No. 70..... | 2 |
| 68 | Culvert No. 71..... | 2 |
| 69 | 1 manhole; 1 culvert, No. 72..... | 2 |
| 70 | 1 culvert, No. 73..... | 2 |
| 71 | 1 culvert, No. 74..... | 2 |
| | Above supervised by 3 non-coms., 1 sergeant riding a bicycle.... | 3 |
| 72 | 1 culvert, No. 75..... | 2 |
| 73 | 1 culvert, No. 76..... | 2 |
| 74 | 1 culvert, No. 77..... | 2 |
| | Above supervised by 3 non-coms..... | 3 |
| 75 | 1 culvert, No. 78..... | 2 |
| 76 | 1 culvert, No. 79..... | 2 |
| 77 | 1 culvert, No. 80..... | 2 |
| 78 | 1 culvert, No. 81..... | 2 |
| 79 | 1 culvert, No. 82..... | 2 |
| 80 | 1 culvert, No. 83..... | 2 |
| 81 | 1 culvert, No. 84..... | 2 |

H-A-L-TT !—WHA-ZAA ?

Night Posts (Fixed Posts)

| <i>Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
|-----------------|-------------------------------------|------------|
| 82 | 1 culvert, No. 85..... | 2 |
| 83 | 1 culvert, No. 86..... | 2 |
| | Above supervised by 2 non-coms..... | 2 |
| | | <hr/> |
| | | 85 |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|---|-----|
| Total number of non-coms. and men on guard..... | 85 |
| On duty in camp..... | 15 |
| Officers..... | 2 |
| <hr/> | |
| Aggregate..... | 102 |

SECTOR NORTH-5

From: Culvert No. 87, south of St. Elmo-Newburgh road.

To: Culvert No. 91.

Commander: Second-Lieut. Wm. C. Barry, Jr.

Organization: Troop H, 1st Cavalry.

Post Office: St. Elmo, N. Y., Walkill, R. D.

Telephone: Walkill, 27 W.

Headquarters: Camp near St. Elmo, N. Y.

B. W. S. buildings—none.

| <i>Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
|-----------------|-------------------------------------|------------|
| 42 | Culvert No. 87; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 43 | Culvert No. 88; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 44 | Culvert No. 89; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 45 | Culvert No. 90; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| 46 | Culvert No. 91; cut and cover..... | 1 |
| | Above supervised by 2 non-coms..... | 2 |
| | | <hr/> |
| | | 7 |

Night Duty (All Fixed Posts)

| | | |
|----|-------------------------------------|-------|
| 84 | Culvert No. 87..... | 2 |
| 85 | Culvert No. 88..... | 2 |
| 86 | Culvert No. 89..... | 2 |
| 87 | Culvert No. 90..... | 2 |
| 88 | Culvert No. 91..... | 2 |
| | Above supervised by 4 non-coms..... | 4 |
| | | <hr/> |
| | | 14 |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|---|-------|
| Number of non-coms. and men on guard in 24 hours..... | 21 |
| On duty in camp..... | 7 |
| With Supply Company at Highland..... | 2 |
| In reserve..... | 6 |
| | <hr/> |
| | 36 |
| One officer..... | 1 |
| | <hr/> |
| Aggregate..... | 37 |

SECTOR NORTH-6

From: Culvert just south of Newburgh trolley crossing.

To: Cornwall access pressure tunnel.

Commander: Captain Benedict Gifford.

Organization: Co. F, 10th Infantry.

Post Office: Vail's Gate, N. Y.

Telephone No.: Vail's Gate 108-F-3.

Headquarters: B. W. S. buildings and camp.

| <i>Post No.</i> | <i>Day Posts</i> | <i>Men</i> |
|-----------------|---|------------|
| 47 | Tel. pole No. 1383; 1 culvert, No. 92; 1 manhole; 10 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 48 | Tel. pole No. 1397; 1 culvert, No. 93; 1 manhole; 6 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 49 | Tel. pole No. 1414; 1 culvert, No. 94; 1 manhole; turnpike; 1 minute from relief. | 1 |
| 50 | Tel. pole No. 1427; 1 culvert, No. 95; 1 manhole; cut and cover; 6 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 51 | Tel. pole No. 1443; 1 culvert, No. 96; 1 manhole; cut and cover; 10 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| | Above supervised by 1 non-com. Headquarters of above between tel. poles Nos. 1414 and 1427. | 1 |
| | 2 conical tents. | |
| | Subsistence from headquarters. | |
| 52 | Tel. pole No. 1502; 1 culvert, No. 101; 1 manhole; cut and cover; 42 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 53 | Tel. pole No. 1510; 1 culvert, No. 102; 1 manhole; cut and cover; 38 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 54 | Tel. pole No. 1522; 1 culvert, No. 103; 1 manhole; cut and cover; 30 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 55 | Tel. pole No. 1533; 1 culvert, No. 104; 1 manhole; cut and cover; 20 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 56 | Tel. pole No. 1544; 1 culvert, No. 105; 1 manhole; cut and cover; 5 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| | | 11 |
| 57 | Tel. pole No. 1561; 1 culvert, No. 106; 1 manhole; cut and cover; 3 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 58 | Tel. pole No. 1571; north siphon chamber, Washington Square siphon; 10 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| | Above supervised by 1 non-com. | 1 |
| 59 | Tel. pole No. 1611; south siphon chamber, Washington Square siphon | 1 |
| 60 | Tel. pole No. 1663; 1 culvert No. 107 and manhole; cut and cover; 20 minutes from relief. | 1 |
| 61 | Tel. pole No. 1671; shaft downtake chamber Moodna pressure tunnel | 1 |
| | Above supervised by 1 non-com. | 1 |
| | | 17 |

At pole No. 1877, access chamber Moodna pressure tunnel, an inspection is made once daily by a commissioned officer.

Night Duty

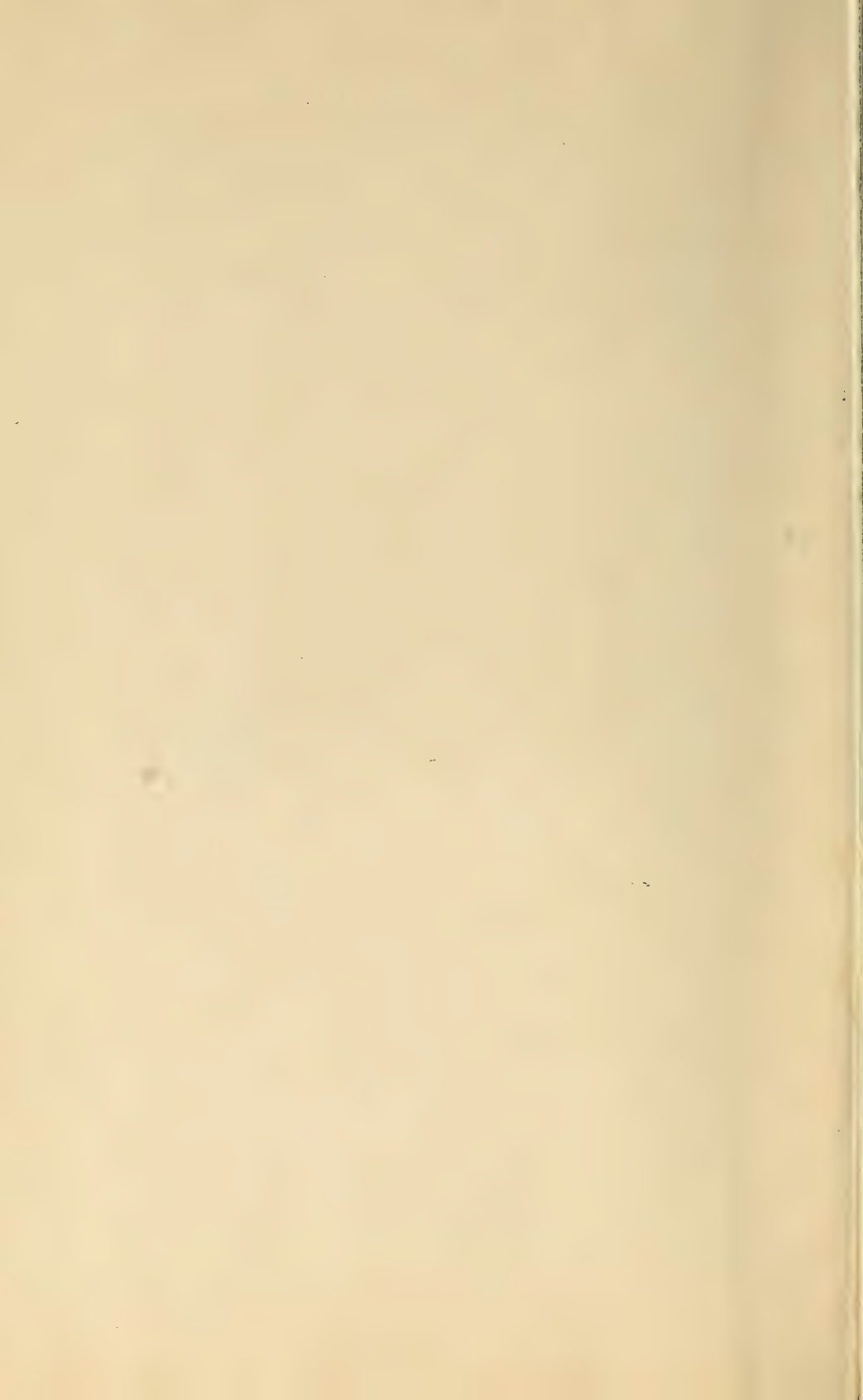
| <i>Post No.</i> | | <i>Men</i> |
|-----------------|---|------------|
| 89 | Culvert No. 92 and manhole..... | 2 |
| 90 | “ 93 “ | 1 |
| 91 | Additional night patrol at this point between poles Nos. 1397 and 1414..... | 1 |
| 92 | Culvert No. 92 and manhole..... | 2 |
| 93 | “ 95 “ | 2 |
| 94 | Additional patrol at this point between poles Nos. 1427 and 1443.... | 1 |
| 95 | Culvert No. 96 and manhole..... | 2 |
| | Above supervised by 3 non-coms..... | 3 |
| | Culverts Nos. 97, 98, 99 and 100 are sluiceways and adjacent culverts are not vulnerable or requiring attention from the guard. | |
| 96 | Culvert No. 101 and manhole..... | 2 |
| 97 | Additional night patrol at this point..... | 1 |
| 98 | Culvert No. 102 and manhole..... | 2 |
| 99 | “ 103 “ | 2 |
| 100 | “ 104 “ | 2 |
| 101 | “ 105 “ | 2 |
| 102 | “ 106 “ | 2 |
| 103 | Additional night patrol at this point..... | 1 |
| | Above supervised by 2 non-coms..... | 2 |
| 104 | North siphon chamber..... | 4 |
| 105 | South siphon chamber..... | 4 |
| 106 | Culvert No. 107 and manhole..... | 2 |
| 107 | Shaft—downtake chamber..... | 4 |
| | Above supervised by 3 non-coms..... | 3 |
| | | <hr/> 48 |

RECAPITULATION

| | |
|---|-----------|
| Number of non-coms. and men on guard..... | 65 |
| On duty in camp..... | 14 |
| In hospital..... | 3 |
| In reserve..... | 33 |
| | <hr/> 112 |
| Officers..... | 3 |
| | <hr/> |
| Aggregate..... | 115 |

H 45' 89 17

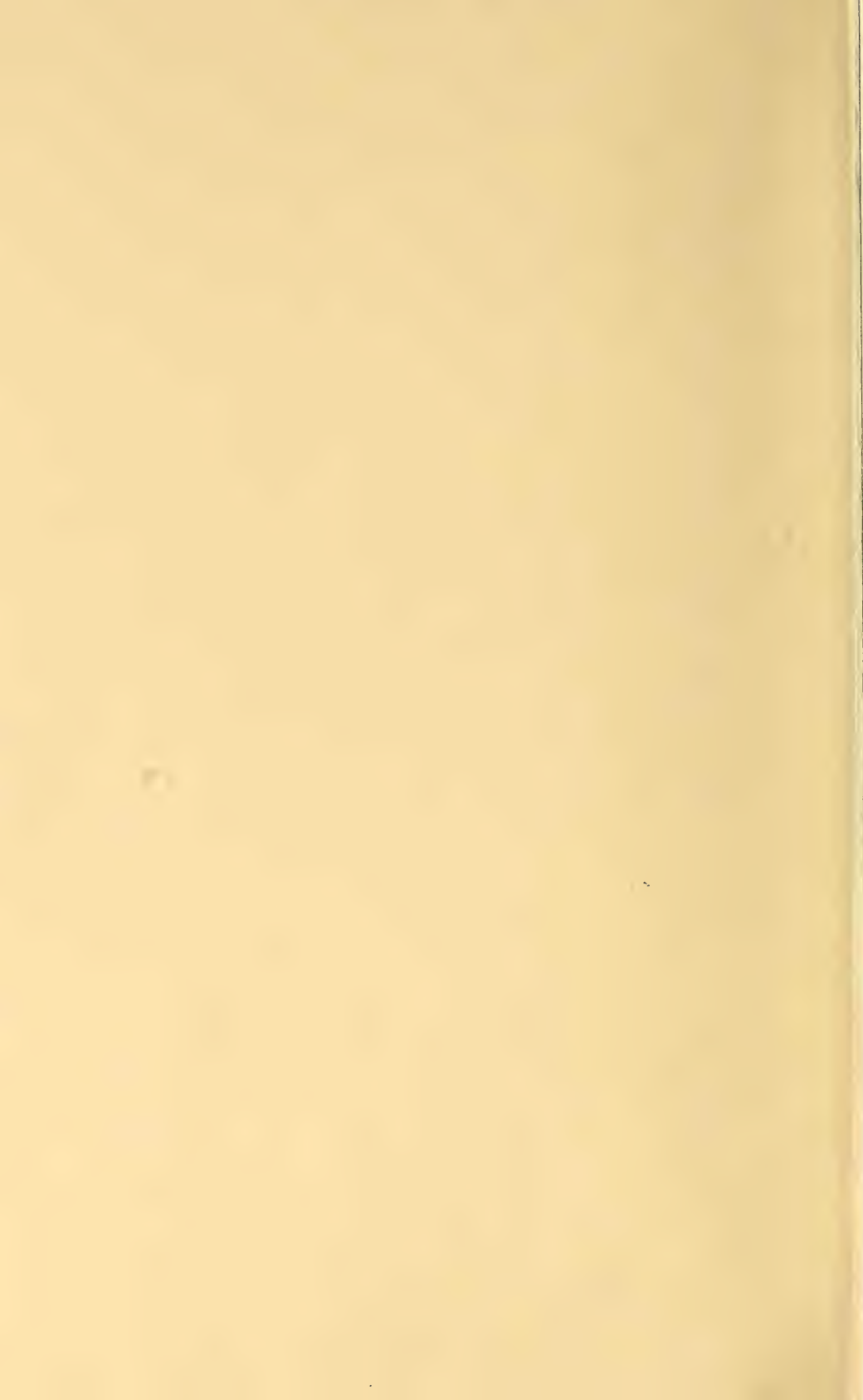


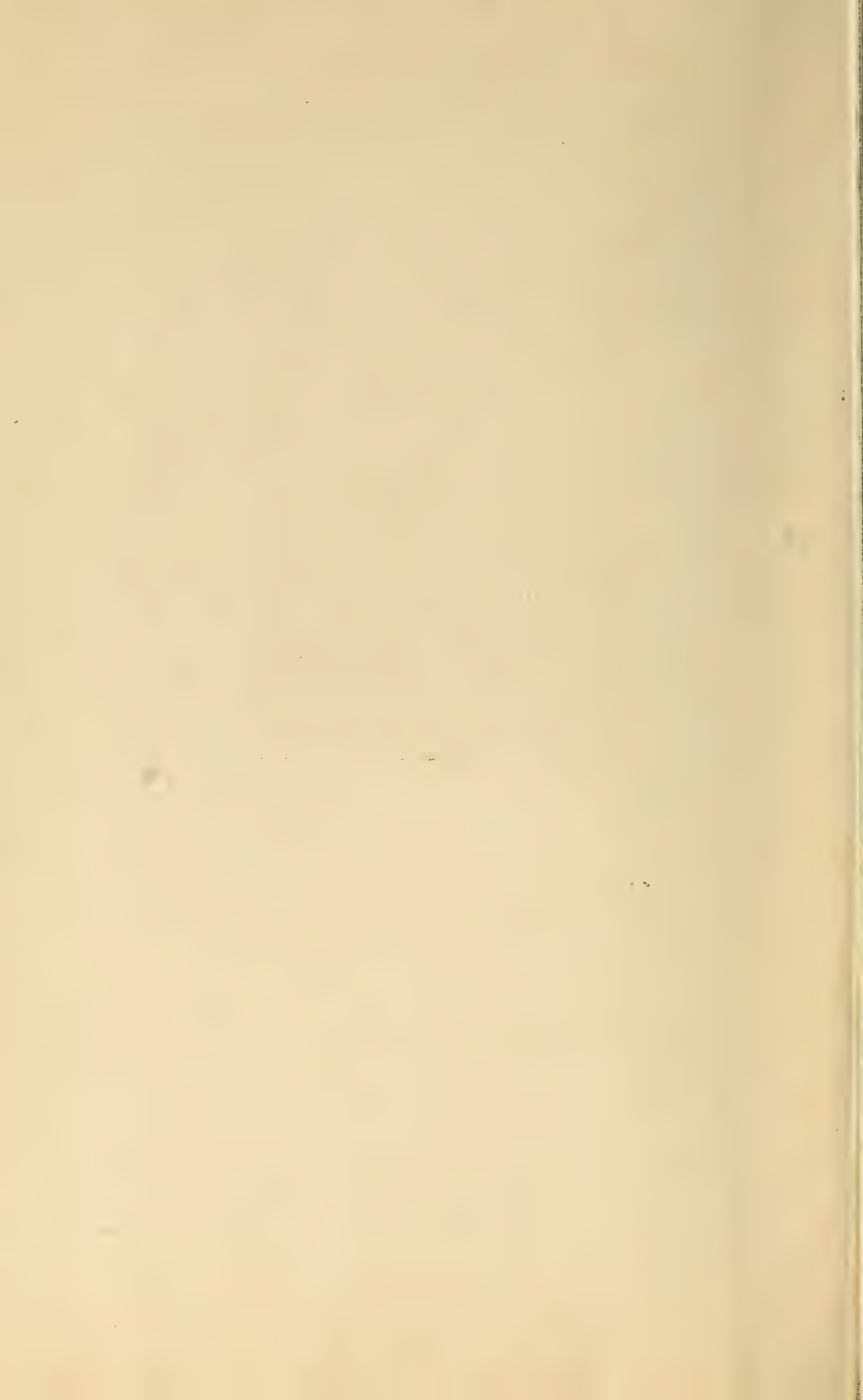


11570

.25

11571





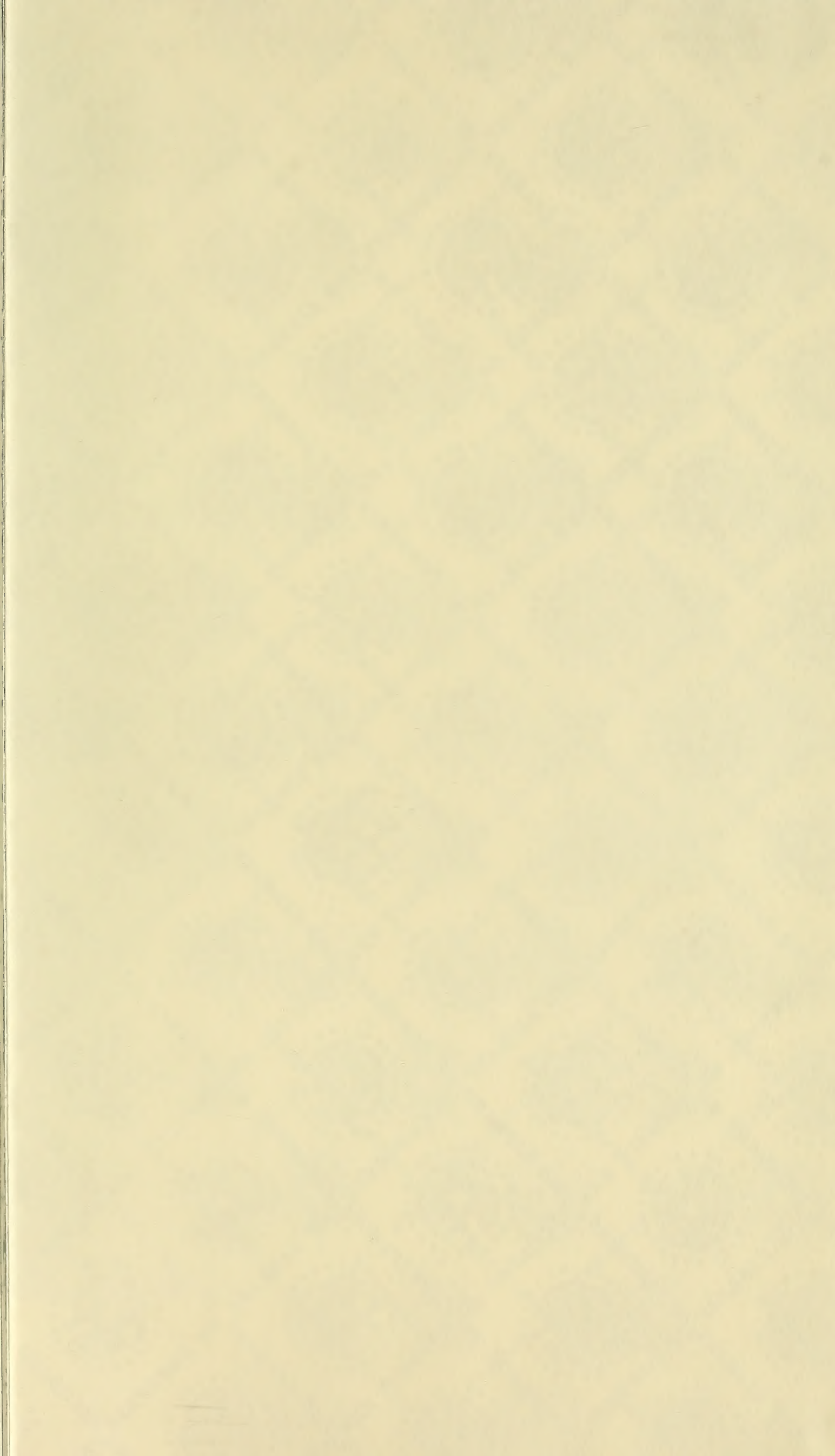
11570

.85

11570







Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: MAY 2001

Preservation Technologies
A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066
(724) 779-2111

HECKMAN
BINDERY INC.



JUN 89



N. MANCHESTER,
INDIANA 46962

